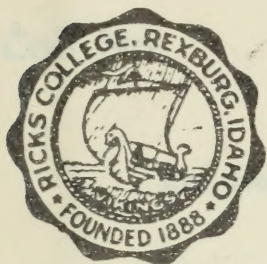


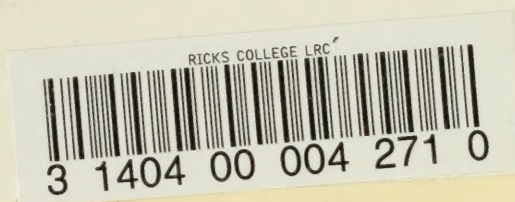




# David O. McKay Library



BX  
1765  
E77





# DATE DUE

NOV 28 1998		
NOV 28 1998		
DEC 8 1998		
FEB 22 2002		
FEB 04 2006		
JUN 04 2009		

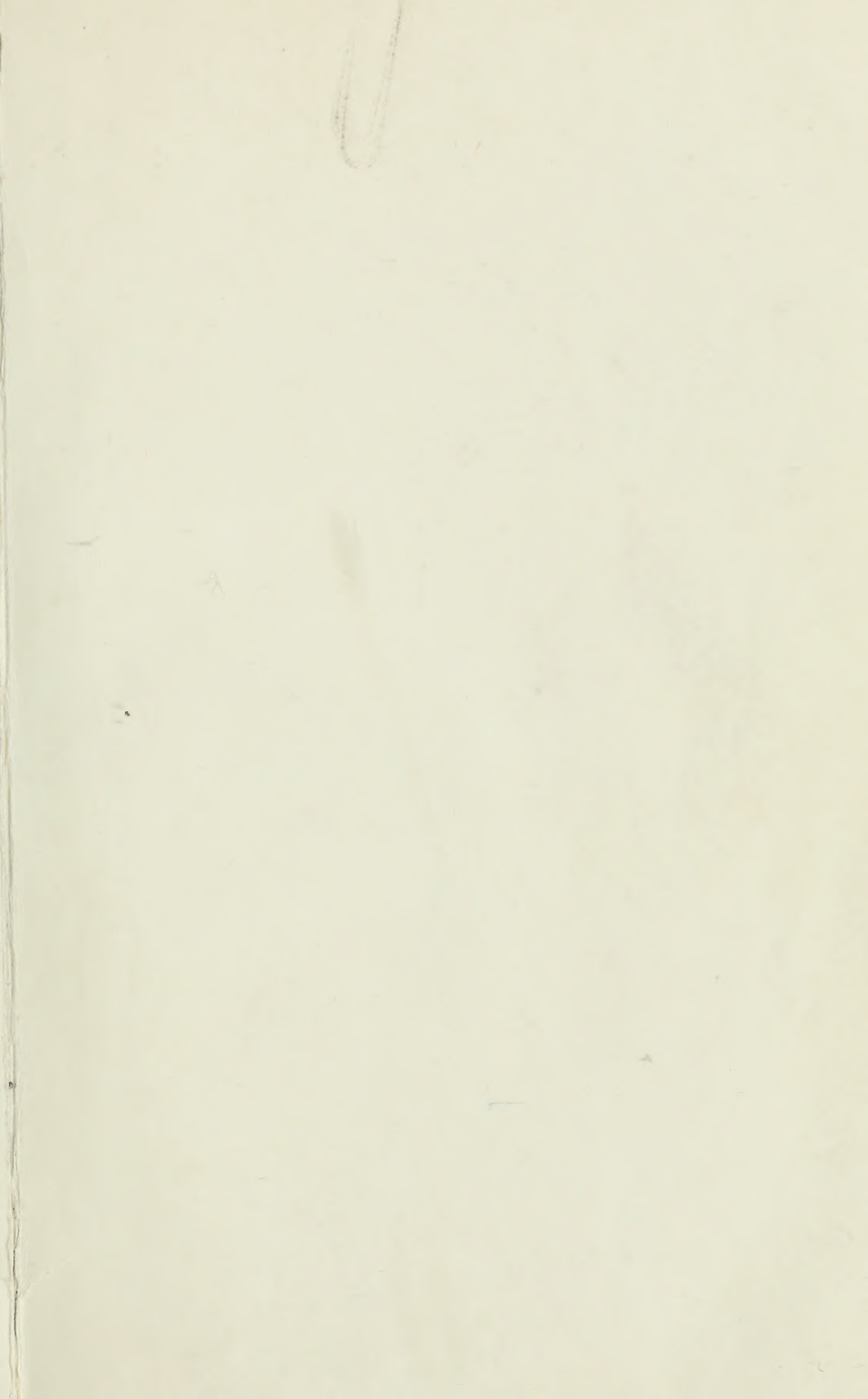
Demco



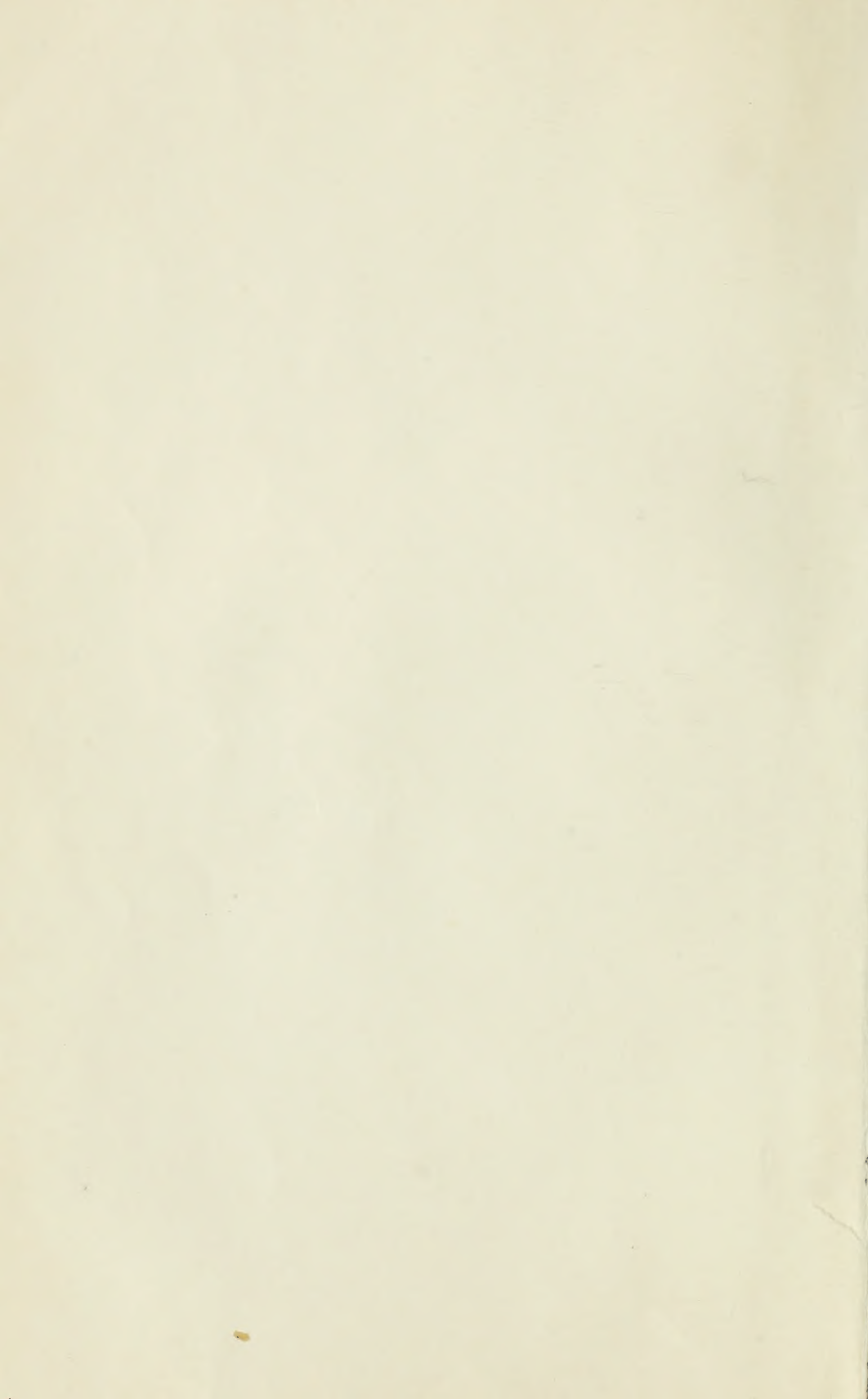


Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2013







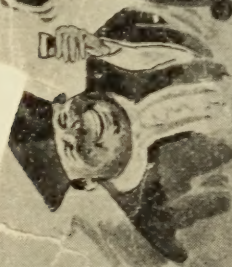




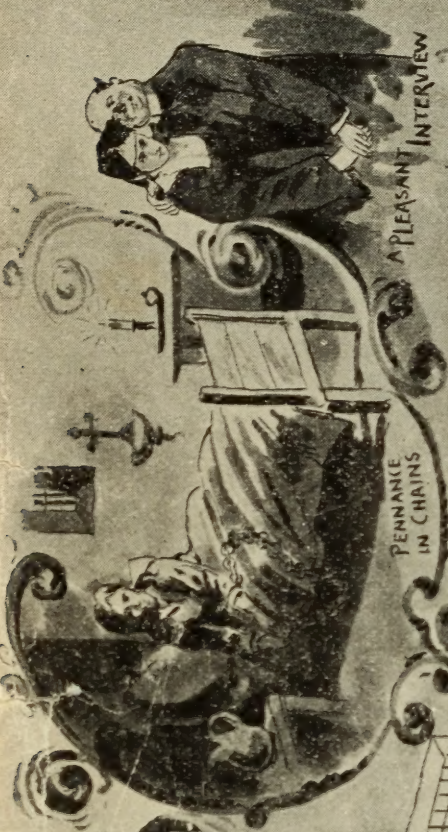




SORROW



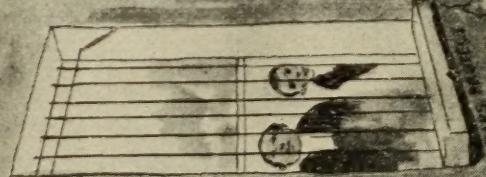
JOY



PENNANT  
IN CHAINS



A PLEASANT  
INTERVIEW



SEEKING ADMITTANCE



APPLICATION PREVENTS REMORSE



DOING PENNANCE



# "Errors of the Roman Catholic Church"

OR,

## "Centuries of Oppression, Persecution and Ruin."

PUBLISHERS' CARD.

THE BLIGHTING AND WITHERING INFLUENCE  
OF ROMANISM EXPOSED.  
NOT AN APOLOGY.

It is due us to say that the publication of this volume has not proceeded from any ill feeling on our part toward those who belong to the Roman Catholic Church. We have among them many very warm friends, and during a business career of more than thirty-five years in this City, we have found among the Catholics some of our warmest and most respected citizens and they should not be held responsible for the actions of their Ecclesiastical Rulers. We draw a broad line of distinction between the Jesuitical Church System and the individuals who are connected with that Church. We abhor the secret, grasping, intolerant system of the Romish Church, while we have only pity for those who are so blindly led astray by its doctrines and teachings.

Believing it to be the duty of every true citizen to expose and denounce Error whether discovered in individuals, or in Secret Organizations, or in the body politic, and "with malice toward none, with charity for all," we respectfully submit this volume to the thinking American People.

J. H. CHAMBERS & CO.

J. H. CHAMBERS & COMPANY.

## PUBLISHERS' CARD.

### NOT AN APOLOGY.

It is due us to say that the publication of this volume has not proceeded from any ill feeling on our part toward those who belong to the Roman Catholic Church. We have among them many very warm friends, and during a business career of more than thirty-five years in this City, we have found among the Catholics some of our worthiest and most respected citizens and they should not be held responsible for the acts of their Ecclesiastical Rulers. We draw a broad line of distinction between the Jesuitical Church System and the individuals who are connected with that Church. We abhor the secret, grasping, intolerant system of the Romish Church, while we have only pity for those who are so blindly led astray by its doctrines and teachings.

Believing it to be the duty of every true citizen to oppose and denounce Error, whether discovered in individuals, in Secret Organizations, or in the body politic, and "with malice toward none, with charity for all," we respectfully submit this volume to the thinking American People.

J. H. CHAMBERS & Co.



# **"Errors of the Roman Catholic Church"**

OR,

**"Centuries of Oppression, Persecution  
and Ruin."**

---

**THE BLIGHTING AND WITHERING INFLUENCE  
OF ROMANISM EXPOSED.**

---

**"Vengeance is mine, I will repay."**

---

**HANDS RED WITH THE BLOOD OF PROTESTANTS UNGLOVED.**

---

**ROME THE MOTHER OF INTELLECTUAL DWARFS.**

---

**BURNING TRUTHS THAT CIVILIZE THE POPE AND HIS  
BENIGHTED FOLLOWERS.**

---

**FETTERED HANDS OF MILLIONS RELEASED BY PROTESTANT CIVILIZATION.**

---

The isles of the oceans that team with wealth,  
For centuries ruled by the Romish rod,  
Have been touched by the magic of Protestant hands,  
And will cease to serve, but a living God.

---

**FOR LIST OF AUTHORS, SEE NEXT PAGE.**

**700 PAGES, AND ILLUSTRATED WITH OVER 50 FULL PAGE ENGRAVINGS.**



ST. LOUIS, MO.:

**J. H. CHAMBERS & COMPANY,**

1899.

## CONTRIBUTORS.

---

S. H. FORD, D.D.

REV. SCOTT F. HERSHEY, PH.D.

HON. THOS. J. MORGAN,

MADISON C. PETERS, D.D.,

REV. BISHOP E. M. MARVIN,

JOHN A. WILSON, D.D.,

GEORGE A. LOFTON, D.D.,

J. G. WILSON, D.D.,

THOS. O. SUMMERS, LL.D.,

ELDER THOS. P. HALEY,

SAM'L J. NICCOLLS, LL.D.,

REV. BISHOP THOMAS BOWMAN,

R. S. STORRS, D.D.,

P. G. ROBERT, D.D.,

G. W. HUGHEY, D.D.

## PUBLISHER'S ANNOUNCEMENT.

---

Never before in the history of America has the subject of Romanism commanded so much attention as at present; and any *real* alarm for the safety of our republican institutions against the insidious encroachments of the papal system, has not until recently been felt to any great extent.

The present manifest disposition on the part of the American people to know what Romanism is, and a determined effort on the part of the Romish priesthood to cover up and apologize for its errors, suggested the publication of this volume.

In the arrangement of the work, the different branches of the Christian Church are represented by its contributors, and each deals with the great question from his respective stand-point, which more certainly insures a comprehensive and complete presentation of each subject in particular and together as a whole. This arrangement gives variety to the reader—a feature much prized and enjoyed by those who believe it their privilege to think for themselves.

The illustrations in every case are true to the text and will greatly aid the reader in forming a correct idea of the modes of punishment and sufferings of the Christian Martyrs whose blood still cries to Him who says, "Vengeance is Mine, I will repay."



ENTERED ACCORDING TO ACT OF CONGRESS, BY

J. H. CHAMBERS & COMPANY,

IN THE OFFICE OF THE LIBRARIAN OF CONGRESS, AT WASHINGTON, D. C.

# CONTENTS.

---

FRONTISPIECE . . . . .	
CONTRIBUTORS . . . . .	
PREFACE . . . . .	
CONTENTS . . . . .	i
ILLUSTRATIONS . . . . .	4

## PROLOGUE.

"ROME'S RULE IS RUIN."

By Rev. S. H. Ford, D.D., LL.D., (Baptist) . . . .	5
--	---

## CHAPTER I.

History and Progress of the American Protective Association (A. P. A.). By Scott F. Hershey, Ph.D. . . .	i
--	---

## CHAPTER II.

Political Romanism in Washington. By Scott F. Hershey, Ph.D. . . . .	xi
--	----

## CHAPTER III.

Roman Catholics and the Indians. By Hon. Thos. J. Morgan, Late United States Commissioner of Indian Affairs. . . . .	xxxii
--	-------

## CHAPTER IV.

Romanism, Illiteracy, Illegitimacy and Crime. By Rev. Madison C. Peters, D.D. . . . .	1
---	---

## CHAPTER V.

Transubstantiation Tested by Scripture. By Rev. Bishop E. M. Marvin, D.D. . . . .	21
---	----

## CHAPTER VI.

- Practical Results of the Doctrine of Transubstantiation. By  
E. M. Marvin, D D. . . . . 33

## CHAPTER VII.

- Church Unity—Romanist Theory. By E. M. Marvin, D D. 55

## CHAPTER VIII.

- The True Idea of Church Unity. By E. M. Marvin, D.D. 77

## CHAPTER IX.

- The Ministry of Christ's Church Contrasted with the Priest-  
hood of the Pope's Church. By E. M. Marvin, D.D. 103

## CHAPTER X.

- Purgatory, Penance, and Persecution. By John A. Wilson,  
D.D., (United Presbyterian) . . . . . 129

## CHAPTER XI.

- The Romish Mass, Reason and History. By George A.  
Lofton, D.D., (Baptist) . . . . . 155

## CHAPTER XII.

- Images, Indulgences, and Infallibility. By John A. Wilson,  
D.D. . . . . 189

## CHAPTER XIII.

- Peter, Not the Church—The Issue Defined. By J. G. Wil-  
son, D.D., (Methodist) . . . . . 217

## CHAPTER XIV.

- Celibacy of the Clergy. By Thos. O. Summers, L L D.,  
(Methodist) . . . . . 235



CHAPTER XV.

Some Things Catholics Do Believe. By Elder Thos. P. Haley, (Christian)	257
--	-----

CHAPTER XVI.

The Charge of Idolatrous Worship Made Against the Roman Church: Is It True? By Samuel J. Niccolls, D.D., (Presbyterian)	299
---	-----

CHAPTER XVII.

Romanism Enslaves, Degrades, Corrupts. By Bishop Thomas Bowman, D D., (Methodist)	323
---	-----

CHAPTER XVIII.

The Appeal of Romanism to Educated Protestants. By R. S. Storrs, D.D., (Congregational)	359
---	-----

CHAPTER XIX.

The Ancient Heresies in the Creed of Rome. By P. G. Robert, D.D., (Protestant Episcopal)	395
--	-----

CHAPTER XX.

The Origin, Rise and Development of the Papacy. By G. W. Hughey, D.D., (Methodist)	415
--	-----

✕ CHAPTER XXI.

Lives, Sufferings and Martyrdoms of the Apostles, Evangelists and Primitive Christians	448
--	-----

CHAPTER XXII.

Accounts of Persecutions in Foreign Countries	489
---	-----

CHAPTER XXIII.

Martyrdom of the Duke of Summerset, and Bishop Ridley	532
---	-----

CHAPTER XXIV.

Persecution and Death of Wm. Flower and others	577
--	-----

# ILLUSTRATIONS.

## FRONTISPIECE—Interior View of a Nunnery.

Romish Ceremonials From Cradle to Grave,	- - - -	5
Rome's Attack on Public Schools,	- - - -	i
Romanism at Washington City,	- - - -	xi
Bishop Antrocolo,	- - - -	xiv
Luther Before the Diet of Worms,	- - - -	xx
Romish Schools vs. Public Schools,	- - - -	xxxii
Luther's Monument at Worms,	- - - -	xxxvi
Public Torture,	- - - -	xliv
Worship of the Pope,	- - - -	l
Huss Before the Council of Constance,	- - - -	liv
Bishop Faronto,	- - - -	14
Noted Persecutors,	- - - -	21
The Forbidden Book,	- - - -	33
Beatrice de Cenci,	- - - -	55
The Flower of Cuba,	- - - -	62
Protestant Women Led to Execution,	- - - -	77
Arrest of Robert Oguier,	- - - -	90
A Fiendish Torture,	- - - -	82
Such as You Bear Us Little Favor,	- - - -	103
Bunyan in Bedford Goal,	- - - -	129
A Romish Underground Prison,	- - - -	142
The Confessional,	- - - -	155
No Money, No Mass,	- - - -	166
Many Perished in the Mountains,	- - - -	174
The Virgin as Worshipped in Mexico,	- - - -	189
Victims of the Inquisition Marching to the Stake,	- - - -	206
Reading the Dogma Before the Council,	- - - -	217
Execution of Sir John Oldcastle,	- - - -	228
Nun Taking the Veil,	- - - -	235
Christians Worried by Dogs,	- - - -	257
He Commended Himself to God,	- - - -	282
Image Worship in Ancient Times,	- - - -	299
Martyrdom of Wm. Tyndal, Translator of the Bible,	- - - -	323
Three Hundred Years of Romish Civilization,	- - - -	332
Four Martyrs Burned at Canterbury,	- - - -	344
Have Mercy on This Realm of England,	- - - -	359
Jerome of Prague,	- - - -	370
Execution of Jerome of Prague,	- - - -	382
I Pray God to Strengthen Thee, My Son,	- - - -	395
Ridley Writing to Prison,	- - - -	400
Place of Martyrdom of Ridley and Latimer,	- - - -	404
Burning of Ridley and Latimer,	- - - -	415
Rev. Geo. Marsh Going to Execution,	- - - -	426
She Fleed With Her Child to the Woods,	- - - -	440
The Hand With Which He Had Struck the Priest Was Cut Off.	- - - -	448
Clapped His Hands Thrice Together,	- - - -	460
First Time or Torturing,	- - - -	469
His Last Words Were Those of Prayer,	- - - -	480
Young Wife Perishing With Her Husband,	- - - -	489
The Cellars of His Palace Were Turned Into Dungeons,	- - - -	496
The Iron Bar Fell on His Chest,	- - - -	512
Martyrdom of Rawlins White,	- - - -	532
Scourging of George Penn,	- - - -	548
Cut the Throats of Four-Score Men, Women and Children,	- - - -	577
Massacre of Barletta,	- - - -	600



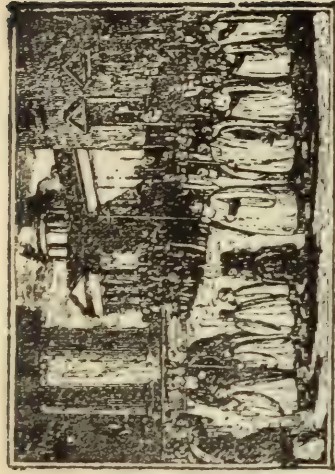




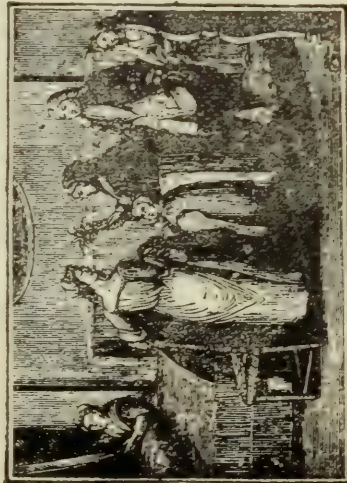
Marriage.



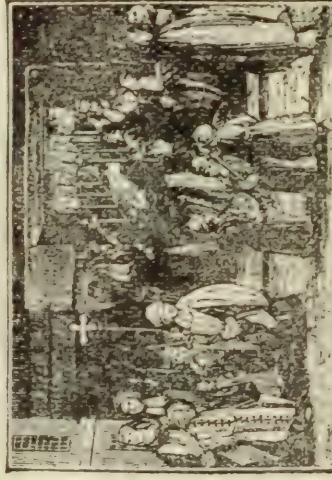
Extreme Unction.



Funeral Procession.



Benediction of the nuptial bed.



Exposure of the corpse at the house door.



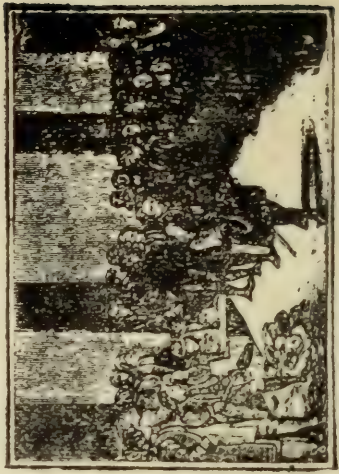
Corpse in the Church.



Baptism.



Offering of bread and wine at the mass for the dead.



Spending holy water upon the coffin in the grave.





You have a great nation, but beware of the Roman Clergy. If the liberties of American people are ever destroyed, it will be by the hands of the Roman Clergy.

MARQUIS DE LA FAYETTE.

I do not pretend to be a prophet; but though not a prophet, I see a very dark cloud on our horizon, and that cloud is coming from Rome. It is filled with tears of blood. The true motive power is secreted behind the thick walls of the Vatican, the colleges and schools of the Jesuits, the convents of the nuns, and the confessional boxes of Rome.

[5]

ABRAHAM LINCOLN.

# PROLOGUE.

---

RULE IS RUIN.

---

REV. S. H. FORD, LL.D.

---

In the stone crypt under the great dome at Milan in Italy repose the remains of Cardinal Borromeo. His skeleton form, robed in gorgeous vestments, lies in a crystal casket. The curious are permitted to gaze on the ghastly face, the eyeless sockets, the grinning teeth, the horrid aspect, of what once beamed with intelligence. On the breast lies the great cross of his ghostly order, set in gleaming jewels, whose brilliancy and beauty seem to smile in mockery at the hollow pomp of that decaying corpse.

It is corruption mouldering amid priceless gems and gilded trappings—a picture of Romanism—a soulless, ghostly skeleton in stately pomp and jeweled splendor, in the midst of a living age and beneath the sunlight of God's Word—the Man of Sin whose presence is corruption, whose odor is plague, and whose touch is death. The time was when this corpse was a living power for God and truth and freedom.

Paul wrote to the Church in Rome, and embodied in that Epistle living truths which still stir humanity



with lofty conceptions of duty and destiny—of individual responsibility to God, and to no one else, in all matters of conscience. But no priestly or papal domination—no soul-withering dogmas of Church infallibility or priestly absolution—are hinted at in that comprehensive document. Neither the writer nor the Church in Rome had any conception of the inventions of ambitious priests, which have counterfeited Christianity, corrupted human morals, and laid in ruins the true column of majesty in man—his God-given reason. Not for 600 years after the advent of the Redeemer—not till the spirit of truth had taken its flight from the Roman body called a Church—did a mortal claim universal dominion. Then commenced the struggle among the foes of freedom, as to who should be earth's master—enslave and ruin it.

The city of Rome had long been the mistress of the world. An awe was inspired by her very name. Constantinople was the imperial residence, eclipsing with its growing splendor this rival city of the Seven Hills. Which of the two principal pastors in those great and rival cities should be the bishop of bishops? They both claimed it, while each upbraided the other's arrogance.

"I confidently say," wrote Gregory the Great, bishop of Rome, "that whosoever calls himself 'universal bishop' or desires to be so called, in his arrogance, is the forerunner of antichrist."

This dispute was decided in the year 606, by Phocas, who had murdered the Emperor of Rome, Mauritius, and his six sons and two daughters. To reward the Roman bishop, he conferred on him the ambitious title of "universal

bishop ;” and to obtain this prize, the bishop sanctioned the murderer and usurper. With demon cruelty Phocas despatched the ministers of death to Chalcedon, where the aged Emperor had taken refuge, after resigning all claims to the purple. He was dragged from his sanctuary, and his five sons were successively murdered before the eyes of their agonized parent. “At each stroke which he felt in his heart, he exclaimed: Thou art just, O Lord, and Thy judgments are righteous.” The tragic scene was closed by the death of the Emperor himself. Over this dark tragedy, Gregory, afterwards called saint, raised a shout of joy.

The title of “universal bishop” had been settled on the Patriarch of Constantinople by a decree of the fallen Emperor. Gregory rejoiced in his fall, and in fulsome flattery wrote to the murderer: “We have hitherto been most grievously afflicted ; but the Almighty hath chosen you, and placed you on the imperial throne, to banish, by your merciful disposition, all our afflictions. Let the heavens, therefore, rejoice ; let the earth leap for joy ; let the whole people return thanks for so happy a change. May the Holy Ghost, that dwells in your breast, ever guide and assist you, that you may, after a long course of years, pass from an earthly and temporal to an everlasting and heavenly kingdom.” The thing was done—the conspiracy between the traitor and the murderer was successful. Phocas became Emperor ; and though Gregory did not live to receive in his own person the coveted title and power for which he had successfully struggled, Boniface III., three years after the death of Gregory,



prevailed on the bloody monster, Phocas, to revoke the former decree, and settle on the bishop of Rome the title of *universal bishop*. This was the origin of the papacy—the triumph of soul-oppression. Thenceforth its champions uttered their thunders from the Vatican. The title of “universal bishop” had been worn by the patriarchs of Constantinople as a proud badge of honor, but transferred to the pope, he used it as an iron wheel to torture and grind down humanity. What a bishop of Rome had branded as “vain, proud, impious, blasphemous, anti-christian, heretical, execrable, diabolical,” when transferred to himself, was worn and claimed as the crown of Christianity. Though obtained by intrigue and treachery, and granted by a base and bloody tyrant, it was soon made an article of faith, the rejection of which was to be visited by banishment and death here, and eternal ruin hereafter. Right and liberty were gone, oppression and corruption everywhere prevailed. Says a great Romanist writer: “These times, through the ambition and cruel tyranny of the popes, were extremely unhappy; for the popes, setting aside the fear of God and His worship, fell into such enmities among themselves, as cruel tyrants exercise to one another.” (*Phil. Burgomansis, ann. 908.*)

This is the picture of papal Rome’s meridian glory, drawn, not by the hand of an opponent, but by her learned defender. “We begin,” says Hallam, in investigating this period, “in darkness and calamity; and though the shadows grow fainter as we advance, yet we are to break off our pursuit as the morning breathes upon us, and the twilight reddens into the luster of day.” “I cannot, indeed,

conceive any state of society more adverse to the intellectual improvement of mankind, than one which admitted of no middle line between gross dissoluteness and fanatical mortification." "Such implicit submission could only have produced superstition and hypocrisy in the laity, and prepared the road for a tyranny not less oppressive than that of India or ancient Egypt." It was the day of triumph of the foes of freedom. It was the iron rule of spiritual despotism—the reign of terror and of superstition—the ghostly night of the dark ages—the period to which the soldiers of the pope point us as the noontide splendor of their Church, and whose return is the cherished object of their aims.

The dim visions of universal dominion which kindled the ambition of Pope Gregory the Great, in deepening splendors thronged on the soul of his successor, Hildebrand—Gregory the VII. With him they were not mere visions. They were glorious realities almost within his grasp; and only to be battled for in order to be won. The impending struggle was before him, and he girded himself for the contest.

When he ascended the throne, whose first occupancy fable gave to a married apostle, his holiness was shocked at the impurity of that holy rite, which did not sully even the spotless innocence of Eden. A council was called at Lateran, and not only the marriage of priests was forbidden, but every married priest was commanded at once to put away his wife. The decree was answered by complaints and reproaches. "Were ties the most sacred to be suddenly severed at the bidding of an Italian priest?"



Were men to become angels, or were angels to come down from heaven to minister to men?" Never was eloquence more touching, more just, more unavailing. The struggle was brief. Gregory triumphed. The decree of Hildebrand still rules the Latin Church, a gloomy monument of papal despotism. This first victory was followed by yet bolder undertakings. Concentrating all the power of the infallible Church in himself, he taught the faithful that he was an unerring being—"A GOD UPON EARTH." Before his eyes rose a vast theocratic state, wide as the world, and blending and harmonizing in its government religion and politics, while the "King of kings," from the city of the Cæsars, should rule it with absolute sway.

From his throne, beneath the sculptured roof of the Vatican, robed in the gorgeous vestments of his pontifical sovereignty, and looking down through the far receding aisles on the array of ecclesiastical princes and lords, before whom "Henry, Emperor of Germany, was summoned to be tried"—asserting a jurisdiction so majestic, and saluted by the roll of music and ascending incense, symbolic of the prayers of the universal Church—"Hildebrand arose and, lifting his eyes to heaven, with a voice echoing amid breathless silence through the fretted arches of that lofty hall, he invoked the holy Peter, and in the name of the Trinity, and by the power and authority of Peter," interdicted to King Henry, son of Henry the Emperor, the government of the whole realm of Germany and Italy; absolved all Christians from their oaths of allegiance to him, and bound him with the bond of anathema.

The Church of Rome with its head the pope, claims infallibility. Hence these actions and utterances remain authoritative to this hour and apply to this country in all their primitive force. To remove any doubt in regard to this, we cite the following Bull of Pope Boniface, called *Unum Sanctum*, and recently quoted by Archbishop Manning as the proof that the pope can still decide how far his authority shall enter into civil government. Here is the Bull.

“We are taught by the words of the evangelist: In his power there are two swords, the spiritual and temporal. For when the apostle said: ‘Lo! here are two swords;’ namely, in the Church; when the apostle spoke, the Lord did not say, ‘It is too much,’ but, ‘It is enough.’ Certainly he who denies that the temporal sword is in the power of St. Peter, badly attends to the word of our Lord, saying: ‘Put thy sword in its sheath.’ Both swords, therefore, are in the power of the Church; namely, the spiritual sword and the material sword; but the one is to be exercised by the Church, and the other for the Church; that is the property of the priest in the hands of kings and soldiers, but at the nod and suffrance of the priest; for it behooves that one sword be subject to the other, and that the temporal authority be subject to the spiritual power.

“For, truth bearing witness, the spiritual power can appoint the earthly power, and judge it, if it be not good; for this the prophecy of Jeremiah truly states of the Church and the power of the Church. ‘Behold, I have set thee over nations and kingdoms,’ etc., which



follow. Therefore, if the earthly power deviates, it is judged by its superior ; but if the supreme power deviates, it can be judged by God alone, not by man. Moreover, we declare, affirm, define, and pronounce, that it is altogether a matter of necessity to salvation, for every human creature to be subject to the Roman pontiff."

Five hundred years have passed since Boniface died a miserable death ; but never has a single instance occurred of any pope of Rome since having surrendered that claim ; but they have either explicitly announced the doctrine, or else by significant silence, tacitly endorsed it. No pope has denied the indirect temporal authority of the Holy See ; not one instance of the kind can be produced.

We see all this refers to the present surroundings and to this last refuge of freedom, America. In proof of it we quote from cotemporary Romanist journals. Let these utterances be heeded by all who love freedom.

"For our own part we take this opportunity of explaining our hearty delight at the suppression of the Protestant Chapel at Rome. This may be thought intolerant ; but when, we would ask, did we ever profess to be tolerant of Protestantism, or to favor the doctrine that Protestantism ought to be tolerated ? On the contrary we hate Protestantism—we detest it with our whole heart and soul, and we pray that our aversion to it may never decrease. We hold it meet that in the Eternal City no worship repugnant to God should be tolerated, and we are glad the enemies of the truth are no longer allowed to meet together in the capital of the Christian world."

—*Pittsburgh Catholic.*



“No good government can exist without religion—and there can be no religion without an Inquisition, which is wisely designed for the promotion and protection of the true faith.”—*Boston Pilot*.

“You ask if he (the pope) were lord in the land, and you were in a minority, if not in numbers yet in power, what would he do to you? That, we say, depends entirely on circumstances; if it would benefit the cause of Catholicism, he would tolerate you, if expedient, he would imprison you, banish you, fine you, possibly he might even hang you—but, be assured of one thing, he would never tolerate you for the sake of the ‘glorious principles of civil and religious liberty.’” —*Rambler, principal organ of the Catholic Church in England*.

“Protestantism of every form has not, and never can have, any rights where Catholicity is triumphant.” —*Brownson's Review*.

“I never think of publishing anything in regard to the Church, without submitting my articles to the bishop for inspection, approval, and endorsement.” —*Ibid*.

“I declare my most unequivocal submission to the Head of the Church, and to the hierarchy in its different orders. If the bishops made a declaration on this bill, I never would be heard speaking against it, but would submit at once, unequivocally, to that decision. They have only to determine, and I obey. I wish it to be understood that such is the duty of all Catholics.” —*Daniel O'Connell, 1843*.

“Heresy and unbelief are crimes, and in Christian countries, as in Italy and Spain, for instance, where all

the people are Catholic, and where the Catholic religion is an essential part of the law of the land, they will be punished as other crimes.”—*Kendrick, Roman Catholic Archbishop of St. Louis*

“A heretic, examined and convicted by the Church, used to be delivered over to the secular power and punished with death. Nothing has ever appeared to us more necessary. More than one hundred thousand people perished in consequence of the heresy of John Wickliffe; a still greater number for that of John Huss; and it would not be possible to calculate the bloodshed caused by Luther, and it is not yet over.”—*Paris Univers, organ of the Archbishop of Paris.*

“As for myself, what I regret, I frankly own, is, that they did not burn John Huss sooner, and that they did not likewise burn Luther; this happened because there was not found some prince sufficiently politic to stir up a crusade against the Protestants.”—*Ibid.*

“Protestantism of every kind, Catholicity inserts in her catalogue of mortal sins. She endures it when and where she must, but she hates it, and directs all her energies to its destruction.”—*St. Louis Shepard of the Valley, 1852.*

“As long as I live, the religious press of Paris shall be watched, and if necessary, repressed by spiritual weapons of which I can dispose. It shall either remain within the line of duty, or leave this diocese and seek elsewhere a more complacent jurisdiction to preach contempt for the hierarchy, and make war on the authority which I hold from Divine Mercy and the grace of the Holy Apostolical See.”—*Archbishop of Paris.*

## **BISHOP FARONTO.**

The following photo-engravure is a true likeness of Bishop Faronto. He is said to be the most heartless Bishop in the Philippine Islands. He is not as high in authority as Bishop Antrocolo, but the inhabitants hold him in extreme fear, as he boasts that he has been the cause of over four score men, women and children losing their lives by disobeying his orders. He claims that single-life of Bishop and Priest is only to shield them from family cares, and that Virtue is not tarnished by serving the infamous demands of the Priesthood. He further claims, as all other Priests, that a Catholic Bishop or Priest is the Vicar of God and has all power over the bodies as well as the souls of his Female Confessionists as well as all his other subjects, and to disobey or divulge his demands means banishment or death.







Bishop Faronto.





“The absurd and erroneous doctrines or ravings in defense of liberty of conscience, is a most pestilential error—a pest of all others most to be dreaded in a State.”  
—*Encyclical Letter of Pius IX., Aug. 15, 1846.*

“The profession of the papist is indispensable as a qualification for the exercise of civil and political rights.”  
—*Pope Pius, March 14, 1848.*

The infallible and “saintly” Pope Pius, from his pontifical chair, tells us that the profession of the popish religion is indispensable as a qualification for the exercise of civil and political rights. Where would these rights be, had the present pope the power to enforce his decrees? Ah! Rome tells us she endures Protestantism where she must, but let her have the power in this land, as she has had in others, and what becomes of our right to worship God according to the dictates of our conscience? What becomes of human freedom? What becomes of all that is dear to us as the descendants of a noble ancestry who won for us the freedom we now enjoy?

These are the current and outspoken testimonies of what Rome is to-day, and show what blight and ruin her full sway would bring on us, as it has on every land where she has had rule. She has blasted with worse than withering mildew the brightest garden-spots of the old world. Spain, the home of chivalry, the once proud mistress of the world, whose navies swept the seas, whose dependencies circled the earth, and whose guarantees of liberty were in advance of any cotemporary nation. Spain seemed placed by Providence under priestly rule, to show the world the effects of spiritual despotism on the

happiness and prosperity of a nation. And look at her now, with all her efforts to break the shackles of slavery—a dreary waste, haunted by monks and beggars. And shall this clime of ours ever be darkened by the gloom that has settled on that country of the orange and the nightingale—that once glorious land?

Look at Italy, the land of poetry and beauty, around whose name gather the glorious associations of antique freedom and noble heroism. Paralyzed through centuries by the gloom and curse of priestly oppression, it took almost a miracle to arouse her from her death-sleep and regain her capital from the grasp of an usurping priest. Pope Alexander VI. invited the French into Lombardy, and gave up its fairest cities to the ferocity of his son Cæsar Borgia. He was the center figure in the celebrated League of Cambrai, in which foreign tyrants joined to prostrate the power and wealth of the “Queen of the Adriatic”—the Republic of Venice, and to destroy her nationality and her liberties. Pope Julian betrayed Naples into the hands of invading despots by a scheme of infamous hypocrisy, and when men eulogized the late Pope Pius, because he emptied the gloomy prisons of Rome of 1,500 political prisoners, and permitted thousands of banished men to return to their families, what a comment was this simple act of justice on the despotism of his predecessor, who made arbitrary arrests and imprisoned and banished men and women for daring to breathe a whisper of freedom! But the eulogized Pope Pius simply followed the iron, unalterable law of Romanism.

The Council of Trent decreed:



“IF ANY ONE SHALL PRESUME TO THINK OR TEACH DIFFERENTLY FROM THESE DECREES, LET HIM BE ACCURSED.” “If any one disobey, let him be denounced by the ordinaries and perish according to law.”

Here is Rome's veto on thought itself. No clashing of thought with thought must agitate, no breath of human discussion awaken or disturb the dead, stagnant, prostration of all that stamps divinity on the immortal mind. Ruin is the result; and Ireland under this rule, although she glorifies her Protestant patriots, Robert Emmet and Grattan and Curran and Mitchell, sinks back powerless beneath the weight of a crushing hierarchy, and the “Green Isle,” with all its genius and its patriotism, lies helpless in her chains, while her exiled sons still bow to the ghostly power that enslaves them.

When all these patent facts front us, what is our duty in regard to that monstrous power which is intent upon the destruction of all that is dear to Americans, and all that gives glory to our country? Shall we send our daughters to gloomy convents, where secluded superstitious women will use all their influence to check the inquiring spirit, all that gives strength to the mind and fits women for life's battle? Shall we send our sons to teachers who have never been trained by independent thought, by the clash of mind with mind, to grapple with the problems of the hour and stimulate mind to its highest and grandest efforts? Are we ever to be fascinated by the silence and obscurity of men and women of whose antecedents we can know nothing, whose qualifications to teach must be taken for granted, and whose known object

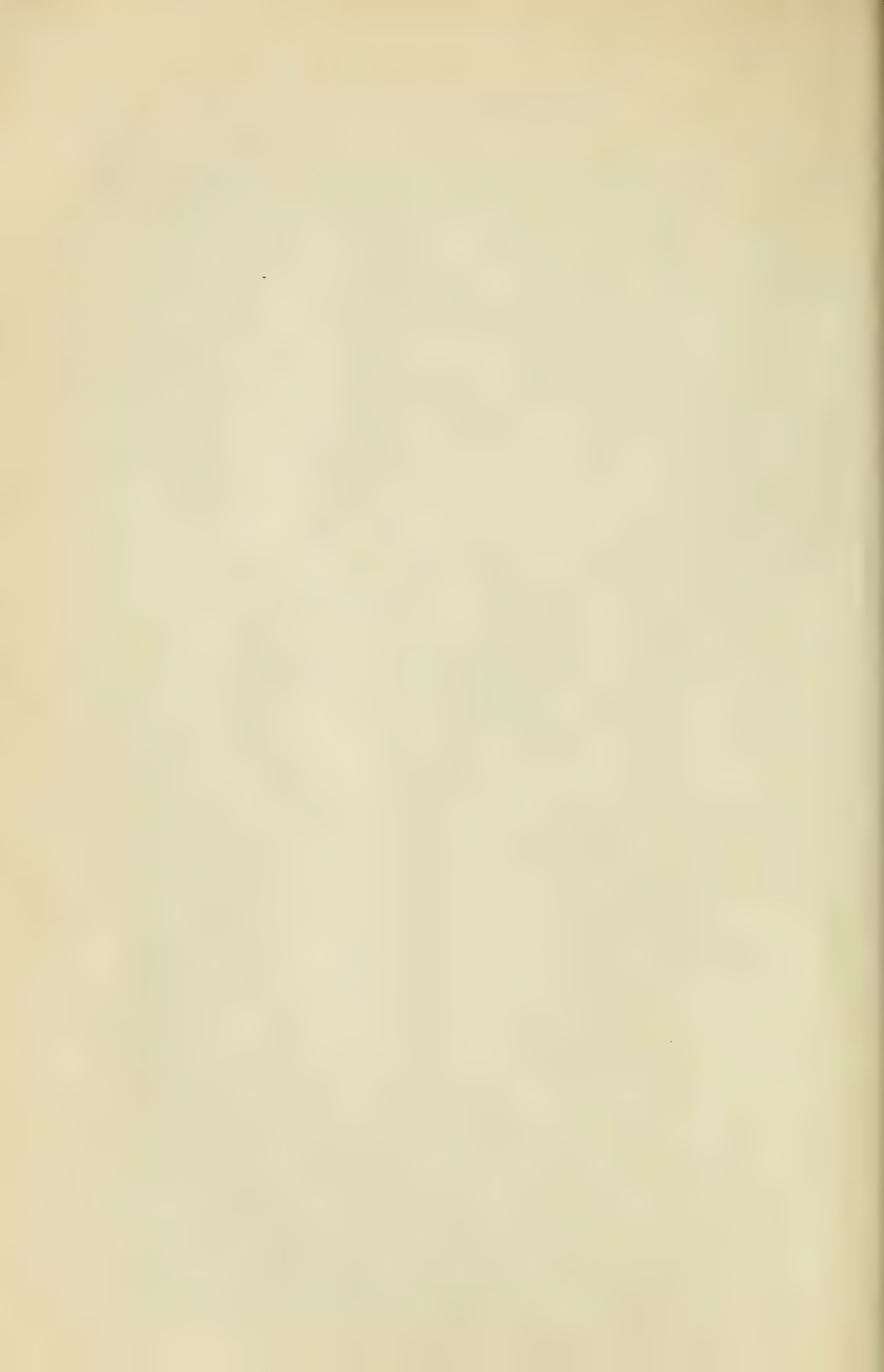


in establishing colleges and schools is to bow the intellect to Roman authority and pervert the heart from the truth of God?

Let every parent and guardian ask, Are Romanist colleges and convents erected for the purpose of educating, of enlarging and storing the mind? The answer of every intelligent man and woman must be, No. If education was the object, these hordes of foreign priests and nuns would find ample work in their own benighted lands. The sole object of their teaching is to build up Romanism, to bias the young mind and immesh it in the net of their false system. When they fail in doing this they fail in their great object, and can it be that Protestants will still make their children the victims of their machinations and subject them to the rule that ruins? Thank God the veil is partially lifted from the eyes of Protestants. The supposed learning of priests—of a class of men not one of whom has produced a book of character in America, and of women who, with a smattering of languages and a knowledge of fancy needle-work, have never caused one ripple on the current of public thought—priests and nuns, scarce one of whom could get from any impartial board of examiners a certificate of qualification to teach in our common schools—this supposed learning has been shown to be a fancy; and ignorance has been disclosed as lurking beneath priestly robes and black veils. And let the object and qualifications of these men and women be fully known, and few Protestants will sacrifice their children to swell the current of Romanist perverts, and help fulfill the priestly prophecy “that America will soon bow beneath the rule.

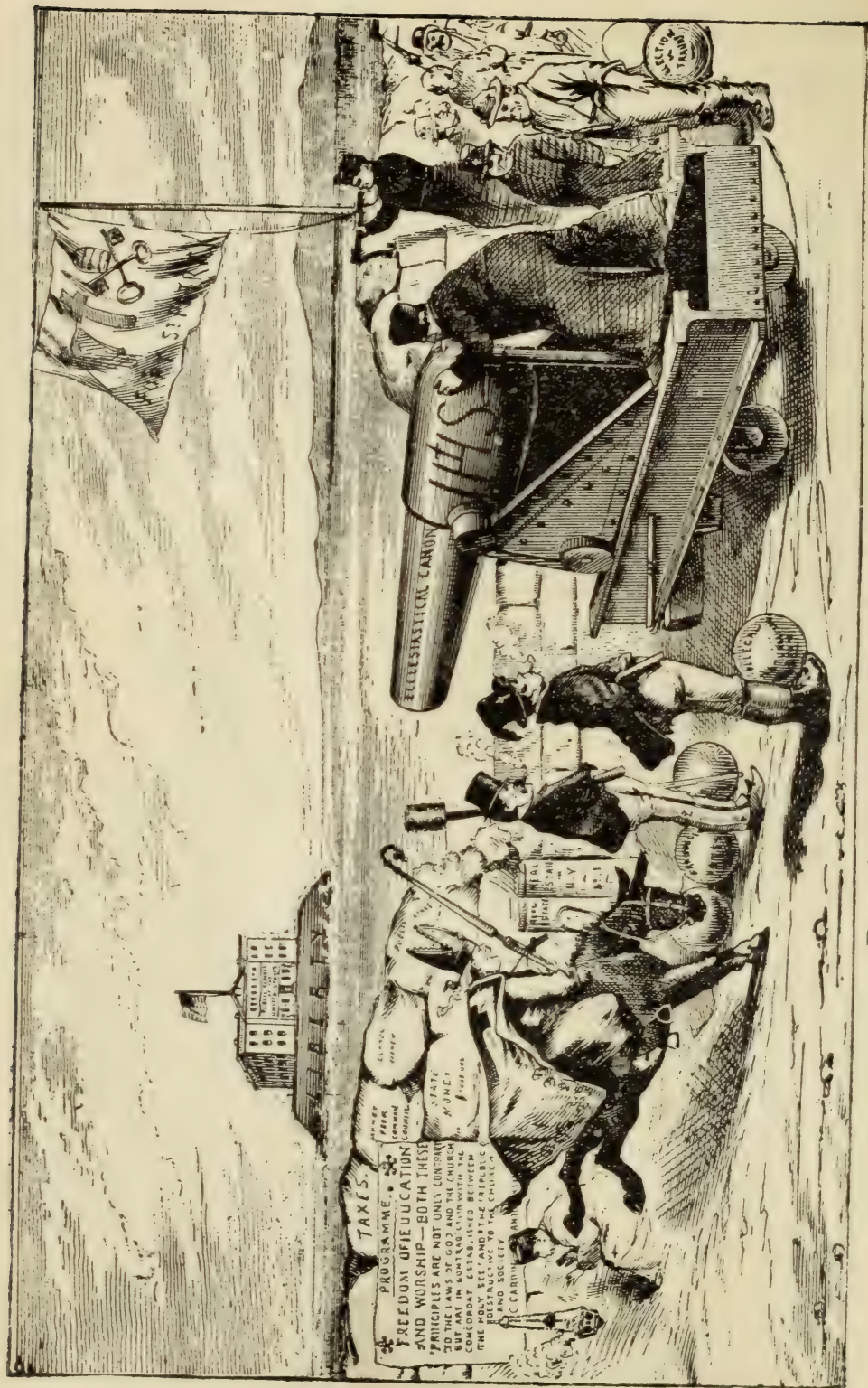
America is the strong-hold of freedom. Against it the engines of despots are directed. Once destroyed, and the very name of freedom is gone. Here, then, the final battle must be fought. Here the triumph of oppression would tell on the wide world through all coming time. Foes are mustered for the combat; the notes of preparation are heard. Lovers of your country, inheritors of the glory with which your ancestry have crowned it, the eyes of the world are upon you; the temple of liberty is committed to your keeping. Guard it, defend it; send up for it your prayers; if need be, sacrifice for it your lives.

“We must forget all feelings save the *one*; we must resign all passions save our purpose; we must behold no object save our country, and only look on death as beautiful, so that the sacrifice ascend to heaven and draw down freedom on her universe.”









Rome's Attack on Public Schools.





Education must be controlled by Catholic authorities,  
even to war and bloodshed. *Catholic World.*

The Public Schools are nurseries of vice, and the future  
of the Catholic religion in this country is bound up with the  
exclusion of all schooling not under Catholic direction and  
control. Let the Public School System go to where it came  
from—the devil. *Freeman's Journal (Catholic).*

[1]

## CHAPTER I.

### THE AMERICAN PROTECTIVE ASSOCIATION.

BY SCOTT F. HERSHEY, PH.D.,

*Lecturer on Canon Law.*

The sentiments of patriotism in our country are crystalizing. Cohesion has strongly set in. The same spirit which led the people over a century ago to rebuke the insolence of foreign rule has returned, and seems ready to resent a second instance of foreign interference, which in many ways is more galling than was that of one hundred years ago.

Foreign priestcraft is as bad, if not worse than foreign kingcraft. We might as well have the kingcraft of England as the priestcraft of Rome. We have found the kings of England quite as honorable, just and righteous, as the popes of Rome. America might as well be under kingcraft as priestcraft. It would be no worse to be ruled over by a George the III. from the banks of the Thames, than by a Leo the XIII. from the shores of the Tiber.

It is believed by many among the most sober students of American events, who have carefully observed current movements, and studied them in the light of the history of other nations, that the most terrific and hotly contested struggle for human liberties, constitutional rights, free institutions and religious privileges, which the world has ever known, is to be

fought in the early years of the twentieth century. It is believed by some that the first swell of those coming waves is upon us now. We are in immediate danger in this country of becoming subservient to a foreign potentate, whose throne is on the banks of the far-off Tiber. The pope of Rome claims the right to hold and exercise temporal power wheresoever he can secure it. To the ends thereof his entire hierarchy are subject to his will and command. The most powerful organization at his disposal, is bound by oath, to subvert the constitution and laws of all countries to the word of the pope.

### POLITICAL ROMANISM.

Hundreds of thousands of the most intelligent, just and patriotic classes of our people believe they see many proofs of the determined policy of political Romanism to radically change the laws and institutions of the country. They believe, and in proof they point to facts to show that this change is now going on. To argue that this growing class, now perhaps including nearly one-half of the entire population outside of the Roman Catholic, and in fact including many among the latter, is made up of ignorance and bigotry, is only a confession of weakness in any argument that can be made against them. They are not only not ignorant, but they include the most intelligent and best informed, and especially do they include those who are familiar with the history of the world during the last four hundred years. Nor can it be said they are led by bigotry. Among their leaders are many distinguished for their deep sense of liberty, and their outspoken words in behalf of equal rights, under the constitution, of all citizens. In their ranks are mostly those who want fair play, and seek a disinterested administration of the laws, without any particular favor to any special church organization. They are found largely in the Protestant churches which have mostly championed political liberty and religious freedom. No church in



all the world has made a finer or cleaner record in the championship of religious liberty, and the rights of private conscience, than has the Baptist Church. In this church are to be found immense numbers taking a front rank in the growing columns of organized American patriotism, demanding the overthrow of political Romanism.

### ECCLESIASTICAL TORYISM.

The elements of devotion to country, and attachment to our free institutions are by general consent and natural law, cohering and settling into organization. To decry this, does not answer it. To abuse it, is not to show it wrong. To declare it an evil, is to run counter to the lessons of all history. We should not forget that there was a period in our earlier history, when the political toryism of the country, which was in sympathy with a foreign rule for this country, first laughed, then sneered at the patriots of the colony, and then conspired against and finally fought them. So it may easily be understood how the ecclesiastical toryism of the Roman stamp wanting the rule of the pope to be supreme over this land, should decry this patriotic movement which has gloriously come upon us during the last few years.

### THE A. P. A.

There are more than a half hundred patriotic orders in this country, all of which have been called into existence because of the un-Americanism of the Roman Catholic Church. The overpowering corruptions flowing in upon us brought in by Roman Catholic immigration is the significant cause for patriotic organization. In every State, and in every town, one or more of these societies are established. They are on guard, and are to be upheld by every sincere citizen who understands their motives. They are growing as never before. They are determined as never in other years.

The society which is now receiving the most attention, and is under the heaviest fire has become familiar under the letters A. P. A., *i. e.*, the American Protective Association. In name it appeals to the just sentiments of patriotic people, and there is no justifiable objection to be filed against it.

### ORIGIN OF THE A. P. A.

This now celebrated organization, had its origin, in an Iowa town about a half dozen years ago. It was believed that the other patriotic organizations, needed a co-ordinate society, which would push the battle for relief from political Romanism through the ballot. The other patriotic societies were mainly defensive; this was to be mainly offensive. Municipal rule in most of our cities had become Rome rule. City governments were too often under papal direction. The Priest ruled the mayor, and the foreign church lorded it over the American school. The very origin of this order may be accounted for, in political ringism, ruled by the Priests. In this, the Roman Catholic hierarchy in the United States, may thank themselves for the most compact and determined organization, ever founded, to withstand the political machinery of that church.

### ITS PRINCIPLES, SPIRIT AND OBJECT.

The principles of the American Protective Association may be set forth in several propositions, very clearly stated. The defense of the American public school system; the maintenance of our free institutions; the security of a general policy of ecclesiastical non-interference in affairs of state; the preservation of our civil and religious liberties; the opposition to all government, (whether municipal, state or national), appropriations to mere ecclesiastical institutions; a settled intention to defeat in the elections, any man, Protestant or Roman Catholic, who is a mere servant of any foreign ecclesiastical ruler;

and to secure honest and worthy men in office, regardless of party. In a sentence, its avowed purpose is to establish those conditions, which will immediately liberate our free institutions from the incubus of political Romanism.

### NOT A RELIGIOUS WAR.

Any war against Roman Catholics, merely because of their religious faith, is emphatically disclaimed. Roman Catholic citizens have the same rights, under the constitution, of religious worship and church operations, enjoyed by any other church. But when any church enters the field of intrigue, to modify, change, subvert, and overthrow existing forms of law, and proceeds to revolutionize existing institutions, merely to serve an ecclesiastical purpose, which is at feud with modern civilization, it becomes a foe. And when it directs its policy in the dark, and works in secret, it is certain to compel those who are opposed to such a course, to organize in secret orders, in order to battle against the secret foe. Rome has had this experience in several countries in Europe. She need not think it strange that it is repeated here.

### CAUSES WHICH CALLED IT FORTH.

The causes which have brought forth this most remarkable, and most powerful, patriotic order, are plain to all. Principal among them, is that of the continued, uninterrupted, secret attack of the Roman Catholic Church, upon all the free institutions characteristic of representative government. In the front of these free institutions is that of the public schools. The Roman Catholic rulers in this country, and their papers, have sought to set a solid Catholic vote against our free institutions. Priest Hecker says: "The Roman Catholic is to wield his vote in order to secure Catholic ascendancy in this country." None of the Priests, or Roman papers, so talk in



Protestant circles, or through the public papers. There they pose as being friendly to our American interests. The *Catholic News*, of New York, in its issue of April 26, 1893, says that upon the first appearance of Satolli in this country, the bishops and arch-bishops took a certain position, in order not to "irritate the government and popular opinion." The same paper, in its issue of June 21, 1893, says that no State on earth, much less in America, has any right to educate her children. We see here the double dealing characteristic of Roman policy. This is infamous hypocrisy. One thing said in the secular papers and in public, for effect; and an opposite course pursued in Roman Catholic Churches. This is a sufficient cause for the American Protective Association.

#### ROMANISM IN LEAGUE WITH IMMIGRATION.

The United States has, for forty years, been a dumping ground for the refuse of European citizenship. The moral and worthy immigrant is always welcome to our country. But that we should continue, to take to our arms the criminalism and pauperism of the old world, may not be expected much longer, by even the politicians, who can barter for the foreign vote over the saloon table. Fully one-half of the immigrants for the last ten years have been Roman Catholics. Most all of the better class of immigrants are Protestants. It remains that, almost entirely, the lowest class are Roman Catholics. During the ten years, from 1880 to 1890, 6,298,743 immigrants crowded upon our shores, and 3,248,485 were members of the Roman Catholic Church. Among these are mostly found the train wreckers, robbers, plunderers, murderers and assassins of the country, Let there be no denial of this. Roman Catholic authorities confess it. In the large cities criminal statistics show, that while Roman Catholics furnish but about four per cent of the population, they produce more than one-half of the crime, if we except those cities in which there is a large per cent of negro criminals.

It is the foreign contingent in the Roman Catholic Church which is responsible for this. And the native American stock in that church, ought to unite in the laudable movement, to keep this class out of political power. Those who are flocking into the American Protective Association are determined to change these conditions.

### CANON LAW VERSUS CIVIL.

Another element entering into the sentiment, which is recruiting the American Protective Association, with thousands weekly, is the feeling that there is a radical antagonism between the laws of the papacy, and the laws of the United States. The assertions of Roman Catholic priests, as well as of the Pope, and Catholic writers on ecclesiastical law, are along the line of the superior authority of the church law. The councils of the church have so decided. Priests and Roman papers are forever proclaiming that the laws of the country must be submissive to those of the church. Rev. D. I. McDermott, dean of the diocese of Philadelphia, said in a sermon, April 15, 1894, and reported in the Philadelphia dailies at the time: "I admit that the Pope can absolve Catholics from allegiance to the form of government under which they reside." Instances might be multiplied to show the exercise of the papal power over the civil law, and they are painfully on the increase. When Roman Catholics reflect upon the methods taken by the Priests to agitate friction between their church and our civil institutions, they need not be surprised at the powerful patriotic movements of the day.

### ROMAN CATHOLICS HAVE NO DEFENCE.

These accusations are so well founded, that Roman Catholics practically admit their truthfulness. The better class of writers in Roman Catholic circles, have stated them as facts.



Those who have no sense of responsibility in their personal relations to the truth, slur, and abuse, and cry bigotry. But no reasonable and considerate reply has been made to the terrible bombardment, which has thundered from pulpit, press and platform, for the last six months, against ecclesiastical intrigues to overthrow our institutions. Every shot, which has been thrown out by them in the controversy, has flashed in the pan, or, boomerang like, has returned to weaken the cause, in the interest for which it was fired. As these lines are being written, one of these characteristic replies lies upon the table. George Parsons Lathrop, in the current issue of the North American Review (May, 1894) seeks to make a reply, to what he pleases to call the "hostility to Roman Catholics." It is a palpable confession of weakness. He does not write as an honest man, unless we choose to consider him an ignorant one. He treats the patriotic movement in altogether too light a vein. No thoughtful man, hitherto undecided, will read it, without clearly finding that the Roman Catholic Church has no defence against the leading patriotic currents of thought and action. Lathrop's treatment of the American Protective Association will help that movement on. His article is only another illustration, of which our times are full, showing how utterly incompetent and unreliable, Roman Catholic writers are, when they take a hand in the discussion of American affairs. In such articles as this of Lathrop's the American Protective Association has a just cause to be, and a sufficient reason to work.

#### STRENGTH OF THE ORDER.

No statement has been made, or will be, as to the actual membership of the order, either in a local council, in a state, in the United States, or in the world. For let it be borne in mind that this is an international order, and is moving across the world. When it belts the earth Rome will tremble.



The changes which have been wrought in municipal elections, will sufficiently show the organic strength of the organization. Such cities as Buffalo, Cleveland and St. Louis, have witnessed sudden, peaceful and astounding changes in the *morale* of municipal boards. School boards having had a majority of Roman Catholics, who administered the schools to please the Roman church, and placed a majority of Catholics in as teachers, are now without a Roman Catholic member. It may not be concluded that the American Protective Association furnished the large vote necessary to do this; but it should be known that this order created the vote, by awakening the sentiment which brought about this action. The other patriotic orders have a full share of honors. Without them the present results would not have been attained.

To give a hint of the growth of this Association, it may be stated that in the state of Massachusetts, there are now one hundred councils, where a year ago less than a dozen existed. And this one hundred will soon be several hundred.

#### FAULTS IN THE ORDER.

When it is considered that this wonderful movement of organized patriotism, is but a few years old, and has grown with a rapidity the like of which no movement at any time has ever enjoyed in our country, it will not seem strange if in its work, and methods, there be found signs of minor weaknesses, impracticabilities, and crudeness. Every reason suggests a just modification of ultra elements, and a certain, perfect adaptation to the most critical principles of true Americanism.

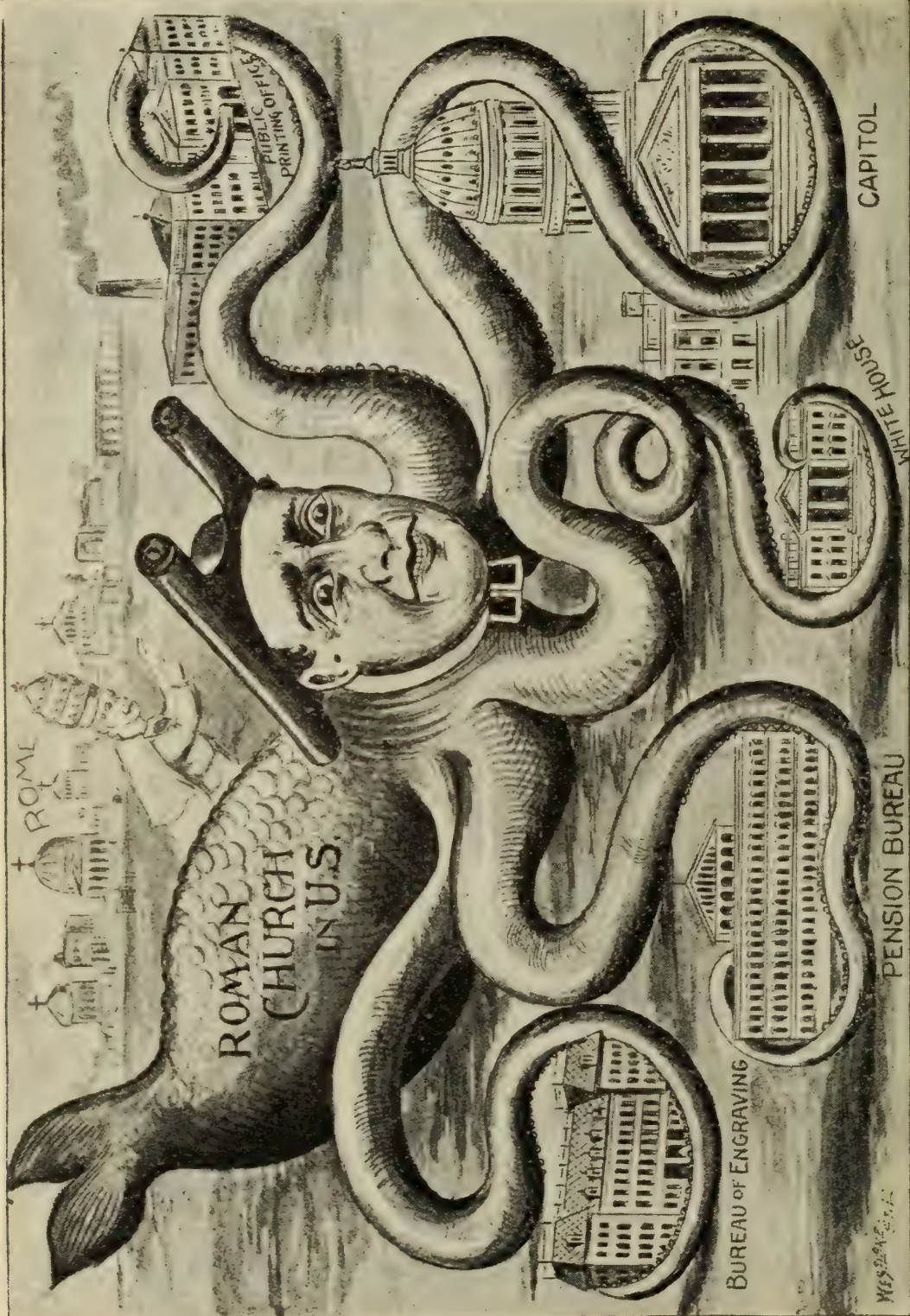
#### ITS FUTURE.

This great patriotic society will move forward in its work, shaping itself to every fresh contingency, and making itself felt as never yet, in the efforts for better and more economical

government. It is non-partisan, and if any party seeks to control it for mere partisan ends, it will declare for the overthrow of that party. If any existing party breaks with its principles, and disobeys its just demands for a cleaner administration in city, state and nation, then that party will go to its grave. It has no party interests to seek of its own, nor will it lend its strength to mere party ends in the interest of any partisan organization. It controls no party. And will be controlled by none. But it requires from all parties a subscription to a platform of American principles, and a pronounced loyalty to American institutions. It will send men, not necessarily its own members, to the legislature, who will write ecclesiastical rule out of legislation. And on this platform it is believed the great body of our people will stand, and having done all, continue to stand.







ROMAN CHURCH  
IN U.S.

ROMA

PUBLIC PRINTING OFFICE

BUREAU OF ENGRAVING

PENSION BUREAU

WHITE HOUSE

CAPITOL

WESLEY

# THE HISTORY OF THE

REIGN OF THE GREAT KING

OF GREAT BRITAIN

BY

JOHN HANCOCK, ESQ. OF THE BARR

IN TWO VOLUMES

LONDON: PRINTED BY J. HANCOCK, AT THE SIGN OF THE

WINDMILL, IN ST. MARTIN'S LANE, 1750.

THE SECOND EDITION, CORRECTED AND ENLARGED.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

LONDON: PRINTED BY J. HANCOCK, AT THE SIGN OF THE

WINDMILL, IN ST. MARTIN'S LANE, 1750.

In 1900 Rome will take this country and keep it.

PRIEST HECKER.

We will take this Country and build our Institutions over  
the grave of Protestantism.

FATHER HECKER.

We must take part in the elections, move in a solid mass  
in every State against the party pledged to sustain the integ-  
rity of the Public Schools.

CARDINAL McCLOSKEY.



## CHAPTER II.

### POLITICAL ROMANISM IN WASHINGTON.

BY REV. SCOTT F. HERSHEY, PH.D.

#### WASHINGTON THE BEAUTIFUL.

At the head of navigation, on the east bank of the principal arm of the Potomac, beautiful for situation is Washington City, the capital of the United States. Viewing the city from the dome of the capitol, the hills of Arlington, or those of Anacostia, the impressions are most pleasing and lasting. There are few more picturesque scenes in this country than that which meets the beholder, who stands in front of the old Lee mansion at Arlington, and with eye cast beyond the Potomac, beholds a vision of architectural variety and beauty and landscape magnificence. There is no finer city among the capitals of the world, unless it be Paris, the beautiful. But with the Palisades of Virginia and Maryland, like two arms folding the city to the bosom of the Potomac, and soon to be covered with piles of architecture and broken with parks and winding avenues, even Paris will not excel.

Washington is a well executed design for the government buildings and national institutions. It has structures most imposing for the housing of most all of the great departments of the government, while others are under construction and still others are to follow. The National Library Building, now

nearing completion, occupies a whole square, will hold more shelf space than any library in the world, and will be one of the grandest structures of its kind. All of this a vast country with growing resources, demands. In these immense houses of marble, granite and brick, the business of the most wealthy and powerful government on earth is conducted. It is of the largest consequence possible that the business be executed on high principles of justice and honesty, and in the interest of the entire people of the whole country.

The administration of the government at Washington should be made with reference to the position of our people in civilization; and consistent with our history; and with a view to our destiny. It should be free from all sectarian interference or dictation. No ecclesiastical organization should be suffered to hold a balance of power; or its secret work of control be tolerated. These statements express principles in our system, which are self-evident to the American people.

#### THE BLACK ART OF ECCLESIASTICAL DIPLOMACY.

All of the religious societies in our country have conceded the right and justice of this principle of ecclesiastical non-interference, except two, the Mormon Church and the Roman. The former has been merely local and accidental; while the latter is general and threatening.

Political Romanism is a growing danger in matters pertaining to our general government. National legislation has been very frequently and greatly affected by the black art of Roman ecclesiastical diplomacy. The darkest conspiracies against governments in the old world have been traced to this black art. What has been done among the nations of Europe, is being done in the capital city of the greatest of the Western nations. It is difficult to make our people see it. So secret and cunning are laid the plots, and operated the plans, and organized the schemes of this wily and malicious ecclesiastical

toryism, that it is wholly impossible to fully estimate the deep intentions and political evil which it portends to our country. The mask is fast being torn aside, and we see disclosed the ugly features of the relentless foe of free institutions.

National evils seem to have rare diplomatic foresight, in locating and operating their most subtle influences at the seat of National government.

The liquor men of the country, upon the notice of a moment, can bring the most potent force to bear upon Congress. At the opening of the war the institution of slavery—conscientiously upheld then by the best people of the South—was found strongly intrenched at Washington, especially in the all-powerful social circle, which maintains at the capital. So, Romanism early formed her policy in Washington, for more than a century has patiently pursued it, and lately has exposed the fruit of more than one hundred years of secret work. It is a part of the system of papal administration to direct and control, and finally, subvert governments.

### THE OLDEST JESUIT COLLEGE.

There is not a capital of the world in which Rome is not strong, except the Oriental nations, which will have none of the intrigues of Roman diplomacy. But in no city in the world, in these last years, has Rome been gathering her forces as in our own beloved capital city. In the eighteenth century she established on the Georgetown Heights, now a part of Washington, a Jesuit college, which was the first Jesuit institution, with full college equipment, founded in this country. There is perhaps no other institution in the land, which during the last two years has found so many of its men called to important government positions. Those who have studied the inside machinery of our national system will understand how this is accomplished; while Americans generally will see what the object is. Let it be said in passing, that a careful



study of the internal history of the American governments—the United States, Canada, Mexico, Central America and South America—will not show in this century a period of twenty-five years, clear of Romish intrigues and schemes to manipulate the governments in the interest of church purposes, and in agreement with the policy of the Roman popes.

### JESUITS AT WASHINGTON.

The Romanism at Washington is of the Jesuit type. Jesuit colleges, Jesuit clubs, Jesuit churches, Jesuits prominent in the judicial, legislative and departmental branches of the government, with Jesuit principles and methods protruding everywhere! It is more than likely that there is no other capital city in the world having so many Jesuits. And yet the number does not run up into the hundreds, for the order is not a large one in the world. The European capitals will not tolerate them. The German Parliament has just said that the Jesuits must stay *out*. Our own government extends to them a bid to strangle our national life and overthrow our hard earned and popular institutions.

### INTERVIEW WITH A CABINET MINISTER.

In the early fall of 1893 the writer of this chapter sought an interview, in his private office, with a member of the Cabinet. Upon opening the conference he said to the secretary that his intention was to mention neither his name nor that of the department. Then a one-half hour was taken in discussing the semi-monthly collecting tour of Catholic women through the building, procuring money for the Catholic churches and institutions, and the strange espial kept by the church over the confidential affairs of the heads of the government: A part of that interview ran this wise: “Mr. Secretary, why is it that in many of the departments, bureaus and leading divisions, the





**Bishop Antrocolo.**





### **BISHOP ANTROCOLO.**

The following is a photo-engraving of Bishop Antrocolo, who rules Catholicism in the Philippine Islands with an iron hand. His decisions are final in all matters of Church and State. He is reputed to be worth \$2,000,000, and each year extorts \$100,000 from the poverty-stricken Priest-ridden natives, which was tolerated by the professed civilized Government of Spain. He lives in affluence, while those about him are burdened with the uncivilized mode of eking out an existence for their families, made doubly severe by being compelled to contribute an unreasonable amount to the Romish Church out of every dollar they earn. There is no escaping the greedy hand of Bishop and Priest, as each individual's private matters are carefully looked after by Rome's tithe gatherers.

chief clerk, private secretary, or stenographer are Roman Catholics? The frequency of this shows both method and purpose."

"Well, I know this is not the case in my department," he replied. "My private secretary is a Protestant; I have known him for thirty years. My stenographer is a Protestant. I —"

"No, sir; excuse me, Mr. Secretary, your stenographer is not a Protestant. She was when you appointed her, but since your appointment, and because of it she became a Roman Catholic. And all your confidential and official correspondence relative to appointments, promotions, discharges and changes is valuable information to the Roman Catholic Church."

The secretary promised to stop the regular collecting visits of the Catholic women. Failing to do so, a month later a letter, brought in reply, a copy of an order terminating this abuse. The secretary was real mad, and wrote a pert letter. But when told that the attention of the country would be called to his defense of the evil, if he permitted it to remain, he feared to go before the country with such an issue.

#### FORCING MONEY FROM THE CLERKS.

A residence at the capital is not calculated to inspire any feeling for this political church, except mistrust and disgust. The Roman Catholic Church in its operations at the seat of government virtually levies a tax on clerical positions, and collects it. There are many clerks in all the departments, who, because of strong political or personal influence. or both, are secure in their places. Such may defy the Roman church. Many others, though the number is not so large as the former class, have been in government employ so long, and become so trained in their work, and their places would be so difficult to fill, that they are seldom disturbed. Both of these classes give to the visiting sisters of charity, or refuse as they may please.



But there is a large number of clerks, many of them faithful and efficient, who well know that a regular payment of money to the collecting agents of the Roman church goes a great way in securing the permanency of their places.

By the midsummer of 1893 nearly all the departments and bureaus, and in some of the buildings all the divisions and rooms were entered once or twice a month by these women. Because of outrageous abuse, which called forth severe denunciation, it has been stopped in two of the departments—perhaps more. But this is only temporary, and in a short while, perhaps already, the custom will be restored. Most of the departments have notices posted, warning all persons except members of congress, that no one is permitted within during certain hours of the day. The Catholic women pay no heed to these orders. They are not expected to. The agents of this church enjoy special government privileges. They walk into the rooms, and up to every desk; and pause for a moment. They do not ask for anything. Their presence, and the warning it carries with it, is a demand quite emphatic enough. Most of the clerks know their promotion may depend on their cheerful gifts. Many have learned that their dismissal from government services was the penalty for refusing to pay over money. If there is a more despicable scheme of blackmailing practiced than this it has never been brought to light.

#### PARTICULAR CASES CITED.

The Bureau of Engraving is quite a Roman Catholic institution, as to management. Though the superintendent may not be aware of it his assistant is. In one day in this bureau there were twenty-one promotions, nineteen of which were Roman Catholics. In a room in another bureau, six clerks—strange to relate, all members of the same Protestant church—were the same day reduced in pay, from three to five dollars each. Five were old soldiers. Their vacated places were given to

six other persons, five of whom were Roman Catholics. In this particular room nine-tenths of the clerks are now Roman Catholics. In one departmental division seventy-eight per cent. of the clerks were Roman Catholics. For want of work this division was abolished. Afterwards many of the Roman Catholics were given positions. Not so with the Protestants, who were told that no new appointments were being made. In 1893, an investigation in one division of the Agricultural Department showed one-half of the one hundred and fifty clerks were Roman Catholics. The per cent. is increased since. In the Land Office there is but one chief of a division, appointed under a former administration, retaining his place. He is a Roman Catholic. In the Bureau of Engraving, the assistant superintendent, who is an active Roman Catholic, has contrived to retain his position, through Democratic and Republican administrations, while it is noticeable that all Protestant Democrats, above the civil service clerkships, were dismissed very promptly. In one division in the printing office containing fifty clerks, forty are Roman Catholics. These instances, known to the writer, might be extended over pages. Such things are not merely accidental. They do not certainly occur by any law of accident with which we are familiar. They show a most vicious custom, for which the Roman Catholic Church is to be held answerable. They are wrong in principle and evil in practice.

This enforced tax on government positions works quite as badly for the Roman Catholics as for the Protestants. The priesthood will exert itself more to keep in office a Protestant who pays money than for a Catholic who will not. In this way the Roman Catholics are heavily taxed. Some pay from ten to twenty-five per cent. of their salaries. Though contrary to what is claimed to be a settled policy, many Roman Catholic families are represented in government service by two and more members. There were four members of one certain family holding office in Washington and drawing pay from the



government. One of the daughters was employed in one of these priest ridden bureaus. Some companion remarked to her that her family got a good deal of money from the government, she said: "No, we have to pay a great deal over to the church in order to hold our positions."

#### CATHOLICS BEFORE OLD SOLDIERS.

In the winter of 1893 one of the Posts of the Grand Army of the Republic contemplated the worthy undertaking of giving a free Christmas dinner to the indigent old soldiers, many of whom had hard enough time to secure the bare necessities sufficient to overcome hunger. It was a severe season, not so much from the rigors of an unusual winter, as a condition of the hard times felt throughout the country. These men, valiant and true in time of the country's need, had gathered in and about the nation's capital. They were without work, many of them were without homes, not a few were almost shelterless. The laudable undertaking of the Post of the Grand Army to give these men a Christmas dinner, met with the approval of all classes. It was a heavy task. To make the burden easy, a request was made upon the secretary of one of leading departments, to permit solicitations through the department, at such an hour as not to interfere with the public business. It was promptly refused. Though at this very time, Roman Catholic collecting agents were going through some of the divisions of this department at regular intervals, and at any hour of the day, procuring money for their churches and ecclesiastical enrichment.

#### MARCHING BETWEEN THE NUNS.

A friend of the writer is employed in the Pension Bureau. On one occasion he was among the very first to pass the pay desk, and receive his semi-monthly salary. As he moved



away he found he had to pass two of these Catholic women so standing that he had to walk between them. Each held out a box. He passed into a quiet corner of the room, and watched the procession of clerks receive their pay, and then like himself, pass between these ecclesiastical tax collectors. It took two and one half hours, for the more than two thousand clerks to receive their pay and pass out. There was flowing into the boxes a steady stream of money. Many of them upon receiving their pay, placed a part in their pocket, and kept part back, knowing the demand that would be made. Is ours a land of the free and a government of the just?

The politico-ecclesiastical machine that will levy and collect such a tax, will, upon gaining more power, coerce from Protestants large sums of money, and by ways more objectionable and unjustifiable. Americans have it within their power, and it is their patriotic duty, to conduct a reform that will clear out this debris of political impurity and priestly control of our political institutions.

#### THE ROMAN CHURCH A MONEY POWER.

By this system of coercion upon thousands of government clerks, compelling them to pay money as a price for continuance in office: and by lotteries, fairs and gambling devices constantly held, and the tickets for which are thrust upon the clerks at their desks, who often find it to their advantage to not only purchase tickets, but attend and spend considerable money; and by government appropriations direct, made under some pretence, none of which there is any just reason for; by all these ways, and others, such as forcing young children to sign property over to ecclesiastics, the Roman Catholic Church in the national capital is becoming enriched beyond all estimation. The Roman Catholics of the capital are, with few exceptions, poor, and most of them very poor, yet there is not a city in the country, with even twice the population of Wash-

ington, in which the Roman church holds title to so much wealth. The Roman Catholics have twelve million dollars worth of property in the city of Washington, largely secured since the Civil War. Fully two-thirds of this represents contributions by Protestants, gotten from government clerks by a system of beggary, with more or less of coercion in it, and from the government by appropriations, which are regularly made to some of their institutions. All of the Protestant holdings in this city do not approach in value half of this amount. This immense ecclesiastical power has now become a menace of frightful proportions. There is in this city one Presbyterian, one Lutheran, one Episcopal, and one Methodist church of fine architectural proportions. Then there is one Baptist, one Congregational, and two Episcopal churches, large, but plain, and without architectural ornamentation. The reason for this paucity and poverty of the Protestant churches is found in the fact that the members are mostly government clerks of small incomes. There is no city in the country, of equal population, with so many vast marble and granite Roman Catholic churches, of almost cathedral pretensions and proportions, costing, with the land, from a quarter of a million to a million dollars each. On this vast property the Roman Catholic Church stubbornly refuses to pay any tax, And the Protestant element in the population seem content to be taxed so much heavier in order that these large and valuable properties may go without being taxed. Why shall we not learn a lesson when the remedy will be comparatively easy? When the Mexican government, finding itself driven into bankruptcy and the country into poverty by this same Roman Church, was forced to readjust the property holdings of the ecclesiastics, it was discovered that fully one fourth of all the property in the country was held by the church. The current is going in the same direction in the United States. What seems perfectly stupid in the situation, is that Protestants are furnishing most of the money to the Roman Catholic institutions and then

### ARRAIGNMENT OF LUTHER.

Chancellor—Martin Luther, do you maintain your writings, or are you willing to retract?

Luther—Most serene Emperor and gracious Lords, how can I retract writings in which I have treated faith in the purest manner?

Chancellor—Will you retract or will you not?

Luther—Unless I am convinced by the testimony of Scripture I cannot, and *I will not retract*. Here I stand, I can do no more; may God help me; Amen.

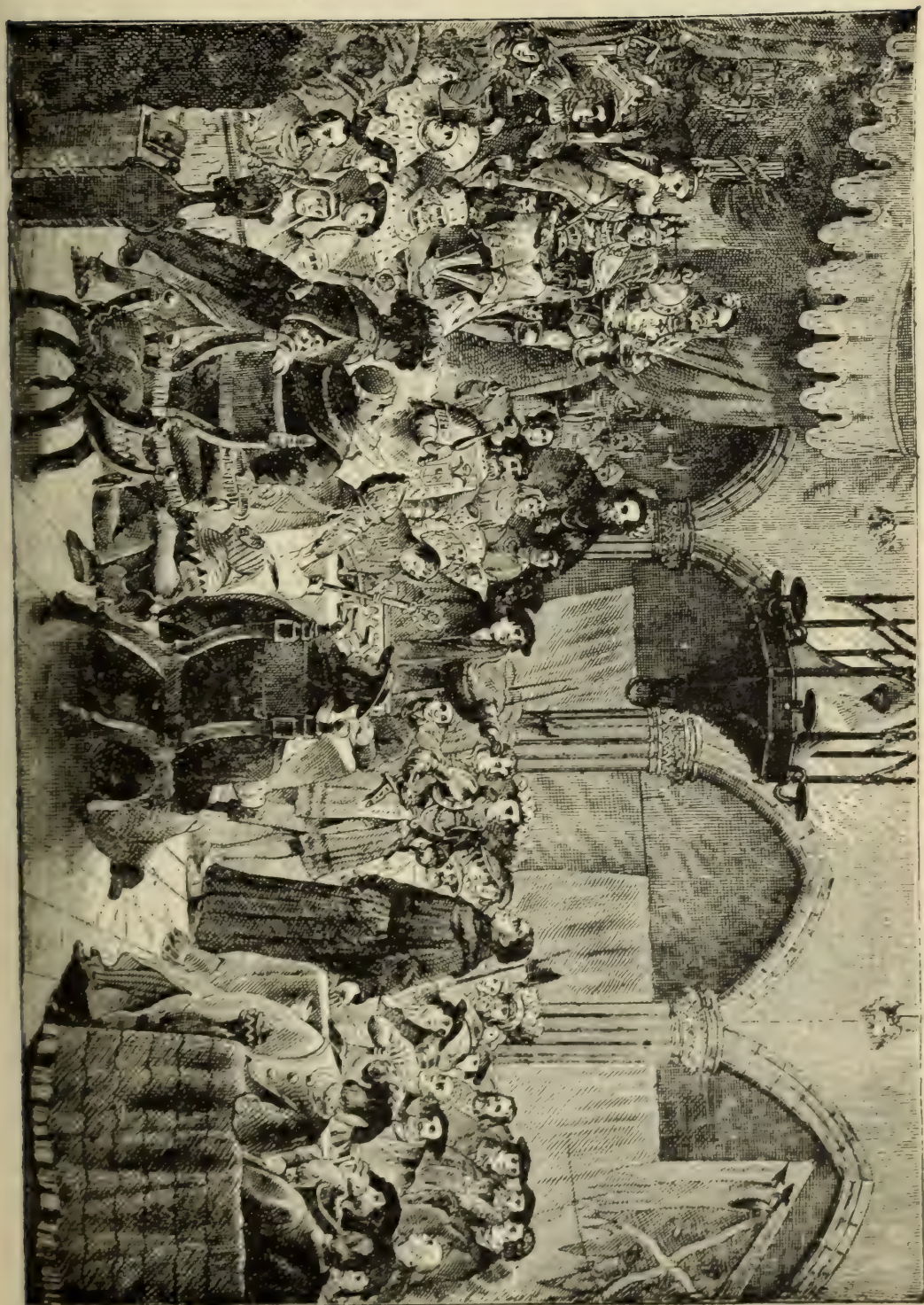
[xx]



The first of these is the fact that the United States is a young nation, and that its history is a history of growth and expansion. The second is the fact that the United States is a nation of immigrants, and that its history is a history of the struggle for a common identity. The third is the fact that the United States is a nation of free men, and that its history is a history of the struggle for freedom.

The first of these is the fact that the United States is a young nation, and that its history is a history of growth and expansion. The second is the fact that the United States is a nation of immigrants, and that its history is a history of the struggle for a common identity. The third is the fact that the United States is a nation of free men, and that its history is a history of the struggle for freedom.

The first of these is the fact that the United States is a young nation, and that its history is a history of growth and expansion. The second is the fact that the United States is a nation of immigrants, and that its history is a history of the struggle for a common identity. The third is the fact that the United States is a nation of free men, and that its history is a history of the struggle for freedom.







help pay their taxes in addition. The day of adjustment will be as unpleasant for the Roman Catholics, as it will be belated by the Protestants. But it is coming fast.

#### THE PRESIDENT'S SUBMISSION TO THE POPE.

The President of the United States has for years humbled himself before the papal power. One president makes appointments simply to please the Roman priesthood. One of these by gross diplomatic blunders came near involving us in ugly complications with a foreign power. The same president attended, as chief guest, a greatly advertised Catholic banquet, and sat silent, and listened to the first toast spoken to the honor of the Pope of Rome, and the second to the President of the United States. This, as custom and etiquette prevail in diplomatic circles, was a formal notice that Roman Catholics hold first allegiance to the Pope of Rome, and then to the President of the United States. Another president calls on the Cardinal of the Roman Church in this country for political conference, and then proceeds to do several things to please the Roman Catholics, all of which beyond doubt was arranged for at that conference. This same President repeatedly sends gifts and letters of congratulation to the Pope. This is of course unprecedented as relates to any foreign power, with which we are not in diplomatic relations. The supercilious conduct towards the Pope of Rome is a humiliation to the dignity of our people, which is nothing short of shameful disgrace. It will e'er long receive the rebuke it greatly deserves. It misrepresents the American spirit to the intelligent classes of the world, and gives a false view of our Protestant interests.

The *Civilita Cattolica*, the organ of the Pope at Rome, declares that the respectful and frequent communications of the President of the United States to the Pope, is an indication that the American people are in favor of the Roman Catholic Institutions, and are ready for a papal legation at the Capital.

## THE SENATE BECOMING ROMAN CATHOLIC.

It is not too soon to warn the country that in the not very remote future, there may be danger of the Roman Catholic Church holding the balance of power in the United States Senate. If the same trend, now at work, be unchecked for nine years, that danger will confront us. Then all the Presidential appointments will have to be made to suit that church. It is a settled policy, or incidental to a settled policy, of the Roman Catholic Church throughout the world, to gain and hold the balance of power in the highest branch of the legislative departments of all the governments. This has steadily grown in France for years. It was supposed to have been accomplished in Germany. When Victoria came to the throne of England there were but two Roman Catholics in the House of Lords; now there are forty. Out of the last eight United States Senators elected, five are Roman Catholics. Several years ago, when the President appointed to positions men who were known to have no favor for using government money for the ecclesiastical end of the Roman Catholic Church, a committee of influential ecclesiastics waited upon the Senate, and in the Senate rooms sought to coerce Senators to reject the appointments, and before leaving made a threat that the Roman Catholic Church would see to it that there would be a change in the government. In accord with that threat priests all over the country instructed their people, at the proper time, how to vote.

## ROMAN CATHOLIC PRIESTS IN THE LOBBIES.

The offensive marks of this political system of religion, not only operate in the Senate, and in the Judiciary, as is seen in the recent and successful move to place a Jesuit in the Supreme Court of the United States. But if anything, the House of Representatives is still more subject to the lobby work of the



Roman Catholic Priests. Very true; it is seen quite frequently that protestant ministers are addressing important committees of the House. But this is always in the interest of some clear measure of reform, or wholesome law, and never in the interest of any church. The presence of priests about the House, is to secure some measure of value only to the Roman Catholic Church. In this way grants of land are made, and appropriations of money, to Roman Catholic Institutions. Year after year the Providence Hospital in Washington, has had an appropriation of \$19,000 per annum, to care for a certain specified number of persons needing treatment, and not able to pay for it. Providence Hospital is purely a Roman Catholic establishment; while there are those in the city wholly unsectarian. By the spirit and letter of the act, permitting this appropriation, this Roman Catholic Hospital is only entitled to a per cent of this sum, equal to the per cent of persons treated, who belong to this indigent class. Two-thirds of this number may be treated; but the full \$19,000 is annually drawn from the United States Treasury. The walls of Providence Hospital could tell a story of misuse of money, most criminal. Several years ago when an important piece of legislation was before the House; which had been before the country and generally approved, the press of all sections and the religious press as well (except the Roman Catholic papers) sustaining it; and which had in Congress the support of members of all parties, suddenly and unexpectedly, met, in vote, a most disastrous defeat. "How is this to be accounted for?" asked a member. His friend replied, "I will show you," and taking his friend by the arm he led him on a tour of the lobby rooms of the House, and pointed out nine Jesuits priests. Will this condition be continued indefinitely, and to the great detriment of the country, and the independence of National Legislation? After a while the people will be heard from. We have been hearing from professional politicians and ecclesiastical intriguers, about long enough.



THE ROMAN CATHOLIC DEPARTMENT OF THE GENERAL  
GOVERNMENT.

Many of the branches of the general government, are falling under the control of the Catholic Church. This is true of the Pension Bureau, and it is true of certain divisions in the Printing Office. Though one of them denied he was a Roman Catholic, all of the members forming the Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia, were educated in Roman Catholic Schools. So that Court may be said to be entirely composed of Roman Catholics. Chief Justice Alvey, of Maryland, is the son of a Roman Catholic mother; Judge Morris, of Washington City, is a leading Jesuit lawyer; and Judge Shepherd, of Texas, is also a Roman Catholic. This is the Court of last resort in the District of Columbia, the only appeal from its judgments being to the United States Supreme Court. To show how judicial a mind Judge Morris has, read his paper delivered at the Catholic Congress in Chicago, on "The Independence of the Holy See," and then be reminded of the facts of history, and connect them with the signs of our times.

But the Indian Bureau, is in a real sense the Roman Catholic department of the government. That church maintains an ecclesiastical bureau—a sort of a secret service machine—at Washington, for the express purpose of controlling the Indian Bureau. The agents in the field communicate with this ecclesiastical office, before they report to the government. The Roman Catholic Church gets a half million dollars a year out of the government appropriations for the Indian Bureau. The Indian Bureau at present is administered wholly to the satisfaction of the Roman Church. It has lately abolished the office of Superintendent of Indian Schools, which means that the schools are to be operated as ecclesiastical schools. The inner history of the Indian Bureau would make a whole volume on Roman Catholic political corruption. The reader's attention is commended to the special treatment of this subject

in another chapter in this work, written by my esteemed friend, that whole hearted American patriot, General Thomas Morgan, late Commissioner of Indian Affairs.

### THE ROMAN CATHOLIC UNIVERSITY.

Just beyond the city limits, wisely and beautifully located, with large grounds, and two fine buildings already up, is the National Catholic University. This makes the third institution of learning, of the higher grade, established by this church at the seat of the government. This is quite suggestive, to those who are familiar with the methods of the Roman hierarchy. These are to be the training ground, for those who in later years may administer the affairs of government, according to the papal pattern. And yet these things could not be, but for the short-sightedness of Protestants. Miss Caldwell, who gave several hundred thousand dollars to establish the Catholic University, belonged to one of the oldest Protestant families of Kentucky. Miss Drexel, of Philadelphia, who has given over a million dollars to Roman Catholic institutions; belongs to a family which is Baptist on the one side and Methodist on the other. There are ten thousand girls from Protestant families in convent schools in our country. When will this folly stop? Every Protestant father who consents to his sort of schooling for his daughter, ought to be compelled to read the history of Roman Catholic intrigues in Protestant families in France. It is most impressive, that our homes need nothing, more than books on this matter of Roman Catholic manipulation, of our country, home and honor, to serve the base ends of ecclesiastical greed and ambition. When the advancement of papal policy is considered, it is found that no plot is too thick, no intrigue too deep, no conspiracy too dark, and no crime too infamous, to be carried out. If this awful indictment appears to be too strong, let anyone, having such a suspicion, write to the writer of this



chapter, and a list of wholly reliable books will be named, which will more than substantiate the charge. And it is a gloomy thought that Protestant families are lending their prestige, intelligence and wealth, and bartering their daughters to such atrocious schemes.

#### SATOLLI AND THE BRECKENRIDGE CASE.

Civil courts must submit to the rule of ecclesiastical law. The Pope's agent must be consulted on the summoning of witnesses. In the celebrated Breckenridge case, conducted before Judge Bradley's court in Washington, it was found necessary to secure the attendance of some Roman Catholic women in an institution at St. Louis. The civil authorities had to get the consent of Satolli. The writer of this article vouches of the reliability of the statement that Satolli—and not the court—summonsed these women, and directed them in the authority of the church to appear and testify. Let Americans consider what will be the condition of American justice when the Roman Catholic Church, upon becoming more powerful, shall order her people not to appear in court except when it is to her advantage.

#### SATOLLI'S HYPOCRISY.

Shortly after establishing his papal head-quarters in Washington, Satolli testified in a Jersey court, that final papa authority had been ablegated to him, and no appeal could be taken from his decision. If this be true, then, he is not merely a deputy pope, but a pope *de facto*. He is a foreigner by birth, training and intentions, with no desire to become an American citizen, but is wholly out of sympathy with American laws and liberties, and is at no point, in accord with our constitutional and statutory law; yet he is vested with full judicial and mandatory powers of the Roman papacy, to mould



the political destinies of America as he may please. The establishment of a papal legate at Washington should be looked at in the light of the charge, given to a new pope at his induction into office: "Remember, thou art placed on the throne of Peter as the Ruler of Rome *and the World*."

During the first eight months of his career in this country, Satolli posed, upon every opportunity, as a champion of liberty and American institutions. His championship of our American spirit become the laudations of the Roman Catholic press. Behold what a friend of Americans this Satolli is! But wait; shortly this sinister Italian priest, with the spirit of the old time Jesuit, is to play an open hand. He has been so stupidly ignorant of the American character, that he has recently fallen into blunder following blunder. In a public address in Washington city he has made an attack on the American public school system, and advocated congressional action in behalf of the Roman Catholic Church schools. The thunder that came back fairly took him off his feet. Pulpit, press and platform told him he had aroused the nation. The writer of this chapter promptly challenged him to a public debate on the public and parochial school question. He was told he must reply. He was diplomatic enough to explain away his address; but in an unguarded sentence, he declared that his church required a change in our public schools. As to his oft repeated assertions, that his church was in full harmony with all that is American, let his own order, as to the authority of his church over the civil laws, be a sufficient answer. Ask Roman Catholics to read it. Under date of April 5, 1894, Satolli issued this order, in a private correspondence and through the law officer of his legation: "It is well enough known that by Canon law all ecclesiastics, and by greater right bishops, are personally exempt from secular courts, whether in ecclesiastical causes, or in causes either civil or criminal, unless the Holy See by concordat takes away their privilege." And it must be acknowledged that this is a correct principle

of canon law, but it is false and dangerous teaching for this country.

### THE PAPAL THRONE ON THE POTOMAC.

It is settled by the indisputable verdict of the most reliable history, that the Roman Catholic Church through all the centuries, since she entered upon her proposed conquest of the world, has been infatuated with an ambition for power; and after seeking power with a zeal that brooked no obstacles, she had exercised it in the most intolerant spirit. It is as clearly settled that the animus behind all schemes and conspiracies against laws and governments, is found in the papal rule on the Tiber. It has become the most burning issue in the field of political discussion, whether this power, enthroned on the Tiber, shall be allowed to set up, and maintain, a branch establishment on the Potomac?

The government at Washington has been more than once in almost fatal touch with the Pope of Rome. The question of our government holding diplomatic relations with that of the pope, has been up in secret Roman Catholic council, and has been a matter for conference in the chambers of the propaganda at Rome.

At one period, during the existence of the Papal States in Italy. we had an ambassador representing our government at the seat of the papal government. At one time, when General Cass was minister for the United States in Rome, the American and English Protestants, in that city, met in a private house for a quiet sabbath worship. They even abstained from singing in their services, in order that they might not offend the Roman Catholic Church. But Roman Catholics manifested an intense hatred. The Roman papers in this country, notably the organ of the Bishop of New York, became almost malicious in bitterness, and complaint against any sort of Protestant services in Rome. This is a striking



illustration of the way in which that church favors liberty and religious rights. General Cass was shortly elected by his State, Michigan, to the Senate of the United States. When the bill on appropriations was reported, he moved to strike out the item for the support of the ambassador to Rome. Upon this motion he delivered a speech worth reading now. The motion prevailed. And so our relations terminated with the papal government. The Roman Catholic Church can credit this to its own bigotry and intolerance.

#### LINCOLN'S WARNING.

The State Department correspondence at Washington shows that President Lincoln feared some friction with the pope during the War. At one time he warns the pope, through Secretary of State Seward, that the principle of the Government of the United States was that of non-interference with foreign nations involved in internal commotion; and expressed his hope that the pope would respect that principle. The pope directs the bishops of New Orleans and New York to take a stand in the war, and then despatches a letter of congratulation and recognition to the leader of the Southern Confederacy.

#### SCHEME OF NAPOLEON THE THIRD.

Americans should not forget the most gigantic national crime attempted in the nineteenth century. To Napoleon the Third, a favorite child of the papacy, was assigned the papal scheme of uniting the armies of France, Spain and England to mobilize them in Mexico, ostensibly to protect mutual interests, but in fact to subjugate Mexico; place the Mexican crown on the head of a foreign papal prince, Maximilian; then move the papal armies from Mexico into the United States; then in the convulsions of civil war, defeat the Northern armies, and turn



over the country to the rule of the Latin race, and consequently make it papal.

Abraham Lincoln, President of the United States, in the day of a national crisis, was assassinated as a part of a conspiracy to overthrow the government at Washington. The Catholic priesthood cannot free itself from the ugly charge of criminal complicity. General Baker, the head of the government's detective service, in his detailed report on the trial of the conspirators, says: "I mention as an exceptional and remarkable fact that every conspirator in custody is by education a Roman Catholic."

#### PROSPECTIVE LEGISLATION.

Unless there be an emphatic and practical expression of adverse sentiment, it may be expected that national legislation congressional appropriation, judicial action and executive appointment, will be more and more subject to political Romanism. It may be laid down as an axiom in the philosophy of Roman Catholic ecclesiasticism that Roman Catholic officials, who are strictly obedient to the laws of the church will make all political duty submissive to the ecclesiastical interests.

By careful study of the annals of the world in this century it will be found that such serious crimes as the following are chargeable to Jesuitism, which has been and is now the dominant factor in the movement to overthrow our liberties. False witness, perjury, theft, fraud, murder, brazen hearted usury, upholding slavery, bitter intolerance, audacious infractions of civil law, denying civil marriages, contempt for paternal authority and law, clergy not subject to civil law, the scornful treatment of woman, enmity to general education, immorality upheld by theological teaching, frequent overthrow of constitutional laws legitimately enacted, and a general disregard for all institutions matured by modern liberty.

The terrible charge of the English statesman is herein justified. For a long period England had denied Roman Catholics admission to Parliament. When the question came up to readmit them, Sir Robert Peel, with his immortal eloquence, declared that their admission would be a menace to free legislation. And expressed the opinion that obedient Roman Catholics could not render strict allegiance to the civil laws.

## CHAPTER III.

### THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH AND THE INDIANS.

BY HON. THOMAS J. MORGAN,

*Commissioner of Indian Affairs under President Harrison.*

I have been requested to prepare a brief statement of the recent attitude of the Roman Catholic Church regarding the education of the Indians, especially with a view of recording its position in reference to the appropriation of public money for sectarian uses: a request with which I cheerfully comply, because I believe that the statements which I shall make will serve to illustrate the spirit and method of the Roman Catholic Church as a mischievous factor in our political life. I would be glad if I could entirely eliminate myself from the narrative, because I have no desire to intrude my personality upon the American public; my only purpose and wish being to make an unvarnished, absolutely truthful statement of well authenticated historical facts.

#### THE SUPERINTENDENT OF INDIAN SCHOOLS.

Rev. Daniel Dorchester, D.D., a gentleman of ripe scholarship, of great excellence of personal character, of wide experience in public matters, was appointed by President Harrison



When the Romish hierarchy find fault with the A. P. A., my answer to them is in the language of Sam Jones, "Quit your meanness." They have only themselves to blame for the presence of such an organization in our midst.

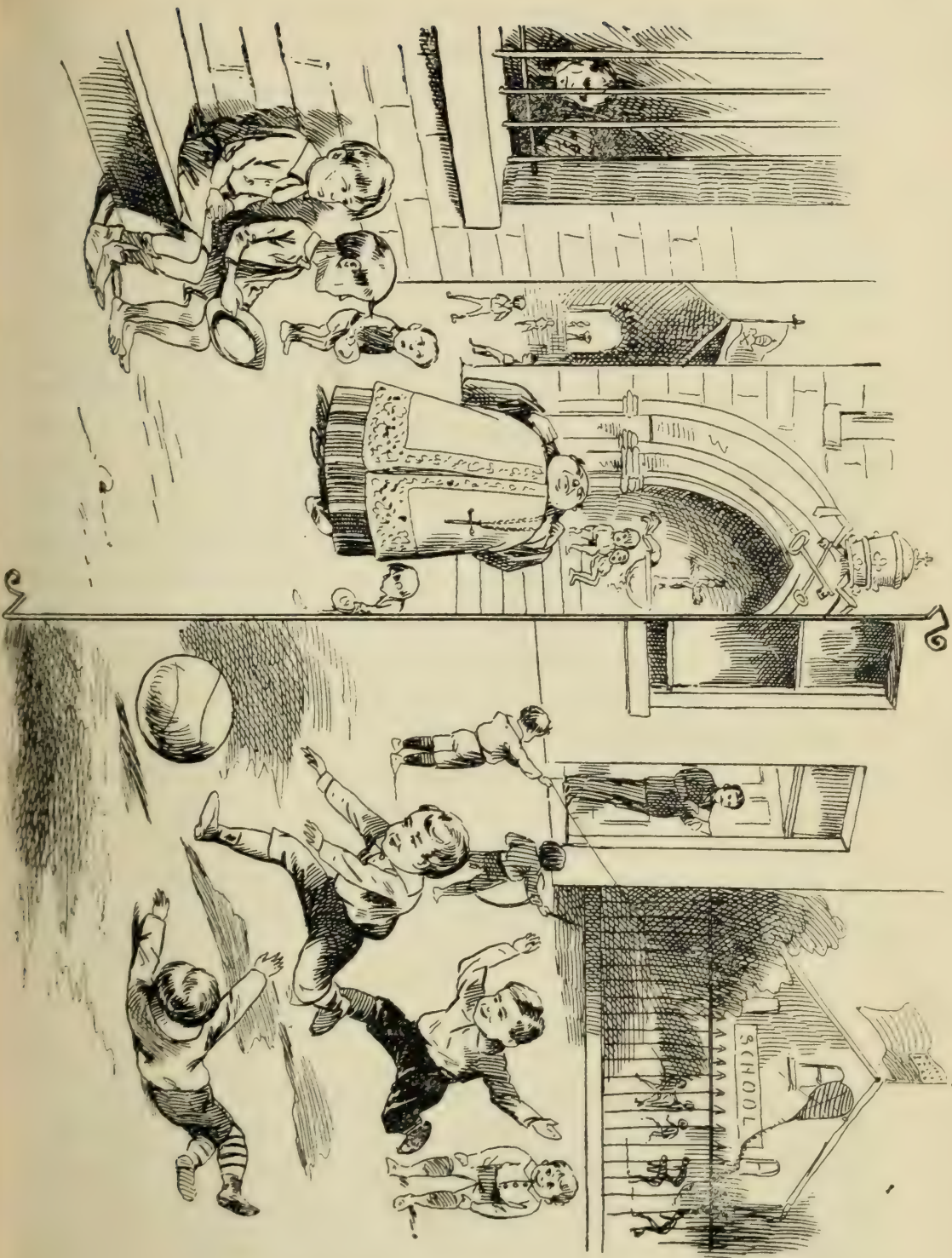
REV. J. A. SMITH, (M. E.) Buffalo, N. Y.

The time is not far away when the Roman Catholic Church of the Republic of the United States, at the order of the Pope, will refuse to pay their school tax, and will send bullets to the breasts of government agents rather than pay it. It will come quickly as the click of a trigger, and will be obeyed, of course, as coming from God Almighty himself.

[xxxii]

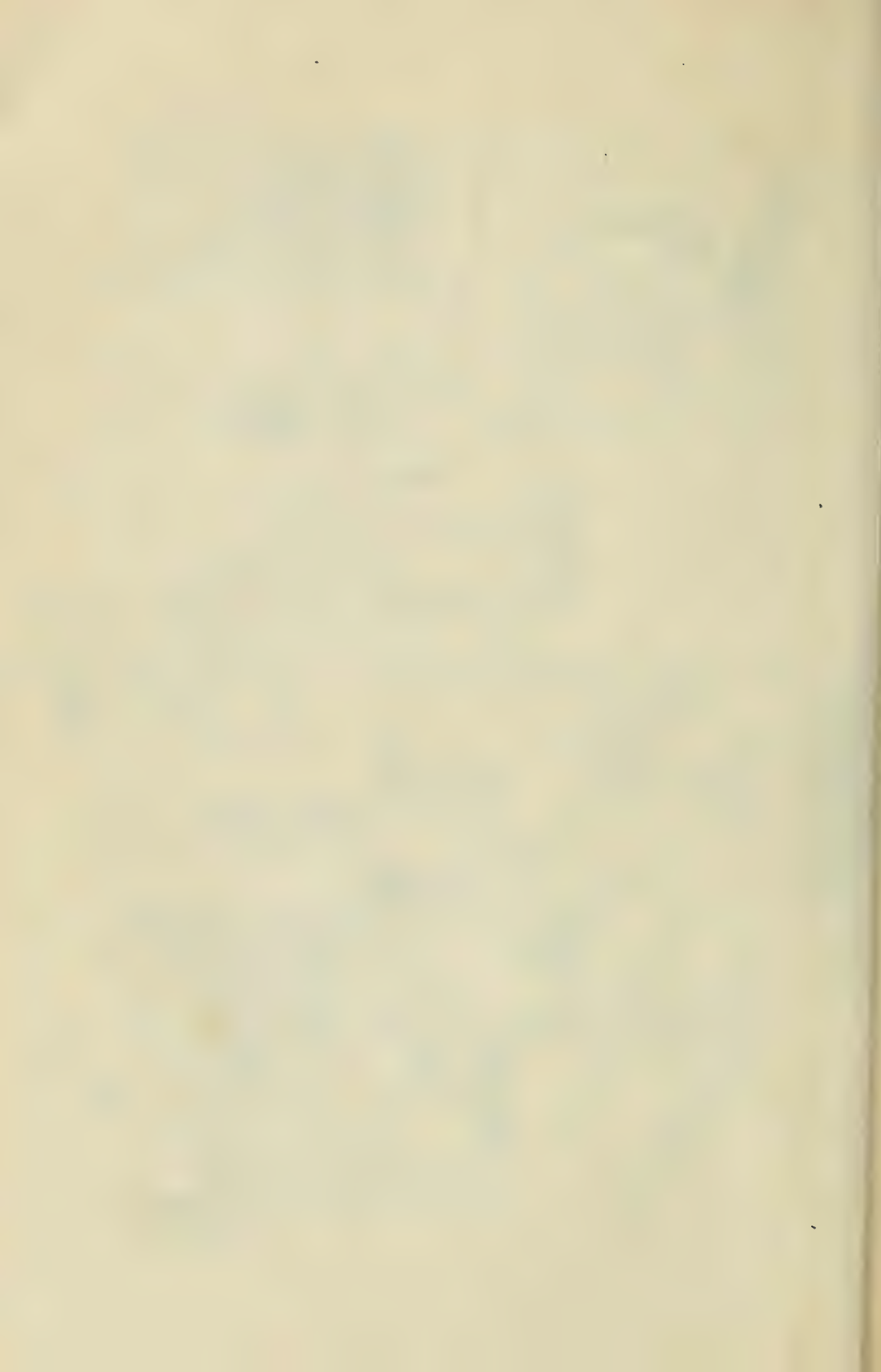
MGR. CAPEL.





Romish Schools vs. Public Schools.





Superintendent of Indian Schools and entered upon his work the first of May, 1889. The important office which he filled was created by special act of Congress. He was appointed by the President, confirmed by the Senate, received the same salary (\$4,000), as was paid to the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, and held an office which, while subordinate to that of the Commissioner, was largely independent. It was his special province to critically inspect all schools where Indians were being educated at the expense of the Government, and report their condition to the Indian Office in Washington.

When he entered upon these duties he found the School Service in a most deplorable condition. The Government school buildings had been neglected, were in many cases dilapidated, inadequate for their purposes, poorly equipped, and even in a sadly unsanitary condition. There was no uniform system of text-books, no established course of study, no system of promotions, no theory of classification or grading, no well-established rules and regulations for the management and discipline of the schools, and very little satisfactory work of any kind. He found that a large proportion of the superintendents, matrons, teachers and other employes had been appointed from political considerations, without regard to their fitness for their several positions, and some persons who were immoral, illiterate and neglectful of their public duties were filling some of the most important positions in the school service.

#### THE COMMISSIONER OF INDIAN AFFAIRS.

I began my work as Commissioner of Indian Affairs July 1, 1889, two months after Superintendent Dorchester had entered upon the discharge of his duties. His reports of the condition in which he found the Indian schools were already reaching the office and the time was close at hand when it was necessary to reorganize the school service for the fiscal year begin-

ning July 1. He recommended to the office the dismissal of a considerable number of employes on the ground of their unfitness for their duties, giving in each case the specific reasons for his recommendations and stating that he was not influenced by either religious or political considerations. He expressed the wish that all who were competent, whether Democrats or Republicans, and to whatever church they might belong, should be retained in the service.

The Commisssioner, having no personal knowledge of the school employes, was of necessity dependent almost entirely upon the knowledge and recommendations of those who were personally acquainted with the situation. He saw no reason why he should not approve the recommendations of the Superintendent of Schools and accordingly dismissed from the service those whom he recommended for dismissal on the grounds above stated, without stopping to inquire, and without knowing either their religious or political status. It was afterwards learned that of the whole number of employes dismissed a very small proportion were Roman Catholics, and of those retained in the service a very considerable proportion belonged to the same Church. The dismissal of Protestants awakened no protest, except in some individual cases where personal or political friends appealed for a re-hearing, but the dismissal of the Roman Catholics, was regarded by Romanists as an act of hostility to the Catholic Church and very vigorous protests were made against it.

#### BUREAU OF CATHOLIC INDIAN MISSIONS.

There had long been established in the City of Washington an institution known as the "Bureau of Catholic Indian Missions," having a President, Director, Secretary and other officers and clerks, which had for its specific work the supervision of the education of Indian children in Roman Catholic institutions; for a broader mission the securing of appointments of



the largest possible number of Roman Catholics in the Government Indian Schools; for a still larger mission the securing of the appointment of agent, clerks and other appointees in any branch of the Indian service; and for a still wider object the securing of such legislation as would be helpful to the Roman Catholic Church, and the preventing of any legislative or administrative action that could in anywise interfere with its widest possible sphere of activity among the Indians. This Bureau, as organized, stood as the representative of the Roman Catholic Church in American politics. It had apparently the confidence and the support of the Roman hierarchy; was in touch with the representative men of the church everywhere; had its agents and representatives on the Indian reservations; was ceaseless in its vigilance and activity in the lobby and the committee rooms of Congress, and did not hesitate to urge its claims for sympathy, support and advancement not only upon cabinet officers but even upon the President of the United States. It was a compact, well-constructed, aggressive, efficient machine, organized for the promotion of the political interests of Roman Catholicism, and ready to use any and all means essential for the accomplishment of its purposes. It seemed utterly unscrupulous.

#### PAPAL AGGRESSIONS.

The Chief of the Educational Division in the Indian Office, who had the practical oversight of the entire system of education, whose duty it was to recommend to the Commissioner the appointments and removals of teachers and other subordinate officers, was a Roman Catholic. He had few, if any, qualifications for the position he occupied, but was a zealous churchman and used his power to the utmost for the promotion of the interests of his Church. Several Government schools were placed entirely in the control of the Roman Catholics; a cross was erected over one of the buildings; an-

other Government building, costing \$40,000, was turned over over to a bevy of nuns imported from Canada; a Roman Catholic Church was built in its immediate vicinity, and the whole establishment, church and school, was as much a convent as though it stood on the banks of the Tiber. The Roman Catholic catechism was introduced as a part of the daily curriculum in Government schools, and the pupils were zealously taught to believe that the Roman Catholic Church was the only true church. Wherever it could be done Roman Catholics were appointed either as superintendents, matrons, principal and teachers, or, if these places were not available, then to such subordinate positions as were within reach. Every effort apparently was made to monopolize the Indian service and to make it tributary to the Papacy.

The Director of the Catholic Bureau, or his representative, was in almost daily communication with the Chief of the Educational Division of the Indian Office and practically directed his action in everything pertaining to the Roman Catholic interests. It is not too much to say that the Bureau of Catholic Indian Missions had usurped to a large extent the functions of the Government Bureau of Indian Affairs.

The existence at the capital of the nation of an organized lobby, established in the interest of the Roman Catholic Church and prosecuting its work zealously and tirelessly, was at once an impertinence and a menace to Republican institutions. It sought covertly to secure, so far as its influence went all the practical results that would have flowed from the recognition of the Roman Catholic Church as the established national Church. The Protestants had no such central organization and made no concerted effort either to secure ecclesiastical advantages for themselves or to in anywise prevent the unconstitutional aggressions of the Romanist hierarchy.

When a Catholic candidate is on the ticket and his opponent is a non-Catholic, let the Catholic candidate have the vote, no matter what he represents. *Catholic Review.*

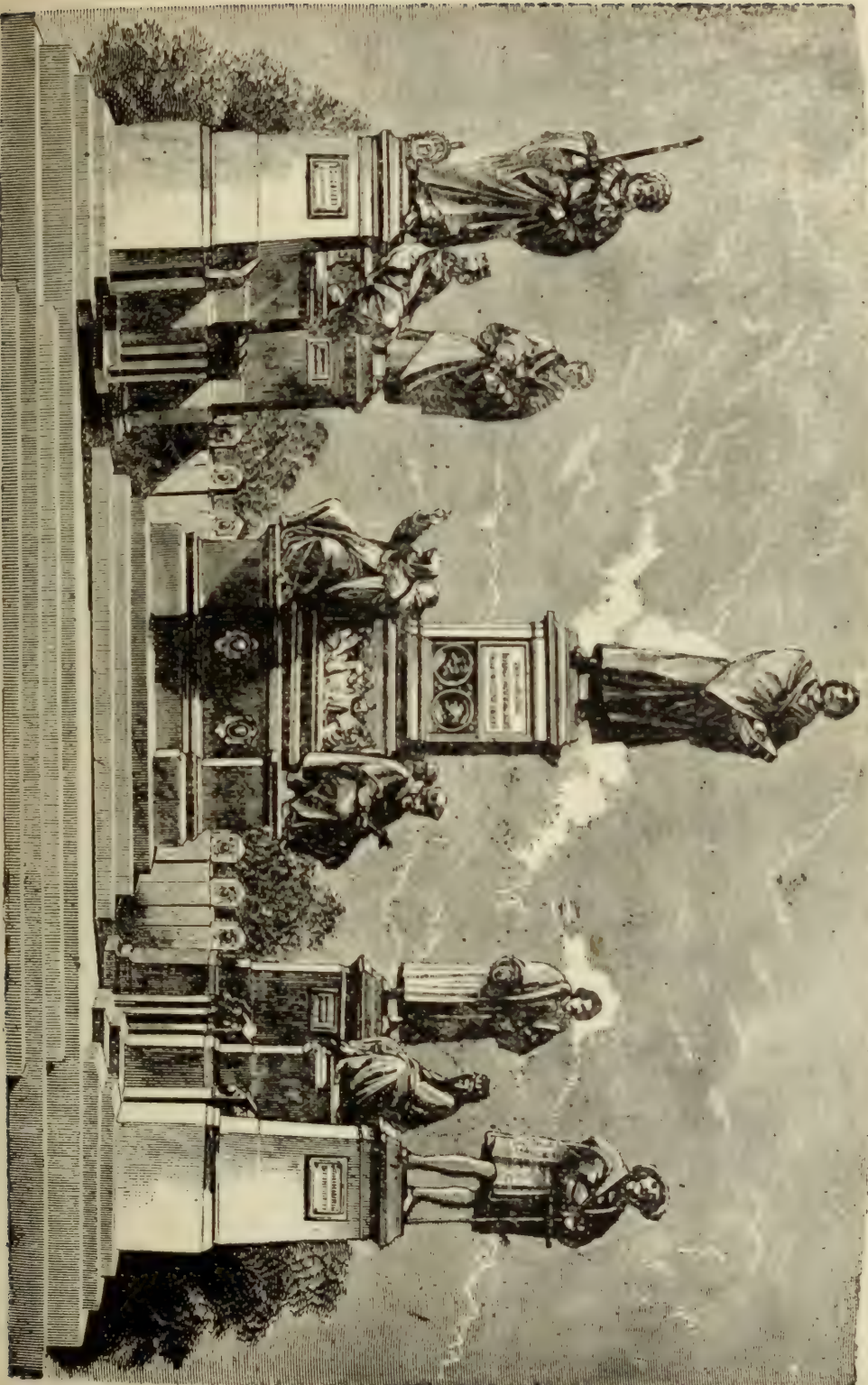
It was a Catholic who discovered America; it is the Roman Catholics who sustain America; and the Roman Catholic church in a short time will rule the country that rightfully belongs to her. *Catholic News.*

We do not accept this Government or hold it to be any government at all, or as capable of performing any of the proper functions of government. If the American Government is to be sustained and preserved at all, it must be by rejection of the principles of the Reformation (that is the government by the people), and the acceptance of the Catholic principle, which is the government of the Pope. *Catholic World.*

[xxxvi]







Luther's Monument at Worms.





## NATIONAL INDIAN EDUCATION.

In 1877 the Government of the United States entered upon the work of providing for the Indian youth a system of public education, supported by appropriations out of the public treasury. It had for many years made special appropriations for Indian education and in fulfilment of treaty obligations, or in return for land or other concessions made by the Indians, had provided schools and teachers for them; but in 1877 it appropriated the sum of \$20,000 out of the public treasury, money which did not belong to the Indians, but which was in all respects public funds. This appropriation increased from year to year until in 1886 it reached the sum of \$600,000; when I entered upon my duties as Commissioner, in 1889, it had swollen to \$1,300,000, and four years later, when I left the office, the total appropriations of public money, exclusive of amounts paid out of Indian funds, was a little more than \$2,300,000.

## CONTRACT SCHOOLS.

When the Roman Catholics saw the growth of these appropriations for Indian education, they eagerly seized upon the opportunity thus presented to profit to the utmost possible extent by securing as large a share of this money as could be obtained.

Some other denominations who were carrying on work among the Indians had also been receiving Government assistance, and the schools thus maintained by the churches, partly at their own expense but largely at the expense of the Government, were practically mission schools.

The Roman Catholics baptized into their fellowship not only the children but as many as possible of the adults, asserted their right to claim them as communicants in their church, resented as an affront to them every effort on the part

of other churches, and even on the part of the Government itself, to secure for their schools any children who at any time had been enrolled in any Roman Catholic institution.

#### FAILURE OF ROMAN CATHOLIC MISSION SCHOOLS.

The Roman Catholic schools are mission schools, parochial schools, church schools, whose chief and almost only aim is to make converts to Catholicism, and to train their pupils to be good Catholics. The basis of all their work is the Roman Catholic Catechism. Many of the teachers know little of American life, and apparently care less, speaking very imperfect English. Many others are inexperienced nuns, and few, if any of them, are trained teachers. Catholic education of Indians has never been successful, and they can point to no leading Indians as a result of their efforts. An eminent Roman Catholic said to me that there never had been an Indian Roman Catholic priest. The subtle influence of their schools has been to awaken in the minds of the Indians suspicion and distrust, and they have bred disloyalty and incited resistance to the government.

#### SUPERIORITY OF GOVERNMENT SCHOOLS.

On the other hand, the great government schools, like those at Carlisle, Lawrence, Chilocco, Genoa and Albuquerque, are industrial training schools, which fit their pupils for the duties, responsibilities and privileges of American citizenship. These schools are public schools, maintained by government, supervised and directed by government agents. The great thought that underlies them is to take the savage of the forest and fit him for American citizenship.

Soon after I had entered upon my duties, July 1, 1889, I was waited upon by Archbishop Ireland, representing the hierarchy, and Father Willard, an officer of the Catholic Bureau, and was asked by them if I would renew the contracts for the Catholic schools for the year to come. I answered that I

would. They stated that they wished a contract for some new schools, and that they would like a much larger appropriation for their work among the Indians than they had ever received before, and intimated that when other buildings which they had in contemplation had been erected they should ask for still larger sums.

#### OPPOSITION TO SECTARIAN APPROPRIATIONS.

I replied that I did not believe in the policy of appropriating public money for sectarian uses; that I believed in the separation of church and state, and that if Churches did missionary work among the Indians they should do so at their own expense. It was the duty of the *Government* to provide for the education of the Indians and it should do this in a system of schools, similar to the public schools of the country, which should be neither partisan nor sectarian. I said distinctly, however, that I did not propose, inasmuch as the contract system had been long in existence, to introduce any radical, abrupt change in the policy of the Government; that I would not interfere with any vested rights that they might have, or do anything that could be justly regarded as unfair or unjust; that I would treat the Roman Catholics precisely as I treated any other church or body of Christian people. I said that I would renew their contracts, for the year to come, for the schools already in existence which belonged to them, but that I would not extend the contract system; would enter into no contracts for new schools; that I proposed to take charge of the buildings which had been erected by the Government and to maintain in them Government schools, and that I should make it a part of my business to improve and extend the system of public education for the Indians.

#### PAPAL SPOILS.

The following table exhibits in detail the amount of money set apart by the Indian Office for the support of the various religious or contract schools, as they are called:



## MONEY SET APART BY THE INDIAN OFFICE FOR THE SUPPORT OF RELIGIOUS OR CONTRACT SCHOOLS.

	1886.	1877.	1888	1889.	1890.	1891.	1892.	1893.	1894.	Total in 9 Years.
Roman Catholic.....	\$118,343	\$194,635	\$221,169	\$347,672	\$356,957	\$383,349	\$394,756	\$375,845	\$365,845	\$2,738,571
Presbyterian.....	32,995	37,910	36,500	41,825	47,650	44,850	44,510	30,040	30,040	346,120
Congregational.....	16,121	26,696	26,080	23,310	28,459	27,271	29,146	25,736	8,450	217,239
Martinsburg, Pa.....	5,400	10,410	7,500	(*)						23,310
Alaska Training School.....		4,175	4,175							8,350
Episcopal.....		1,800	3,690	18,700	24,876	29,910	23,220	4,860	7,020	110,166
Friends.....	1,960	27,845	14,460	23,383	23,383	24,743	24,743	10,020	10,020	160,557
Mennonite.....		3,340	2,500	3,125	4,375	4,375	4,375	3,750	3,750	29,590
Middleton, Cal.....		1,523								1,523
Unitarian.....		1,350	5,400	5,400	5,400	5,400	5,400	5,420	5,400	39,150
Lutheran, Wittenburg, Wis.....			1,350	4,050	7,560	9,180	16,200	15,120	15,120	68,580
Methodist.....				2,725	9,940	6,700	13,980			33,345
Mrs. L. L. Daggett.....								6,480		6,480
Mrs Howard.....				275	600	1,000	2,000	2,500	3,000	9,375
Appropriation for Lincoln Institution.....	33,400	33,400	33,400	33,400	33,400	33,400	33,400	33,400	33,400	300,600
Appropriation for Hampton Institute.....	20,040	20,040	20,040	20,040	20,040	20,040	20,040	20,040	20,049	180,360
Total.....	228,259	363,214	376,264	529,905	562,640	570,218	611,570	533,241	502,635	\$4,277,946

From the accompanying table it will be seen that while other denominations received comparatively small sums, and while the Baptists, one of the largest religious bodies in the United States, neither asked nor received any public money, (while prosecuting missionary work among the Indians very successfully), the Roman Catholics received during nine years the sum of \$2,738,571, out of a total appropriation of \$4,277,946.

The gravity of this matter does not at all consist in the amount of money involved. That, although large in the aggregate, is relatively insignificant. It is the principle at stake that gives significance to the controversy. The Roman Catholics, in demanding from the United States Treasury millions of dollars to enable them to establish and maintain missions among the Indians, are demanding what they have no right to ask, and what the government has no right to grant. If the demand be granted in this case, there is absolutely no limit to their future demands.

I opposed the principle as being contrary to the spirit, if not the letter, of the constitution; as a practical union of church and state.

#### A REVOLUTION IN PUBLIC SENTIMENT.

The principle for which I at that time contended has since then made great progress. In 1889, not only the Catholics, but (as I have already said) many other of the religious bodies, received money from the public treasury for the carrying on of Indian education. It is a most significant fact that of late the Presbyterians, Congregationalists, Episcopalians, and Methodists have all voted to refuse to accept Government aid for their Indian school work. (For detailed report of the official action of these bodies see Report of Commissioner of Indian Affairs, 1892, p. 177).

## THREE OFFENSES.

Soon after this I had occasion to dismiss from the Indian Office, for incompetency, insubordination and other sufficient reasons, the Chief of the Educational Division already alluded to, thus committing a third offense against the Roman Catholic Church: Roman Catholics had been dismissed from the public service; the demands of the Church for an indefinite extension of the policy of subsidizing its mission schools at Government expense had been denied, and a trusted tool of the Catholic Bureau, who had prostituted his position to ecclesiastical ends, had been dismissed from the public service.

I had done no wrong, on the contrary nothing but my duty as a public officer. I had been scrupulously just, impartial and even generous towards the Roman Catholics. I had not dismissed from office anybody because of his religion. But I had dismissed an incompetent clerk, had offended the Bureau of Catholic Indian Missions, had enunciated my belief in the American doctrine of the separation of Church and State, and expressed my preference for the non-partisan, non-sectarian public schools over parochial schools.

## A BITTER CONTEST.

This was the beginning of a contest which is without a parallel in our political annals. A strong delegation of representative men was appointed by the Catholic Congress at Baltimore to wait upon President Harrison and state their grievances, requesting the removal of the Commissioner from office. The President received the delegation respectfully, listened attentively to their charges, satisfied himself by personal inquiry that the accusations of unfairness and discrimination against the Catholics were false and unfounded, and politely but firmly declined to remove the Commissioner.



## A CAMPAIGN OF FALSEHOOD AND SLANDER.

An attempt was then made to influence public sentiment. Long inflammatory articles, full of misstatements and libelous in their character, were printed in obscure Washington newspapers, boldly charging upon the Superintendent of Indian Schools and the Commissioner of Indian Affairs a definite purpose to make a clean sweep of all Catholics from the service, to destroy, if possible, the Roman Catholic Indian schools, to uproot Catholicism, if it might be, among the Indians, and in short to conduct the Indian Bureau as an anti-Catholic machine. A more gross, false, malicious, utterly unjustifiable charge, was never made against any public official, and the authors of the falsehoods well knew it. These accusations, however, were caught up and reproduced in a large number of Roman Catholic newspapers, creating a very widespread conviction in the Roman Catholic mind that the Indian office was a nest of bigotry, and that its policy of intolerance was upheld by President Harrison.

## ATTEMPT TO OVERAWE THE UNITED STATES SENATE.

A very persistent, carefully planned effort was made to defeat the confirmation by the Senate of both the Commissioner and the Superintendent of Schools; the falsehoods and calumnies just referred to were printed in two formidable pamphlets and presented, together with a formal protest by the Roman Catholic Bureau, asking the Senate to reject the nominations of the officers named, alleging that they were unfit persons to fill the positions to which they had been appointed. Apparently the entire hierarchy, from the Cardinal down, including I should say without exception all the most prominent and representative prelates, joined in this extraordinary effort of one Church seeking solidly to prevent the confirmation by the United States Senate of the appointment of officers of

high rank in the public service, simply because they were not acceptable to that Church. It is needless to go into a detailed account of the methods adopted to accomplish their end. Let it suffice to say that the Jesuit priest, who planned the campaign and wrote a history of it afterwards, said in substance that nearly up to the day of the vote in the Senate it seemed almost certain that his plan would succeed and he was very greatly chagrined and mortified when it failed.

### RENAISSANCE OF PATRIOTISM.

Meanwhile the Protestants of the country, awaking to a recognition of the significance of the contest, began to take an active part in vindication of the rights of Protestants to a share, at least, in the administration of Indian affairs. Letters, petitions and resolutions from ministers' meetings, Indian associations, patriotic orders, Churches and individuals, were poured in upon the Senate, and personal appeals were made to senators to resist this audacious, un-American, utterly indefensible effort of the Roman Catholic hierarchy to dictate to the President and to the United States Senate as to who should hold office. The result of the contest was that both the Commissioner and the Superintendent of Schools were triumphantly confirmed by the Senate.

### A FLATTERED AND FLATTERING SENATOR.

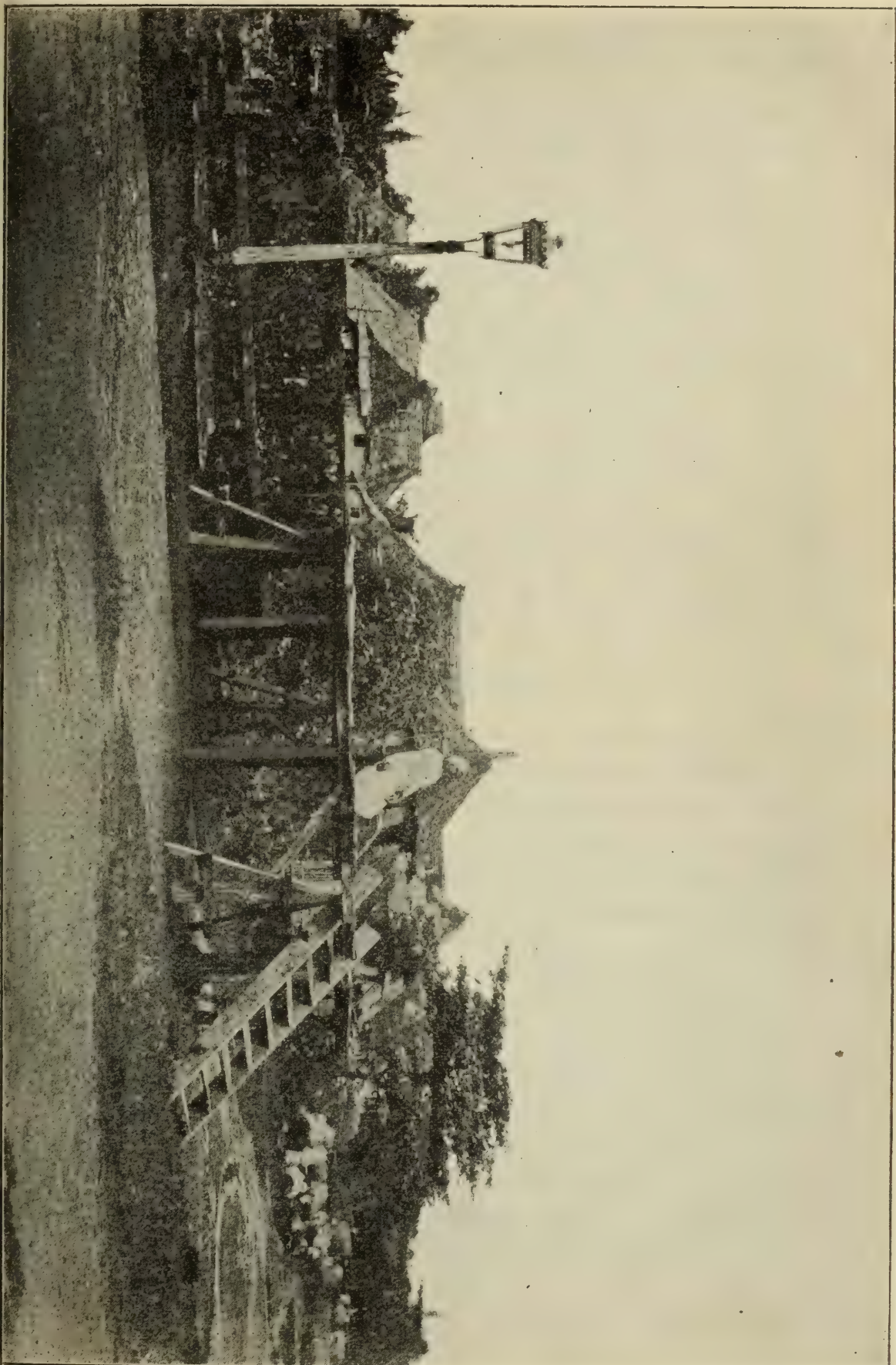
One of the most ardent champions of the Catholic hierarchy in this un-American assault was a United States Senator from Arkansas. He was assisted by a Senator from Missouri, who was as zealous in aiding the Catholic Bureau as if he had been its paid attorney. In 1882 he had visited a Roman Catholic Indian School in Montana and on his return to the Senate made a speech in praise of the Jesuits, declaring that they were doing more than all others for Indian civilization.

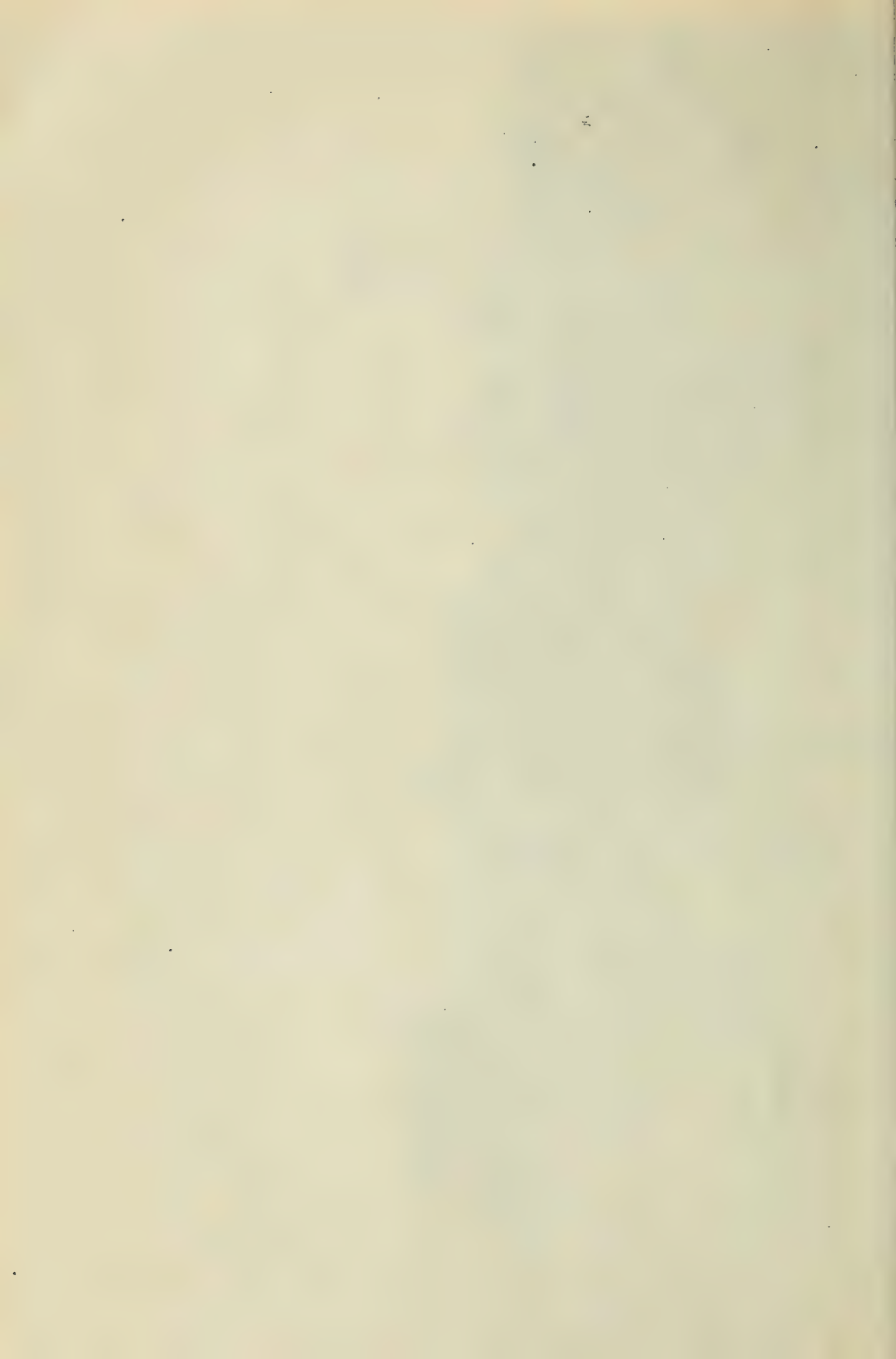
### **PUBLIC TORTURE.**

The following photo-engravure illustrates the most fiendish mode of torture ever conceived by man. The victim is placed upon a scaffold ten feet high, his or her head bound to a pole in such a way that the poor miserable creatures can not stand erect, neither can they sit, consequently are compelled to stand in this painful condition until the Catholic Official who has ordered this awful punishment, has his desire for revenge gratified. It is very often the case that the victim is found dead when the order for release comes. This mode of punishment is in practice in all countries controlled by Rome's despoilers.











Rome is an adept in fawning and flattery, and knows when to use them. The Bureau of Catholic Indian Missions passed resolutions praising the Senator for his "bold, manly, eloquent utterances," a copy of which was sent to him and to all archbishops and bishops. They reprinted and widely circulated his speech, and from that time on he was their defender and champion, and his little speech was always on call. Ignoring the radical revolutions and great advance in government schools, while the Catholic schools practically had stood still, he still insisted on the superiority of the latter, basing his testimony upon his "experience and personal knowledge," which consisted almost entirely of one visit to a Catholic school a dozen years before, and no knowledge whatever of recent work done in government schools. Few men in the Senate knew less about education in general and Indian Schools in particular, than this same Senator from Missouri.

#### THE POPE IN POLITICS.

Prominent Roman Catholic prelates attempted to defeat the renomination of President Harrison because of his attitude on the question of Indian education. The President in his message to Congress, while expressing appreciation of the church schools and the wish that they might for the time being continue to co-operate with the Government, at the same time expressed his preference for national schools and his desire that they might be improved and extended until they should be able to provide for all Indians whom it was incumbent upon the Government to educate. The personal advice given by the President to the Commissioner was to avoid anything that could be tortured into intolerance; to treat with absolute impartiality Protestants and Catholics alike; to refuse to extend the contract system; and to improve the national system, but meanwhile to allow the contract schools already in existence to continue their work and to render them all necessary and proper help.

When he was renominated in June, 1892, the Roman Catholics immediately began to plot for his defeat. The Director of the Catholic Bureau prepared a careful and elaborate report of its operations, reasserting all the exploded charges which he had laid before the Senate and which had been rejected by it as untrue, and arraigning President Harrison, as well as the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, for "bigotry." This report was secretly circulated among the bishops and priests.

### BIGOTRY.

What is bigotry? Webster says: "A bigot is a person who regards his own faith and views in matters of religion as *unquestionably right*."

The "Catechism of Christian Doctrine, prepared and enjoined by order of the third Plenary Council of Baltimore, and indorsed by Cardinal Gibbons," says:

Question.—How shall we know the things which we are to believe?

Answer.—We shall know the things which we are to believe from the Catholic Church, through which God speaks to us.

Q.—What is the church?

A.—The church is the congregation of those who profess the faith of Christ, partake of the same sacraments, and are governed by their lawful pastors under one visible head.

Q.—Who is the visible head of the church?

A.—Our holy father the Pope, the bishop of Rome, is the vicar of Christ on earth and the visible head of the church.

Q.—What do you mean by the *infallibility of the church*?

A.—By the infallibility of the church I mean that the *church cannot err* when it teaches a doctrine of faith or morals.

Q.—Has the church any marks by which it may be known?

A.—The church has four marks by which it may be known: It is one; it is holy; it is Catholic; it is apostolic.

Q.—In which church are these attributes and marks found?



A.—These attributes are found in the holy Roman Catholic Church alone.

From this it is clear that no honest Roman Catholic can be anything else than a bigot. For a Roman Catholic to charge a Protestant with bigotry is arrant nonsense and impertinence.

#### PRESIDENT HARRISON.

Now Benjamin Harrison is one of the truest, grandest men that ever adorned the Presidential office. Soldier, statesman, jurist, Christian, patriot, he gave to the Republic a clean, able, efficient, just administration. Liberal in his views, judicial in temperament, conscientious in the performance of public duty, painstaking in his investigations, impartial in his judgments, he carefully considered the charges made by the Roman Catholics against the administration of the Indian Office and sustained the Commissioner in all the essential elements of his policy. He was in no sense a "bigot" and the charge preferred against him by the Romanists was not only false, but it was intolerant and introduced a religious test of the worst kind into our politics.

#### AN INFAMOUS JESUITICAL TRICK.

A French pamphlet containing substantially the same charges was circulated widely among the French Canadian Roman Catholic voters of New England, particularly in the manufacturing villages and cities of Massachusetts, Rhode Island and Connecticut. In this it was asserted that President Harrison was using his high office to injure the Roman Catholic Church, and that he was supporting the Commissioner of Indian Affairs in his career of bigotry and intolerance, and an earnest appeal was made to these ignorant, superstitious zealots of the Roman Catholic Church to ignore party ties and all other considerations, and unite in casting their ballots sol-



idly against the Republican nominee for the Presidency. Letters were written, documents were circulated everywhere, appeals were made, and even sermons were preached, to secure the union of the Roman Catholics and the use of their ballots as "the balance of power" in determining the issues of the campaign.

It never will be known how large a factor in the contest was this effort of the Roman Catholic Church to overturn an administration and bring about an economic revolution, with all the attendant evils that have followed. A great variety of causes combined to effect the result, and one of them was undoubtedly the attitude of the Romanist hierarchy. Indeed prominent Roman Catholic journals boast that this was the determining factor, and that it was the Roman Catholic vote that defeated President Harrison.

#### A MENACE TO THE REPUBLIC.

However this may be, the fact is patent and it is that for which this article has been written, and which I wish to make most emphatic, namely, that the Roman Catholic Church in America, numbering from 6,000,000 to 8,000,000 of adherents, with a voting population of possibly a million and a half, constituting thus a tremendous factor which in almost any political contest holds "the balance of power," stands ready to use this vast power for the promotion of its own ecclesiastical interests at whatever expense to the general public. It thus ceases to be merely a Church, a body of individual Christians seeking to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences, and becomes a vast political machine, dominated by men who are not in sympathy with American institutions, who have been trained in the political philosophy and methods of the old world, who believe sincerely that the Pope is God's vicegerent on earth, that he is the head of a sovereign state, justly entitled to rule absolutely; that the state ought to be

subordinate to the Church, and that the Roman Catholic Church should at all times and under all circumstances seek to gain for itself every possible advantage in American politics.

### A DANGEROUS ATTITUDE.

The Roman Catholics have assumed an attitude on the Indian School question that is un-American, unpatriotic, and a menace to our liberties. I challenge the course they are pursuing, as that of a corrupt ecclesiastico-political machine masquerading as a church, a course that has been without precedent, and is without justification. Its spirit has been that of the Inquisition, its methods those of the disreputable politician, and its agencies, intrigue, secrecy, conspiracy, falsehood and slander. These are very grave charges, but they are justified by the facts.

The apologists for the Roman Catholic Church, who insist that in America it is becoming liberalized, will find food for reflection in the significant fact that one of the most aggressive and influential leaders of this Roman Catholic attack upon the Governmental Indian policy, was the Archbishop who now poses as the representative of the so-called liberal, or American party of that Church.

## CHAPTER IV.

### ROMANISM, ILLITERACY, ILLEGITIMACY AND CRIME.

BY REV. MADISON C. PETERS.

The most marvelous supporter of Romanism is ignorance. Wherever the church has had undisputed sway in matters of education she has cloistered thought in dogma. Every step which the progress of the world has taken has been in spite of Rome. Wherever Romanism has control it has a blighting effect upon education; it leads to, or is connected with illiteracy to an astounding degree.

The following tabular statement is from data furnished by the reports of the United States Commissioner of Education, the documents issued by the Bureau of Education, the census of 1880, and the Statesman's Year Book for 1887: (See next page).

You will notice that while the average percentage of illiteracy in the Roman Catholic group is 59.61, or over half the population; the average percentage of illiteracy in the Protestant group is only 4.156, or in other words, the Catholic States have fifteen times as many illiterates as the Protestant States. Do you think the educational system which tolerates 60 illiterates out of every 100 inhabitants of the countries it controls, ought to have a voice in our public education? What



The power of the Church is superior to the power of the State.

POPE GREGORY XII.

We are purely and simply Romanists, and propose an unreserved allegiance to the church, which takes precedence of and gives the rule to our allegiance to the State. While the State has rights, she has them in virtue and by permission of the supreme authority, and that authority can only be expressed through and by the Roman Church.

[L]

*Catholic World.*

# THE HISTORY OF THE

## REIGN OF KING CHARLES THE FIRST

1625-1649

The reign of King Charles the First was a period of great  
trouble and contention for England. The king was  
a man of great abilities and a strong sense of  
duty, but he was also a man of great  
pride and a strong sense of his own  
right to rule. He was determined to  
rule as he saw fit, and he was not  
willing to be controlled by the  
Parliament. This led to a series of  
conflicts with the Parliament, which  
eventually resulted in the king's  
execution. The reign of King Charles  
the First was a period of great  
trouble and contention for England.



Worship of the Pope.





ROMAN CATHOLIC COUNTRIES.	AREA— SQ. MILES.	POPULATION.	PERCENTAGE CATHOLICS.	PERCENTAGE ILLITERACY.
Venezuela . . .	439,120	2,075,245	90.	90.
Austria-Hungary .	240,942	39,224,511	67.6	32.
France . . .	204,092	38,218,903	78 5	25.
Brazil . . .	3,219,000	19,922,375	99.	84.
Spain . . .	191,100	16,958,178	99.	60.
Portugal . . .	36,028	4,708,178	99.	82.
Belgium . . .	11,373	5,520,009	99.	42.
Italy . . .	110,620	28,459,628	99.	61.94
Eight Countries, Total.	4,452,275	148,087,027	731.1	476.94
Average Eight Countries . . . . .			91.3	59.61
PROTESTANT COUNTRIES	AREA— SQ. MILES.	POPULATION.	PERCENTAGE PROTESTANTS	PERCENTAGE ILLITERACY.
Victoria . . .	87,884	1,009,753	73.	.035
Sweden . . .	170,979	4,682,769	99.	.30
Switzerland . .	15,892	2,846,102	59.	.30
Netherlands . .	12,648	4,336,012	66.	10.50
Germany . . .	211,149	46,852,680	62.6	1.27
Denmark . . .	14,121	1,980,259	99.	.36
Great Britain . .	120,832	30,066,646	93.3	11.09
United States . .	3,501,404	57,928,609	86.4	9.40
Eight Countries, Total.	4,134,309	149,702,830	638.3	33.255
Average Eight Countries . . . . .			79.78	4.156

would the Papacy do in the United States if it had free reign, judged from the record of the other countries where it had absolute control?

I want to call your attention to the following statistics, collected by the United States Bureau of Education in 1890, showing the ratio of illiteracy in Roman Catholic and Protestant countries:

IN ROMAN CATHOLIC COUNTRIES.

	PER CENT.		PER CENT.
Austria . . . . .	39	Spain . . . . .	63
Hungary . . . . .	42	Ireland . . . . .	21
Italy . . . . .	48	Belgium . . . . .	12
Portugal . . . . .	82		

IN PROTESTANT COUNTRIES.

	PER CENT.		PER CENT.
Germany, less than . . . . .	1	Norway, less than . . . . .	1
Denmark, less than . . . . .	1	Sweden, less than . . . . .	1
England . . . . .	9	Switzerland . . . . .	2½
Scotland . . . . .	7		

I used these figures in my controversy on this subject with Father Young. He made no answer. Sometime afterwards a Father Tierney published a "reply," which all the Romish papers published with shouts of triumph. After branding the writer as a "falsifier" and "bigot," he proceeds to "quote truthfully from the latest reports of the Bureau of Education, 1890" as follows: (See page liii).

"The following comparison shows that Catholic countries are slightly in the lead." But Father Tierney did not "truthfully quote." The following are the correct figures, as given by the United States Bureau of Education for 1890, in its report, page 551, and referred to by him: (See page liv).

Difference of population in favor of Catholic countries of 15,634,224.



The Catholic countries with a population greater by more than fifteen millions and a half, show a school attendance of 1,835,905 less than the Protestant countries.

	POPULATION.	SCHOOL ATTENDANCE.	PER CENT.
Germany . . .	49,121,064	9,300,000	18.
England . . .	29,001,018	3,717,917	12.8
Scotland . . .	4,033,103	519,308	12.8
Sweden . . .	4,774,409	690,253	14
Denmark . . .	2,185,159	233,240	10.6
Switzerland . . .	2,933,612	518,143	10.8
Total . . .			79.
	POPULATION.	SCHOOL ATTENDANCE.	PER CENT.
France . . . .	38,343,192	5,680,333	14.78
Ireland . . . .	4,706,162	691,742	14.7
Belgium . . . .	6,484,940	804,947	13.8
Spain . . . .	17,237,600	1,843,183	10.69
Austria . . . .		2,957,277	13.1
Hungary . . . .	42,620,963	2,128,457	12.6
Total . . . .			79.67

Then again Father Tierney made either an ignorant or intentional error in figuring the percentage of school attendance

in his comparative statement. He simply added the separate percentages together to produce the result he desired to show.

	POPULATION.	SCHOOL ATTENDANCE	PER CENT.
Germany . . .	39,421,064	9,300,000	18.8
England . . .	29,001,018	4,825,560	16.6
Scotland . . .	4,033,103	664,466	16.4
Sweden . . .	4,784,675	736,790	15.4
Denmark . . .	2,185,159	239,940	11.
Switzerland . . .	2,917,740	570,935	19.5
Total . . .	92,342,759	16,337,691	97.7
			Not 79 as quoted by You.
	POPULATION.	SCHOOL ATTENDANCE.	PER CENT.
France . . . .	38,343,192	5,807,157	15.1
Ireland . . . .	4,706,162	694,832	14.7
Belgium . . . .	6,147,041	827,958	13.5
Spain . . . .	16,550,246	1,859,183	10.6
Austria . . . .	23,895,413	3,132,088	13.1
Hungary . . . .	17,395,929	2,180,568	12.6
Total . . . .	107,977,983	14,501,786	79.6

Now any intelligent *public* school boy knows that he should have figured the percentage on the total sums. If he did this,

All Catholics should exert their power to cause the Constitutions of States to be modeled to the principles of their Church.

POPE LEO XIII.

I say with Dr. Bronson, that if the Head of the Catholic Church should declare that the Constitution (of U. S.) and every existence of this or any other country should be extinguished, it is a solemn audience of God himself, and every Catholic would be bound, under the penalty of the terrible punishment pronounced against the disobedient, to obey.

[LIV]

"Apostolicus," in *Baltimore Clipper*.



Handwritten text at the top of the page, possibly a title or header.

Handwritten text in the upper middle section of the page.

Handwritten text in the middle section of the page.

Handwritten text in the lower middle section of the page.

Handwritten text in the lower section of the page.

Handwritten text at the bottom of the page, possibly a signature or footer.



Huss Before the Council of Constance.





with his own comparative statement, he would observe that in Protestant countries the average percentage is  $16.\frac{2}{9}$ , while in Catholic countries it is only  $12.\frac{6}{9}$ , or in other words, the percentage of school attendance in the Protestant countries named is 25 per cent. greater than that of the Catholic countries named.

To use his own words: "Though you may misrepresent, figures will assuredly not lie," if quoted correctly.

For fourteen hundred years the Pope has had his own way in Italy; yet when Victor Emmanuel overthrew the temporal power of the Pope, he found 85 per cent. of the people wholly illiterate, and less than five per cent. able to read and write. Having for some years exported her most debased and degraded people to America, Italy has changed somewhat for the better. Still, in Upper Italy to-day the percentage of illiteracy is 40.85; in Central 64.61, and in Lower 79.46.

Catholic Spain is reduced to beggary, and 70 per cent. illiteracy. The late Phillip Walsh, of Philadelphia, who was himself a Roman Catholic, said of Spain: "I don't know what Spain was when Washington Irving was there, but I know what it is now, and if I owned Spain and Hades, I would sell Spain."

Will the "holy fathers" please answer why Protestant America, with all her freedmen, frontiersmen and foreign population, has less than 16 per cent. of her people who cannot read and write, while old Catholic Spain, with no influx of foreigners and no untaught colored population, has 70 per cent. of her people unable to read and write?

Rome has controlled Mexico for nearly three hundred years, and yet the parochial schools kept 93 per cent. of the people illiterate. Catholic Mexico has abolished the parochial school and established free schools.

The Catholic Republics of Central America tried the parochial schools and repudiated them because they failed to educate.

Every State in South America, save Ecuador, has repudiated parochial schools, some States prohibiting them altogether, and established free public schools. Now look at Ecuador. "In no country in the world have the Jesuits had such a paramount influence as in Ecuador, or employed it on the whole so well." Vol. IV. Chambers Encyclopedia, p. 192.

"Nowhere in modern time have the Jesuits and priests had it more their own way." Encyclopedia Britannica, Vol. VII., p. 648. And what is the result? Seventy-five per cent. of the children are born out of wedlock. Marriages are few for the reason that the charge made by the priests is so great that the people in their poverty cannot afford to have the ceremony performed; and yet whenever the governments have undertaken to introduce civil marriage, so that poor people could be married by law, and their children be born in wedlock, the governments have, in every case, been cursed and excommunicated by the Roman Catholic Church. The marriage fees demanded by the priests were \$25 until the government took a hand in it and reduced them to 25 cents, and now the priests refuse to marry the people unless at a price which they cannot afford to pay. A recent traveler in Ecuador reports as follows: "One-fourth of the property belongs to the bishop. There is a church for every 150 people. Of the population 10 per cent. are priests, monks and nuns; 272 days of the 365 days are observed as fast and feast days. Not five per cent. of the people can read or write. Property is insecure. Beggars and bandits abound. The ecclesiastical order has gobbled the State. In a word, the Pope rules in Ecuador, as he does not in Rome, and manages there, as everywhere, to keep the people in ignorance and poverty." Ecuador, as large as Ohio in area, with 1,200,000 population, with only 58,192 in the primary, secondary and all other schools, and only 57 miles of railroad, is the most thoroughly, of any country in South America, under the control of the priests and consequently the most unprogressive.



The most immoral centres in our cities are the saloons, yet more than four-fifths are run by Roman Catholics, ninety-five per cent. of whom received their education in the parochial schools.

Father Elliot in the *Catholic World* (September, 1890), made this honest confession: "The horrible truth is, that in many cities, big and little, we have something like a monopoly of the business of selling liquor, and in not a few something equivalent to a monopoly of getting drunk. I hate to acknowledge it; yet from Catholic domicils—miscalled homes—in those cities and towns three-fourths of the public paupers creep annually to the almshouse, and more than half the criminals snatched away by police to prison are, by baptism and training, members of our church. Can anyone deny this, or can any deny that the identity of nominal Catholics and pauperism existing in our chief centres of population is owing to the drunkenness of Roman Catholics? For twenty years the clergy of this parish have had a hard and uneven fight to keep saloons from the very church doors, because the neighborhood of the Roman Catholic Church is a good stand for the saloon business; and this equally so in nearly every city in America. Who has not burned with shame to run the gauntlet of the saloons lining the way to the Roman Catholic cemetery?" Yet this same Father Elliot, speaking of his recent missionary tour among the non-Catholics of the West, declared: "America will be converted and made a Catholic country." Perhaps it would be in order to suggest that charity begins at home, and that the priests convert their own people before they attempt to convert Protestants.

Miss M. T. Elder, of New Orleans, a niece of Archbishop Elder, of Cincinnati, in an essay read at the Catholic Congress during the World's Fair at Chicago, asked: "Why is it that the greatest men of our nation are non-Catholic? The great men of our nation have been and are and will continue to be Protestant. The great philanthropists, the great orators, the



great writers, thinkers, leaders, scientists, inventors and teachers of our land have been Protestants. When I reflect that out of 70,000,000 of this nation we number only 9,000,000, and that out of that 9,000,000 so large a proportion is made up of liquor dealers, poor factory hands, mill and shop and mine and railroad employees, I fail to find material for buncomb, and yet we are all eulogizing ourselves."

The eminent Catholic theologian, Dr. Orestes A. Brownson, who affirmed that "Protestantism of every form has not, and never can have any right where Catholicity is triumphant," wrote thus in the *Catholic Review* concerning parochial schools: "They who are educated in our schools seem misplaced and mistimed in the world, as if born and educated for a world that had ceased to exist. The cause of failure of what we call Catholic education lies, in our judgment, in the fact that we educate not for the present or the future, but for the past." Is it not a fact that the Romish church controls a large proportion of the desperate people of society? Do not our criminal classes come from countries where the Romish church has been dominant for centuries? Go to any of our jails and penitentiaries and call the roll of "faith," and by far the majority will answer "Roman Catholic."

The Catholics of Scotland are one-twelfth of the population, but they furnish one-third of the criminals. In England and Wales they are one-twentieth, but they furnish one-fourth of the criminals. In Ireland they are one and one-half to one, and yet they furnish six criminals to one for the Protestants.

Father Nugent, the Catholic chaplain of the Liverpool prison, speaking of the morality in that city, said in the *Catholic Times*, November 12, 1886: "Nine out of ten of the girls to be seen at night along the London road or Lime street were Catholics; there is no use hiding it."

*The Tablet*, (Roman Catholic), in November, 1888, published an article in which the writer said: "Upon looking in the

matter I found that we Catholics contribute more young criminals than any other religious denomination."

In the *Montreal Daily Witness* of January 12, 1894, was published an abstract from the report of the Montreal jail for the year 1893. We take from it the following figures, which are highly suggestive and need no comments. The total number of persons actually committed for offences against the law was 2,608. Out of this number 1,729 men and 410 women were Roman Catholics. That is, out of 2,608 criminals of both sexes 2,139 were Roman Catholics. Out of 410 Catholic women 158 could neither read nor write. But out of the 68 non-Catholic women only 11 could do neither. Furthermore, 20 Roman Catholic women were inmates of disorderly houses and only one Protestant woman; 10 Roman Catholic men were sentenced for keeping disorderly houses, but no Protestant men were found guilty of that crime, while 22 Roman Catholic women and only three Protestant women were guilty of that offense. Of these criminals, the largest number apart from Canada, has been supplied by Ireland as follows: 182 men and 117 women; of these women 102 are Roman Catholic, and only 15 are Protestants.

In 1868 one-half of the inhabitants of France could neither read nor write. From the illiterate half came 95 per cent. of the persons arrested for crime, and of these there were only 10 per cent. who could not read their prayers and cross themselves. But their prayers did not save them from being criminals.

Her Majesty's inspectors' report concerning juvenile offenders in reformatories and industrial schools in Ireland shows that there were in reformatories in 1883—143 Protestants and 956 Catholics. In industrial schools in 1883—805 Protestants and 5,178 Catholics.

In five counties in the North of Ireland it requires only 11 or 12 policemen to keep order among 10,000 people, while in five other counties of Ireland, where there are more parochial



schools, it requires from 41 to 46 policemen to keep order among each 10,000 people. In 1841 the Roman Catholic population of Ireland was about 6,500,000, who were under the care of 2,156 priests. In 1881 the Romanist population of Ireland was less than four millions, a decrease of nearly two and a half millions, while the priests numbered 3,136—an increase of 1,207, with the parochial schools in full blast. The number of nuns increased from 2,609 in 1861 to 5,222 in 1881; the number of monks from 70 in 1861 to 581 in 1881, and yet with all this multitude of 9,999 priests, nuns and monks living on the poor Irish, the country has been full of trouble and crime and the Irish exiled.

Leon Bouland, ex-priest, in the *Forum* of July, 1888, calls attention to the fact that in the City of New York 75 per cent. of the criminals are members and adherents of the Roman Catholic Church.

If you will study the reports of our jails and penitentiaries you will find that the Romish church has from more than three to four times its due proportion according to the population. The same is true of our pauper institutions. The inmates are nearly all foreigners, and nearly all Roman Catholics. Out of 2,362 State paupers in Massachusetts, Ireland contributed 945, or 40 per cent. of the whole, while of those born in Massachusetts there were only 348.

The average committals per year for murder are as follows: In Protestant England, 72 or 4 to every million; Roman Catholic Ireland, 130 or 19 to every million; Roman Catholic France, 4,089 or 31 to every million; Roman Catholic Austria, 1,325 or 36 to every million; Roman Catholic Bavaria, 311 or 68 to every million; Roman Catholic Sicily, 174 or 90 to every million. In this country nearly every white man hanged is a Roman Catholic. "How can you expect conversions," demands Canon Murname, in his paper read to the Catholic Truth Conference at Birmingham, "when a Roman Catholic prison chaplain can assert that of six thousand or seven thou-



sand women brought into the prison yearly, more than eighty per cent. are Catholics?"

In 1880 the illiterates of New York State produced eight times their proportion of criminals. In New York City, among the illiterates, one crime was committed for every three persons, while among those who had received a common school education, even as far as the elementary branches, there was only one crime to every 27 persons. In other words, the ignorant classes in New York produced nine times as many criminals as they would have produced if they had been educated in the American common schools. Mayor Hewitt in his message to the aldermen, April, 1888, proves that "the Irish furnish more than double the number of inmates in our public institutions, which would naturally belong to their percentage of population." In this city the parochial schools are dwarfing the intellects of Catholic children, and fitting them only for the coarser, poorer and humbler occupations of life. Catholic parents see this, and refuse to believe Cardinal Antonelli's declaration that "the Catechism alone is essential for the education of the people," and send their children to the public schools, where they can learn how to get a living in this world, since they must spend their lives here.

#### ILLEGITIMACY.

In Rome, where the pope and seven thousand priests and nuns live, out of every four thousand children born three thousand are illegitimate. The leading and most numerous institutions of Rome are: a church, a monastery, a nunnery, and a foundling asylum.

The *El Solfeo*, an Italian journal of prominence, publishes the following statistics: "In 1870 Rome had 2,469 secular clergy among cardinals, bishops, prelates and cures; 2,766 monks and 2,117 nuns; in all 7,322 religious of both sexes. The number of births reached in the same year to 4,378, of

which 1,215 were legitimate and 3,163 illegitimate. The illegitimate, therefore, being in the proportion of 75.25 per 100 of the total births."

The illegitimates in Protestant London are only four per cent. You will also find similar statistics by referring to a papal source, namely, *L'Amico di Cusa Almanacco Popolare*, published at Turin.

So greatly do the Romanists predominate in our jails and penitentiaries that in every State Catholic priests claim that they should be admitted to these institutions, above all others, to minister to the "spiritual interests" of their inmates because they are Catholics. It is a singular anomaly that the "only holy infallible church" should be the breeder of criminality.

With such facts before them, will the American people be dictated to by Romanism? Rome evidently thinks that we need outside aid in settling our educational problem. If such aid should be needed we would prefer an ambassador from a land, if such can be found, where the standard of education is higher than in the United States. It is an insult to the intelligence of America to have a man sent here to dictate in reference to our schools, who cannot speak our language, and who comes from a nation where more than 70 per cent. of the population can neither read nor write. If we still cherished the spirit of 1776, we would place Satolli and his satellites in a pneumatic gun of solid American sentiment and fire them forthwith to Italy.







CHARLES IX.



CATHERINE DE MEDICIS.



THE CARDINAL OF LORRAINE



DUKE HENRY DE GUISE.

Noted Persecutors.



We hate Protestantism; we detest it with our whole heart  
and soul.

*Catholic Visitor.*

Protestantism has not, nor never can have any rights,  
where Catholicity has triumphed.

*Catholic Review.*

Protestantism! Why, we would draw and quarter and  
hang up the crow's meat! We would tear it with pincers, and  
fire it with hot irons! We would fill it with molten lead, and  
sink it in hell-fire one hundred fathoms deep.

[21]

FATHER PHELAN, Editor *Western Watchman*.



## CHAPTER V.

# ENOCK MATHER MARVIN,

LATE BISHOP

OF THE

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH.

---

CHRIST IN THE SACRAMENT—TRANSUBSTANTIATION TESTED  
BY SCRIPTURE.

---

"These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the Word with all readiness of mind, and searched the Scriptures daily, whether those things were so."  
—[Acts, xvii. 11.

I READ this Scripture, not for purposes of exposition, but as indicating the spirit in which I desire these lectures to be received. And, by the way, these persons are commended for testing by Holy Scripture what they heard. The right of private judgment is made indubitable by this inspired approval.

I shall consider, this evening, the *fact* and *manner* of Christ's presence in the Sacrament.

There is scarcely any doctrine more consolatory to the true Christian than that of the Savior's presence with him. When assembled for the worship of God, with a few of his chosen, what comfort you have received, my brethren, from that gracious assurance, "Where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them."

To his ministers Jesus said : “Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.” Nor does he confine himself to his ministers. “He that loveth me,” so speaks our Lord, “shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him.” “If a man love me he will keep my words ; and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.” (John, xvi : 21, 23.) To his assembled worshippers, to his ministers, and to every man that loves him, Jesus has pledged his perpetual presence.

Imagine the emotions of the little persecuted Church of Smyrna, which had been serving, and suffering for, an unseen Master, unnoticed in their sorrows, when, all unexpected, a message comes from Him : “I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich).” Though unseen, their Master was not absent, and what a joy must that have been which had its birth in the knowledge that he was witness of their suffering and their fidelity ! Henceforth tribulation for His sake must be a luxury, and the loss of all things in His service, the best of riches. Let Christ but turn the eye of His compassion upon me, and the pang of death itself is turned to rapture.

Never is the blessed Savior more eminently present than when His people are gathered around the table, in the communion of His body and His blood. Never are His followers more conscious of His presence than when engaged in that most solemn service. They are within the very shade of Calvary. They are in sympathy with the sorrow that broke the Savior’s heart.

The *fact* of His presence in the Eucharist is denied by no Christian, and I shall not waste time in offering proof of an unchallenged proposition.

But in what manner is He present—physically or spiritually ? Is the substance of bread transformed into His body, and the substance of wine into His blood ? Is the



whole Christ, soul and Godhead, under the appearance of bread, distributed amongst the communicants, and received and eaten by them? Or is He present in a spiritual manner, and so received by faith?

The advocates of transubstantiation insist upon the literal rendering of the words of institution—"This is my body—this is my blood;" while the advocates of the spiritual presence maintain that the language is figurative, that its meaning is simply, "*This represents my body—this represents my blood.*"

Now, is there an intelligible method by which the common mind may definitely settle this dispute? We shall see.

On the part of the literalist it is maintained that figurative language is necessarily mystical, and of doubtful meaning, and that, on such a subject and at such a time, our Lord would express himself in no dubious terms. That considerations of infinite moment prompted him to intelligible statement, I admit. But that figurative language is of questionable import invariably, or that it baffles the understanding of ordinary men, is contrary to fact and daily observation. In common conversation men of every grade, the cultivated and the uncultivated, are almost constantly expressing themselves by figures. Take a homely instance. A man undertakes to describe a worthless and impracticable fellow, of whom no use can be made for valuable ends, and condenses a whole paragraph into a pithy figure: "He is a crooked stick." No man misunderstands that. No man can misunderstand it. Why, even children use this species of expression, and understand each other perfectly.

Figurative language has this advantage, that while it is often no more liable to misinterpretation than literal statement, it conveys a much more lively impression. It arrests the attention, penetrates the mind, and infixes itself in the



memory more effectually. It combines the qualities of statement, argument and illustration. It draws a picture of the truth, and hangs it up before the mind. In fact, no man makes himself so well and perfectly understood, or brings his matter so accurately to the minds of others, as he who is master of figurative speech.

For this reason it is the most fitting vehicle of vital truth. Hence its so frequent use in Scripture, as we shall see, in the communication of most essential doctrine. Matter that required to be seen, and felt, and remembered, was put into this most attractive shape, and sent upon the mission of enlightenment and love. There is then, in the nature of this mode of utterance, no reason why it should not have been used in the institution of the Sacrament; but, on the contrary, its properties, as given above, indicate its fitness for that great occasion, above all other forms of language.

It is a canon of interpretation universally accepted, that the various parts of any writing are to be understood in harmony with the whole. Bear this in mind as we proceed with the investigation.

Now, that this language is figurative, is rendered highly probable by the fact that *figures of the same class and form* are of frequent recurrence in the Bible. Take the familiar case of the dream of Pharaoh, as interpreted by Joseph. He saw seven fat cattle devoured by seven lean ones, and afterwards seven full ears of corn consumed by seven blasted ears. The seven fat kine *are* seven years of plenty—the seven lean kine *are* seven years of famine—the seven full ears *are* seven fruitful years—the seven blasted ears *are* seven years of dearth. Who makes any difficulty of understanding all this? The child who reads it for the first time needs no one to tell him that the cattle and the ears of corn of certain descriptions simply *represent* years of corresponding description. And it is the very figure of the eucharistic law—“*this is my body.*”

With this single passage from the Old Testament, let us come to the New. And that our instances may be the more strictly pertinent, we will confine our examination to the language of Christ himself:

"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord," &c. No one understands the first clause of this passage literally. As these characters stand, one at each extremity of the alphabet, so Christ embraces all things in the compass of his immortal existence. The Alpha and the Omega *represent* his all-comprising nature.

"I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star." This text is purely figurative, and precisely of the same class with those already given. The neuter verb, *to be*, is put for the active verb, *to represent*. The root from which the plant springs represents Christ's relation to David, in his divine nature, as the Creator, the source of life. In his human nature he is David's offspring. As the "teacher sent from God," he is represented by the bright star whose rays mitigate the gloom of midnight, and light the traveler in safety along his dubious way. And the *morning* star, herald of the coming day, expresses, with sublime beneficence, the promise which his advent and his resurrection give, of a perfect immortality at hand.

Passing from this book of symbols, the Apocalypse, from which these two last passages are taken, let us admire the profusion with which just such figures are scattered throughout the whole extent of our Savior's teaching during the period of his incarnation.

In the Sermon on the Mount, the great Teacher gives an epitome of Christian ethics. To his disciples he says, "Ye are the light of the world—ye are the salt of the earth." Here is our figure again—the neuter verb put for the active—*to be*, signifying *to represent*. And if ever plainness and certainty of meaning were demanded, it was in this



case, when he gave the principles which underlie the whole structure of his religion. Perspicuity and impressiveness were required, and a figurative style, within just limits, exactly met the requisition.

Again, the world stands before the Divine Instructor, in the person of its representative, Nicodemus. Ignorant humanity waits in his presence for words which shall be the key of salvation. The words are uttered—and *they are figurative*—"Ye must be born again." "Except a man be born again he can not see the kingdom of God."

At another time, He is passing through Samaria, and as he approaches the city of Sychar, coming to Jacob's well, he reposes there, while his disciples go into the city for the purpose of procuring food. A woman comes to the well to draw water, and he asks her to give him drink.

Such was the national animosity between the Jews and the Samaritans, that the woman expressed her surprise that He should ask of her even so small a favor as that. With what compassion Jesus answered, "If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me drink, thou wouldst have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water." The woman was incredulous, and objected that the well was deep, and he had nothing to draw with. "Art thou greater," said she, "than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle?" Jesus replied, "Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again; but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life." In this instance the Savior instructs a woman, ignorant of divine things, in the great principles of his doctrine, and makes water, and the drinking of it, represent the saving grace of the Spirit. Water, essential to vitality, and refreshing to the famished as it is, conveys a



most lively idea of the vitalizing presence of the Holy Spirit. And I have never heard that any one, however dull, understood this scripture literally, and supposed that the "gift of God" was nothing more nor less than the common substance, water, a well of which, "springing up," was to be located in every believer.

But, to the brief, look at the following statements of our Savior: "*I am* the true vine—ye *are* the branches—my father *is* the husbandman." "*I am* the way, the truth and the life." "*I am* the good Shepherd." "*I am* the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture."

Now, in view of this array of texts, note the following facts: First, our Lord was in the habit of using figurative language. Secondly, he used it on the most important occasions, as in his Sermon on the Mount, and his discourse to Nicodemus. Thirdly, he announced his most important doctrines in this way, such as the new birth, the access by himself alone into spiritual life, and the conserving influence of his people upon the world. Figures were not the mere fringes and decorations of his style, but the very garments in which his truth appeared. They were not the frescoing and cornice-work, but the beams and girders of the structure he erected were laid in this most expressive style. And, fourthly, a large, a *very* large proportion of his figures are identical with that used in the institution of the Eucharist, supposing it to be one. In nearly all the instances cited above, the neuter verb is substituted for the active—to *be*, for *to represent*.

Can any man suppose that in the institution of his Supper, a memorial of his sufferings, he would have used a form of speech which his invariable custom had consecrated to *figurative* use, in a literal sense? Such a departure from his own established usage would have been sure to deceive. But when he who had said, "Ye are the

light of the world," "Ye are the salt of the earth," "I am the way," "I am the vine," "I am the shepherd," "I am the door," said again, "This bread is my body," he intended to be understood just as in former cases. The common sense of mankind can never be turned aside from this plain view of it.

And one of the instances given above was part of a discourse to the Disciples at the very time when the Eucharist was instituted. "I am the true vine, and my father is the husbandman," (John xv. 1.) In a preceding chapter an account of the Supper is given, and this is in a conversation that ensued. In the brief hours that intervened between the Supper and the betrayal, when the echo of the words, "This is my body," had scarcely died, he said, "I am the vine." The latter was figurative; Was the former literal? Not one of you believes it, or can believe it.

If this form of expression is necessarily literal, then Christ teaches that his kingdom is a material edifice, when he says, "I am the door;" and we must suppose that he is an opening in the wall, or perhaps a door hung on hinges, to admit or obstruct ingress and egress. To such extremity must those be driven who are obliged, under the fulmination of horrible anathemas, to maintain an unreasonable dogma. It would be infinitely easier to maintain it among a people who had not been bewitched by the right of private judgement.

But I must call your attention now to a Scripture which is most important in this discussion, for two reasons: First, it contains this very species of figure of which I have said so much; and, secondly, it is analogous in other respects to the language used in the Law of the sacrament. Let me urge you to turn to the place and read it very carefully. It is in John vi. 30, 65.

In the hope that you will examine for yourselves, I ask



your attention to what I have to say in reference to this important place.

The Jews, demanding a sign of Jesus, refer him to the miracle of the manna, on which their fathers fed in the desert, conveying the intimation that some such divine vindication of his claim was requisite. He at once informs them that not Moses, but God, gave them the bread, "For my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, *and giveth life unto the world.*" He said, on more than one occasion, "I am the Life!" Here he declares that he *gives life to the world*—the same thought—alluding to the fact that the life of the ancient Hebrews was preserved in the desert by manna, or bread from heaven. As that was sent for their physical life, so he came to give spiritual life to men. He then immediately proceeds to show (v. 35) how this life may be secured. "He that *cometh to me* shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst." The same thing is reiterated twice in the succeeding verses (verses 37, 40).

But the Jews "murmured at him because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven," (v. 41.) Then he renewed with great emphasis the reiteration of the great truth that the life he came to give was to be received by coming to him—by *faith*, (vs. 44, 45, 47.) "*He that believeth on me, hath everlasting life.*" Having thus repeatedly and with emphasis guarded them against a gross literal interpretation of his words, he returns to the forcible and expressive figure: "I am that bread of life," (v. 48.) Having secured the figurative interpretation, he proceeds to give the figure in the boldest manner, to render it the more deeply impressive (vs. 50 to 58.) "Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the



last day.” (Compare this with v. 40, “And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life; and I will raise him up at the last day.” This shows the identity of the meaning in the words *eating* and *believing*, as used in this discourse. Of course the term eating is figurative).

His auditors, however, persisted in being offended at His language. The eating of His flesh, and drinking of His blood, was to them a “hard saying.” Jesus seemed almost indignant at the perverseness of their understanding. “What,” said He, “and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?” *Do* you suppose I intend to parcel my body out among you to be literally eaten? No, verily, it shall go intact to heaven. I am not talking literally about eating flesh. “It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing; the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit and they are life” (v. 63). Thus He closed with a formal and solemn repudiation of a *literal* interpretation of this peculiar language, and fixed forever its spiritual and vital import.

It is not at all surprising to me that our friends, who desire to establish the literal import of these passages, should also desire to withdraw the Scriptures from the private judgment of mankind, and secure a monopoly of interpretation for themselves. This place requires a world of *interpreting* to make it appear that the flesh of Jesus is *literally* to be eaten. If I desired to induce the people to believe *that*, I should follow their example, I am sure. I should want the interpreting all in my own hands. But it is too late. The spark of thought that Luther struck, more than three hundred years ago, has kindled a flame that can never be extinguished.

You will observe that the form of this figure is the same which we have found so often in the Savior’s teaching, and

the same that He used at the Last Supper. “I *am* that bread.” And again, that the matter is analogous, he represents himself by bread in both places. We have seen that, in this place, he expressly gives his language a figurative or spiritual meaning. Is it possible, then, that in the other it is to be understood literally or physically?

One other remark in reference to this passage, and I dismiss it. If you will take the pains to compare it with the conversation with the woman of Samaria, already cited, you will discover a striking parallel, both in the matter and language of the two places, water being the basis of the figure there and bread here.

At this point the argument stands thus: our Lord habitually used this form of speech in a figurative way; He used it in this way on the most important occasions, and for communicating the most important matters; He used it in this figurative way in reference to matter strictly analogous to the eucharistic institution; and finally He used it in this way in a conversation just after the sacramental Supper. All the surrounding facts, then, point, with unbroken consent, to the figurative character of the language used on that solemn occasion.

Now let us examine the passages in which the institution is given, and question them directly as to their import.

In the first place, take into account the *occasion* on which the sacrament was instituted. Christ was celebrating, with his disciples, the feast of the Passover. You are familiar with the history of that feast. It was commemorative—and that of an event which prefigured the shedding of Christ’s blood, and its happy result to His people. The paschal lamb was not reproduced, but the paschal scene was *recalled*.

So the disciples, taking the hint from this, would understand that the passion of Christ was commemorated in the Supper which he then established. If there had been



any doubt of this, his words confirmed it: "This do in remembrance of me." This bread is to be broken, and this wine poured out, to recall the breaking of my body, and the shedding of my blood.

If Christ is *reproduced*, He is not *remembered*, and His words—"This do in remembrance of me"—have no significance. If He is reproduced and eaten, He is received, and not recalled.

Another fact which we find in the words of institution is this: that Matthew and Mark give the words in reference to the wine—"this is my blood of the new testament;" while Luke gives them thus—"this is the new testament in my blood." Now, if the words are literal, then there is a contradiction between Luke and the other two evangelists; for the blood of Christ, and the new testament in His blood, are different things. But, on the contrary, the figurative interpretation covers both statements, for the wine represents both the blood and the new testament established in it.

So, you see, the language, interpreted in its own light, is unquestionably figurative.

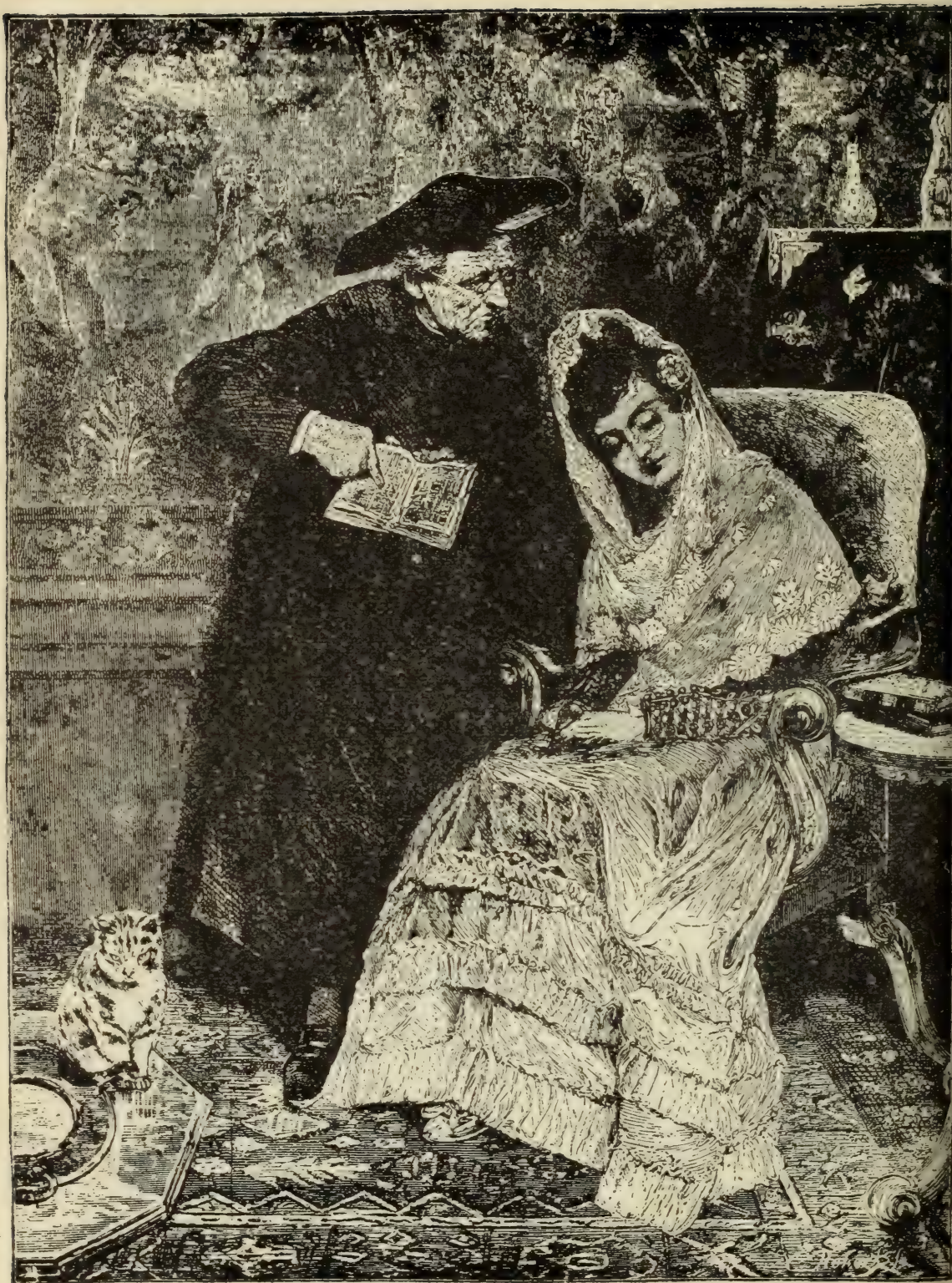
If anything can add to the certainty of the result already arrived at, it is the fact that the inspired writers of the New Testament, with one accord, so far as they speak on the subject, depose against transubstantiation. See Acts ii. 46, and xx. 7. If transubstantiation were true, the substance received and eaten in the Eucharist is not bread, but the flesh of Christ. But the sacred historian calls it *bread*.

See also 1 Cor. x. 16, and xi. 23, 29. Here you discover the same fact, the substance eaten is not the body of Christ, but bread. "For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death until He come."

Perhaps I have wearied you with proofs. I will forbear. Enough has been said for the present. You have your Bibles. Be thankful for the boon, and search them "whether these things are so."







The Forbidden Book.





To give the Bible to the lay people is to throw pearls before swine.

CARDINAL HOSIUS.

Cursed be those cunning and nefarious societies which call themselves "Bible Societies," and which give the Bible to the inexperienced youth.

PIUS IX.

Were God to order me through the voices of my superiors to put to death, father, mother, children, brothers and sisters, I would do it with an eye as tearless, and a heart as calm, as if I were seated at the banquet of the Paschal Lamb.—Affirmation of a Jesuit.

[33]

## CHAPTER VI.

ENOCH MATHER MARVIN,

LATE BISHOP

OF THE

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH.

---

PRACTICAL RESULTS OF THE DOCTRINE OF TRANSUBSTANTIATION.

---

“And their word will eat as doth a canker.”—2 Tim. ii. 17.

As most of you are already aware, I have, this evening, to deal with the practical results of the doctrine of Transubstantiation. In doing so, I will, in the beginning, make this disclaimer: I do not charge that every individual who holds this doctrine realizes, in his own character, all the bad results which naturally flow from it. I have personal friends who are members of the Roman Church—persons of intelligence, and, I doubt not, of piety. A principle does not produce all of its own proper results in every mind that embraces it, for the reason that other causes meet it, and counteract it, and modify its influence. So, doubtless, this unfortunate dogma is received by many persons who escape, in a measure, the disastrous consequences of their faith.

As this may be accounted for, first, by the fact that in their creed there are recognized some of the great truths of

religion, which they apprehend with sufficient clearness to break the force of this capital error; and, secondly, living in the midst of a community where the Bible is untrammelled, and the true light shines, their characters are, from that source, unconsciously benefited. So that, partly from within, and partly and more largely from without, redeeming influences save them from the full measure of calamity in which, otherwise, the doctrine of transubstantiation would involve them.

Yet I have no doubt that, even in this country, great numbers do realize the results which are to be hereafter specified; and that, in those countries where the Papacy is supreme, they are well nigh, or quite, co-extensive with the influence of the Church. What I charge is, that these are the logical and philosophical sequences of the doctrine, and that, just so far as it has its course unchecked by other and correcting influences, it inevitably produces them. I ask a candid hearing of my friends of the Papal communion. It can do no harm to consider what I say. Think of it. Do not spurn it because it comes from a source you have been taught to distrust. If my statements and arguments have not the marks and brands of truth, you can easily discard them; if they have, I beseech you to weigh them with candor. You may not find all those evils in your own case, but may it not be that you have been saved from them by causes outside of your own Church? Possibly you owe more to Protestantism than you suppose. But if you *are* exempt, still ask yourself, and ask facts and history, if what I say is not true, and if it has not found sad exemplification in millions of cases.

No error is found by itself; they go in herds, so that whenever you find one you are sure to find others keeping it company. There is always a leader in each group, and whichever way that one goes the rest are sure to follow.

Error itself does homage to truth, in that it strives to



resemble it. Nor does it make any great headway among men, except as it does, in some particulars, resemble that which is true. One of the most striking features of truth is, that in all its parts it is consistent with itself. The mind recognizes this instinctively, and will tolerate nothing that can not bring this testimony in its favor. So each particular truth must be in keeping with every other one. This pervading characteristic of truth must be simulated by every falsehood before it can gain any credit. Every principle, true or false, stands related to other principles; and every fact, true or assumed, stands related to others; and in each case there must be consent and concurrence among them all, otherwise their disagreement proves their falsehood. There is a native, inevitable logic, that will proceed from one thing to another, and from a fact, or an assumption, construct a system. And every member of this system will be homogeneous with the first. If the initial assumption be true, so will the rest be true; if it be false, so will they.

If one error could be maintained by itself, it would not be so bad; but if I hold one, it must precipitate me headlong into a whole class. All truth is important, and it is a positive misfortune to me to believe *any* falsehood—even such as have no connection with practical life. It puts me, just to the extent of its own magnitude, out of adjustment with the universe. But in those relations in which error connects itself with life and character, it is terribly pernicious. An error of this class, to the whole extent of its meaning, perverts the life and deforms the character of those who embrace it. But the harm stops not there; it brings along after it its whole family, brothers, cousins and all, and the whole greedy tribe feed upon the life, and subsist upon the blasted character, of their unhappy victim.

The doctrine of transubstantiation belongs to this mischievous class of errors. It stands in a false relation to

almost every vital truth of both theoretical and practical religion, and once *it* is received, *they* must either lose their significance, or be exchanged for falsehoods. Unlike them, and contradictory to them as it is, it can not be received while they remain uncorrupted. There they stand, witnessing with divine authority against it; and they must be put out of the way, or corrupted in the mind of the believer, until they become homogeneous with it. Such havoc does it produce in the beautiful garden of truth. "Their word will eat as doth a canker."

To show you that I am not talking at random, I proceed to *specifications* and *proofs*.

1. The doctrine of transubstantiation *materializes religion*. It offers us a corporeal Christ, and teaches us that we are to receive Him, and be united to Him by a physical act.

Our Savior calls Himself the vine, and His people branches of the vine. Using the same figure, the apostle represents the true spiritual Church as an olive tree. The Jews were the natural branches, and were broken off by *unbelief*. The Gentiles were grafted in by *faith*. No one can fail to see the exalted spiritual truth herein conveyed—the personal, spiritual union of Christ and His people. He is the head, they are the body, and faith is the act by which the union is consummated. Christ is not received in any corporeal act, but by a spiritual one—*by faith*. "As many as received Him, to them gave He the power to become the sons of God; even to them that believe on His name." Believing on His name, and receiving Him, are, in this Scripture, the same thing. It is the *soul* that receives Christ, and not the *teeth* and the *stomach*. "The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life." Can you believe that the spiritual life is sustained, just as the animal life is, by eating?—that spiritual food is masticated, and spiritual nutrition obtained, by manduca-



tion? By this theory man is materialized, and religion is materialized for him. The soul is assimilated to the body, and lives in the same way.

Infinitely diverse from this is the doctrine of Christ. His people are born again—born of the Spirit, born to a new life. The nutrition of this life is not bread, but grace ; it is not eaten, but received by faith, as Christ himself so plainly teaches in the sixth chapter of John. Now, where this fictitious eating of Christ is substituted for the spiritual reception of him in the new birth, the most deplorable consequences must follow. Religion becomes mere formalism. The *physical* is made the basis of the *real*. Do you imagine that that alone is real which is outward and palpable? Do you imagine that flesh is more a substance than spirit? No! it is spirit that is pre-eminently actual. The basis of being is here. “God is a Spirit,” and he is the Fountain of Being. Surrounded by the material so completely as we are, we need to be constantly lifted up to the perception of the spiritual life. This is the office of religion ; and what a misfortune has befallen us when, instead of lightening the material load that weighs down our thoughts, it adds to it yet more and more! Oh, Religion! art thou not indeed then celestial! Hast *thou* abandoned us to the flesh!

Vital piety can not flow from this corporeal ministration of grace. I do not say that there may not be by this means a development of religious sentiment. But the question is, Is it the *true* religious sentiment? There may be, and often is, a religious feeling which will impel the subject of it to many acts of self-denial, and to a laborious pietism, which yet is not true piety. The Pharisees of our Savior’s day were illustrious examples of this. They fasted twice a week ; they bestowed alms ; they paid the full tithe with rigid exactness ; they made long prayers, often on the corners of the streets. Yet they robbed widows’ houses, and made the temple a den of thieves. Even the gentle



spirit of Christ became indignant when he saw their officious parade of counterfeit religious wares. "Hypocrites—brood of vipers"—these were the mildest appellations by which they could be characterized. Paganism develops religious sentiment to a very high degree. What sacrifices have not been made to the gods! How strong must that sentiment be which causes the Hindoo devotee to elevate his arm, and hold it there until it becomes rigid? Does the Christian martyr die? Yes, for his faith he will die. When driven to the last alternative, to deny his Lord, or burn, he will burn. So will the Hindoo die. Voluntarily, to enhance his merit in the eyes of his God, the Hindoo gives himself to death. Here are the most commanding sentiments, and, in their way, they are religious.

The truth is, the religious consciousness is native in the human breast. It is there, and it responds to the call of error as well as to that of truth. And it is often aroused to feverish and exaggerated strength under the teachings of a false faith. It is, therefore, no test of true religion that there is a strong religious consciousness. It may exist and express itself in the most elaborate formalism. But "the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but *righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost.*"

True godliness expresses itself, not so much in a bustling parade of forms, *as in a pure life*. It loves religious forms for the spirit that is in them. But it does not rest in the form. And when you see a punctilious observance of forms, with a profane and licentious life, you may be sure there is something sadly out of joint. Is there not a deadly wrong when the beer garden and the grog shop are the favorite evening haunts of those who were devout in the morning? These are sober considerations. My candid friend, *think*.

This, then, is the first count in the indictment of the doctrine of transubstantiation, that it materializes religion,

destroys its vitality, and so leads to formalism, and defeats that practical, purifying effect upon character which true Christian doctrine produces.

2. The second count in the indictment is, that it *vitiates the worship of God*. "God is a Spirit, and they that worship Him, must worship Him in spirit and in truth." (John iv. 24). The object of the second commandment of the Decalogue is to secure this purity and spirituality of worship. "Thou shalt not make unto thyself any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them; for I, the Lord thy God, am a jealous God," etc. (Ex xx. 4, 5. See, also, Lev. xxvi. 1; Deut. iv. 16-19, 8, and xxvii. 15; and Ps. xcvii. 7). This point was guarded with special care. God knew with what facility the mind would come to stop at the image, and cease to look beyond it to that which it represented. Hence the law prohibits the making of any image to represent either created things, false gods, or the true God, for purposes of worship. God would have the mind of the worshipper directed immediately to himself. He would have the thought unoccupied with any other object, lest his glory should be divided with another. We are in danger of doing injustice to the idolatrous religions of the world, by supposing that they teach the worship of mere images. Their images are *but* images, intended to express some trait in the character of the god they represent, and thus aid the mind in its conception of the divinity which is the object of worship. Often, no doubt, they supposed the God to be present in the image. They imagined themselves to be paying homage to the Divine nature; they were sadly mistaken.

The case of the worship of the host is not strictly parallel, but, at the same time, it is analogous. Though the bread is not an image, yet they suppose it to be inhabited by



the true God, and, under that idea, "bow down themselves to it." They worship God under a false view; they worship him under a false form. They worship him, but not in truth. And though the mind of the cultivated Romanist may, by an effort, raise itself from the bread to the Divine nature, yet is it not inevitable that the untaught and unskillful mind will be arrested by the material object before it, and that that object will receive a share, at least, of its homage? Is not this idolatry? Even those most skilled in discrimination, if they suppose the wafer to be in a special manner the receptacle of God, and conceive of it thus, confer a species of divine honor upon the insensible creature before them, and must regard it with a degree of reverence not due to any creature. How much does this want of idolatry! I submit the question to yourselves for decision. The thoughtful Romanist, who examines this subject thoroughly, will scarcely bow before the wafer without misgiving. Pause at the check of conscience, and ask your soul if you are not giving the glory of the great God to another. Can you bow before that wafer, and then meet God with confidence and composure! Oh! my brother, I entreat you, for your own soul's sake, suffer not your priest to lead you into sacrilege.

3. This dogma *perverts the ministerial office.*

The attentive reader of the New Testament must have observed that the chief function of the ministerial office is that of preaching. The Divine Word, the Truth, is the principal instrument selected by the Almighty for the turning of men to himself. The Word of God is the good seed in the parable of the sower. (Mat. xiii. 3-8, 18-23.) According to Peter, it is the incorruptible seed by which we are born to a new life. (1 Pet. i. 2, 3.) James declares, with equal plainness, that the spiritual life comes to us through the Word. (James i. 18.) For this reason the divine injunction to ministers of the gospel is, "*Preach the Word.*"



“Go ye into all the world, and PREACH THE GOSPEL to every creature.” (Mark xvi. 15.) “Go ye, therefore, and TEACH all nations.” (Mat. xxviii. 19.) Such is the *commission*. It expresses, in language that absolutely precludes misunderstanding, the nature of the ministerial calling. *The minister's vocation is to preach.* The pastoral office is incident to this. He is to preach not only publicly, but also “privately, from house to house.” He has charge of the flock, that he may feed it with the word of truth. And this charge involves certain responsibility in the discipline of the Church, as explained by the apostle in the epistles to Timothy. But all this grows naturally and necessarily out of the original design of the office—the *preaching* of the gospel. This is the extent of ministerial powers as given in the Christian Scriptures.

But transubstantiation, and the sacrifice of the mass, require a priesthood, whose office is, having procured the divine change in the elements, to offer them as a sacrifice to God. Now, in the Christian dispensation, there is no human priest as an officer in the Church. The Lord Jesus is himself the only priest, and has offered the only sacrifice. This I proved to you in my last lecture. Those men who assume the sacerdotal office, do actually usurp the office of the Lord Jesus Christ. To such sacrilege does this fatal dogma lead them. O! ye priests of Rome, the best of you, though ye were pure as an apostle, are your hands clean enough to offer that immaculate victim, the Lamb of God? How dare you, to assume the peculiar office of the Son of God? For such temerity you must one day answer to your Maker.

Before the reformation of the sixteenth century, preaching had fallen almost wholly into disuse; so much so, that in the Apocalypse the revival of preaching is recognized as the significant fact of the new religious movement. You remember the vision of the angel flying through the

midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach. It was the sign of returning vitality in the Church of God. Even now, in Papal countries, there is scarcely any preaching. When the pulpit is brought into requisition, it is usually to harangue the audience upon the miracles of some saint, the wonderful virtue of some relic, or upon some other topic equally useless, and equally foreign from the gospel.

The preaching of the pure gospel is a priceless blessing to the world. The truth of God, so potent in itself, coming from a heart that feels it, produces results such as Christ foresaw when he instituted the ministry. The world needs "line upon line, line upon line, precept upon precept, precept upon precept; here a little and there a little," now, as much as when the prophet wrote. This demand is met by the living ministry. It is not met by any other agency in existence. Where this light goes out, the world is in darkness. The effect is seen in the morals of the people.

I shall not venture an attempt to describe the injury which Rome inflicted on our race when she usurped the office of the Divine Redeemer in his priesthood, and put out the light of the pulpit. But it was the logical and necessary consequence of the Papal doctrine of the Eucharist.

4. *It degrades the atonement of Christ.* His offering of himself to God was a perfect sacrifice. So the apostle teaches. He offered himself "once for all." There is no need that he should be offered often. This point was established in my last lecture. But the doctrine of the priests, that he is often offered by them, is in direct conflict with this plain teaching of the New Testament, and degrades the atonement in two ways.

First, it represents the passion of Christ as being insufficient, so that he must be offered frequently until the end of time. It puts the suffering of Christ on a level with the offerings of the Jewish ritual, which, the apostle says,



had constantly to be repeated on account of their imperfection. So low do they bring my Savior. And, secondly, it puts the Son of God into the hands of mere men, to be offered by them. According to the Scriptures, he was the only priest worthy to officiate in the offering of that august sacrifice.

Jesus ! how do they degrade thee ! How do they crucify thee afresh ! More cruel than the nails, more murderous than the spear, are the *words* with which they mangle thee.

In this degradation of the atonement, a false and unworthy object of faith is offered to the penitent—a pretended atonement where there is none. “Their word will eat as doth a canker.”

5. *It invests the priest with a fictitious and dangerous consequence in his own eyes, and in the eyes of those who believe the dogma.*

They regard him as a worker of divine wonders. The man who, by pronouncing a few words, can produce such a change as that claimed in transubstantiation, must be regarded with no common reverence. Then he comes between the people and God, as their priest, authorized to offer sacrifice for them, not only while living, but after they shall be dead. The Papist, in proportion as his religious convictions are sincere and thorough, must look upon his priest with a superstitious awe. If the better educated of them are raised above this feeling, it is fortunate for them. But, with the great mass, it is otherwise. And this result is augmented by the habit of confessing to the priest. Auricular confession is itself an appendage of the priestly office, and so is traced directly to its pater-nity in transubstantiation. It belongs to the family of abuses, that has descended from this dogma. Nothing can be better calculated to inspire a cringing dread of the priest than this. Think of a man receiving the confession of another man, which ought to be made to God—the con-



fession of all his sins, public and secret—sins of the heart as well as of the life—sins of thought and imagination, as well as those that have ripened into action. He stands in the place of God to that man, and from that day the penitent must cringe before his father confessor. The priest must, also, himself come to feel a sort of consequence from the relation he assumes toward the layman that will tempt him to abuse it. And I utter what every one must admit to be true, when I say that there is an amount of power thus secured to the priest *which is unsafe in the hands of any uninspired man*. He will begin to feel soon that his is an authority that must not be resisted. From this position there is but one short step to the theory that the Church has the right to coerce conformity to her creed. Persecution of heretics must come of it.

What we would thus be led, *a priori*, to expect, may be read on many a blood-red page of history. The Church of Rome indeed has avowed her claim to the right of enforcing her creed by persecuting even to death. And once committed to the claim she can never retract it. Is she not infallible?

The history of the Inquisition must ever be regarded with horror by outraged humanity. This revolting tribunal was established in the twelfth century. It originated under the auspices of a Pope of Rome named *Innocent*. The ecclesiastics of that day, not satisfied with the ordinary judicial processes in the case of heretics, and seeking their extermination, invented a mode of haunting them out of every secret place, that none might escape. Hence the name of the tribunal, *The Inquisition*. A vague suspicion was sufficient for a man's apprehension, and, once in the hands of the Inquisitors, the victim was most affectionately urged to confess, by the potent solicitations of torture. Under the influence of the Popes and the clergy, the princes of several European countries sanctioned and supported this blood-

thirsty tribunal, so that no man dared to oppose it. Those whose friends were seized by it, were mute with fear. Though the suspicion on which they were arrested might be ever so unfounded, so pervading was the tyranny and so terrible the power of the inquisitors, that none might interpose to save them. Even when innocent, he could bring no witness to establish the fact, but must undergo torture to extort confession, and if he escaped at last, it was usually with his life alone. Once under suspicion, it were as well to be guilty as innocent, for what of life was left to those against whom nothing could be proven, and from whom no confession could be wrung, was scarce worth the having. If the slightest evidence pointed to guilt, the suspected were delivered over to the civil authority, in a solemn public manner, to be burned. And the kind-hearted priest, after hunting up his victim and torturing him, and condemning him for no other purpose than to see him burned, graciously enjoined the secular officers *not to touch his blood, or put his life in danger!!* But the recent secular officers, always *would* burn them.

You may meet with men who will deny that the Inquisition was an *ecclesiastical tribunal*. They will *asseverate* that it was a civil court, and charge its atrocities upon the Spanish Government. Such men “know not what they say, nor whereof they affirm.” It has existed in almost every papal country of Europe, first or last. *The Church created it*. In various countries the civil authorities had more or less connection with it. Indeed, the *execution* of the sentence always devolved on them. And if any one should doubt my testimony because I am a heretic, I refer him to the following unquestionable witness—one who is, at any rate, above the suspicion of bearing false witness against the Roman Church. I quote from a book bearing the following title: “The Primacy of the Apostolic See vindicated, by Francis Patrick Kenrick, Archbishop of



Baltimore. The Archbishop says: "The *quæsitores fidei*, or Inquisitors, were first appointed by Innocent III." Again: "The *ecclesiastical character* of the tribunal is evident from its *judges, who were clergymen*, from the *chief matter of cognizance*, which was *heresy*, and from its *original organization*, which was *planned and directed by the Pontiff*. It assumed a secular character by the action of the emperor and of other potentates, who attached civil effects, *especially capital punishment*, to its sentence. For this reason, it could nowhere exist without *the concurrence of both parties*." (pp. 353-4).

But we are often told that at least the Spanish Inquisition was an affair of the state, for which the Church is not responsible. The Archbishop aforesaid does his best to cast the odium of it entirely upon the Spanish monarchy. But he is compelled to admit facts which contradict his assertions. (See Primacy, p. 356). "At the solicitation of Ferdinand Sixtus IV., in the year 1478, authorized the erection of a tribunal of inquisition throughout the Spanish dominions." Who is the more deeply implicated, the King who *solicited*, or the Pope who *authorized*? But the Archbishop insisted that "the Spanish Inquisition may be styled a royal tribunal, since the King appointed the supreme inquisitor *from among the bishops, with the assent of the Pope*, and otherwise exercised an influence equivalent, in many instances, to control." (Id). Now I submit, if a tribunal which was instituted to take cognizance of religious causes, whose chief officers are ecclesiastics appointed with the assent of the Pope, is not, *at least*, as much an ecclesiastical as it is a civil court? All this Archbishop Kenrick admits of the celebrated Spanish Inquisition. The truth is, it seems to me to be at least four-fifths ecclesiastical.

Finally, on this subject, I will introduce the testimony of Joannes Devotus. His works are endorsed at Rome.



He is, *at least*, as good authority as any papal writer in this country. It is only about sixty-seven years since he wrote. In his *Institutions*, vol. 4, under the head, "*Inquisitors of Heretical Pravity*," you may find the following:

"The cause of instituting the tribunal, called the Inquisition, was this: At first every Bishop in his own diocese, or a number of Bishops assembled in a Provincial Council, made inquisition of those errors which arose in the diocese or province; but the more weighty matters were always referred to the Apostolical See, and thus every Bishop or Provincial Council took care to bring it to its proper issue, whatever was decreed by the Apostolical See. But in processes of time, when greater evils pressed, it became necessary for the Pope to send legates into those regions in which heresy had long and widely spread, that they might assist the Bishops in restraining the audacity of abandoned men, and in deterring Christians from foreign and depraved doctrines. But when new errors daily sprung up, and the number of heretics was greatly increased—seeing that the legates could not always be at hand, or apply the proper remedy, it was determined to institute a *standing tribunal*, that should always be present, and at all times, and in every country, should devote their minds to preserving the *soundness of the faith*, and to *restraining and expelling heresies as they arose*. Thus it was that the Inquisitors were first appointed to perform the office of *Vicars to the Holy See*. But as, in a matter so weighty as the preservation of the purity of the faith, the Inquisitors needed that close union of mind and sentiment which is proper to the Apostolical See, as the center of unity, there was instituted at Rome, by the Popes, an assembly or congregation of cardinals in which the Pope presides. *This congregation is the head of all Inquisitors OVER THE WHOLE WORLD; to it they all refer their more difficult matters; and its authority and judgment are final*. It is rightly and wisely ordered that the *Pope's office and power should sustain this institution*. For he is the center of unity and head of the Church; and to him Christ has committed plenary power to feed, teach, rule, and govern all Christians."

These statements, be it remembered, are endorsed at Rome. They were not made *especially for American ears*, so be sure, but all the better for that. Henceforth, if any man tells you the Inquisition is not a tribunal of the Roman Church, tell him he knows not what he says.

Rome! alas for her, she had no Scripture to put down the Waldenses and other evangelical heretics with, and what could she do? What? The sword was within her reach, and with its point she might open a way into human hearts for the introduction of her creed. And she did. In Spain alone, as the records of the Inquisition show, near half a million suffered the most horrible death under sentence of this tribunal.

The massacre of St. Bartholomew's Day in France is a matter of public history. On the occasion of certain nup-

tial festivities in the French court, the Protestant noblemen of the nation were brought together to be butchered. And they were butchered. Ten thousand fell in three days in the city. The best blood of the kingdom ran down the gutters into the river. Throughout the land, by secret orders from the king, Protestants were given to the knife. Some estimates put the number of victims at one hundred thousand; others as low as thirty thousand.

But how was the news received in Rome? "When the letters of the Pope's Legate were read in the assembly of the Cardinals, by which he assured the Pope that all was transacted by the express will and command of the King, it was immediately decreed that the Pope should march with his cardinals to the Church of St. Mark, and in the most solemn manner give thanks to God *for so great a blessing* conferred on the See of Rome and the Christian world!"

On the following Monday, Mass was celebrated in honor of the event. They ordained, also, a universal Jubilee, that thanks might be given and rejoicings celebrated everywhere, for the destruction of the enemies of the truth and Church in France. Thus was the whole Romish Church committed to the butchery of St. Bartholomew's day. Innocent men, collected on a festive occasion, under fraudulent pledges of friendship and safety, are treacherously given to slaughter, and "the Church" endorses the deception and the murder, and rejoices in it greatly. This is the infallible Church—the Church that never errs, and can never retract.

Even now the cries of the Jew, MORTARA, are echoing through the world. Robbed of his child by force, and fraud, he is a swift witness against the persecuting tyranny of the Romish priesthood.

But why does not Rome persecute in this country?



Freemen! Can you tell me why? Sons of the revolution! Why?

Some years ago there was a paper published in this city, entitled *The Shepherd of the Valley*. It existed under the auspices of the Church of Rome, and in November, 1851, it contained the language which I am about to recite. This language excited a good deal of interest, and was, as it must always be, condemned by many. It was, therefore, repudiated by some Papal organs, who charged that the editor of the *Shepherd* was an irresponsible man, speaking without authority. This the editor of the *Shepherd* denied, and declared in his paper that he enjoyed the sanction of the Archbishop of St. Louis. Accordingly the endorsement of "his Grace" stands at the head of the sheet, with the signature and sign duly appealed. Hear him:

"If the Catholics ever gain—which they surely will do, though at a distant day—an immense numerical superiority, *religious freedom in this country is at an end*. So say our enemies. So we believe. But in what sense do we believe it? In what sense are we the advocates of religious intolerance? In the sense in which the enemies of the Church understand the word? By no means. We simply mean that a Christian people will not consider the ridicule of Christianity, the denial of its fundamental truths of the immortality of the soul, and the existence of God, the overthrow of all religion and morality, matters beneath their notice and condemnation; that the foundation will be laid for a *legislation which shall restrain the propagation of certain doctrines; that men will no longer be permitted to attack dogmas with which morality is inseparably connected.*"

Of course, when that time comes, "the Church will be the sole arbiter of the question—which are the "dogmas with which morality is inseparably connected?" *From the brook of such a Shepherd, GOOD LORD, DELIVER US.*



No goodness of individual character in the priests of Rome can save them from the philosophical tendencies of their system. They are not persecutors, because they are naturally worse than other men, but because their priestly assumptions lead to that result. They are but men. They find irresponsible power in their hands. The most natural thing in the world is, that they should become impatient of contradiction, and at last *enforce* submission to their authority. The people, once receiving them in their assumed character of priests and confessors, and assenting to their miraculous claim of changing bread into the person of the Son of God, will be ready to second them in almost anything. Hence the truth of the statement, made by the benevolent Shepherd of our Valley, that when Rome gets the ascendancy, religious toleration ceases.

My brother of the Roman communion in our happy America, pause and think! Remember your own Lord Baltimore, who inaugurated religious liberty in Maryland. Shall the blood of ecclesiastical martyrs ever stain the soil consecrated to freedom by the Revolution? May God forbid it.

But you tell me that Protestants have persecuted. *Yes!* and we can never forgive the deep perversion of the human mind by the Church of Rome, which it took Protestantism two hundred years to outgrow. But, thank God, Protestantism is not *committed* to persecution. No one has ever had authority to commit it to such a thing. It can be pledged to nothing except by the Word of God. There is nothing in the tendency of Protestant principles to lead to persecution. In Rome it is far otherwise. With her claim of infallibility, the precedents of the hoary past bind her to intolerance wherever she may have power. The very elements of her priestly office constitute an inward impulsion in the same direction. If the blows of the secular arm in this country were directed by Roman nerves, this lecture would cost me my life.

6. The last count of this indictment is that *the doctrine of transubstantiation leads to infidelity.*

The infidelity of the educated classes in Papal countries is a notorious fact, and one that is readily accounted for. To their minds, Romanism and Christianity are synonymous terms. The religion of our Savior is held accountable for all the impossibilities of the Papal creed. The result is inevitable. Infidelity or the Papal creed—this is their alternative. The creed is impossible to them. They fall, as they *must* do, on the other horn.

Men who think, see the great corporation of facts carrying on the business of existence in the utmost harmony. They discover certain principles that are *universally* predicable of facts—principles that are so palpable as to be named *axioms*. No *fact* ever ousts them. One is one, and not two. So the sovereign axiom decrees, and all facts yield their ready suffrage. But here is a new comer that sets up its claims and demands a place in the guild of facts. But it must have its own way. It don't like the sovereign authority of axioms. It is refractory. One is not only one—it is a million. Impossible! A universal voice scouts the interloper. By ballot, every vote of facts and principles blackballs the stranger. If introduced, he will set the whole corporation by the ears.

But some sagacious objector replies: These facts of *religion* are independent of axioms—they are on higher ground—they are mysteries. There is the Trinity, for instance, which makes one to be three, and three one. I deny it. The Trinity involves no such absurdity. It teaches that there are three persons in one Godhead—not that *three persons are one person*.

No axiom is contradicted here. The world is full of illustrations of the fact that many persons may constitute one organization. Every corporation in the land is an illustration. The Supreme Court of your State is an illus-



tration. There are three judges and one court. I do not say that these are illustrations of the *mode* of the Trinity in the Godhead. In the mode there is mystery. But they illustrate the fact of *uni-plurality*. This is all that the doctrine of the Trinity needs to save it from absurdity. The incarnation of Christ is given as carrying with it contradictions equal to those of transubstantiation. Nothing is more unjust. That two natures may be united in one person is all that the doctrine of the incarnation requires to protect it from the charge of absurdity. Every man presents an illustration of this in his own person. Flesh and spirit are blended into a single existence. Why, then, may not the human and the divine? The *fact* is vindicated—the mode is mysterious. And where are *any* facts whose modes and processes are not mysterious? Is not nutrition so? Are not sensation and consciousness, thought and affection, so? Is not every movement of the human body, every development of the human mind, mysterious in its modes?

Thus do the great truths of revealed religion establish their claim to membership in the great guild of facts. They become visible just sufficiently to establish their consistency and harmony with other facts, and then sweep up into the inaccessible empyrean of thought, above the sight of men, above the sight of angels. But transubstantiation, when *it* comes, *fights with all facts*, and yet claims to be one.

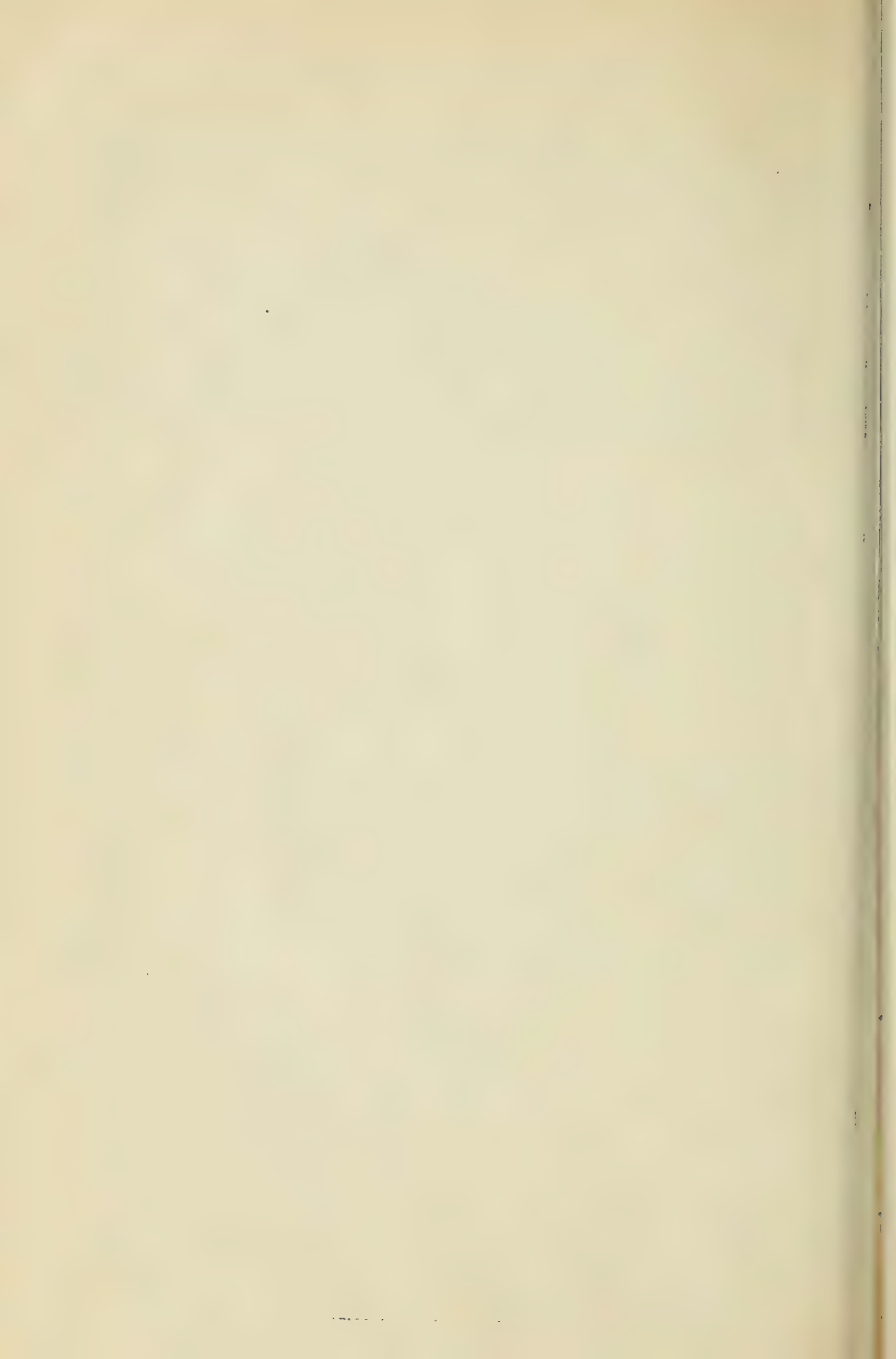
Alas! for the man who knows no Christianity that does not involve transubstantiation. The impossible dogma must be repudiated, and the world's hope, having been joined to it in unlawful bans, by unauthorized and usurping priests, must go with it.

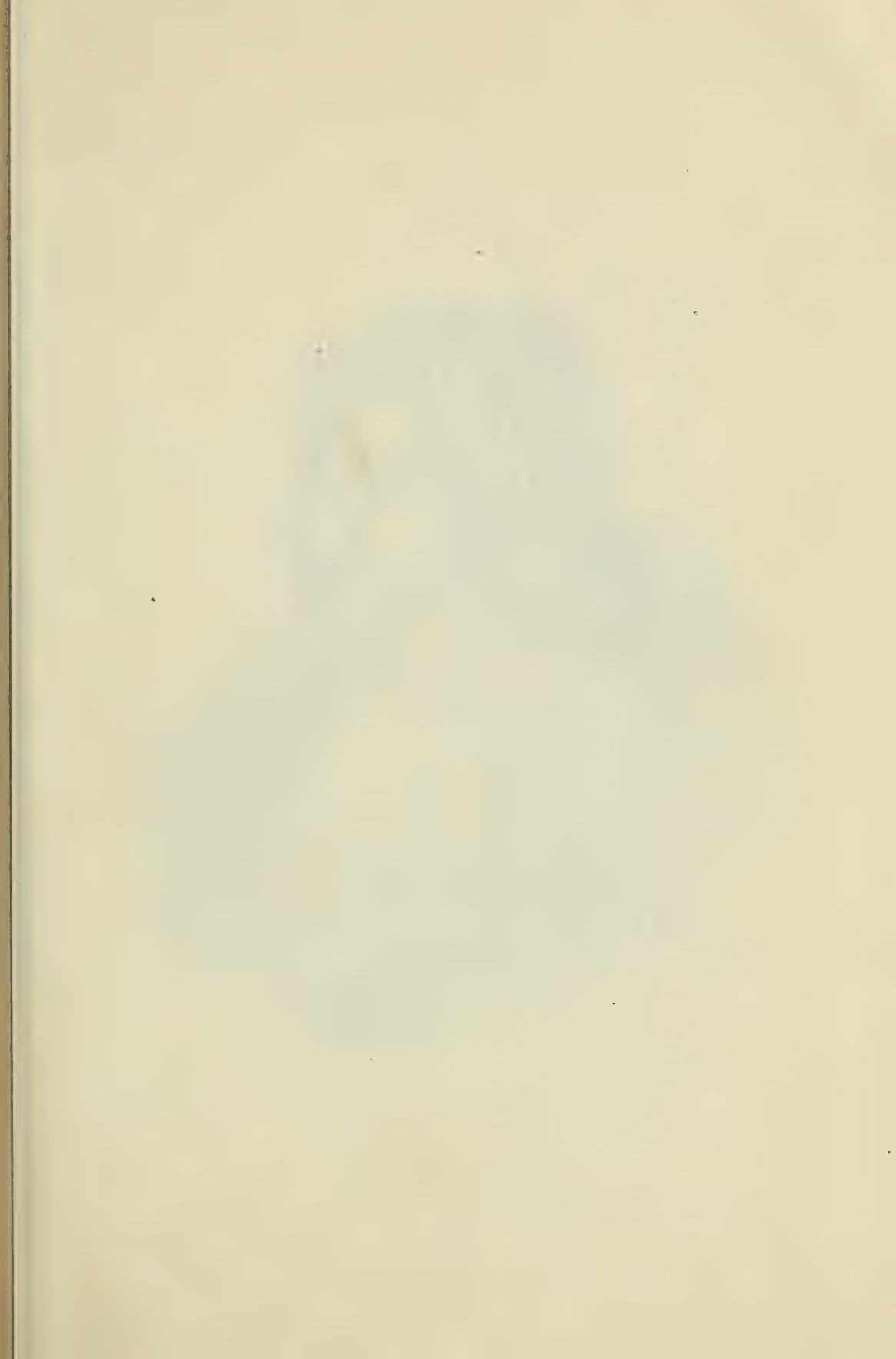
O! France, France! St. Bartholomew's Day *made thee over to infidelity!* The French mind was too much cultivated to believe in this dogma. Protestantism, sent of God to



the relief of awakening intellect, was strangled on that black day. Infidelity became inevitable. Infidelity gave France up to anarchy, and the lustration of many revolutions has not yet washed out the stain.

Such are the necessary results of this doctrine. It materializes religion, it perverts the ministerial office, it degrades the atonement, it vitiates worship, it gives the priest a fictitious and dangerous consequence in his own eyes, and in the eyes of the devotee, and it tends, among cultivated men, to infidelity.









Beatrice Cenci.



All Catholics must make themselves felt as active agents in the daily political life in countries where they live. They must penetrate wherever possible in the administration of civil affairs.

POPE LEO XIII.

Every true Catholic is bound to think and act as his Priest tells him. A Catholic majority will forbid liberty of worship and try to forbid liberty of conscience.

[55]

JOHN ANTHONY FROUDE.



## CHAPTER VII.

# ENOCK MATHER MARVIN,

LATE BISHOP

OF THE

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH.

---

CHURCH UNITY—ROMANIST THEORY.

---

“For it hath been declared to me of you, my brethren, by them which are of the house of Chloe, that there are contentions among you. Now, this I say, that every one of you saith, I am of Paul; and I of Apollos; and I of Cephas; and I of Christ. Is Christ divided? Was Paul crucified for you? Or were ye baptized in the name of Paul? I thank God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; lest any should say that I had baptized in my own name. And I baptized also the household of Stephanus; besides, I know not whether I baptized any other. For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel; not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ should be made of none effect.”—[1 Cor. i. 11-17.]

I HAVE been hearing a good deal lately of efforts to make the impression that I misrepresent the Roman Church. It is all very vague. No one seems to know definitely in what particular the misrepresentations consist. I know not that I ought to be surprised at this. There are a great many things which the defenders of that Church would have concealed from the attention of the American public. That I have brought those things to light, sufficiently accounts for any efforts to discredit my statements. That a great number of the *members* of that Church suppose those things not to be true, I have no doubt. If they did but know their own Church, they would cease to be members of it;

but, in their strong attachment to it, they are ready to reject whatever evidence may militate strongly against it, and, no doubt, many of them believe, in the goodness of their hearts, that I have been misled. Perhaps they even suspect me of something worse. All this I can understand and appreciate. It is my misfortune, however, and not my fault, if I lose their confidence. I have not intentionally, nor do I believe I have in fact, misrepresented that Church in a single iota. I do not profess to be infallible; but I do profess to be careful in ascertaining and stating facts. I have consulted none but the most respectable authorities, and the worst I have ever said in reference to the *history* of Romanism has been given in the words of Romanist historians. If there has been any misrepresentation, it was made by their own authors. Do you believe that Baronius has borne false witness against his own Church? And, in my delineations of the Church itself, I have gone to the decrees and canons of the Council of Trent. Will they repudiate that? In doing so, they would repudiate their own existence.

And now I pledge myself here, before God and this large audience, that if any man will prove to me that I have, in anything, misrepresented the Roman Church, or done it injustice, in the publications, I will make the correction as public as I have made the allegation. If I have wronged any man, or any class of men, I desire to know it. And to all who inform me that I have wronged them, I say come to me. Show the facts to me. Point out my error, and prove it to be one. I have nothing against any Romanist, by my feelings, priest or layman; nor do I believe I have wronged their Church in any particular; nor shall I believe so until I see the proof. Then I will, and I now renew my pledge to correct it.

I am, in this and the next lecture, to invite your attention to the *unity of the Christian Church*, and especially, this evening, to the *Roman idea* of Church unity.

Let us understand what that idea is, and then proceed to test its truth.

The theory is, that the Pope, as the successor of Peter, is the supreme head of the Church on earth, and that those Churches, and only those, which acknowledge the supremacy of the Roman See, are true Churches of Christ; and that they are so *in virtue of that fact*. On the contrary, those Churches which are not in communion with Rome, are schismatic bodies; and for that, even if there be no other reason, they are no part of the true Church. The unity of the Church, then, consists *primarily* in the connection of individual Churches with this central one at Rome. Whatever else may be evolved in the development of the theory, it comes to this, in the last analysis. Rome is the "mother and mistress of Churches," and in connection with her is the *test* of all other Churches. All this rests on the *hypothesis* that Peter was constituted by Christ supreme head of the Church on earth, that he established himself at Rome, and that the Popes are his successors.

That this system does secure an outward and formal unity, there is no doubt. A stupendous organization clusters around the person, or, if you prefer it, the office of "His Holiness." The question is: whether this unity of organism is the unity of Christ. The argument of this lecture must be of a negative character, and can not be fully appreciated except in connection with the positive aspect of the subject. This I propose to give on next evening. And I confess to the weakness of desiring the audience in delivering that lecture, that listens to this.

The unity of the Church, in the true idea of it, extends to all *places*, and through all *ages of its existence*. No one will controvert this proposition, and I desire you to apply it to the facts and arguments that I shall present you this evening.

And further, whatever is *essential* in the constitution of



the Church at one time, and in one place, is so in all places and times. And any given organization, which claims a monopoly of Christian Church unity, must show an unbroken history in this particular. It must invariably receive what is essential in the Christian Church, and it must never impose upon mankind as essential what is not so. These statements are so evidently axiomatic that I have but to announce them. They need no proof.

One more statement I will make as the corollary of this last one. Any given organization that presents a variable and contradictory history in those matters which are *essential* in the existence of the Church, forfeits the claim of unity. No outward, organic unity can compensate the want of a consistent history in those vital matters. You admit this. You can not do otherwise. And, as the corollary of this again, whatever is heretical and schismatical at one time, is so at all times. Otherwise, the Church is a variable, capricious organization, wholly unlike its Divine Author.

I have thought it best to postulate these palpable and evident principles and facts at the outset, and shall recur to them as the progress of the argument may indicate.

In applying these principles to the Roman Church, I shall call your attention—

I. To her *dogmas*. These she makes absolute terms of communion, and tests of heresy. Variations in these must destroy her essential unity. If that is heresy now which was not so once, the change amounts to this, that the Church is not the same now that it was once, and *unity*, as it respects time, is destroyed. Or if that was *once heretical* in the Church *which is not so now*, the same result follows. In reference to this I assert, and shall proceed to prove, the following facts:

1. That the Church of Rome has, from time to time, enacted new decrees and canons, in which she has imposed

*new dogmas* upon her members. The result is, that new definitions of heresy have prevailed, so that what has been considered heresy in one age, has not been so considered in another, and so unity is destroyed. I know that the writers of that Church affirm that the canons of the Church do not *create new dogmas*, but only *define old ones* which have been held from the beginning. But this affirmation is not only without the support of history: it is directly contradictory of the most unquestionable history. Transubstantiation, the sacrifice of the mass, communion in one kind, purgatory, extreme unction, and many other things, the denial of which is now heretical, were at one time unknown in the Church. These traditions of the Church consist of notions that originated in imaginative minds, and were set afloat in a superstitious age, and variously received, or disbelieved, or modified, until some General Council took them up and made dogmas of them. Their history, for the most part, may be satisfactorily traced to their origin, and through the various phases of their existence and progress, until they became part and parcel of the *creed*.

Take purgatory as an example of this. In my last lecture I gave you the testimony of eminent Papal authors to the fact that it was unknown in the early Church. Every one acquainted with the doctrines of the Church in the first centuries knows this to be true. The history of purgatory, in brief, is as follows: First, Christians began to allow and practise prayers for the dead. The first traces of this practice are found about two hundred years after Christ. But there was no purgatory yet. They prayed with the understanding that their friends were either in heaven or hell, and on the supposition that their prayers would heighten the joys of the one, and render the other more tolerable. Tertullian is the first who mentions prayers for the dead, and this after he had embraced the heresy of Montanism.



At the funeral of the Emperor Constantine the people "supplicated God, with tears and lamentations, for his soul." But they believed, at the same time, that he was in heaven. Augustine had no doubt that Monica, his mother, was in heaven when he prayed for her. The custom, no doubt, originated in a blind sentiment, and when men began to reason about it, and account to themselves for it, they assigned the reason I have already given.

As to the ancient Liturgies, no one can tell what alterations were made in them in early times, and at any rate they make nothing for purgatory. They contain forms of prayer for those who had "gone in purity of soul and body to God," and for the Virgin Mary by name. In the Liturgy of Basil, the suppliant "remembers all the departed clergy and laity, particularly the most holy, glorious, immaculate, blessed, God-bearing lady." Origen has been given as teaching the doctrine of purgatory. He did, indeed, assert that all men, both good and bad, should, at the general judgment, pass through the fire of the general conflagration, and be thus purified as metal is separated from its dross. The Romanists certainly will not take this for purgatory. Origen was an accomplished man and brilliant writer, and gained many adherents to his views.

By a strange inconsistency, Augustine sometimes denies any middle state, and at other times supposes a purgatorial process, and is, perhaps, entitled to the distinction of having invented purgatory. The suggestion, however, was found among the traditions of the Jews, and the vagaries of the pagans, in various forms. It gained upon the belief of the Christian Church, however, but slowly. It was never received in the Greek Church, and, according to the celebrated historian, Otho, of the twelfth century, it was but partially received in the Latin Church in his day. The schoolmen found it an ample theme, and, passing through their hands, it reached the Council of Florence, which, in



the twenty-fifth session, A. D. 1438, enacted it into a dogma, which was sanctioned by Pope Eugenius. It holds canonical dignity under the protection of an ugly anathema in the proceedings of the Council of Trent. (Ses. vi., Canon 30. See also Ses. xxv., Decree Concerning Purgatory.)

I have shown you, in a previous lecture, that the idea and essence of the doctrine of transubstantiation originated with Eutyches, as a part of his heresy of Monophysitism, or, at least, as an incident of it, and that it was condemned by the writers of his time, and especially by the Pope Gelasius. This was in the fifth century. When Pascasius revived the discussion in the ninth century, the great names of Christendom were against it, such as Bertram and Scotus, and the celebrated Archbishop of Mentz; and no one thought of stigmatizing them as heretics on that account. Berengarius, after the middle of the eleventh century, was, so far as I can learn, the *first* of all the great opposers of transubstantiation who was condemned as a heretic, and required to recant. In the time of Eutyches, transubstantiation was heresy in the Church of Rome, and in the time of Berengarius it was heresy to oppose it. And so that Church has gone on, adding dogma to dogma, until it is positively a task to enumerate them. Now, you will observe that the question in *this argument* is not whether these various dogmas *are true* or not. It is simply this: *Has the Roman Church made that heresy at one time which she did not at another?* Might a man hold and maintain a certain belief, and yet be a good, orthodox Romanist, which his son, after him would be made a heretic for?

But we need not go so far for examples. I am but a young man, and yet it is since I have been preaching that the dogma of the Immaculate Conception of the Virgin Mary has been "promulgated." I remember well that I was on horseback, riding along the Boone's Lick road, in St. Charles county, when, taking a newspaper out of my

saddlebags, and glancing over it, I saw the account of the deliberations at Rome, by which the Virgin was so much honored. And lo! from that "day and date" any question of the fact is heresy. Now I submit, that if the Virgin was immaculate in her conception, that circumstance has been a fact for near two thousand years. And yet to disbelieve it has not provoked ecclesiastical anathema against the offender until within a very few years past.

Amongst the many sympathy meetings on the Pope's behalf, recently held, I have been struck with a portion of the proceedings of one which came off in New Orleans. Those who attended the meeting rejoice, because, say they, "we have enjoyed the happiness of living in the age that has witnessed the promulgation of the ineffably cherished dogma of the Immaculate Conception, and in a country that has been especially placed under its protection," and "do invoke, with all our souls, the intercession of the Virgin, most pure, holy and powerful, for him who, by proclaiming the Queen of Heaven immaculate in her conception, has added to her crown its brightest gem." This is a plain intimation that the Pope, who has proclaimed the Virgin immaculate, has some claim upon her in his present emergency, and that she may be expected to reciprocate the favor. "One good turn deserves another."

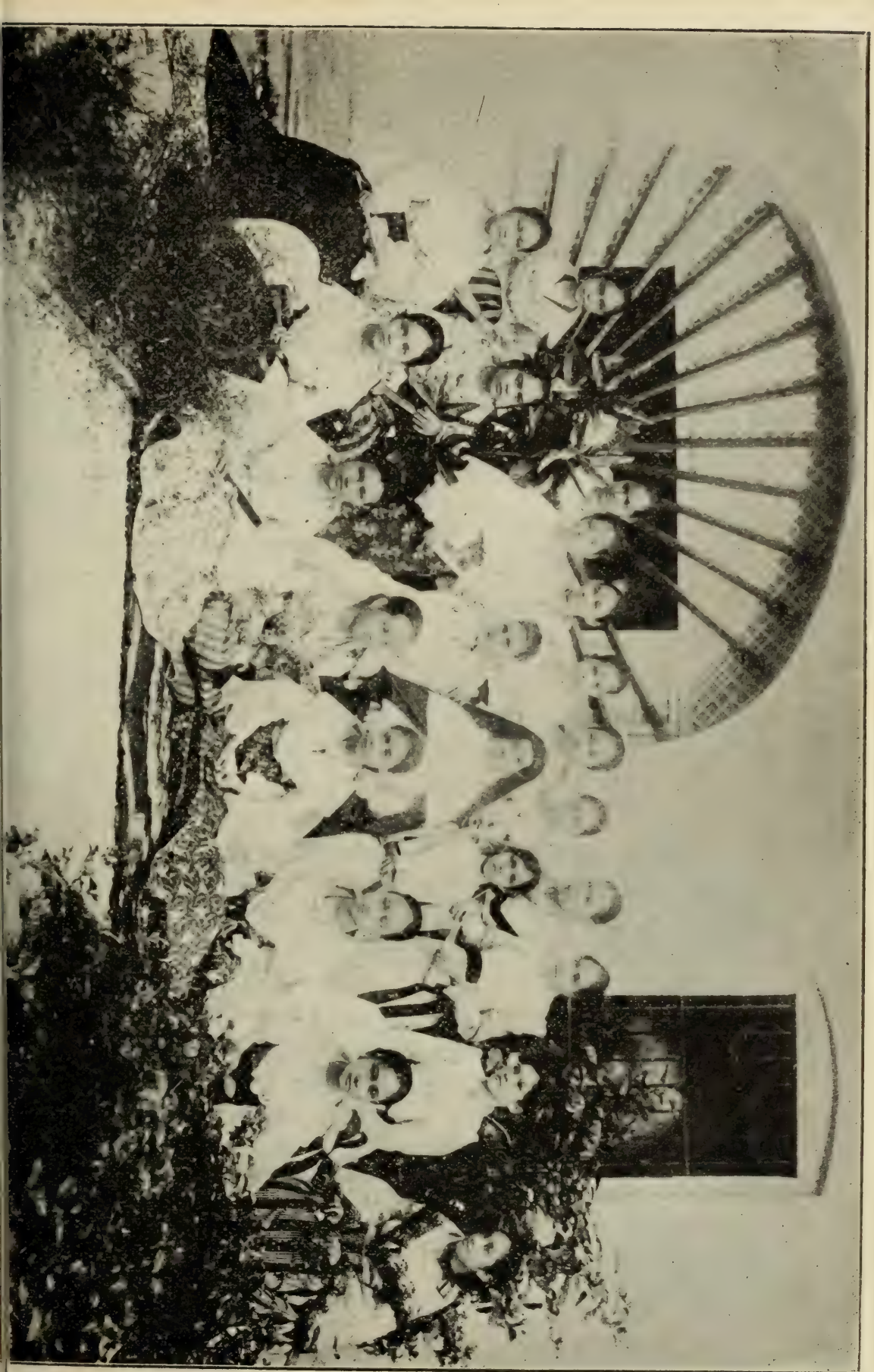
The pontificate of Pio Nono is likely to become historical from two circumstances, possibly three—the flight of Gaeta, the promulgation of the Immaculate Conception, and, *per-adventure*, the dismemberment of the ecclesiastical territories. Besides this I know of nothing in his administration that can claim a place in history, except it may be that he has erected a college in Rome, for the special benefit of American youth. The college was dedicated on the eve of the Immaculate Conception, in December last. So great is the Pope's affection for our country. We ought, I suppose, to be duly grateful to him for placing our country under

## THE FLOWER OF CUBA.

The following photo-engravure represents a group of young ladies who are the Flower of Cuba's daughters, and belong to the wealthiest families of the Island. The Catholic Officials make it their business to secure one daughter from each wealthy family, more especially if it is their only child, and place them in a convent (the inside workings of which none but the Dignitaries of the Catholic Church and the poor females know) in order that they may exact money at their pleasure from their parents by representing to them that their daughter has violated some rule, and it requires a certain amount to appease the wrath of God. Thus Romish greed and lust is satisfied.











the special protection of his favorite dogma. There is one question I have thought of, though, and that is, whether the Virgin will feel herself bound to obey the Supreme Pontiff, or not? Will she bestow her patronage as he may direct? It is a question of jurisdiction. Has the "Head of the Church" authority over the "Queen of Heaven?" Perhaps, however, she may waive any claim of precedence in the case of this particular Pope, to whom she is so deeply indebted. But may we hope that she will be so complaisant toward his successor? But by the time she has had charge of us for a few years she may take a liking to us, and continue her patronage voluntarily. Who knows? Doubtless we have ground to congratulate ourselves upon our prospects for the future.

But we must not forget the argument. How has the basis of membership changed since the time when men were admitted on the "Apostles' Creed!" The whole Church of that day would be excluded for heresy now. This Church is not the same as that. The *unity* is gone—"clean gone forever."

Put the argument into syllogistic form. Variations in the essential doctrine of the Church destroy its unity—there are variations in the essential doctrine of the Roman Church; therefore the unity of the Roman Church is destroyed. The major none will controvert; the minor I have proved; the conclusion is inevitable. Dogmas limiting the area of the Church belong to its essence, and any change in them breaks the unity of the Church. The dogmas of the Roman Church do define its area, and they have often been changed by additions. Her unity is an empty assumption.

2. But there have been, not only additions of new dogmas, but, also, more palpable variations. The Church of Rome has *enacted and rescinded* dogmas. I proved to you, in a former lecture, that a Council did enact an Arian creed, which was endorsed by a Pope. The Council was

that of Sirmium, and the Pope was Liberius, who is a saint in the Roman calendar. Again, the Arian creed was displaced, and declared heretical. Now, take any given Church, with a Trinitarian creed, and suppose it to relapse into Arianism. Is it the same Church after that event as before? Can it claim historical unity? No more can the Church of Rome. This point requires no elaboration. The fact is historical and incontrovertible, and is fatal to the pretensions of "*the Church.*"

II. Passing from the *dogmas*, let us examine the *spirit* of the Church of Rome. Perhaps we shall find the boasted unity there.

But no; wherever there can be found a center around which selfish interests would naturally rally, we discover sources of contention and of acrimonious wrangling. *National ecclesiasticism* has almost constantly arrayed itself against the *universal ecclesiasticism*; the latter asserting prerogatives which the former has resisted. Among these contested prerogatives, that of presentation to benefices and dignities of the Church, and the appropriations of ecclesiastical revenues, have been, perhaps, the source of more contention than any other. In these contests the "Holy See" and the national Churches have alternately triumphed over each other. Readers of Church history will recur especially to the French Church as an instance of this strife, perhaps the most remarkable of any other. Then each one of the monkish orders has its own distinct existence and peculiar interests. Nor have the contentions of Protestant sects equaled the wrangling of these parties, who say, "I am of St. Dominic, and I of St. Benedict, and I of St. Francis, and I of St. Ignatius Loyola." Among the contentious parties of the Corinthian Church, claiming to be of Paul and Apollos, and Cephas or Peter, there was one, equally factious in spirit, that profaned the sacred name of the Son of God, by vociferating, "we are of Christ." The follow-



ers of Ignatius have emulated their ancient exemplars in this particular. They are Jesuits, or the Society of Jesus.

It is a well known fact, that when there are *parties* of any kind, the nearer they are together the greater is the acrimony of their disputes. A divided family is the worst of all divided things. Such a house can not stand. The ecclesiastical bond that encloses the various orders in the Roman Church, brings them into the very relations that aggravate their feuds. Their emulations involve conflicting interests. It becomes a matter of interest with each one to obtain controlling influence in the chief ecclesiastical offices. If, for instance, the Dominicans can secure for one of themselves the highest office of the Church, they may approach the Vatican freely, and obtain large patronage. It is impossible for us, at this distance, to understand the complicated and warring interests that are brought into full play at the time of a pontifical election. This much we know, however, that all the intrigues and maneuvering that are known to political aspirants have been often resorted to by candidates for the Papacy. Some of the games that have been played for this high stake might be studied with advantage by the devotee of the chess-board, if not, indeed, by gamesters of a less honorable class. In all these strifes do you discover "the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace?"

The political complications of the Papacy increase the occasions of strife and bad temper. The Papacy, as you are well aware, is half secular. The Prince-Prelate has not only double duty to do, but clashing interests to manage. History is familiar with Papal armies, paid out of the treasury of the Church, commanded by Papal officers, ravaging Papal countries, and butchering the children of the Church. It was not against heretics that the fighting Pope, Julius II., at the opening of the sixteenth century, directed his arms, but against "the faithful." Julius often headed



his own armies, and, in justice to the old hero, I must say, he was one of the best and boldest chieftains of his age. He was a perfect lion, with a spice of the tiger. In those wars you might have seen ecclesiastics of all grades, from the cardinal down, in hostile armies seeking each other's blood. Before Ravenna, you might have seen a cardinal in the army of the French, foremost in the foray, and another in the army of the Pope, less ferocious, but quite as brave. I might admire them as rival chiefs, hewing their way to fortune with their swords, but as representatives of a *united* Church, I gain a lesson from them. This complication of the *secular* with the *spiritual* has destroyed the spirit of unity. Even the timid and feeble Pius IX. has afforded us abundant exemplification of this fact. He has been compelled to resort to arms. And even now he is at feud with the "eldest son of the Church," on political issues. And even now, as that affectionate son charges, he is giving us an instance of the use of the spiritual sword to accomplish political ends. He writes an "Encyclical letter," under ecclesiastical forms, but for political objects. Do you tell me that the *organic* integrity of the Roman Church, which holds in its capacious grasp all this quarreling and bloodshed, meets the ideal of Christian Church unity? And the extensive sympathy manifested toward the "Holy Father" in his present political straits is significant. Of what? Unity of the Church? Rather of a great political combination. A distinguished European prelate has compared Napoleon III. to a highway robber, and the Pope is the victim. The robber demands all his valuables, graciously leaving him his *life and his clothes*. Alas! does the *spiritual supremacy* amount only to this? Does it consist merely of the *pontifical robes*?

This is only one of many facts of history which show that the *unity of the Papal Church* is based upon a *wordly spirit*. "My kingdom," said Christ, "is not of this world :

if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight." Christ's kingdom is spiritual, and that fact is the rallying point of its unity. Contrast this with the history of the Roman Church; contrast it with the *Crusades*, when Papal Christendom poured its countless armies into Asia to rescue the tomb of Christ from the infidel. "If my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews." (John xviii. 36.) But Rome perverted that kingdom and made it "of the world," and did fight to deliver from the infidels the *tomb* of that Christ who would not allow his servants to fight to prevent himself from being delivered to the Jews. The unity of the Papal Church has never exhibited itself in so much vigor as in the Crusades—those gigantic but fruitless efforts to recover the land first sanctified by the cross. But the *spirit* of that unity was false. It was the *fighting spirit*. It was of the world. And the same spirit controls the councils of Pius IX. to-day. It is fostered by a gorgeous ritual of worship. It clusters around a temporal throne. It turns pale at the thought of losing political sovereignty. It is ready to fight.

The Church of Christ united in a contest over the possession of political power, and that a power distasteful to those who are the subjects of it! What a spectacle! Unity it is, but it is sheer profanation to call it *Christian*. And the word *church* has degenerated greatly to become the name of an organization that is actuated by that spirit.

On the eve of his crucifixion, our Lord said to his disciples, "Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth give I unto you." (John xiv. 27.) The kingdom of God is "righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." (Romans xiv. 17; also verse 19.) "Let us, therefore, follow after the things that make for peace." "God hath called us to peace." (1 Cor. vii. 15.) "For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all



Churches of the saints." (1 Cor. xiv. 33.) And if the Church *contends*, it is not for secular distinction or power, but for the *faith*. (Jude 3.) That organization that has lost the legacy of peace which Christ left to his Church, sets up the claim of unity on other grounds in vain. "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him." (1 John ii. 15.)

From what has been said, you will see the force and bearing of the following observations:

First, the history of the Roman Church has been eminently marked by dissensions, quarrels and fighting; from the wrangling of monks to the wars of Popes.

Secondly, the unity of the Papal Church is, to a large extent, based on wordly interests, and its development betrays at every step the love of the world.

Thirdly, there is, therefore, no real Christian unity. So far from this, where there is unity it is carnal, and not of God. As the unity of the Papal Church fails in the history of her *dogmas*, so also it fails in the development of her *spirit*.

III. The unity of the Roman Church is *maintained by force*. You will remember what I said in my last lecture, concerning the authority asserted by the Council of Trent over such as have been baptized in their infancy. The Council distinctly ordains that compulsion is to be used in the case of the refractory. And so teaches the celebrated Bellarmine, in Book 3, on the Laity, chapter 22. In addition to much more of the same kind, he affirms that "as the Church has ecclesiastical and secular princes, who are her two arms; so she has two swords, the spiritual and material; and therefore when her right hand is unable to convert a heretic with the sword of the Spirit, she invokes the aid of the left hand, and coerces heretics with the material sword." He assigns as the reason why the Apostles



never invoked the secular arm against heretics, that “there was no Christian prince whom they could call on for aid.” But afterward, in Constantine’s time, he says: “the Church called in the aid of the secular arm.” To show that *terror* is useful in keeping down heresy, he says that experience proves it, “for the Donatists, Manicheans and Albigenses *were routed and annihilated by arms.*” If the peaceful solicitations of the spirit fail to *draw* men, they are to be *driven* in at the point of the material sword.

Nor can the reply be made that these things belong to the past. Because, in the first place, any such plea in favor of the Roman Church is unavailing, in view of the claim of infallibility; and in the present argument, *unity* must extend to all time. If she *ever did* resort to force to maintain her unity, she placed it upon false ground, and the argument remains good against her *continuity* forever. But it is not true. The Roman Church still persecutes *wherever she can.*

In Funchal, Madeira, in January, 1843, Maria Joaquina Alves, a woman of blameless life, was torn from her family of seven children, thrown into a filthy dungeon, confined there a year and three months, and then brought to trial and condemned to death. For what? Let the sentence pronounced upon her by the judge tell. This sentence bears date May 2, 1844. “In view of the answers of the jury, and the discussions of the cause, &c., it is proved that the accused, Maria Joaquina, perhaps forgetful of the principles of the holy religion she received in her first years, and to which she still belongs, has maintained conversations and arguments condemned by the Church; maintaining that *veneration should not be given to images*; denying the *real presence of Christ in the sacred host*; the Mystery of the most Holy Trinity; blaspheming against the most holy Virgin, the mother of God, and advancing other expressions against the doctrines received and followed

by the Roman Catholic Apostolic Church, expounding these condemned doctrines to different persons, thus committing the crimes of heresy, blasphemy, &c. I condemn the accused, Maria Joaquina, *to suffer death as provided in the law*; the costs of process, &c., to be paid out of her goods." This sentence of death is placed solely on the ground of ecclesiastical offenses. On a hearing in the Appellate Court in Lisbon, the penalty was ultimately changed to three months' imprisonment and a pecuniary fine. But, on a failure of payment, she was confined nearly two years.

Such an overgrown ecclesiastical establishment is dangerous, when it claims the right of maintaining its unity by force. See how it must work practically. By the multiplication of her dogmas, she makes it impossible for multitudes of intelligent and sincere minds to receive her creed, while she claims the right to *compel* them. In proportion as she extends the area of her creed she increases the grounds of disbelief in it, and introduces motives to schism. But those who are dissatisfied with her dogmas, at least if they were once baptized, must be *compelled* to submit. Don't complain against me for that word 'compelled;' it is the very word used by the great Council of Trent. Then we have "the Church," with a long, unreasonable, unscriptural creed, and an earthly head, and representatives or officers, bound to him by oath, scattered all over the world, whose duty it is to enforce the creed. For your information on this subject, I will give you the oath which every Romanist Bishop takes to the See of Rome

"I, N., elect of the Church of N., from henceforward will be faithful and obedient to St. Peter the Apostle, and to the Holy Roman Church, and to *our Lord, the lord N., Pope N.,* and his successors, canonically coming in. I will neither advise, consent nor do anything that they may lose life or member, or that their persons may be seized, or hands in any wise laid upon them, or any injuries offered to them under any pretense whatsoever. *The counsel which they shall entrust to me* withal, by themselves, their messengers, or letters, *I will not knowingly reveal to any to their prejudice.* I will help them to defend and keep the Roman Papacy, and the *royalties* of St. Peter, *saving my order* against all men. The Legate of the Apostolic See,



going and coming, I will honorably treat and help in his necessities. The rights, honors, privileges and authorities of the Holy Roman Church of our lord the Pope, and his aforesaid successors, I will endeavor to preserve, defend, *increase and advance*. I will not be in any council, action or treaty, in which shall be plotted, against *our said lord*, and the said Roman Church, anything to the hurt or prejudice of their persons, right, honor, state or power; and if I shall know any such thing to be treated, or agitated, by any whatsoever, I will signify it to *our said lord*, or to some other by whom it may come to his knowledge. The rules of the holy fathers, the Apostolic decrees, ordinances, or disposals, reservations, provisions, *and mandates*, I will observe with all my might, and cause to be observed by others. *Heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our said lord, or his aforesaid successors, I will to my utmost power PERSECUTE AND OPPOSE.*"

This oath will not be denied. Or, if it should, I have the proof that it has been admitted by at least one respectable prelate in this country, in a public debate.

I do not give this oath as any proof of treasonable intention on the part of those who have taken it. My object is simply to show the nature of the tie which binds the Bishops to the Pope. They are his officers, regularly sworn in. His mandates they are to observe *with all their might*. They are to keep his secrets. Anything which may be to his prejudice personally or officially they are to report to him. And, *under oath*, they are to persecute and oppose heretics to their *utmost power*. Now, put the most favorable construction upon this document that it can possibly bear, and it makes the Bishops a police force of the Pope, scattered over the world, to guard the interests of the Roman See, to oppose its opposers, and to persecute heretics as they may have it in their power to do so. You have the document: you can judge of its meaning as well as I.

With such an organization as this, complicated with political interests and actuated by a worldly spirit as it is, the Papacy is a power in the world, toward which mankind, to say the least, must be on their guard. That there are in this gigantic organization many well-meaning individuals, there is no doubt, and far be it from me to harm a hair of their heads. The *personal character* either of the Pope, or of those constituting his universal police, is not the question. I make no personal assault. Let every man



enjoy the full amount of credit due to his personal worth. But the system is a bad one, unscriptural and dangerous. It looks to the subjugation of the world, and the world is interested in the result. And, in view of the precedents of its history, and the acknowledged teaching of its great doctors, who can doubt that it will use its power to coerce submission to itself whenever and wherever it can safely do so? And who can doubt that the Church will ever, on occasion, use its spiritual interest to advance its civil power, as former Popes have often done, and as Pius is now *trying* to do? And who can doubt that the sworn officers of "his holiness" will almost to a man be found ready to do his bidding? Suppose they are conscientious men. They will be all the more certain to keep their oath. What a game may a skillful and ambitious Pope play!

The unity whose bond is in official *oaths* is not the unity of Christ. Is it possible that the spirit of union in the Papal Church is so feeble that its various parts require to be held together by such a ligament! It is even so.

Do not understand me to express any fear as to the ultimate ascendancy of the Papacy. That the consequences would, in such an event, be disastrous to the interests of humanity, and to individual happiness, there can be no doubt. But the day of Papal triumph has passed by. There are in the world now just a sufficient number of sympathisers with an effete system, in the paroxysms of its dissolution, to call the world's attention to the fact, and to attest the hopelessness of the downfall. The spirit of the world is too far advanced to admit the renewal of the "dark ages." At least, I hope and believe so. But still, with such a police, by the aid of secret instructions, which they are sworn not to divulge to his prejudice, the Pope may operate with great vigor. By the "unity of the oath," he may make himself felt in the world even yet, to the world's detriment and sorrow. And that without supposing him such a very

bad man. In securing his own ends, he may not exactly understand the result of his policy upon other interests.

IV. The Romish idea of Church unity is unscriptural. Peter was never constituted head of the Church, nor are the Popes so ; for they are not his successors ; and if they were, still they would not be the head of the Church, for he was not. Nor is the Church of Rome the “mother and mistress” of Churches. The Church at Jerusalem was the *mother* of the Churches, and as for any “mistress,” thank God, there is none. It follows that connection with the See of Rome is by no means the Scriptural condition of Church unity. Whatever it does or does not consist in, it is certainly not in that fact.

In my lecture on Peter and the Papacy, I examined more at large these fundamental propositions of the Papal system.

They are against Scripture and history at once, and any idea of the unity of the Church, predicated of them, is utterly without foundation. The utmost that can be claimed for the Church of Rome is, that she has maintained an existence from Apostolic times. But how changed is that existence ! How changed is her clergy ! From pastors, beloved for their work’s sake, they have come to be princes and lords, dreaded for their power. The clerical constitution has grown into enormous dimensions, embracing ever so many orders, from the supreme Pontiff and lordly Cardinals, down to the dirty and worthless mendicant friars. The simple spirit of primitive affection is lost, and rival orders are contending for place and precedence. The beautiful faith of Jesus has been hid under an enormous pile of unsightly dogmas. Sacramental salvation has displaced the efficacious ministry of the word, and the candidate for heaven is compelled to run the gauntlet of priestly intervention from the cradle to the grave. If the first Bishop of Rome were permitted to look down upon the city, that he



might see his successors, do you imagine that he would take the man of the Vatican, with the triple crown upon his head, for that person? Inspecting the constitution, the clerical orders, the teachers and teaching, and the worship of that city, would he say: "This is indeed the very same Church over which I presided eighteen hundred years ago?"

The fact of *a continuous organization* amounts to nothing. Is it the SAME organization? Alas, no! The structure is changed, the doctrine is changed, the worship is changed, the spirit is changed—*all changed*. The Christian idea of unity is totally wanting.

The Church of Rome is at once excessively tolerant and excessively intolerant. In her moral requirements she is ruinously lax, but in enforcing her creed she is cruelly rigorous. We know, from our own observation, that a man may be habitually wicked, so he will but tell the priest all about it once in a while, and so live and die in the Roman communion, and go into eternity with the full benefit of the last anointing. But if he shall venture to call in question any of the puerile traditions of the "Church," he incurs the anathema and is cut off. The area of membership is unscripturally broad in one direction, and unscripturally narrow in another. A man may be a profane swearer, and remain in the Church. But his neighbor, who believes in Christ, and worships him, who receives all the doctrines of Holy Scripture, and leads a devout and holy life, walking in communion with God, is excommunicated because he can not receive the unscriptural dogma of purgatory. The unity of Christ embraces the latter, and cuts off the former. The unity of Rome reverses the order. It cuts off the latter, and receives the former.

From all these facts and arguments you plainly see how utterly at fault the Roman idea of Christian Church unity is. Any claim to be the true Church, predicated of *her* unity, is false and preposterous. It must be a Christian,



Scriptural unity on which such a claim is based, or the claim is not valid. The unity of the Church of Rome is as distinct from the unity of Christ as that of Odd-Fellowship is. *Mere* unity amounts to nothing. It must be a unity on *Christian principles*. That the Roman Church has not. Her claim is not valid. She fails in the very essence of the argument.

In her dogmas she fails of historical unity, and in her spirit she fails of actual unity. In her spirit the failure is seen in her factions and wrangling; and even in those matters in which she is one with herself, the spirit is not Christian, but political, overbearing and wordly. This appears in the very structure of her ecclesiasticism, in the coercion by which she maintains her unity, in her tenacious hold upon political dominion, and in her very terms of communion. She claims to be a unit, and therefore the true Church. But her claim of unity fails in essential facts, and where she presents unity it is not only wanting in Christian elements, but it is essentially unchristian. Her plea of unity, therefore, avails her nothing, but, on the contrary, turns against her, and destroys her. For she is organized upon an unscriptural and unchristian basis; the very pillars of her support are anti-christian; and she must be taken to pieces and reconstructed upon another *idea*, before she can be properly Christian.









Four Protestant Women led to Execution. Page 478.



The New York State Legislature for 1890 appropriated to sixteen Catholic Institutions \$1,079,936.

Of the \$7,000,000 paid from the City Treasury of Boston last year, \$6,000,000 goes into the hands of the Catholics.

The money donated by the City Government of New York to the Roman Catholic Church from 1869 to 1893 inclusive amounted to \$14,081,990, besides five and one-half blocks of land in the best part of the City now worth \$5,000,000, a total of \$19,081,990.



## CHAPTER VIII.

ENOCH MATHER MARVIN,

LATE BISHOP

OF THE

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH.

---

UNITY OF THE CHURCH—THE TRUE IDEA.

---

“For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so, also, is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.”—[1 Cor. xii. 12, 13.]

We are now ready to consider the *true idea* of Christian Church unity. The Church of Christ is indeed *one*. ‘I believe in the holy Catholic Church;’ not the *Roman* Catholic, but the *holy* Catholic Church. The allegation that Protestants disallow the indivisible unity of the Church is false. We maintain it most strenuously and devoutly. It is interwoven with our profoundest convictions, and we read it in the fundamental teachings of Scripture. It is ‘part and parcel’ of the very system of salvation, and stands or falls with the Christian religion. The question is, what does that unity consist? I have examined the claims of the Roman Church in this particular, and found her wanting. Let us see now if we can ascertain the true idea.

Every unity, except it be mere atomic unity, which is a

mere point, must have a *center*. In other words, a unity which takes in several individuals, supposes some given fact toward which the various individuals stand in a common relation. States are formed upon the idea of government. Every association is organized upon some idea, either of mutual support, moral improvement, pecuniary advantage, or whatever it may be; or it clusters about some *person*, whose character or projects attract others to him. The same is true in mechanics, and indeed in physics generally. Every unity embracing individuals has, so to speak, a rallying point. This rallying point, or point of common attraction in the Roman Church, as I showed you a week ago, is the *Papacy*. The Pope is the head of the Church, and whatever of homogeneity there is in that Church proceeds from that and its correlate ideas.

As the opposite of this, we have the indubitable and ever glorious affirmation of Holy Scripture that Christ is the only head of the Church, in heaven and on earth. He has appointed no deputy on earth. Let those who assert it give the proof. I challenge it. There is not a word, not an intimation, to that effect in the Word of God. Not one. Where is the law constituting Peter, or the Pope, or any other individual, head of the Church? Not in all the Bible. Can the the hypothesis be for a moment entertained that this chief element in the structure of the Church would have been passed by in utter silence by our Lord and all the sacred writers? And yet even the advocates of this theory, with all their learning and skill, can find no single place where such a thing is stated. By a most astounding perversion, they interpret *one* passage as teaching that Peter is the rock on which the Church is founded; but they do not so much as pretend one which shows him to be the *head* of the Church. Christ is the sole "Head of the Church," (Eph. v. 23; also i. 22, iv. 15; 1 Cor. xii. 12, 13; and many other places.) Around him, in his offices, in

his redeeming work, and in his saving grace is the Church associated. Connection with him is the essential fact of unity. Separation from him is schism; to deny his saving truth is heresy.

Let us investigate this matter somewhat thoroughly. We shall find the following several facts involved in connection with Christ.

1. Faith. By this I do not mean objective faith, or the truth believed; but faith subjectively considered. Nor do I mean a mere conviction. Personal faith, in the Christian meaning of the word, embraces much more than the mere recognition and admission of religious truth. Another element enters into it which is expressed by the word *trust*. Christ is the object of this trust. He proposes himself as the only Savior. The incalculable interests of the soul are at stake. He proposes to secure them. He solemnly assures us that he is able and altogether disposed to take our souls, guilty and corrupt as they are, and become responsible for their safety. He will remove their guilt and purge away their defilement. There is none other in earth or heaven that can do it. If we withhold ourselves from him, destruction is inevitable. The soul turns away from every other hope, and *entrusts* itself, with all its interests and perils, to him. The process is this: In deep repentance we admit the Christian doctrine, believe that Christ is the Savior of men, consent that he shall be *our* Savior, and *confide* in him. This personal faith in Christ (which presupposes the belief of Christian doctrine and repentance) secures to the subject of it all the results of the atonement. "But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even to them that believe on his name.*" (John i. 12.)

*Receiving Christ*, and *believing on his name*, are, in this passage, synonymous phrases. And, indeed, at this point, as at a thousand others, religious truth shows itself



at one with all other truth. *Faith is the mind's reception of an object.* Just so believing on Christ is receiving him. Not the general admission that he is the Savior of the world, but faith in him as he is proposed to each one—as a *personal Savior*. Thus received, Christ always comes into the soul, and when he comes, he brings salvation with him. “To them gave he power to become the sons of God.” “He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life.” “He that believeth on him is not condemned;” (John iii. 18, 36.) There is no delay for priestly manipulation. Faith joins the soul to Christ, and in him it has justification and life.

Now here is the basis of that classification in which the Church stands apart from the world, and at this point we come naturally to examine—

2. The second fact involved in this union with Christ, which is the new birth.

To understand this great fact of the Christian religion in its bearing upon the topic now in discussion, it will be necessary to recur to our Savior's presentation of it in the third chapter of John's Gospel. Nicodemus stands before the Son of God and recognizes him as the “TEACHER.” And such he is—THE WORLD'S INSTRUCTOR. At once he enters upon his office. He communicates his DOCTRINE. It is the truth which the world has been laboring toward for thousands of years, but never found. Philosophy is outdone. The devotees of truth had looked for this divine verity; they had strained their eyes to see it, but it was beyond their vision. Prophets alone had seen it, and its shining from afar had illuminated their pages. Holy men had rejoiced in it from the beginning. But the world had not been fully taught it. He who was the Word—the Wisdom—the Light—was to announce it and define it now.

With what pomp of words would any teacher, not divine, have announced such a sublime proposition! But God always does his work without parade. It is littleness that

makes a great ado. Its preparations are more conspicuous than its achievements. What scaffolding would a finite architect prepare if he had a world to build ! But God only said BE, and the Divine monosyllable built the universe. And he describes his work to his creatures with the same simplicity. "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." So Christ describes the new creation, the heavenly birth. "Ye must be born again."

But why *must* we be born again ? Because Christ came *to establish a kingdom upon earth*, the citizens of which must have a higher style of life than the natural. "That which is born of the flesh is flesh." By the natural birth men enjoy a life adapted to the natural world—to its civil and social and physical condition. But Christ's "kingdom is not of this world." It is spiritual. "That which is born of the Spirit is spirit." "Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born again, he can not see the kingdom of God." "Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God." Here is Christ's kingdom, or, if you please, his Church ; and man must undergo a spiritual birth, producing a spiritual life, in order to enter into it. And this is not an arbitrary arrangement, but an obvious necessity ; for only thus can he be assimilated to the nature of that kingdom. Only thus can he become adapted to its conditions.

Here we have then a second element in the unity of the Church—a common life in all its members, proceeding from Christ, by the Holy Spirit, through whose efficient agency they are "born again," and thus become "children of God by faith in Jesus Christ." It is this great work of grace that "purges their consciences from dead works to serve the living God " Christ "manifests himself to them as he does not to the world." He dwells with them. And his prayer to the Father is realized in them : "That they all



may be one ; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us : that the world may believe that thou has sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them ; *that they may be one, even as we are one* : I in them and thou in me, *that they may be made perfect in one* ; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.” (John xvii. 21–23.)

3. A third fact involved in connection with Christ is the reception of his doctrine. He says, referring to his disciples, “I have given them thy word.” (John xvii. 14.) And in verse 8, “I have given them the words which thou gavest me ; and they have received them.”

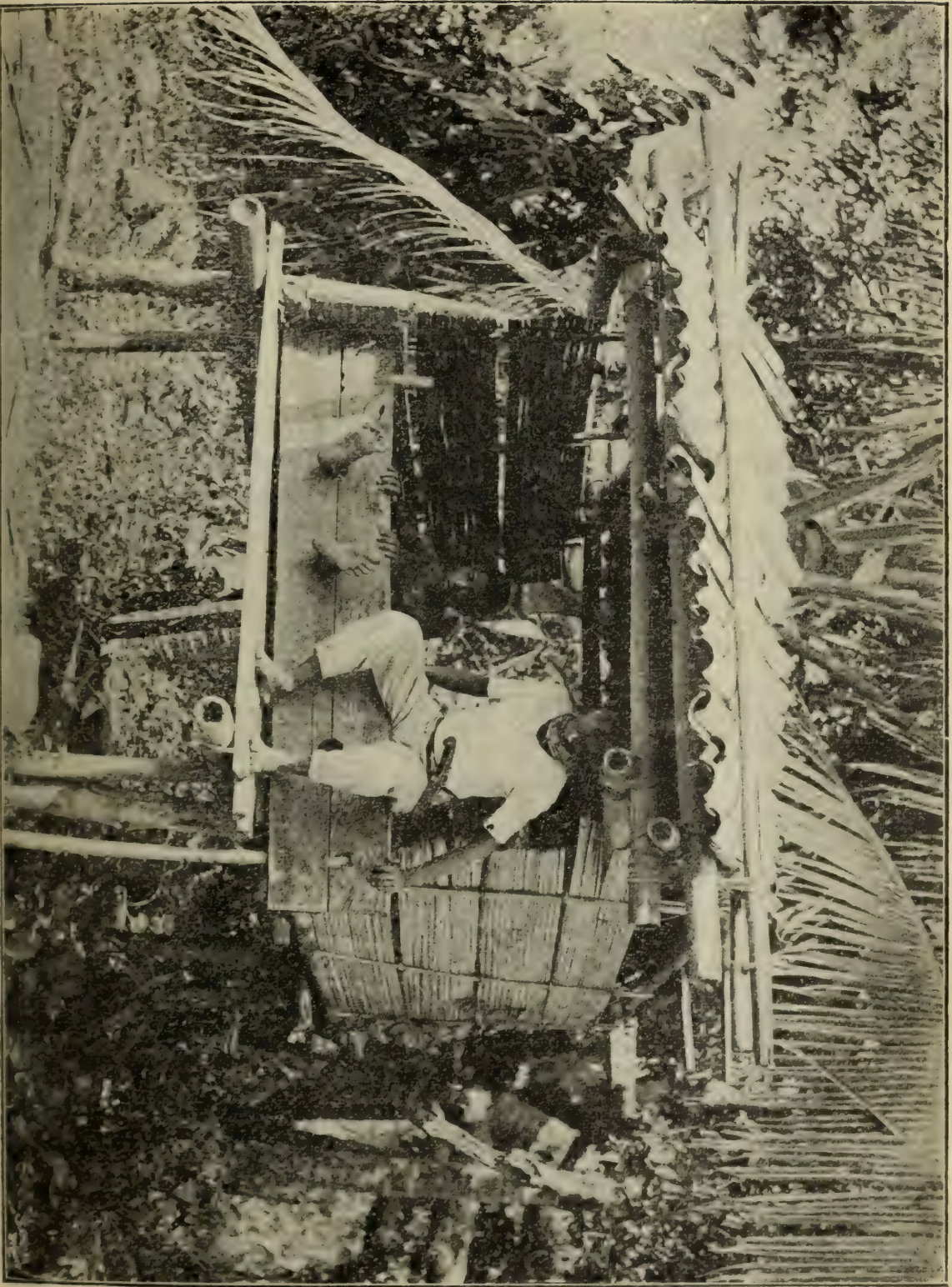
It is alleged that Protestants have no *dogmas*. Then the Bible has none. For “the Bible, and the Bible alone, is the religion of Protestants.” Who enunciates the great doctrines of the gospel with more distinctness and emphasis than Protestant ministers ? The time wasted by Romish priests upon the worse than silly legends of the saints, and other such unscriptural declamation, is devoted by preachers of the gospel to dogmatic theology and hortatory discourse. That the Christian doctrine may be kept pure is their special care and solicitude. For this purpose they have repudiated *all* human standards, and keep to the Word of God alone. They allow *it* to dogmatize. And the wonder is, that, with all the diversity of mental endowment, there should be such perfect consent. Erratic sects there are, no doubt ; but Rome, even with the help of the Inquisition, could not wholly prevent that, in her palmyest days. Some “will give heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils,” in spite of the Bible. And they will pervert the Bible as sadly as Rome does. Their account is with God. It is not mine to judge them. But “the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal, the Lord knoweth them that are his.” “If any man will do my



### A FIENDISH TORTURE.

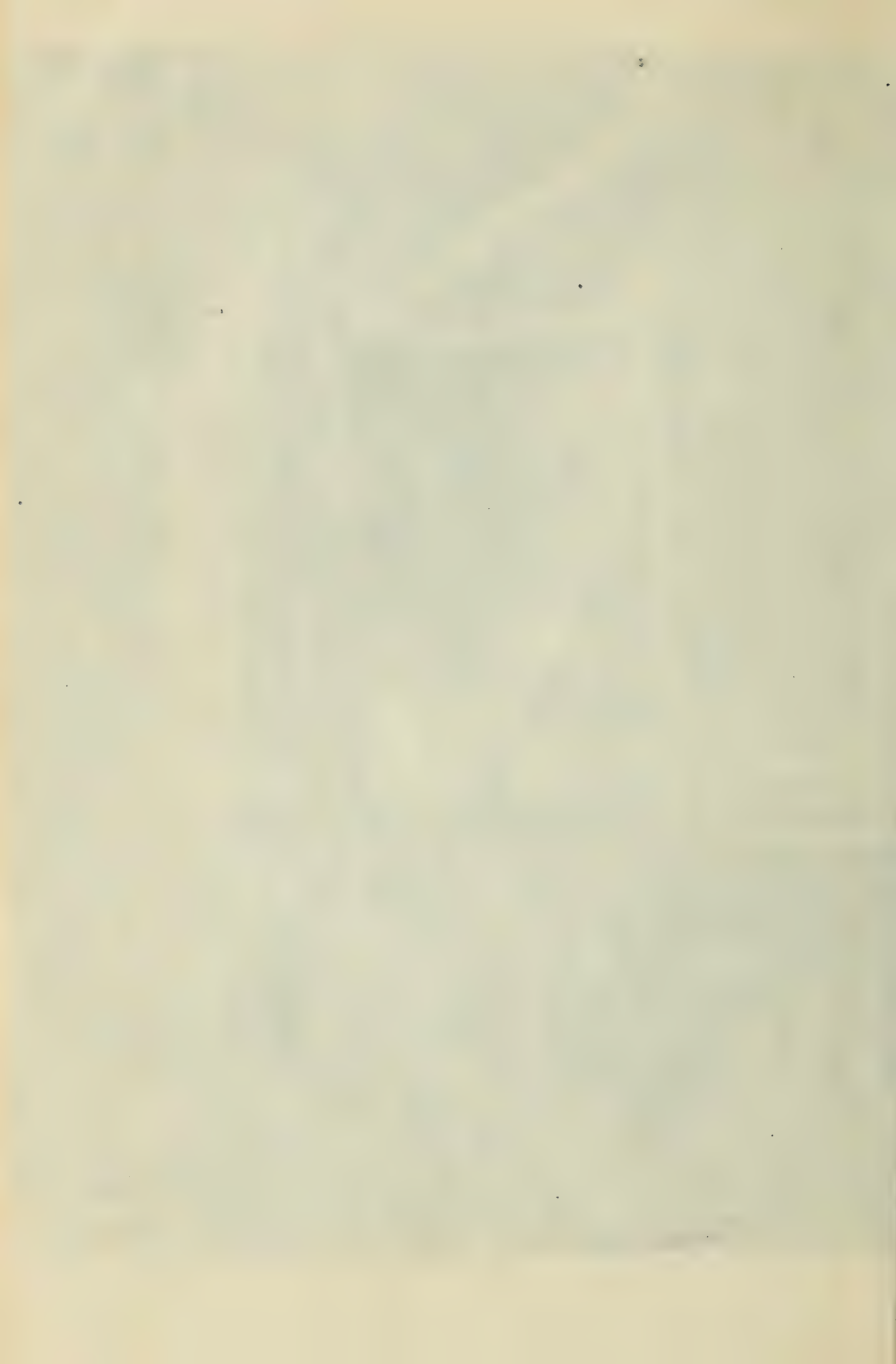
Shade your eyes and look backward down the crooked road of Catholicism, and on every hand you will see the Ghastly Ghosts of the Inquisition, and modes of torture that it would seem impossible for human imagination to plan ; it has been ever thus through all ages and in every land where the unfeeling grasp of the Romish Church has had its sway. The following photo-engravure, " Fiendish Torture," is one mode of inhuman punishment. A native incurs the enmity of a Church Official, and is placed in the stocks, forced to sit on a small block—four inches square, with his feet even with his chin, confined between two planks, and compelled to remain there for from twenty-four to forty-eight hours without food or drink.





A Fier-dish Torture.





Father's will," said our Lord, "he shall know of the doctrine." In the "Kingdom of God," the *Word* of God is received, and his people are at one in reference to the saving truth.

Nor is this unity of doctrine incompatible with speculative differences. My Presbyterian brother, behind me in the pulpit, for instance, agrees with me in the Christian doctrine. At some points there is a *speculative* divergence, but not a *dogmatic*. For instance, he theorizes in reference to the relation of the Divine foreknowledge and human volition in one way, and I in another. He supposes that foreknowledge and foreordination are necessarily correlative; I suppose they are not *necessarily* so. In my theory, events with the production of which the human will is concerned are not foreordained; in his, they are. And so, perhaps, we may theorize differently in many cases. But, after all, we come back to the same saving doctrine; the triunity of the Godhead, the depravity of man, the atonement, salvation by grace through faith, the necessity of repentance, and a godly life, the final judgment, and the eternity of future rewards and punishments. In short, when we begin to speculate, we are liable to take divergent paths at every step, but when we dogmatize from the Bible in reference to saving truth, we are at one.

4. The Church is one in its submission to the law of Christ. In that fact, God's people are separate from the world, and one with Christ, and with each other. "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty." (2 Cor. vi. 17, 18.) They are "a peculiar people, zealous of good works." (Titus ii. 14.) If any profess to be the Lord's people who have not this characteristic, shame on them. "If any man love me, he will *keep my words*; and my Father will love him, and we

will come unto him, and make our abode with him.” (John xiv. 23.) “For this is the love of God, that we *keep his commandments*; and his commandments are not grievous.” (1 John v. 3)

Obedience to the law of Christ is the outgrowth of the inward, spiritual life. It is thus that it declares itself. Just as every other species of life has its appropriate expression, so has this, also. Life produces activity. This life of the soul has its activity in holy living, in godly works. This is a most palpable basis of classification. The subjects of Christ’s kingdom are one in obedience to its laws, and in this they are distinguished from all other men.

5. Christians are “partakers of the Divine nature.” (2 Peter i. 4.) What is that nature? “God is love.” (John iv. 8, 16.) Love is not merely a Divine attribute; it is rather the essence of God’s moral nature. His moral attributes are so many expressions of love in certain aspects, or movements of it toward certain objects. Truth is love speaking the things which are good; justice is love protecting the interests of the universe; and so of the rest. Love is at the bottom of it all. “*God is love.*” The more I think of this, the more I see its truth and beauty. It is the divine philosophy which harmonizes all things. The attributes are not at war with each other, but have a common center, and work to the same results.

Now, look at this. We are “made partakers of the Divine nature.” “God is love.” Here you have the true religion defined. It is expressed again by the apostle, who says “the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.” (Rom. v. 5.) This is in keeping with the declaration of our Savior. “Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.” (Mat. xxii. 37–39.)



And further: "On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets." (v. 40.) The law is the expression of God's nature, which is love. We are made partakers of the Divine nature, and then the law of the Lord is our delight. "How love I thy law," is the heart-felt exclamation of every one that is born of God. "God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him." (1 John iv. 16.)

Now, your own consciousness will tell you that love is that principle which attracts and produces *unity*. It is spiritual *gravitation*. God is the infinite source of it, and by it binds all holy natures to himself, and to each other. Jesus, "God manifest in the flesh," sends the spirit of his love into the heart of every true believer, and, touched by this magnet, they gravitate toward himself. They love God; they love each other; they are ONE IN HIM.

This is the supreme principle of Christian unity. Hatred *repels*; love *attracts and unites*. The unity of the Church is not an organism—a corporation. It is not in forms and transmissions by human hands; not in ecclesiastical regulations and outward connection with a given See. It is "the unity of the spirit in the bond of peace." It is by this that the Church is made known among men. "By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another." (John xiii. 35.) Tell me not that it is by an immense organization that the true people of God are known. It is not by such means that God demonstrates his work to mankind. It is by no such test that his Church is known. One distinct declaration of Christ is worth a thousand times more than all the disquisitions in the world.

"*By THIS shall all men know that ye are my disciples: if ye have LOVE ONE TO ANOTHER.*" Blessed Jesus, we thank thee. And "*by this we know that we love the children of God when we love God and keep his commandments.*" (1 John v. 2.) No man, by any ecclesiastical

authority on earth, shall defraud me of my right and my duty to recognize and honor the "disciples of Christ," wherever I see those who love his children, and prove it by loving him and keeping his commandments. From the Vatican, or from the midst of councils, men may speak and anathematize against the declaration of my Savior till the world goes to pieces. I will believe him, and I will discredit *any* authority that contradicts his words.

I have set forth the chief *facts* in which the unity of the Church consists. First, a common *personal* faith in Christ; secondly, a common life, produced by spiritual regeneration; thirdly, a common reception of the saving truth, or "sound doctrine;" fourthly, common obedience to Christ's law; and finally, as comprising all the rest, the love of God, dwelling in each believer, and joining the whole in a divine bond. To these must the Church appeal in vindication of her truth. These are her scriptural marks. To these, and especially the last, men are directed as the certain test. *In these facts* we are directed to find the Church, and *never, never* in the fact of a *corporate* existence. I am willing to leave it to the good sense and intelligence of my audience, and of mankind. I fear no investigation. Truth shines all the brighter for the friction of such a test. Take my statements to the Bible; try them at the tribunal from which there is no appeal; subject them to the most rigid cross-questioning; and if they speak not as "the oracles of God," repudiate them.

Having presented, sufficiently for the argument up to this point, the more *direct* Scripture doctrine on this subject, let us now turn to the *illustrations* of the unity of the Church, which the Bible gives:

First. Our Savior, as I have shown in former lectures, affirms of himself that he is the rock on which the Church is built. (Mat. xvi. 18.) In 1 Cor. iii. 10, 17, the apostle uses the same figure. Alluding to his own work as the



pioneer of Christianity among the Gentiles, he says: "I have *laid the foundation*, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. For *other foundation* can no man lay than that is laid, *which is Jesus Christ*." Men, he goes on to say, build on this foundation, using materials which he represents by "gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble." But the work is to be tried by fire. Those who build on the foundation *shall be saved*; though if the material which they have used in building be such as will not stand the fire, it shall be burned up, and they shall suffer that loss. But if the material be such as fire will not consume, they shall not only be saved, but "shall receive a reward," also, in the preservation of their work. Surely no illustration could more plainly present the fact that *building on Christ* is the essential point. *Established on him*, men are secure. The gates of hell can not prevail against any man that builds on that immovable foundation. There is, also, a solemn warning against the use of bad or unsuitable material. The consequences are sad. What this poor material is, concerns not the present argument. The fact that Christ is the only foundation, and thus the center of unity to the Church, lies on the surface of the text. Every brick, and beam, and shingle in a house has a direct relation to the foundation, and it is that relation which preserves their *unity* as a whole. The foundation gone, and all the parts are scattered. They lose their relation to each other; their unity is gone. How beautifully and forcibly this illustrates all that I have said in the preceding portion of this lecture. Christ is the center, the rallying point of Christian unity, and all that are united to him are by that very fact united to each other. "Upon this rock I will build my Church."

Secondly. Our Lord compares himself to a vine, of which his people are the branches. (John xv. 1, 8.) In Romans xi. 15, 24, the apostle compares the Church to an olive tree,



of which he says the Jews were the natural branches, and they being broken off, the Gentile converts were grafted in. The idea in these two places is that of *unity in Christ*. And more, the Jews were broken off *by unbelief*, and the Gentiles were grafted in *by faith*. Faith is the immediate act by which the union of the branch with the stock is effected. This is the engrafting act. And this agrees exactly with what I have said before. True unity is the union with Christ by faith; that union with him effected, the New Birth is realized, and *life* flows from him to the engrafted member. He is the center of union, and the source of vitality. And the unity is not merely between Christ and the individual members, but is predicable of all the members aggregately. They are united with each other in virtue of their union with him, just as all the branches of a tree are united to each other by means of their connection with the stock. The remotest twig is of a parcel with the whole tree. The same life is infused into every part. The same nature pervades the whole. The trunk is olive, and the youngest branch—the minutest twig—is olive. It is one, not only in the aggregation, but in life and nature. So of the Church. We are “made partakers of the Divine nature.” “*Christ is our life.*” The Church is one aggregately: one in life, one in nature, one in Christ. This beautiful illustration agrees precisely with the view which I have presented of the unity of the Church.

Thirdly. An illustration of the unity of the Church, often given in the Epistles, is found in the living human body. The Church is called, in so many words, “the body of Christ.” (Eph. iv. 12.) In verses 15 and 16, he speaks of Christians as growing “up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ, from whom the whole body, fitly joined together, and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body unto the edify-

ing of itself in love.” (See also Ro. xii. 4, 5; 1 Cor. xii. 12, 23; Eph. i. 23, and v. 23, 30; and Col. i. 24.) In the last of these places the apostle speaks of Christ’s body, “which is the Church.”

From these passages it will be readliy seen that the unity of the Church consists of the very facts which I have before indicated. Christ, “as the head,” is the center and source of the union, from which vitality, and consciousness, and indentity proceed through the entire body. Indeed, the apostle, in the text cited above, uses the precise language which best expresses my meaning. From the head, Christ, “the whole body, fitly *joined together and compacted by that whi·h every joint supplieth*, according to the effectual working in the measure of *every part*, maketh increase of the *body, unto the edifying of itself in love*.” The remarks which I made in reference to the illustration of the vine and the olive tree, are, many of them, applicable here; but this illustration involves some further facts, chiefly growing out of the *conscious life* of the body. It expresses with great force the principal fact of Christian unity, to which I have already called your attention. I mean LOVE. “Whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it or one member be honored, all the members rejoice with it.” (1 Cor. xii. 26.) Let but the most insignificant member of the body receive the slightest injury, and an instant participation of the pain is realized throughout. And every part of the whole system demands its portion of the enjoyment which comes to any member. The distribution of the fortunes, prosperous or adverse, of each separate part amongst the whole, illustrates, most truthfully and beautifully, the divine love that animates and unites the Church. “Rejoice with those that do rejoice, and weep with those that weep.” Every member of the body serves the rest. The feet walk not for themselves alone, but for the whole body, the hands labor for the whole;



the eyes see and the ears hear for the whole. And so of all. What serves one serves all. So in the body of Christ, each lives for all--each has his individual duties, and devotes himself to them; but the good therefrom resulting is not for his separate behoof.

And in further confirmation of this view of the *spiritual* against the organic idea of the *unity* of the Church, see the 15th verse of this same chapter. "For *by one spirit* are we all *baptized into one body*, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit." The act of union on our part is faith, and on the part of God it is the baptism of his Spirit. By faith we join ourselves to him, and he, suffusing us with his Spirit, consummates the union. "By one Spirit," the holy Spirit of God, "we are baptized into one body."

Indeed, the Bible leaves us no room to doubt. "The unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace," is that which the Holy Scriptures insist on. The plain statements of the doctrine are all to this effect. And the illustrations of the house, the vine, the olive tree, the body, all consent in exhibiting a direct union with Christ by the Spirit. A unity based on Papal or prelatical succession is out of the question. The Bible ignores it. The genius of Christianity disowns it. It fosters vain pretensions, and unchristian exclusiveness. It invents tests of communion unknown to the Word of God, and adverse to its spirit and its plainest teaching. It is, therefore, not only *unscriptural*, but *anti-scriptural*. It is hurtful, as it repels and cuts off many most worthy bodies of believers, and as it places so much stress upon what is outward as often to turn the mind away from the inward and spiritual.

These exclusionists are schismatical. They separate themselves from the one universal Church. By claiming exclusive catholicity, they make themselves essentially uncatholic. The Catholic Church, truly so called, is made up



The Hideous Fetich, called the Public School, is only an ugly idol after all. *The Colorado Catholic.*

We would rather our children should grow up in utter ignorance of letters than be taught in a school that is not Catholic. *Catholic Quarterly Review.*

In New York City orphans are maintained at public expense. The Catholic Foundling Asylum and the Catholic Protectory received from the City's Treasury \$5,105,500 from 1884 to 1893 inclusive. Many so-called "orphans" have both parents living. [90]





Arrest of Robert Oguier. Page 484.





of all congregations of believers who worship and serve God according to the Scriptures. From vast multitudes of these the exclusionists separate themselves. The sin of schism is upon them. "The Temple of the Lord, the Temple of the Lord are we," say they, when, behold, it is a temple of their own building. And every body must fit the bedstead which Procrustes has adjusted to his own length. What a crime against truth and charity, to depart so far from the divine standard, and then anathematize all who will not be guilty of the same departure!

The true unity is not outward and formal, but inward and spiritual. It is not *shadow*, but *substance*. It is the linking of intelligent being into the chain of purity, and truth, and love. Deity infuses himself into human souls, and makes them one.

Now let us consider the advantages connected with the true, scriptural view of Christian Church unity.

1. It allows legitimate liberty of thought. Activity and freedom of thought are necessary to the world. To be healthy, mind must have play. Confine it, and it must develop out of symmetry. Truth appears in an infinite variety of relations and combinations. And there are exhaustless varieties of mental endowment adapted to investigation in the varied fields of thought. Let them work. There is enough for all to do. Speculative theology alone is exhaustless. Starting from the fundamental and palpable truths of revelation, interminable fields of thought open in every direction. But, you say, liberty in exploring them opens the door for error. "It must needs be that offenses come, but wo to that man by whom they come." For the use or the abuse of thought men are *accountable*, as for that of any other faculty. If they refuse to abide by the distinct averments of revelation, they do so at their peril. Christian unity only requires that they abide by these. So long as the anchor grapples *there*, they are safe from fatal

error. Obeying the check of evident truth in science, and the plain teaching of the Bible in religion, the mind requires liberty in speculation. In the use of that liberty the world will make its way to nobler views, and a healthier mental state, as the ages advance. In the unity of love, and pure doctrine, and godly living, men may cordially agree to differ in things indifferent or conjectural. They can "love as brethren," although they take opposite routes in speculative exploration.

By extending the dogmatic area, Rome has put thought into a straight jacket. Men must think just as certain theologians have heretofore determined, and as the prelates now permit. The theological surveyors, with chain and compass, have marked the "metes and bounds" within which mind may exercise itself. And there is no *unity* where the line is overstepped. *Within* the circle unity may be sinned against, the *spirit* of it may be trampled. That is to be borne with. But beyond the arbitrary circle none must dare to go.

Where has mind wrought its great achievements within the last few centuries? In Austria? In Spain? In Italy? In Mexico? In the South American Republics? It has been in Protestant Germany, and Great Britain, and the United States of America. France has taken the lead of Papal countries, but it is in that country that the ecclesiastical trammel is less regarded than in the others. And besides, the commonwealth of thought in France owes a large debt to Protestants. Her achievements are chiefly in some of the sciences, in philosophy, and in polite literature. In Biblical criticism Germany and England have outstripped all competitors. In the science of government and the useful arts, our own country stands unrivaled. Protestant mind leads the world to-day, as it has done for some ages past.

"Live and let live." Think and let think, and help



think. Only be humble, and love God *first*, and love the truth for God's sake. Thus acting, you will never endanger the "unity of the Spirit."

2. On the Scripture theory the Church is relieved of the hopeless task of tracing an organic history, unbroken in every particular. All that is required of her is to vindicate her *present claim* by scriptural tests.

If, indeed, a continued organization from the apostles down, with a regular succession of ordinations, unbroken at any point, be an absolute requisite of the true Church, then, in order to establish the fact, there must be explicit history at every point. If history leaves a gap at any given point, then the world can never know but her identity became forfeit at that time. Faith is thus transferred from the Bible to history. And if that witness is silent anywhere along the periods of the past, then faith fails right there.

In the pretended Roman line of succession, the history is wanting at the very outset. It is not in proof that Peter ever was at Rome. The circumstances are against it. Luke, the historian of those times, fails to state it. And his silence amounts to proof against it on the Roman theory. There are circumstances which give silence a world of meaning, and I know of no case more fully in point than this. By the Roman theory the *fact* of Peter's residence at Rome, as the supreme head of the Church, was the most important fact of the times. A single sentence from Luke in the Acts of the Apostles would have settled it beyond cavil for all coming time. But he is silent. No explanation of his silence can be given on earth, except that Peter was never at Rome, or at least not in that high character. There is no cotemporaneous history attesting it. For many, many years history is silent. After ages profess to have found a *tradition* to the effect that Peter and Paul *founded the Church* at Rome. And from this dubious tradition (which, indeed, is disproved by Scripture, for we know that

the Church at Rome was *founded* before Paul was ever there) the whole Papal theory and history have been manufactured.

And then the tradition confuses the succession for some ages. Not less than eight different lines have been given at the first end, as follows:

1. Linus, Anacletus, Clement, Euarestes, Alexander.
2. Peter, Linus, Cletus, Clement, Anacletus.
3. Linus, Anacletus, Clement, Sixtus, Alexander.
4. Peter, Anacletus, Clement, Alexander, Evaristus.
5. Linus, Clement, Anacletus, Evaristus, Alexander.
6. Peter, Clement, Linus, Cletus, Alexander.
7. Peter, Linus, Cletus, Evaristus, Alexander.
8. Peter, Linus, Cletus or Anacletus, Clement, Evaristus.

Such is the confusion through which the ecclesiastical genealogy of the Popes is traced back to the place where Peter *ought to be*. They can not even tell with any certainty whether Cletus be another name for Anacletus, or whether the two names belong to as many individuals. The history which *proves* (!) the succession is only tradition, and a tradition which crosses its own path *eight times*! Peter is *supposed* to have been at Rome, and some one of these lines of succession *probably* came after him. Alas for the Church whose very existence depends on *such* proof as this!

Besides this, there are many grave irregularities in the Papal succession. Some of their writers enumerate twenty-two schisms in the Papacy, some twenty-six, and Protestants reckon twenty-nine. By a schism you will understand two or more persons claiming to be Pope at the same time. Sometimes there have been three rival Popes, all contending for Peter's chair at once. These are facts which no intelligent Papist will deny. At one time there was no Pope in Rome for seventy years. For that period the Papal residence was at Avignon. Besides this, if the Pope



be the head of the Church, then the Church is always headless for some days after the death of an incumbent.

Rome makes faith in the Church dependent upon the assurance that a continuous organization has been maintained by a regular succession of Popes, and then is thrown upon *conjecture* to establish the succession, at least in the first five links. *Faith* in the Church resting on *conjecture*! What an incongruity! What a contradiction! *Conjectural faith*! Let them produce contemporaneous records from the first, showing that Peter was Pope, and then continuing to record the succession at every stage. When that is done, they may, with some degree of confidence, ask the credence of mankind. But bare probability is a foundation altogether too frail to support such a structure as they assert the Church to be. But in this case the probability is on the other side.

On the contrary the scriptural proof is clear and accessible. Any given association has but to assure itself of holding the true saving doctrine, with the scriptural ordinances; of maintaining the true worship and the Christian life; of holding to Christ by faith, and enjoying the Spirit of his presence. This establishes their claim to a place in the great Christian family. They are of the body of Christ. They are one with his people in all places and ages. *One*, not by the arbitrary identity of a formal external organism, but in the actual identity of *fact and spirit*. They are grafted into the good olive tree by faith. "By one Spirit they are baptized into one body." They are under no necessity of giving "heed to fables and *endless genealogies*, which minister *questions* rather than godly edifying." (1 Tim. i. 4.) *Questions* of ecclesiastical genealogy give them no perplexity. They are careful only to secure their present connection with "the Head, which is Christ," well knowing that that will secure their identity with the whole body. They seek only to be such a people as the Bible



describes, divinely assured that in this is the true unity. They are at one with all the congregations of God's people. And if any man comes bustling along, and scolds them, saying, "I forbid you, because you follow not *with us*," they remember that Christ rebuked such officious exclusiveness when he saw the buddings of it among his disciples. "Forbid them not."

3. This "unity of the Spirit" dates from a far more remote antiquity than the frigid unity of organism does, even allowing all that it claims for itself. At the outside it is not two thousand years old. It is, also, much more extended. It takes in the children of God in all lands. This is the "Catholic Church." It goes back to the family of Adam, embraces the patriarchs, illustrious and obscure, and on down in every age, in every land, it opens its arms to the true worshippers of God. It encompasses Abel, the bleeding victim of whose altar attested his faith in the woman's seed, and sweeps its ample circle around the last man whose faith shall present before the Father the dying victim of our sins. Greek and Roman, Armenian and American, Ethiopian and Hindoo, wherever the word of Christ has come *by any means*, and men have believed on his name, and associated themselves to observe his ordinances and his will—all, all are embraced. A rigid organism necessarily exclusive, and, therefore, uncatholic and schismatical. On the contrary, the "unity of the Spirit" is, in its very nature, catholic and all-embracing. It knows no limits but those of the Spirit. By it we are joined to "the whole family in earth and in heaven." (Eph. iii. 15.) We belong to "the general assembly and Church of the first-born, which are written in heaven." (Heb. xii. 23.)

"One army of the living God,  
One Church above, beneath,  
Though now divided by the stream,  
The narrow stream of death."

What a sublime unity is here ! It shall form a company, which, in the end, "no man can number, of every kindred, nation and tongue." The consciousness of a part in this grand unity must elevate the soul to humble exultation. And when they shall all stand together upon "the sapphire pavements of the skies," and shout in unison, "Salvation unto our God that sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb, forever," the exultant melody shall form an anthem worthy of the ear of God.

4. I told you last Sunday evening that the unity of the Roman Church is maintained by force. This I proved from the canons of the Council of Trent, and the writings of Bellarmin. It is exemplified by a thousand facts of history. But the "Unity of the Spirit," is maintained by *attraction*, not by *compulsion*. It is the unity of love, as contradistinguished from that of force. It is unity "in the bond of peace." (Eph. iv. 3.) It asks no "sword of the temporal prince" to drive in refractory members. It draws, but does not drive. "And I, if I be lifted up, will draw all men unto me," said Christ. "My people shall be *willing* in the day of my power." (Psa., cx. 3.) Coercion is reserved to the Judge, and then it will drive men *away*, not *to* himself. It is the last and terrible resort of insulted Sovereignty. The mission of the Church is one of peace. Everywhere she holds the olive-branch. She echoes, Christ's "Come to me." She utters the words of his love. "The Spirit and the *Bride* say, *come*. And let him that heareth say, *come*. And let him that is athirst *come*. And *whosoever will*, let him take of the water of life *freely*." (Rev. xxii. 17.) Reluctant spirits, driven into an organization against their will, have no part in the unity of Christ.

Christ, as the great center of the Christian system, *draws* to himself the elements of which his Church is composed. The members come to their places freely, and are



retained as they are drawn, by love. This "sweet compulsion" is the only force employed.

Do you ask me, then, the use of any outward Church organism? I answer, its use is obvious.

First, it is necessary to the administration of the ordinances of religion. By it the teachers of Christianity are provided and maintained. All the means of public religious instruction are dependent upon it. Organized effort to spread the Gospel is thus secured. The ministerial office is duly guarded and maintained. Men are thus enabled to "go forth everywhere, preaching the word." God works by means. He has made men "workers together with him," in extending the knowledge of salvation. Believers, themselves, require to be "built up on their most holy faith." Religious teaching and teachers are requisite, as well as established methods of instruction. How necessary an organization is to all this, every one can see. Then there are the sacraments to be administered, and the public worship of God observed. And the Church must be aggressive. She must carry the Gospel to "the regions beyond." The preacher and the Bible must go to the heathen. From the rising to the setting sun, Jesus' name must be made known. In these great enterprises, organized effort is requisite to extended success.

Secondly, God's people must avow themselves. Christ must be confessed before men. His followers must come out from the world and be separate. "Ye are my witnesses," said God, of his ancient people. It is true of his people to-day. Their light must be "on a candlestick," not "under a bushel." Their formal association with the body of believers is such an avowal; not sufficient of itself indeed, unless it is supported by a godly life. But it is a public confession of Christ, and that public confession is renewed whenever they "show the Lord's death" at the sacred Supper.



Thirdly, it is necessary to Christian fellowship. Communion of saints takes shape. Christians know each other by means of their organic association. They are brought together, and brotherly love is cultivated. They support each other against the encroachments of the world, and encourage each other's faith and zeal. The social demands of our nature, in the religious aspect, are met; Christian joy receives from this source a large revenue. United praise and prayer go up to God from the "assemblies of the saints." The weak are supported, the feeble minded are comforted, the erring are called back. The whole body, in a word, "maketh increase—unto the edifying of itself in love." (Eph. iv. 16.)

Fourthly, it is the outward expression of the spiritual fact of unity. The Christian life produces a common spirit in all those who enjoy it. They are *one* in spirit, and this controlling fact brings them together. No more naturally will magnetized steel dust cluster together than will Christians. They *will* associate. Christianity is eminently gregarious. Christian people go in *flocks*. (Acts, xx. 28.) A common life and a common center of attraction draw them together. The outward Church is a necessary outgrowth of the inward life.

But the unity of the Church does not, therefore, consist of a *universal* organism. Independent organizations are *essentially one*, when they have in common the characteristics which I have given in the beginning of this lecture. They unite in *faith in the saving truth, in the new birth, in a common piety, in scriptural worship*. They are *united in Christ*. They gather around the Bible and the Cross. So long as their differences affect nothing that belongs to the essence of religion, they are *one* in the eye of Christ. The liberty of independent organization is evidently allowed, for in the New Testament no *specific form of organization* is enjoined. The elements of which the Church is to con-

sist are clearly given, but the specific form is not. Adaptation to circumstances in things indifferent is thus provided for. The wisdom and goodness of God appear in this as in all things.

But, you ask again, who is to be the *judge* to determine which particular organizations are embraced in the great Catholic unity? I ask, in return, who is to be the judge between me and my Romanist brother? He is *but* a man, and I am a man. But he speaks the voice of his Church. So do I speak the voice of mine. But *his* Church claims to be infallible. I deny the claim, and there we are at issue again. Who is to decide between us? God, in the final issue; and, for practical purposes now, each man for himself; and the Bible is the *rule* of judgment. But men are not infallible, and may err, therefore. In speculative questions, doubtless, they will be unable to see alike. But the saving truth has been plainly given. "The wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein." (Isa. xxxv. 8.) But, you say men *do* err in vital matters. Many, to whom the Bible is accessible, go astray from the plainest truth. Yes. And, pray, does every one to whom the Roman Church is accessible, see her to be the only true Church, and so get the truth at her hand? No! What does that prove? If that were the best proof against her claims, I should yield the argument. And if the fact that men differ in essential matters, in interpreting the Scriptures, is proof against them as a reliable standard of truth for man, then the fact that men differ in reference to the claims of Rome as an infallible teacher, is proof against the claim. One is just as good as the other. If this be a good argument, the world is without any reliable revelation; and the vessel of life is afloat chartless and helmless upon the sea of destiny, drifting on to a fearful shipwreck, or at best to an unknown port.

No, the earnest, conscientious inquirer for truth, in the Bible, need not fear. He is obliged to judge for himself for



practical purposes, and is accountable to God for the use of his faculties and opportunities. And “the foundation of God standeth sure, having this seal: the Lord knoweth them that are his.” Each one must inquire, and judge, and act for himself upon the whole question of religion, as upon every other, and God will know his own. And they shall know him, the only true God, if they seek with the *whole heart*. “In the day that thou seekest me with thy whole heart, I will be found of thee.”

Our union in Christ is the ground of immortal hope. “Our life is hid with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall we also appear with him in glory.” (Col. iii. 3, 4.) The immortality of Christ is the pledge of ours. Living and dying, his people are one in him. In all places of the earth they are scattered, and separated by ages and generations. A thousand distinctions of race, and sect, and color, and condition, and language and education, and opinion divide them. But, in every case, their “life is hid with Christ in God.” Amid all circumstantial variations, here is the substantive unity. Their *life* is one. And it is divine. It can never fail. Through all changes, and death, and decay, it is hid with Christ in God. I stand here in the midst of the Western Hemisphere, humbly joined to Christ by faith in his name, and he hides my life in God. Henceforth, to me, the *spiritual is the real*. God is all in all. This world is a world of shadows. Around me, on every hand, in every continent, on every island, in every sea, are scattered unknown millions, living and dead, separated from me by lines of *shadow*. Our *life* meets in Christ. There we are one. The shadows fade. Death, and time, and distance are nothing. What a world of life is hid with mine in God! And “when Christ, who is our life, shall *appear*, then shall we also *appear with him* in glory.” Hail! all hail!

We wait the dawn of the coming day. In that light we



“shall see as we are seen” by God. Brothers of my soul! we shall come together then in apparent, as we are now joined in real, union. “The day of redemption draweth nigh.” What a family shall then meet in “the house not made with hands,” under the Fatherhood of God! Our childish differences and misunderstandings shall pass away. Our hidden life shall appear. We “shall know as we are known.”

Even now we realize the bond of the “mystic brotherhood.” Even now we despise the shadow-walls of partition. We await the consummation! The day when Christ shall *appear*, we shall *appear* together, with him. Then shall “the general assembly and Church of the first-born” stand upon Mount Zion.

BROTHERS, known and unknown, all hail! I shall know you *then*.





"Such as you bear us little favor." Page 519.





The Rome of the Middle Ages claimed universal monarchy. The Modern Church of Rome has abandoned nothing, retracted nothing.

GLADSTONE.

Trembling Mayors and embarrassed Governors shall appeal to Catholic Bishops to lend them their most active exertions towards poisoning on its basis the fabric of our Republic and the hopes of the Constitution.

*Catholic Journal* (New York).

The Americans are a very patient and wonderfully tolerant people, but touch them as to religion and quicker than they sprung to arms when Sumpter was fired on, will battalions muster, as though the land was sown with dragons' teeth.

[103]

DISRAELI, in "Lothair."

## CHAPTER IX.

ENOCH MATHER MARVIN,

LATE BISHOP

OF THE

METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH SOUTH.

---

THE MINISTRY OF CHRIST'S CHURCH CONTRASTED WITH THE  
PRIESTHOOD OF THE POPE'S CHURCH.

---

"Then opened He their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, and said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of these things."  
—[Luke xxiv. 45-48.

"And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; to wit: that God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now, then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you, in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God."—[2 Cor. v. 18-20.

BEFORE proceeding to the discussion of the subject announced for the evening, I must discharge an obligation of friendship. I have received a letter, which I should have acknowledged in a more private way, but for the circumstance that it is anonymous, and I could not guess to whom I was indebted for the favor. But, as it is my desire not to owe a debt of kindness when it is in my power to reciprocate the act, I take this, the only method open to me, of making my respects to my unknown friend. And



that you may know the nature and extent of the obligations under which I have been brought, I will read you the letter. It has already been the source of entertainment to some of my friends privately, and, as you are all my friends. I will give you all the benefit of it:

ST. LOUIS, February 27, 1860.

REV. MR. MARVIN—*Sir*: In the concluding paragraph of your lecture, No. 13, you must do injustice to your own conscience in impugning the known truth in your false statement of the unity, holiness, apostolicity and catholicity of the Roman Catholic Church. [As there is but one Lord, one Faith, one Baptism, one God and Father of all, there can not be but one true Church and that true Church, to be conformable to eternal justice must necessarily have those four distinctive marks of unity, holiness, apostolicity, and catholicity. As you can not point out any other Church having those necessary distinctive marks, unless the Roman Catholic Church, it proves her, to all intents and purposes, to be the only true Church of God.] Hence all ranting and raving against her, on such false premises, is a certain contradiction in terms, which, in logic, is considered an absurdity. If you would have these few lines published, it would answer all the lectures of your kind that could be published until doomsday. Hence, if you wish to save your soul, you should become a Catholic at once, as you should recollect that no person is convinced by mere subterfuge and abuse. People require logical argument, on sound principles, to convince them, and how can you give what you have not? Don't believe the reporter, when he tries to humbug you, when he says, "The evident sincerity and ingenuousness of the lecturer, together with his eloquence, and the thorough, masterly manner in which he handles his subjects, enchain attention, convince, edify and delight the multitudes that hang upon his words!" Now, the fellow knows very well that almost the whole community are laughing and amused at your labor in vain struggles against God's holy and infallible Church, against which the Gates of hell shall never prevail. She is known by her fruits. Look round with admiration (?), and be convinced; and, at least, be convinced that in me you have found one friend, who, in a few lines only, tells you all you can or need know, to know the truth (!). I am no clergyman, but a friend to truth, and despise a foolish persistence in error, as you have much more trouble in hunting up erroneous statements, than you would have in finding the truth. I enter not into controversy with you, nor do I seek notoriety; but if you were to publish this friendly advice in the Republican, or any other of the city papers, even without a signature, the public would know the writer.

I am, very respectfully,

A FRIEND TO TRUTH.

The grave charges made against me in this missile, might secure the author credit for boldness, only that it is always esteemed an equivocal sort of courage that fires under cover. My own courage, on the contrary, must pass, I suppose, for rashness, when I publish "these few lines," which are to upset all I have said, or can say. At all events, it is gratifying to know that I am a public benefactor, if it be only in furnishing "almost the whole community" with amusement. And it is yet more gratifying to know that I

have at last "found *one friend*." A friend is a priceless treasure. There is a drawback in this case, however, and that is, that I don't know *where to find* the friend whom I *have found*.

Upon the whole, judging the man by the writing, I am inclined to set him down for a clever fellow ; and as he is so anxious to get into print, "faith I'll print him." I "guess" him to be a generous, impulsive, ardent sort of body, that I should like upon acquaintance ; and as the *public* is sure to know him in print, I am in hopes the public (who is my particular friend) will tell me who he is.

But, dismissing my *sub rosa* friend, I must proceed to the topic of the evening : The ministry of Christ's Church contrasted with the Priesthood of the Pope's Church. I use the expression, "the Pope's Church," with no invidious intention. You who have either heard or read my two last lectures, will see the propriety of the language. The Pope is the head of the Roman Church, and center of its unity. Just as Great Britain and her dependencies are called "the Queen's dominions," the Roman may be called the Pope's Church.

Every association has its officers, and every religion its ministers. The Church and the Christian religion are not different from others in this respect.

What is the Christian ministry, and what its functions ?

In reading the Scriptures of the New Testament, you will, perhaps, be struck with the fact that certain men, denominated *apostles*, occupy the most prominent place, and are most active in the work of the Church. Before the crucifixion they were constant attendants upon the person of the Lord, and, after that event, they took the lead in establishing Churches and managing their affairs. The Roman Church claims the perpetuation of the apostolical office in herself, and her exclusive assumptions rest, in a large degree, upon that claim.



Now, I affirm that, in what was peculiar to the office of an apostle, they had no successors. The office was special, and *belonged*, not to the continuous ministry of the Church, but only to the opening of the Christian dispensation and the first establishment of the Church. It is true that the apostleship *included* the ordinary functions of the ministry, but, in addition to these, it embraced other and special powers. In the ordinary functions of the ministerial office, every true minister succeeds them; but in those which were special, they have never been succeeded by any, and, in the nature of the case, never can be. I desire no man to take my mere statement for this. You all have the opportunity to test my statement. I appeal to the Scriptures. Consider, then, the following places, and tell me if, in view of their teaching, there are any apostles now in the world, or any men with apostolical prerogatives.

1. The tenth chapter of Matthew entire is devoted to an account of the establishment of the apostolical office, together with the address delivered to the incumbents, by our Lord, upon the occasion of their installation. This address defines the office, and contains, also, the official instructions under which they were to act. It is, therefore, a document worthy of the most careful attention, as bearing upon this investigation. You will observe, then,

(1.) That there was a specific number of men designated to this office, whose names are given: "Now, the names of *the twelve apostles* are these: the first Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew, his brother; James, the son of Zebedee, and John, his brother; Philip and Bartholomew; Thomas and Matthew the publican; James, the son of Alpheus, and Lebbeaus, whose surname was Thaddeus; Simon, the Canaanite; and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him." (Mat. x. 2-4.)

(2.) These twelve were not all the disciples whom Jesus had, nor did they monopolize the ministerial office during



our Savior's lifetime. He employed seventy others to proclaim the coming of God's kingdom. (Luke x. 1-20.) But while these were so employed, the apostles retained their peculiar honor, and were ever nearest the person of the Lord, and were called the twelve.

(3.) These were most carefully instructed in his doctrine, and to them was committed the Spirit of inspiration: "For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you." (Matt. x. 20.) To them he made the promise, when he instituted the holy Supper, that the Holy Ghost should teach them all things, and bring to their remembrance all that he had said to them. (John xiv. 26.) Thus endowed, they were prepared to give the world the New Testament canon. The seventy enjoyed the power to work miracles in common with them.

(4.) They were the special witnesses of his resurrection. (Acts i. 2, 3, 8, 22, and iv. 33.) It is to the *apostles* that he says, "Ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you; and ye shall be *witnesses unto me*, both in Jerusalem and in Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost parts of the earth." When the apostles spoke of filling the vacancy occasioned by the fall of Judas, "one must be ordained," say they, "to be a *witness with us* of the resurrection." "And with great power gave the *apostles witness* of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus." See also John xv. 27: "And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning." From this you will see why Paul, in the authentication of his apostolic character, lays such stress on the fact that he had "seen Christ." (1 Cor. ix. 1.)

2. That the apostles themselves understood their office to be special and peculiar, and confined to the original number appointed by our Lord, and that the chief business of an apostle was to be a witness of Christ, is clear, from the fact that when Judas fell, they thought it neces-

sary to supply his place; and that in doing this, they thought it equally necessary to make the selection from among those men who, as they say, "have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, beginning from the baptism of John, unto that same day that he was taken up from us;" and the design was, as I have already shown, to complete the number of special witnesses "of his resurrection." Two were appointed, between whom the lot was cast, and one, named Matthias, selected. We hear of *no other* apostle in the New Testament except Paul, whom I shall introduce to your attention soon. Why this rigid adherence to the original number? And why was not this number *afterward* kept full upon the death of the apostles? But one answer can be given. The office was confined to themselves; the necessity for it passed away with them. They, indeed, accomplished and consummated the apostolic work, as I shall soon show; and after they were gone there was no more use for apostles.

3. This will all appear with great clearness in the examination of the case of the Apostle Paul. Let us turn first to Gal. i. 1, 19: "Paul, an apostle (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the dead.\*)" This reference to his direct appointment to the apostolic office by Christ himself, is peculiarly significant. Grave errors, of most hurtful tendency, had crept into the Churches of Galatia, and he determined to eradicate them. In order to do this he must establish his credit with those Churches, as an *apostle*. *This* point gained, they have no alternative but to receive his declarations as ultimate authority in any question of Christian doctrine. His apostolic vocation is therefore vindicated in the outset. His apostleship, he affirms, is not of men, neither *by man*, but BY JESUS CHRIST. In Acts, ix. and xxii. chapters, we have the account of his strange conver-



sion. Suddenly, and by a great miracle, arrested in his headstrong and bloody persecution of the feeble followers of Christ, he gives himself up, wholly, and with the irrepressible ardor of his great soul, to the cause of the Lord that he had so deeply wronged and injured. Christ appeared to him *personally*, and invested him with the commission of an apostle. "And he said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest. But rise, and stand upon thy feet: for I have appeared unto thee *for this purpose*, to make thee a minister *and a witness* both of these things which thou hast seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee." (Acts, xxvi 15, 16. See the whole chapter.) Thus was the man of Tarsus constituted by the Lord himself one of "the Witnesses." Different opinions are entertained as to the validity of Matthias' election to the apostolate. There is, to say the least, a strong argument against it. First, if our Lord had intended the place of Judas to be filled, from the number of those who were already his disciples, is it not likely that he would himself have made the selection during the forty days he was with them after his resurrection? *In every other instance* the apostles were called by him personally. Secondly, the promise to guide the apostles "into all truth" was to be fulfilled in the gift of the Holy Ghost, "the Spirit of truth." (John, xvi. 13.) For this they were to *wait*; nor were they authorized to proceed in their work until it should come upon them. But the selection of Matthias was made *before* they had received their infallible Guide, "the Spirit of truth." Thirdly, the suggestion was made by Peter, with whom it was no new thing to speak hastily. From all these facts may we not infer that this election was premature, and that Christ himself afterwards filled the place with his own "chosen vessel," Paul? I strongly incline to this opinion. But some suppose that Paul is not to be reckoned among the twelve, his vocation being separate, and designed especially for the Gentiles.



It is not a question at all affecting dogmas, and I am not, therefore, pertinacious. It does not in any degree detract from the credit of the apostles as inspired men, to suppose they made a mistake before they received the Spirit of inspiration. And, on the other hand, it detracts nothing from the authority of Paul to suppose his vocation peculiar to himself. In either case the fact is clear that the apostleship was a special office, limited as I have shown before. This limitation stands out prominently in the case of Paul, as I have shown in part, and as will more fully appear in the further examination of his case.

He still further assures the Galatians, in the same connection referred to already, that the gospel he preached was not of man, for, says he, “I neither received it of man, *nor was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.*” (Gal. i. 11, 12.) When he received his designation to the office; he did not even go up to Jerusalem to them who were apostles before him. (v. 17.) He required no human instructor. Christ had become his master in theology, and he needed no other. “The Spirit of truth,” which he had received in equal measure with the other apostles, constituted his plenary endowment as a *witness of the truth*, and his interview with Christ made him a *witness of the resurrection*.

4 The apostles authenticated their claim by *signs*. “They went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with *signs following.*” (Mark xvi. 20.) *Others*, in those times, did indeed work miracles. The power was not confined to the twelve. But to prove himself an apostle, a man must *at least* perform miraculous works. And there were these peculiarities about the apostles: first, they performed more numerous and greater works than others. “By the hands of the *apostles* were many signs and wonders wrought among the people, \* \* \* \* insomuch that they brought

forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the *shadow of Peter*, passing by, might overshadow some of them." (Acts v. 12-15) "And God wrought *special* miracles by the hands of Paul; so that from his body were brought unto the sick, handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them." (Acts xix. 11, 12.) "I speak with tongues *more than ye all*." (1 Cor. xiv. 18) Secondly, the miracle-working power was *conferred by the apostles* on others. "And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues and prophesied." (Acts, xix. 6)

Paul, in that noble vindication of his official character to the Corinthians, appeals directly to his miraculous vouchers. "In *nothing* am I behind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing. Truly, THE SIGNS OF AN APOSTLE *were wrought among you* in all patience, and signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds." (2 Cor. xii. 11, 12.)

5. That the apostleship is limited, as I have shown, is further settled by John in the Apocalypse. In the resplendent visions of Patmos he saw "that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God, having the glory of God. \* \* \* And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of *the twelve apostles of the Lamb*." (Rev. xxi. 10-14.) There are only twelve apostles of the Lamb, and there will never be any increase of the number. In the consummation, that will be the number.

6. Finally, the apostolic vocation was peculiar to the first age of Christianity, and was fully consummated by the twelve, including Paul. As I have shown in several Scriptures, the apostolic office involved these two things: first, that they were *witnesses of Jesus*, and secondly, that, receiving the gospel, not by instruction, but directly from him, they became its *authoritative exponents to the world*.



As none have *seen Christ* since that time, none can be his witnesses in the apostolic sense ; and as he no longer *reveals* the gospel to any, but all who receive it do so by *instruction*, there can be none who are infallible exponents of it now.

By these plain Scriptural tests are we to “try them which say they are apostles and are not.” (Rev. ii. 2.) The apostolicity which my anonymous friend rejoices in so much, makes a sorry appearance when placed alongside the genuine apostolic office. Suppose we put a few plain questions to one of these pretenders to the apostleship.

Did you receive the gospel of man or of Christ? Were you taught it “by revelation of Jesus Christ,” or from the curriculum of a theological college? Have you seen the Lord? Were you notified of your apostolic vocation from his own lips? Are you a personal witness of his resurrection? Can you show “the signs of an apostle?” And it will not do to refer us to prodigies wrought by some one else in some remote place. In his epistle to the Corinthians, Paul vindicates his office by an appeal to signs *wrought among them*. Produce your “signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds, *here*, where we can see them. So far as I know, Nauvoo is the nearest to us of any other scene of miracles. The papers tell us of one of recent date in New Bedford, Massachusetts, performed by one Dr. Bellows, of New York, a second advent preacher! Where are the successors of the apostles? Are they asleep?

The *word*, apostle, is, indeed, sometimes used with some latitude, as almost every word is. Luther is called “the apostle of Germany,” and Wesley, “the apostle of Methodism.” And so of men among us who are distinguished for holiness and for uncommon devotedness to the cause of God. Even in the New Testament the word is used with this latitude, in a few instances. [But, from what I have



said, it is clear that, in its proper, official significance, it is confined to those few men, selected by our Lord himself, to inaugurate the new dispensation.

But, in spite of the plain Scripture teaching that the apostolic office was temporary, and confined to the men whom Christ himself selected, and, notwithstanding the total absence of apostolic qualifications, we have men claiming to be successors of the apostles, and they make most exorbitant demands upon our credulity, in virtue of their claim. Hear one of them, Dr. Cahill, in a sermon lately preached in Brooklyn, and published in the Romish journals. I quote from the "Boston Pilot," of Feb. 25th :

"*Dearest Brethren :* I am now going to deliver a discourse for you upon what we call the Infallibility of the Catholic Church. The word infallible does not mean that no man in the Church can fail; but it means that the doctrines taught by Christ and his apostles are the same doctrines which are still taught in the Church, and will be to the end of the world. The infallibility of the Church means this: that I, an approved Priest, approved by my Bishop, having passed my examination in college, taken out my degree, recognized as a Priest and approved by the Bishop, that you may *rely upon what I tell you* with the same certainty *as if you heard Christ himself speak*. What a consoling proposition that is! As if a man said, 'Dr. Cahill, I send my wife to your knee, and I would not let the wife of my bosom *go on her knees to any man on earth but the Priest*; I take my spotless child, my daughter—and I can scarcely bear the breezes of the skies to touch her cheek—my spotless child that I love, and I place her *on her knees* before you, to tell you the *secrets of her heart*, though I would not let any man on earth lay the tip of his finger on her shoulder; I go to you myself, and I am a proud man, and could scarcely take off my hat to the monarch of the world,' " etc. These are certainly not very

modest pretensions for a man who can produce *no* “signs of an apostle.”

That you may have something like a just view of the egregious nature of the assumptions involved in the Romish theory of the Christian ministry, let me call your attention to the following facts, all of which grow out of their claim of succession to apostolic functions.

1. They claim to be infallible exponents of Scripture doctrine. Their pretensions in this respect are not limited to the exposition of Scripture, but extend to all things whatsoever, insomuch that what the Church teachês in any matter of doctrine or morality is to be devoutly received. Any approved priest is to be believed in all that he teaches, just as implicitly as if it were Christ himself speaking. (See the extract from Dr. Cahill.) By the way, this is quite consolatory to us Protestants; for when Luther first taught the main doctrines of the Reformation he was an “approved priest.” He had taken his degree, and been approved by the Bishop, and, according to Dr. Cahill, those who heard him were bound to receive what he said just as though it had been Christ speaking.

How illy the priests sustain the character of infallible teachers, is patent to every observer. They seem not to understand the history of their own traditions. They cannot even understand how the *idea* of transubstantiation should originate in Eutychianism. It was the most natural thing in the world that the man who taught that the human nature in Christ was absorbed into the divine, should strive to make the Eucharist consistent with his theory, by inventing a *change* in the elements, so that the *divine Christ* should not be represented by a *physical substance* in the sacrament. This is just what Eutyches did according to Theodoret, who put this language in the mouth of a Eutychian: “As the symbols of the Lord’s body and blood are one thing *before* their consecration by the priest, but, *after*



their consecration, are physically changed and become quite another thing ; so the material body of the Lord, after its assumption, was physically changed into the divine substance." (Theod. Dial. ii. Oper. vol. iv. p. 84, Lut. Paris, 1642.) I cannot imagine anything that would more certainly suggest the idea of transubstantiation than this notion of Eutyches in reference to the change of the physical nature of Christ by absorption into the divine. And it is clear that it did not originate there. NEVER, before the time of the Byzantine Abbot, do we hear of a *physical change* in the elements of the Eucharist. *Then* we do hear of it as a part, or at least an incident, of his heresy of Monophysitism.

2. In virtue of their pretended apostolical authority, they assume functions which the apostles never did.

1. They assume the functions of *priesthood*. Indeed, this is the leading characteristic of their ministry, as Archbishop Hughes admits. They are *called* priests. This is their most common and pertinent designation.

I charge that in this fact the ministry of the Roman Church is *essentially perverted*, so that it is not a *Christian* ministry. This is a most important point. If there were no other corruption in the Church of Rome, this single one would be fatal to her. I have given some attention, in previous lectures, to this subject ; but some further investigation of it is necessary here.

A priesthood supposes an altar, a sacrifice, and a priest to offer it. Of course, the word *sacrifice* is used in this discussion in the sense of an *offering for sins*. Now note the following facts :

First, the New Testament Scriptures *know nothing of any sacrifice but Christ, nor of any other sacrificial offering of him except that made by himself on the cross*. On the contrary, they assert that he did then offer himself *once for all*. It is, therefore, not only without Scripture au-



thority, but *directly against* the plain affirmation of the Word of God, that the priests of Rome pretend to sacrifice Christ in the Mass. Secondly, the ministers of Christ are not, *in any single place*, directed to *make any offering for sin*. The commission gives no such function to their office, nor do any subsequent instructions intimate such a thing. If this be the characterizing feature of the Christian ministry, why are the Christian Scriptures, which establish and define the office, silent as the grave in reference to it? The truth is palpable: the ministry has no such function. Thirdly, the ministers of Christ are *never called priests*, in the Scriptures. Among the titles given to ministers, ordinary and extraordinary, in the New Testament, this one never occurs. Why? Simply because none of them *were priests*. They were preachers and pastors, to warn and invite sinners, and to “feed the flock of God;” but they were not priests to offer sacrifice “for the living and dead.” If you desire to witness an instance of *real* swallowing of a camel, of *life-size*, just get a man to read the New Testament, and then try to believe that ministers of the Gospel are priests!

2. The priests of Rome assume higher powers than ever the apostles did in their theory of forgiving sin, and in their whole system of sacramental salvation. I have already treated of the authority to remit sin, which our Savior gave to the apostles. In a previous lecture, I showed that they never pretended anything more than to remit *ecclesiastical censures*, excepting only that they *preached* remission of sins in the name of Christ. But, according to the Council of Trent, not only does the priest absolve the penitent in the confessional, *judicially*, but in all the seven sacraments, grace comes through sacerdotal manipulation. The efficacy of the act is so wholly dependent on the priest, that any want of intention on his part defeats the effect. He stands between the penitent and

God, to convey or withhold God's grace, as he may choose.

3. The confessional is without a parallel in apostolic prerogative. What a striking contrast there is between the directions which the *apostles* give to believers, and those which the *priests* give! Confession of sin to a minister is never enumerated among the duties of the Christian life by the former, while there is scarcely anything so much insisted on by the latter. You will scarcely find the most compendious manual of Christian duty put forth by a Romanist, but the absolute necessity of confessing *all sin* to the priest is strenuously insisted on. All descriptions of sin, such as have ripened into the overt act, and such as lie concealed in the unspoken thought, *all*, *ALL* are to be carefully told to the priest. Proud men and modest women must tell every impure thought to the priest. I speak by the book, and *challenge* contradiction. And if any, even ladies, hesitate, through timidity, and conscious female delicacy, they are to be led on by questions until every hidden thing is made known to the "father confessor." Such authority to inspect the secret soul the apostles *did not claim*. They never required shrinking, modest women to detail to them their most secret thoughts. Such God-like prerogatives they never usurped.

4. The priests claim a certain jurisdiction over the departed. Souls in purgatory are *helped* by the suffrages of the faithful, but *especially* by the "acceptable sacrifice of the altar." It must be remembered, as I have proved heretofore, that purgatory is the exclusive property of the priest. They invented it; and, in the commercial acceptance of the phrase, they "make a good thing of it." "It pays." Having contrived this receptacle for certain classes of the dead, of course they must have exclusive control of it. If they really have authority to put souls into such uncomfortable quarters, they ought to have the privilege of *helping* them out. But all this places them in most



striking contrast with the apostles, of whom they claim to be successors. *They* maintained no authority over the souls of the dead. They established no colony on the banks of the Styx, which they might skillfully administer with an eye to the revenue. That experiment was left to priests, and to a later day.

From all that I have said, you will see how completely any effort to establish apostolical character and authority, on the part of the priests at Rome, fails. The apostles were selected by Christ in person; they were witnesses of him, first, as to the fact of his resurrection, and, secondly, as to his doctrine. For this purpose, they were men who had both seen him and received the Gospel from himself direct; and they showed the *signs* which demonstrated their apostleship wherever they went. In all these facts they and Rome are separated as wide as the poles. And then the infallible pretensions of the priests are infallible contradictions in history, and the official prerogatives they assume are extremely unapostolic.

It is indeed true that the apostles had all the functions of the ordinary ministry, and they were the first who were invested with that ministry. And it is further true that every true minister succeeds them *in that respect*. In other words, every true minister succeeds to their *ordinary* functions. He succeeds them as they were *mere ministers* of Christ; but he does not succeed them *as they were apostles*. In that office they stand apart, as I have shown, from all other men.

Now let us come to speak of the ministry of Christ's Church, and in doing so you will discover the contrast between it and the priesthood of the Pope's Church.

1. The ministers of Christ's Church are *preachers of the gospel*. "Go ye into all the world, and *preach the gospel* to every creature." (Mark xvi. 15.) "Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise



from the dead the third day; and that repentance and remission of sins *should be preached in his name* among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem." (Luke xxiv. 46, 47.) "They that were scattered abroad went everywhere, *preaching the Word.*" (Acts viii. 4.) God has "given to us the ministry of reconciliation, to wit: that God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them; and hath *committed unto us the word of reconciliation.* Now, then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us; we pray you, in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God." (2 Cor. v. 18, 19, 20.)

Jesus Christ came into the world to provide salvation for man. He offers himself to each individual of our race as a savior from sin and its deplorable consequences. This offer he makes by means of his word, written and spoken. The offer is not only made, but pressed with the urgency of Divine solicitation. The heart of the Infinite *yearns* towards his fallen creatures. The love of God culminates in the incarnation and passion of the Son. The echoes of Calvary—utterances of supreme pity—must be made audible to every object of Divine beneficence. Men are called, persuaded, besought to accept the proffered grace. Yet is the Divine supremacy duly guarded. Salvation must be conferred in a way that will secure the integrity of the Divine government. In the reception of it, the beneficiary must submit to God's law. For all these reasons the provisions of the gospel must be made known, and its offers and terms published. Man is an intelligent creature, and, in becoming a Christian, he must act intelligently. Hence religion is a thing in which men are to be instructed. It has its text book, and its teachers. Preaching includes not only the proclamation of grace to the ungodly, but also instruction in all the demands, privileges, provisions and responsibilities of religion. The minister is a *teacher*.

But, you tell me, a man can not be a competent teacher of religion unless he is infallible. I reply, I know of no class of men, professing to be teachers of the Christian religion, who claim *personal infallibility*. The Roman priests make no such claim. If *they* claim to represent an infallible Church, *I* claim to represent an infallible Bible. If I may mistake the meaning of the Bible, *they* may misunderstand the Church. So long as they are not infallible *individually*, they have no advantage of others in this respect. To bear them out in their high claims, infallibility must be an endowment of each individual teacher. An infallibility distributed at large can be of no avail, according to their argument, unless there are infallible men to find it out, and apply it. For their argument against the Bible as a sufficient rule of faith is, that though it be infallible, yet men, being fallible, may fail to understand it. So that the judgment of fallible men, in interpreting an infallible standard, may reach a false result. Now, suppose the Church infallible, with teachers who are fallible, which is the Roman theory. What is the result? Even by this theory, the teaching *comes to the people through a fallible channel*. There is no help for it, unless every teacher claim infallibility for himself, which the priests *do not, and dare not, do*.

Now, collect these fallible teachers into a general council. What have you gained? Can a few hundred *fallibles* make an infallible? Preposterous! And if it did, yet its decrees must be conveyed to the people by men liable to error. From this there is no escape. What advantage, then has the priest over the preacher? None, absolutely none. Indeed, the argument is against him; for, in addition to the Bible, he has the decrees and canons of some eighteen general councils to interpret to the people, and it will be a wonder, indeed, if he makes no blunder in going over the whole. The Protestant has only the Bible to interpret.



The plain, unvarnished truth is this: Christianity is revealed in the Bible, and no where else. That is the text-book of religion—Christian ministers are the teachers. There you have an inspired text-book with an uninspired teacher. What now? Obviously, he is to teach the inspired text. He does not require inspiration himself, because he has an inspired book which contains the whole matter. That he may know its teaching, and be able to instruct others, he is to “give himself to reading.” (1 Tim. iv. 13.) By the Scriptures “the man of God” (that is, the minister,) is “*thoroughly furnished* unto all good works.” (2 Tim. iii. 15, 16, 17.) “*Study* to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.” (2 Tim. ii. 15.) Thus did Paul direct a minister, whom he regarded as his “son in the gospel,” to the Bible as the source of his complete furnishing for the work to which he had been called, and exhort him to *study*, that he might be able to divide the word of truth aright, and thus show himself approved unto God. God’s ministers are to study the Bible, and teach its truths to others. But, you ask, if the Bible is the standard, why not simply give it to the people? Why have *teachers*? Answer, why do you have both teachers and text-books in your schools? Why not simply put the text-book into the hands of the student, and leave him with it? For two reasons: first, many students would be indolent; and, secondly, the assistance of a teacher greatly facilitates their understanding of the text. The same applies to the case of the religious teacher. The business of the teacher is to devote himself to the science which he teaches, and make himself master of it. Thus he can remove the difficulties and aid the efforts of the student. But you do not direct the student, after his mind has become mature, and he has enjoyed large advantages of study and investigation, to enslave his mind to his teacher, and receive



*everything* he may say. He is not so completely in leading strings that he must not think on his own account at all. So in religion, precisely. The minister "gives himself to reading," in the science of salvation. He enjoys opportunities and facilities which others do not. It is his business to know the scriptures. He is to prepare himself to aid the understanding of his hearers. But they have their appeal to the text-book, just as the student has. Then it lies open, to check the teacher and protect the taught.

A terrible retribution awaits the man who, assuming to be a teacher of religion, embraces fatal error, and leads others astray. The blind leaders of the blind have more than themselves to answer for. Augmented condemnation, in the ratio of the mischief they have done, must be "the portion of their cup." But what is to become of those ignorant sincere persons, who are misled by false guides? God will know how to judge them. The Roman theory, however, does not relieve the case, for if there are false teachers in spite of the Bible, so there are, also, in spite of the Church. It makes matters no better for the dupes that there is a Church in existence which claims to be infallible.

One of the most striking characteristics of the Bible is, that the substance of saving doctrine is contained in a few plain dogmas clearly put in the Scriptures. These few dogmas are, however, a fruitful source of truth, all of which is full of interest and profit. You will see from this how a man may be a Christian and know but little, and yet how important it is for every one to know as much as possible. And while the Bible is the safeguard of the faith, the standard by which even the unlearned may assure themselves of the truth, it is, also, the inexhaustible fountain of knowledge in a wider range than is necessary merely for salvation. Almost any one who can read, can learn enough in that book for his salvation. And yet, even

when that is done, it is an inestimable privilege to the private Christian to enjoy the benefit of instruction from one whose business it is to know and teach the Word of God. As for those who can not read at all, they must get their knowledge of Christianity from the preacher, or from the general Christian belief around them, or from intelligent Christian friends. In most cases, all these modes of information perform the work of instruction.

It is further the business of the pastor to assist the people of his charge in detecting such errors as they may be exposed to, from any source; to expose the sophistries of skillful heresy, and to keep prominently before their flock the elementary doctrines of the Christian faith.

You see how essential a part of the agencies of the gospel *preachers* are. First, as ambassadors of God, to treat with his enemies on the subject of their salvation. The preacher's instructions are in writing. They are full and explicit. He knows precisely the terms on which, in the name of his Sovereign, he may propose to them a treaty of peace. At the same time he has every motive to be active and urgent in securing their submission. He has an interest in them. They are his fellows. The sympathy of common nature whets his solicitude. The danger of a brother on "the borders of the pit," spurs him to haste. Stronger than the interest of a common nature is the love of Christ, kindled within him by the Holy Spirit. He is in sympathy with the sufferings of the Son of God. In addition to all that, he has the personal incentive of a large reward. They that turn many to righteousness, shall shine as the stars in the firmament, forever and ever. God knew the effect of the living human voice on the heart. There is not another such interpreter of emotions in the world. Each emotion has its peculiar *tone*. Nothing else embodies it so. Our Redeemer, in his living ministers, uses this wondrous instrument to win his foes. In the



heart of his faithful servants he reproduces the solicitude of redeeming pity, and their *voices* convey what no written solicitation could. Such is the diplomacy of heaven amongst us rebels of a revolted province in the empire of God. Secondly, preachers are teachers of the ignorant. They contribute to the confirmation of faith and the enlargement of knowledge. Thirdly, they watch against the introduction of error. And, if Paul was an inspired writer, they are *thoroughly* furnished to all this *by the Scriptures*.

2. Ministers of the gospel are not only preachers, but the government of the Church devolves largely upon them. It is evident, from the Scriptures, that, in some cases, the voice of the whole Church is to be regarded ; but it is clear that Church interests are, to a very large extent, under the control of ministers. "Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God." "Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves : for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief." (Heb. xiii. 7, 17.) "Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine." (1 Tim. v. 17.) "And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which labor among you, and are over you in the Lord and admonish you ; and to esteem them very highly in love, for their work's sake." (1 Thes. v. 12, 13.) From these passages it is clear that those who labor in word and doctrine, who speak to the people the word of God, are rulers. It is, also, clear that they are not above the people so far as to be independent lords over God's heritage. The people are to distinguish those who *rule well* with double honor. If a certain degree of respect is due them on account of their office, much more is to be awarded to those who fill the office well.

The ecclesiastical system of the New Testament is



extremely simple. There is no hierarchy, no system of principalities and overgrown dignities. No man can make out from the New Testament more than two orders in the ministry—bishops and deacons. That bishops and elders are presbyters, are one in office, or that these terms were used for the same order, is clear from Acts xx. 17, 28. Those who are called elders in the former of these places, are denominated overseers in the latter; and the word here translated *overseer* is the same that is elsewhere translated *bishop*. (See also Titus i. 5-7.) In this place the apostle enumerates the qualifications of an *elder*. He “must be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of riot or unruly. *For a BISHOP* must be blameless as the steward of God.” An *elder* must be so and so, *because* these qualifications are requisite for a *bishop*. *One* office only is expressed by these two words. Nothing can be clearer. Paul deputized Timothy to settle and arrange the affairs of the Church at Ephesus, and gave him special instructions that he might know how he ought to behave himself in the house of God. The design evidently was that the administration of the Church there might be established on a firm basis, for coming time. To this end it was a matter of first consequence that the ministry should be constituted on the true model. In doing this, he provides for *bishops* and *deacons*, and *none other*. (See 1 Tim. iii.; throughout.) When the same apostle wrote to the Church at Philippi, it had been in existence for several years, and was in a very flourishing condition. Indeed, he commends no other Church so highly as he does this one. Its polity had doubtless been established, and its ministry provided, upon the true New Testament model. In his salutation of the Church he addresses its ministers particularly, and that by their proper official designation—*bishops* and *deacons*.

Now, take into consideration the fact shown in the pas-

sages that I have given, that the terms bishop and elder are two words for the same order, and the fact that bishops and deacons are, at least in two places, formally named as comprising the whole ministry, and the conclusion is irresistible that these two are the only orders known to the Church under the new dispensation. What becomes of the *seven orders* of Romanism? Like the *seven sacraments* of the same Church, just *five* of them have been invented and patented at Rome. In fact, the Romanists are equal to the Yankees for invention—only in a different line. In the ecclesiastical schedule alone we have priests, archdeacons, archbishops, cardinals, and I know not what all, in an ascending series of power and dignity, culminating in the Pope. In what contrast does it appear with the simple, paternal administration of the primitive Church! And these illegitimate dignities have opened the door to untold abuses. Once on the highway of ambitious ascent, a man knows not where to stop. No sentiment is more commanding or unscrupulous than the lust of power, and that lust is always bred in the temptation of dignities and lordly prerogatives. Accordingly, history groans with the record of facts illustrating the grasping propensities of aspiring ecclesiastics. The area of authority has, in innumerable cases, been extended over the secular field. Wherever she could, Rome has had a finger in civil legislation. The temporal monarchy of the Pope is a standing witness against her in this respect.

3. The ministers of Christ are divinely designated for the work. “How shall they preach except they be sent?” Necessity is laid upon a man to preach the gospel. A divine impulsion presses him until he exclaims, “Woe is me if I preach not the gospel!” A conviction of duty, divinely produced, does not involve inspiration. This conviction may fasten upon a man so pertinaciously as to allow him no rest until he yield to the divine demand upon



him. Any fanatical mistake as to the source of the conviction which a man of ardent temperament may claim, is duly guarded against by the judgment of the Church as to his character and qualifications. The qualifications by which the Church is to judge those who look to the ministerial work, are largely given in 1 Tim. iii. 2, 9; 2 Tim. ii. 23, 26; and Titus i. 5, 9. Piety, devotion to God, propriety of deportment, chastity, good government of his own children, with capacity and disposition to teach, comprise the chief requisites of a minister of Christ. Thus divinely chosen, and received by the Church, he is to give himself wholly to that one thing. He is the Lord's by special vocation, and, although not cut off from social ties, he is to be relieved of secular cares. "They that preach the gospel shall live of the gospel." He cares for the souls of his flock; they provide for his body. He cares for them in spiritual things, and they for him in temporal things.

The chief points of contrast between the ministers of the Pope's Church and those of Christ's, as they occur to me, are these:

1. The former are *priests*; the latter are *preachers of the gospel*.
2. The former assume to forgive sins by a personal judicial act; the latter *preach* remission of sins in the name of Christ.
3. Ministers of Christ are required to be "blameless," while priests of Rome, as expressly provided by the Council of Trent, are allowed to officiate in *mortal sin*.
4. Christian ministers are, or may be, husbands, living chastely with one wife; but priests are invariably required to be celibates. Concubinage is, in some places, tolerated, as in Mexico. But they are nowhere allowed to be married men. In all this the two systems are at antipodes.
5. The Romish priesthood is a stupendous hierarchy,



while the Christian ministry is, in respect to government, a pastoral institution.

6. The Romish claim of apostolic powers is in striking contrast with the unpretending modesty of New Testament pastors and teachers. The one is characterized by pretentious assumptions, the other by unpretending labors.

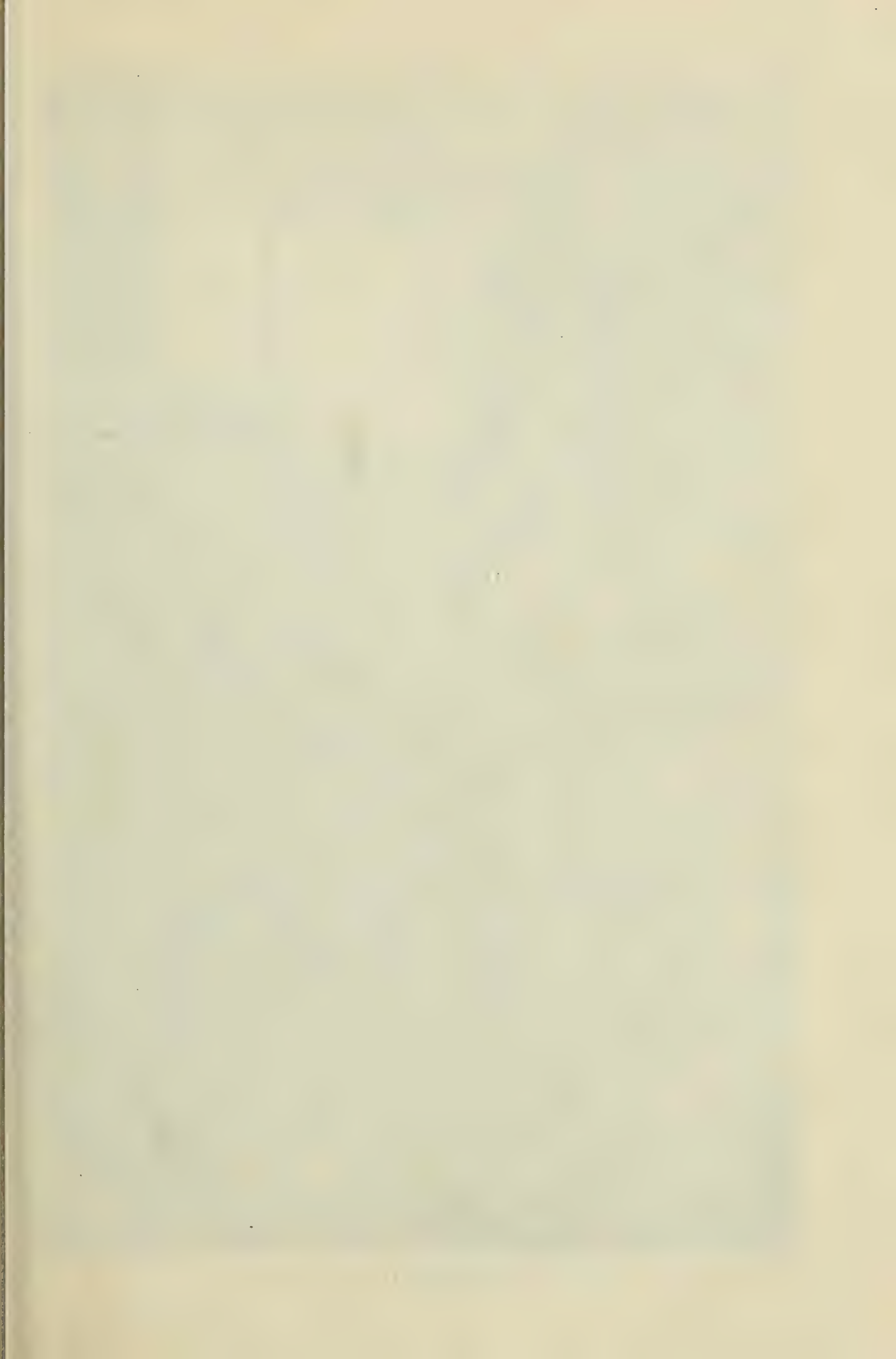
7. The one invests a great mass of silly traditions with the character of revelation; the other confines itself in its teaching to the word of God.

8. The one assumes the God-like prerogative of prying into the secrets of all hearts in the confessional; the other sends the penitent with the secret burden of his sins to God.

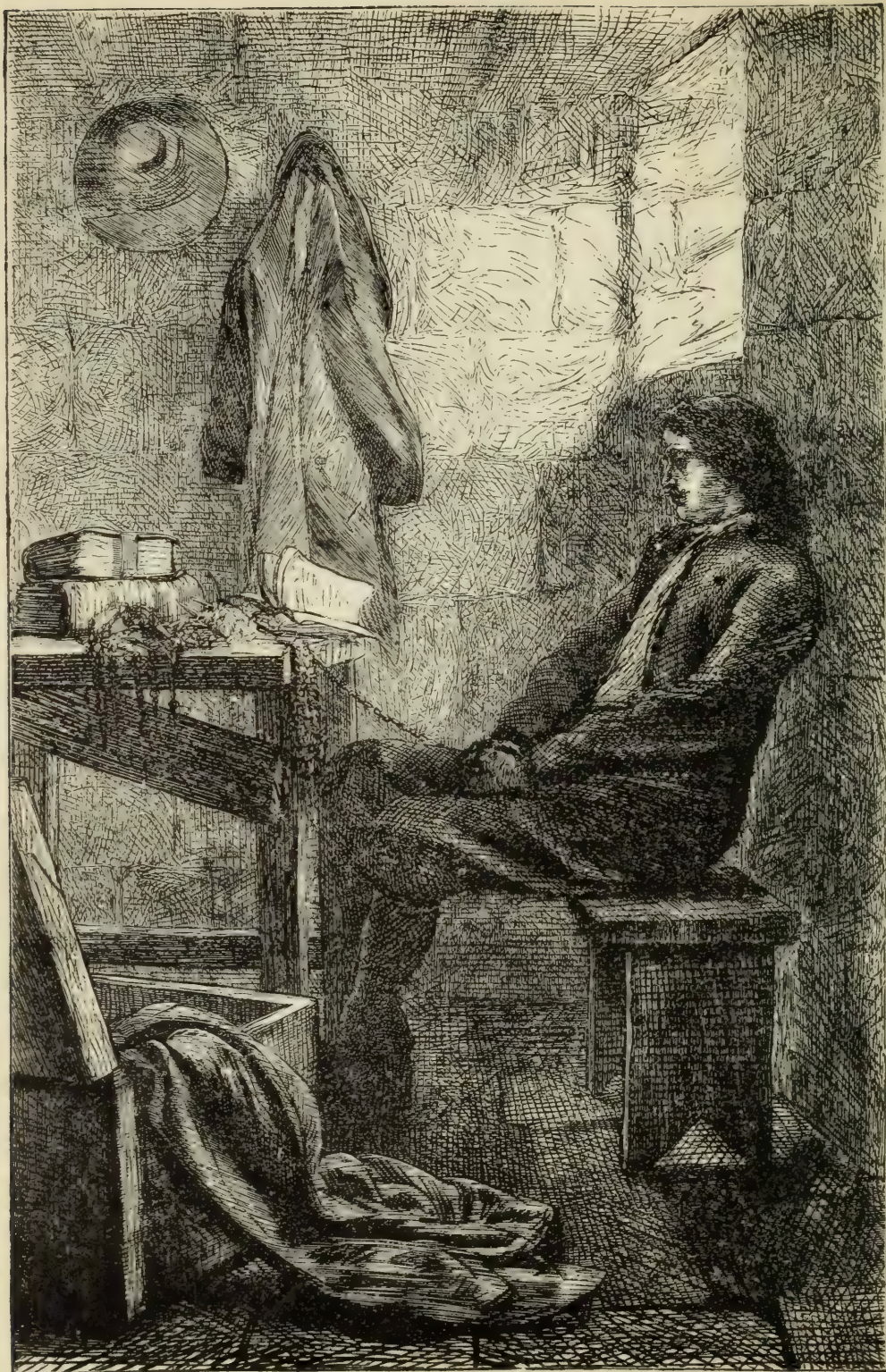
These contrasts might be multiplied, but let this suffice.

These astounding contrasts convey a most solemn warning to the Church. Her only safety is in the Scriptures of God. If her uninspired teachers are allowed to break loose from them, and make their own dogmas, security is gone. The wild creations of unfettered fancy, and the proud ambitions of aspiring zealots, will be wrought into the Christian creed, and wholly corrupt it. The Church will fall from its original righteousness. Superstition will supplant faith. And the very prerogatives of the Almighty will be assumed with unhesitating temerity by poor, frail, sinful man.

But the gates of hell shall not prevail. The great waters may come in like a flood for a time, but, in the midst of their roaring, God will still be saying to his people, "Fear not, little flock, it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom." The whole earth shall ultimately rally to the Bible, and then righteousness shall cover it as the waves of the sea.







Bunyan in Bedford Gaol. Page 594.



UNIVERSITY OF

JOHN A. WILSON

# CATHOLICISM

*Practical and Theoretical*

With numerous illustrations and maps. 12mo. 1897.

16

The author of this work is a member of the Catholic Church, and his object in writing it is to give a clear and accurate account of the principles and practice of Catholicism, as they are now understood and followed by the faithful of that Church. He has endeavored to do this in a simple and unassuming manner, and to give such information as may be necessary to enable the reader to understand the true nature of Catholicism, and to see that it is not, as is often supposed, a system of superstition and ignorance, but a religion of reason and truth, which is founded on the teachings of Jesus Christ, and which is adapted to the needs of the human mind and heart.

JOHN A. WILSON, Author.

This Government will pass through two wars, one over Slavery and the other with the Catholics.      HENRY CLAY.

When a religion is good, I conceive that it will support itself; and when it cannot support itself and God does not take care to support it, so its professors are obliged to call for help from Civil power, it is a sign I apprehend, of its being a bad one.

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN.

## CHAPTER X.

REV. JOHN A. WILSON

ON

CATHOLICISM.

---

“PURGATORY, PENANCE AND PERSECUTION.”

---

“For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.”  
—[1 Cor. iii. 11.]

A foundation is everything to a building. You and I would not accept a free house if it was defective in this important particular. A solid foundation is no less necessary for a true faith and a true life. When only building a bridge across our river, we dug down a hundred feet, through soil and sand and surface rock, till we came to a solid base. How much more should men immortal, building for eternity, dig down until they come to the granite of truth, the Rock of Ages, and then, upon the corner-stone which God has laid, build up a structure which will outlast the ages, and stand unmoved after “the wreck of matter and the crash of worlds.” Now the charge which I brought against the Romish Church in my last lecture was that she laid a false foundation for the faith of her people. Tradition is her foundation; and, then by a marvelous inconsistency, she makes herself the foundation of tradition.

The Council of Trent, which met in 1545, added the Apocrypha to the canon of scripture, and made tradition of



equal authority with the word of God. You will wonder what induced that Council, to take such a step, in the face of all testimony. Let us hear the explanation given by "the Church."

In a lecture by the Bishop of Alton, reported in a morning paper, this expression occurs: "No heresy can stand before tradition." The secret is out; the mystery is solved! The Council of Trent was fighting heresy; it was a desperate battle—a struggle for life. She was unarmed; for the scriptures of truth, this arsenal of God, furnished no weapon for "the old Church" in that hour of her direst need; so she was forced to seek her safety from a human source. History repeats itself. The once kingly Saul fled for help to the witch of Endor.

"No heresy can stand before tradition." How could it? Let me make the laws, and I can acquit myself of all the crimes in the criminal calendar. Now Rome makes her traditions, as she makes her relics; just as they are needed. That she makes her relics in this way, let me give you one out of innumerable authorities.

I choose a converted Jesuit, Dr. DeSanctis. In his work, "Rome, Christian and Papal" (page 134), I read as follows:

"He (the keeper of these holy relics) told us that, as it regarded ordinary relics, they possessed a great quantity of them, for new saints were discovered every day in the catacombs; but as regards the more remarkable relics, there were but a few.

"I inquired how the Pope managed to decide upon a skeleton found in the catacombs as being that of a saint.

"'The Pope,' he replied, 'cares little about such things; he has confided this business to the Vicar-Cardinal, who, in turn, leaves it to Father Marchi, a Jesuit, who visits the bodies that are disinterred, and sends them here when he thinks they belong to saints. Here we baptize them, and distribute them to the faithful.'

“‘You baptize them!’ said I, interrupting him in my astonishment; ‘you baptize dead bodies!’

“The Canon explained that to baptize meant to give them a name. ‘We do not know what these corpses are. Well, the custodian needs relics of Saint Patrick, for instance, so this body is named Saint Patrick.’”

This is the testimony of an unimpeachable witness, as to the mode of making relics.

Now, I submit that it is not unfair to infer that traditions are made and “baptized” in the same way; especially since the fundamental maxim of the Jesuits is, “All means are good if they conduct to the end in view.” But I will not rest my argument on a mere inference, however conclusive.

I have shown you, from her own teachings, that Rome’s foundation is tradition, together with the unanimous consent of the fathers; and she boldly affirms that these authorities unite in supporting her various dogmas.

Now, by a few quotations from the fathers, I will knock away that foundation:

“Do you seek the faith, O Emperor? Hear it, then, not from new writings, but from the books of God.”—(Hilary to Constantius Augustus, p. 244.)

“It is a falling from the faith, and a crime of the greatest pride, to desire to take away from the scriptures, or to introduce anything that is not written. For Christ says that his sheep hear his voice, and not the voice of another.”—(Basil in Discourse on Faith.)

“Not even the least of the divine and holy mysteries of the faith ought to be handed down without the divine scriptures.”—(Cyril, of Jerusalem, on Canon of Scripture.)

That is all good Protestant doctrine. But hear further: “There is in the New Testament a letter which killeth him who does not understand spiritually the things which are said. For if you take this according to the letter, ‘Except



you eat my flesh and drink of my blood,' this letter killeth." —Origen, on the 10th chapter of Leviticus.

"He appointed them to use bread as a symbol of his own body." Eusebius' Evangelical Demonstrations.

"It seemed a hard saying to them when he said, 'Except any man eat my flesh, he shall not have eternal life.' They received it foolishly, and they meditated upon it carnally, and thought that the Lord was about to cut off certain little pieces from his body, and to give them to them; and they said, This is a hard saying. They were hard, and not the saying. For if they had not been hard, but meek, they would have said within themselves, He does not say this for nothing, there is some hidden sacrament in it." —Augustine upon the 98 Psalm.

I might detain you much of the night, while I read you similar quotations of standard Protestant doctrine from the "Holy Fathers."

Still I only refer to these fathers to show you the fallacy of Rome's pretensions, and how likely she is to get a "unanimous" indorsement from the fathers for her lying dogmas. I do not hold these fathers up as a rule of faith. After showing, as I have done, that they flatly contradict the teachings of Popery, I am willing to make a present of these fathers to my Catholic friends, and found my faith, and build my hope, upon the word of God. The Bible, and the Bible alone, is the religion of Protestants. I propose to oppose Popery, and heresy, and every other sin, only in the name, and with the sword of the Lord God of Hosts; and with Him upon my side I am sure of a majority.

But now I must come to the particular topics announced for this evening.

I propose to show you to-night that the Church of Rome believes in Purgatory; that she believes in Penance; and that she believes in Persecution.

I will follow the rule I have observed in my previous



lecture, and give you her own infallible utterances. First, then, she believes in purgatory.

Hear the Council of Trent, Session xxv., A. D. 1563: "As the Catholic Church, instructed by the Holy Spirit, from the sacred writings and the ancient traditions of the fathers, hath taught in its sacred councils, and lastly, in this ecumenical synod, that there is a purgatory, and that the souls there confined are relieved by the suffrages of the faithful, but more especially by the acceptable sacrifice of the altar; the holy synod instructs the Bishops that they should pay attention that the sound doctrine concerning purgatory, as delivered by the holy fathers and the sacred councils, be, by the faithful in Christ, believed, held, taught, and everywhere diligently preached. But that among uninformed people, the more difficult and subtle questions, which tend not to edification, and from which there is in general no increase of piety, be excluded from all popular addresses; also, that they do not allow doubtful matters, or such as labor under the appearance of falsity, to be talked of and discussed. But that they prohibit those things which have reference only to a certain curiosity or superstition, or which savor of filthy lucre, as scandals and causes of some offense to the faithful. But let the Bishops take care that the suffrages of the faithful who are alive, namely, the sacrifices of the mass, orations, acts of charity, and other pious deeds, which it has been customary for the faithful to perform on behalf of the other faithful who are dead, should be piously and devoutly performed according to the institutions of the Church; and that those (religious services) which may be owing on the behalf of such, to the legacies of testators, or on any other account, be, by the priests, ministers of the Church, and others whose duty it is to perform those matters, not slightly, but diligently and accurately discharged."

Next hear the "Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine:"

“What do you mean by purgatory?” “A middle state of souls who depart this life in God’s grace, yet not without some lesser stains of guilt or punishment which retard them from entering heaven. But as to the particular place where these souls suffer, or the quality of the torments which they suffer, the Church has decided nothing.”

“What sort of Christians, then, go to purgatory?”

“First, such as die guilty of lesser sins, which we commonly call venial; as many Christians do, who, either by sudden death or otherwise, are taken out of this life before they have repented of their ordinary failings. Secondly, such as have been formerly guilty of greater sins, and have not made full satisfaction for them to divine justice.”

“Why do you say that those who die guilty of lesser sins go to purgatory?” “Because such as depart this life before they have repented of these venial frailties and imperfections can not be supposed to be condemned to the eternal torments of hell, since the sins of which they are guilty are but small.”

Now, I have allowed “the holy Catholic Church” to speak for herself. If she had not forbidden it, I would so like to ask just a few questions here.

This would be my first: How do you know the soul departing which has just enough of sin left to send it to purgatory? Again: How do you know when “the faithful” have paid enough of “suffrages” to get the poor soul out? But these are “doubtful matters;” they have “the appearance of falsity,” and they “savor of filthy lucre,” so the Council of Trent wisely forbids talking of or discussing them.

But it will not be a mortal sin, I trust, if I tell you just a little about this doctrine which has “the appearance of falsity.” The miracle here, you will perhaps notice, is just the reverse of that in transubstantiation. There the



appearance is wanting, but the fact is present; here the appearance is present, but the fact is wanting. Still, these opposites are nothing to "the faithful," when they get used to them. The Church of Rome teaches that there are five places of abode on the other side of "the great river." First, there is heaven, to which a few of "the faithful" go at once after death. It must be very few, indeed, who have a through ticket, for I see that it is not certain that his divinity, Pope Pius IX., made the connection, since the prayers of the faithful are solicited in his behalf! The second place is hell, that is where heretics go! Then there is limbus patrum, where the antediluvians went till Christ preached to them and got them out. Next we have limbus infantum, to which unbaptized infants are consigned. The two latter are only dungeons, but no punishment. Finally, we have purgatory, to which the principal part of the Catholic Church goes. On the authority of Rev. Mr. Gavin, formerly a Catholic priest in Spain, I may add that this last compartment has eight divisions to which "the faithful" are assigned, according to the amount of money they possess. So you will perceive the papist, as well as the Protestant, can say, "In my Father's house there are many mansions."

The Church has not yet, unfortunately, decided where purgatory is located. It may not be uninteresting, however, to give you some of their speculations, for the subject has received no little attention. Some think it is in hell; others, that it is one of the suburbs of hell. Some suppose it is located in the air, between earth and sky; while others, among whom is at least one infallible Pope, say that the place in which a man sinned is the place in which he is compelled to work out these post-mortem taxes. If this theory be true, then the better class of our defunct "city fathers" are "paddling their own canoes" up and down the mire of our streets.\*

---

\* St. Louis having the vilest streets of any considerable city in the world.



Another opinion, maintained by that very infallible Pope, Gregory the Great, was that purgatory must be located in the heart of the earth, and that the volcanoes are its chimneys. I could refer to many other speculations, but this is enough. Now, let me call to my aid that valuable hand-book, "The Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine." It says, we must have the unanimous consent of the fathers in order to form an opinion. But the fathers are not agreed as to the location of purgatory; therefore, we can not believe that purgatory is anywhere!

I must tell you now of the nature of the sufferings which "the faithful" endure in this place, which is no place.

On this point, also, the Church "has decided nothing." She has spoken a great deal, however. Her general teaching is that it is a place of punishment by fire.

I fail to understand why the Church of Rome "has decided nothing" concerning the quality of purgatorial punishment, since some of "the faithful" have seen and described it. I will just refer to one account given by Matthew Paris, the distinguished Benedictine.

The witness, fresh from the flames, to whom he refers is one Enus, who had been a warrior under Stephen, King of England. "Resolving to make reparation in St. Patrick's purgatory for the enormity of his life, Enus visited Ireland. The Son of God, if old chronicles may be credited, appeared to the saint when he preached the gospel to the bestial Irish, and instructed the missionary to construct a purgatory at Lough Derg, and promised the plenary remission of sin to all who should remain a day and a night in this laboratory of atonement. Fortified by the holy communion, and sprinkled with holy water, the fearless soldier entered the gloomy cave. The groans of the sufferers soon began to stun his ears. Numberless men and women lying naked on the earth, and transfixed with red-hot nails, bit the dust with pain. Devils lashed some with

dreadful whips. Fiery dragons gnawed some with ignited teeth. Some were roasted on spits, fried in pans, or broiled in furnaces. A sulphurous well, emitting flame and stench, threw up men, like sparkling scintillations, into the air, and again received them falling into its burning mouth. A bridge, studded with sharp nails and thorns with their points turned upwards had to be crossed. The souls walked bare-footed on this rough road, and endeavoring to ease their feet, leaned on their hands, and afterwards rolled, with the whole body, on the perforating spikes, till, pierced and bloody, they worked their painful, tedious way over the thorny path. Passing this defile was often the work of many years. But this last difficulty being surmounted, the spirits, forgetful of their pain, escaped to heaven, called the mount of joy." I have thought it meet to give you this much from the purgatorial literature; but let us now come to the proof. The evidence is drawn from every quarter. But, as a Protestant, I only recognize Scripture proof in such matters; I will, therefore, confine myself to the texts they quote from the Bible.

First, we have Matt. xii. 32: "Whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come."

That is the last passage of Scripture you would have expected in proof of purgatory. But hear Rome reason:

After quoting this verse, "The Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine" says, "Which last words plainly imply that some sins, which are not forgiven in this world, may be forgiven in the world to come; otherwise, why should our Savior make any mention of forgiveness in the world to come?" I reply: He makes no mention of forgiveness in the future life, but says, most forcibly, there shall be none. Had Christ said that certain persons had no forgiveness in this life, Rome would have said with some shadow of plausibility that there might be forgiveness in the next world.



But from this clear, strong statement, what mind could have drawn the damnable doctrine of purgatory, unless moved by a spirit infernal to corrupt and subvert the truth of God? But the sword of God has two edges; so let me, with this very passage of their own selection, annihilate the doctrine of purgatory. Certain men, for certain offenses, have never forgiveness, neither in this life, nor in the life to come; "which words," says the Douay catechism, "would not be true, if some sins were not forgiven in the next world, and this implies a purgatory, for there only is remission of sin, and not in hell or heaven."

Now, out of thine own mouth I will condemn thee, thou teacher of lies. Purgatory, by your own showing, is not a place of forgiveness, but a place where payment is made by most intolerable torments—a place where the souls of those who have sinned "just a little" are thrown out of a boiling river into an icy stream; a place where souls are shot up out of a boiling well, only to drop down into it again; a place where a soul will roll for years to get over a bridge thickly set with pointed spikes. O Rome! Rome! if that is your conception of forgiveness, no wonder your conception and execution of torture have made the blood of the ages run cold! O Rome! Rome! if that is your sort of forgiveness, pardon me, but I will have none of it.

Here is another scripture proof—Matt. xii. 36: "Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment."

"Now, no one will think," says Bishop Challoner, in "The Catholic Christian Instructed," "that God will condemn a soul to hell for every idle word; therefore, there must be another place of punishment for those who are guilty of these little transgressions."

I have read in scripture of those "who changed the truth of God into a lie," but I defy anyone to produce a more bare-faced specimen of such perversion than this of



Dr. Challoner in "The Catholic Christian Instructed." His little work should be called, "The Catholic Christian Deceived, Deluded and Destroyed.'

One other quotation from this last-named authority: "God forbid that every little spot or stain should condemn the soul to the everlasting torments of hell. Therefore there must be a middle place for such souls as die under these lesser stains."

Now, when "the holy Catholic Church" admits to me that her God is a little God, I will admit the possibility of a little sin against Him; but my God is a great and holy Being, any violation of whose law is a great sin. He says (Rom. vi. 23), "the wages of sin is death." He does not say, "the wages of a great sin is death." Venial sins, like purgatory, are never named in the Bible. God says (Gal. iii. 10): "Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them." He says again (Jas. ii. 10): "Whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all." These, and many other texts of scripture, effectually dispose of "little sins."

I will notice just one other passage by which Popery seeks to prove purgatory from the Bible. (1 Cor. iii. 13.) "Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is."

Now, I might rule this witness out of Court by the authority of "The Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine," which demands a unanimous consent of the Fathers before a text of scripture can mean anything. I waive this right, however, but will claim the privilege of cross-examining the witness. Now, witness, what did you say the fire does? "Tries every man's work." Ah, yes. But Rome says her fire of purgatory purifies, which is quite a different thing. Will the jury please make a note of that?

Again, witness, what did you say the fire tries? "Every man's work." But the Church of Rome says it tries the man himself. Still further, witness, are all men's works tried? "Yes, the fire shall try every man's work." But Popery says that all men will not be tried, since some go straight to heaven.

Witness, just one other question: Are the works of any of these men destroyed entirely? "They are. If you read verse 15, you will learn that if any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss." Now, I charge you, gentlemen of the jury, to remember that the holy Catholic Church positively denies that any souls will be destroyed in purgatory; but after being pierced, and roasted, and fried, and frozen, and jerked up out of a boiling well, and rolled for years over a spiked bridge, they shall, "in the sweet by and by," reach "the green fields of Eden," otherwise known as "the mount of joy!"

What a fatality seems to have attended the selection of Scripture proofs of purgatory. One of two things is quite evident; either the authorities of the Catholic Church are profoundly ignorant of the Scriptures, or else the Scriptures are profoundly ignorant of purgatory.

But the Bible is not Rome's strongest hold, so let us hear her on tradition. You know she boasts of antiquity. It is the bulwark behind which she seeks to defend even her most recent inventions. Old age is, indeed, a glory, if found in the way of righteousness; which is quite another thing from the ways of Rome. But any honor which attaches to mere antiquity, I freely award to this fable of purgatory. It is older by far than the New Testament, although there are no traces of it in the Old Testament. It is found, however, in the works of heathen poets and philosophers.

These are the "holy fathers" to whom she must refer for proof of this "apostolical tradition." Indeed the great



Cardinal Bellarmine, in his treatise on purgatory, draws an argument from this very fact. 'What absurdity! What inconsistency! At one time throwing away reason altogether, at another time adopting the reason of a heathen. If this is the way Christianity is to be expounded, how could it help but lose its simplicity? Plato taught that there were three places of future existence. The heathens believed that those in the half-way house might be helped by the prayers and sacrifices of the living, as appears from the complaints of the ghosts of Elpenor in Homer, and Palinurus in Virgil, and the methods resorted to for their deliverance are not unlike those adopted by the Church of Rome. In view of this, if a humble heretic might make a suggestion, I would propose to the new Pontiff that he distinguish his accession to the Godhead by adding the *Ænead* and *Odyssey* to the canon of Scripture.

But while heathens had a purgatory in the olden time, it was not till the seventh century that it was grafted upon the Church. It came about in this way: When Emperors became Christians, Christianity became fashionable, and heathens, professing to be Christians, brought into the Church their heathenish notions, and purgatory among the rest. But the Book of Maccabees is cited in support of this graft from heathenism. Let me tell you a little about the Book of the Maccabees. The apocryphal books were never received by the Jews, nor written in their language, as the rest of the Old Testament was. Christ and his Apostles never quoted from them. Josephus does not name them in his catalogue. In A. D. 200 Origen leaves them out of the list of inspired books. Two hundred years later Jerome does the same; and last, but not least, the infallible Gregory the Great rejects the Maccabees at the end of the sixth century. But why reason on this question any further? Hear Archbishop Fisher declare "he could not readily find any one Scripture that would force one to confess a purgatory, and if there



be any such, it has hitherto escaped the most diligent inquiries." But in spite of all this, Cardinal Bellarmine tells us we must believe in purgatory, or we will go to a worse place. What an outrage on the sense and civilization of our century to see a swarm of long-robed, licentious, bloated priests teaching as the truth of God, and as things essential to our salvation, dogmas which Balaam's ass would have seen to be absurd. But now I must conclude my remarks on this topic; and I will do so by reminding you all, both Protestants and Catholics that though the purgatory of Rome is a fable of heathenism and a snare of the devil, yet there is a glorious purgatory to which you are all invited to-night. You will recognize at once that I speak of the "fountain opened to the house of David, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, for sin and for uncleanness." (Zech. xiii. 1.)

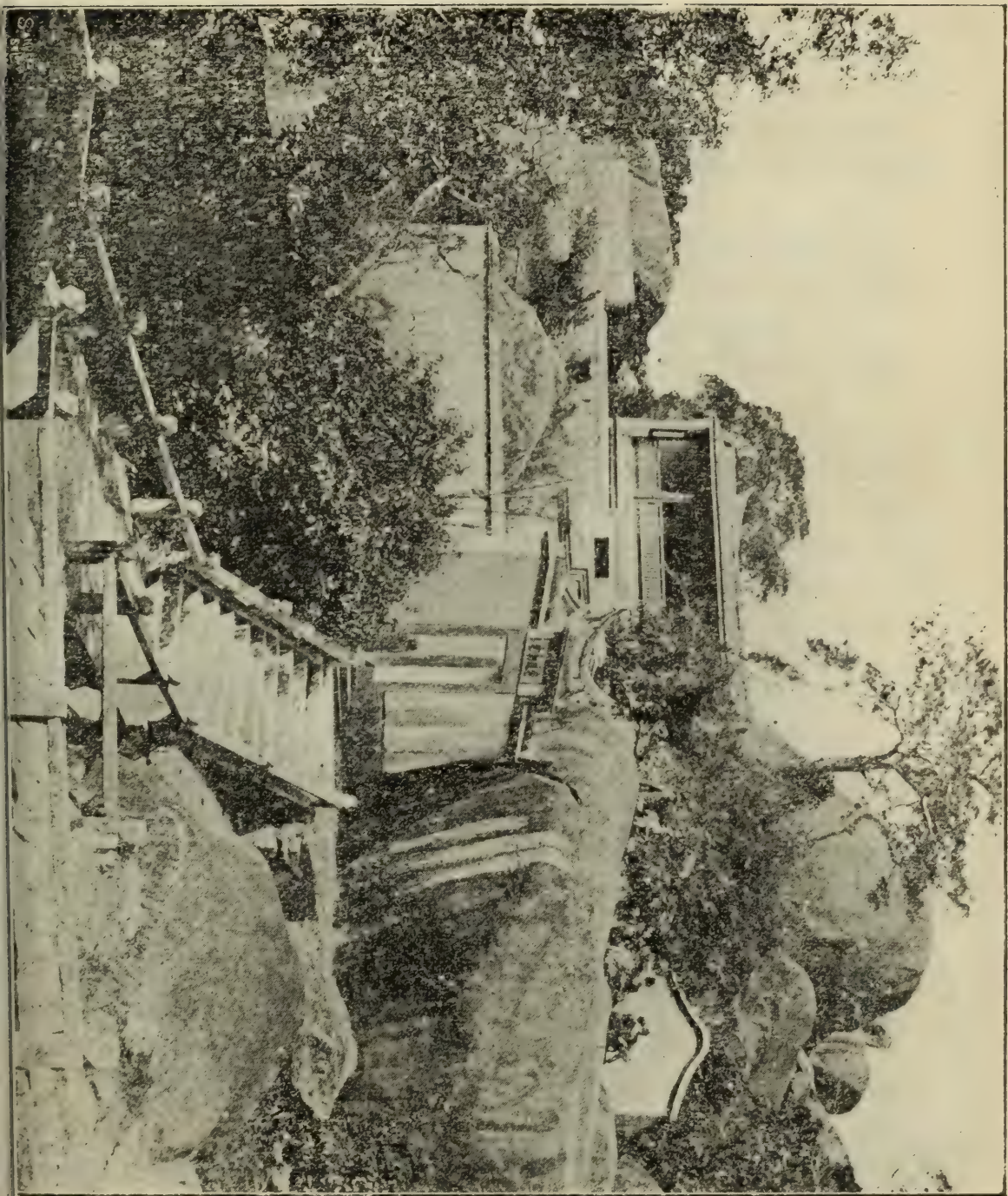
"Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world." John i. 29. "The blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanseth us from all sin." 1 John i. 7. Rome is guilty of the blasphemy of making Christ's blood incapable of cleansing from small or venial sins; but God says it cleanses from all sin. Believe God, though every man be a liar. Put your trust in Christ, for there is salvation in none other. Be washed by His blood and led by His spirit, and presently, as one by one we pass over the river and enter in triumph the heavenly home, we will join the happy friends who greet us, in singing, "These are they who have washed their robes and made them white," not in the fires of purgatory, but "in the blood of the Lamb." "Be then faithful unto death and I will give thee a crown of life." These are the words of God, "We know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens." "We are willing, therefore, to be absent from the body and to be present with the Lord."

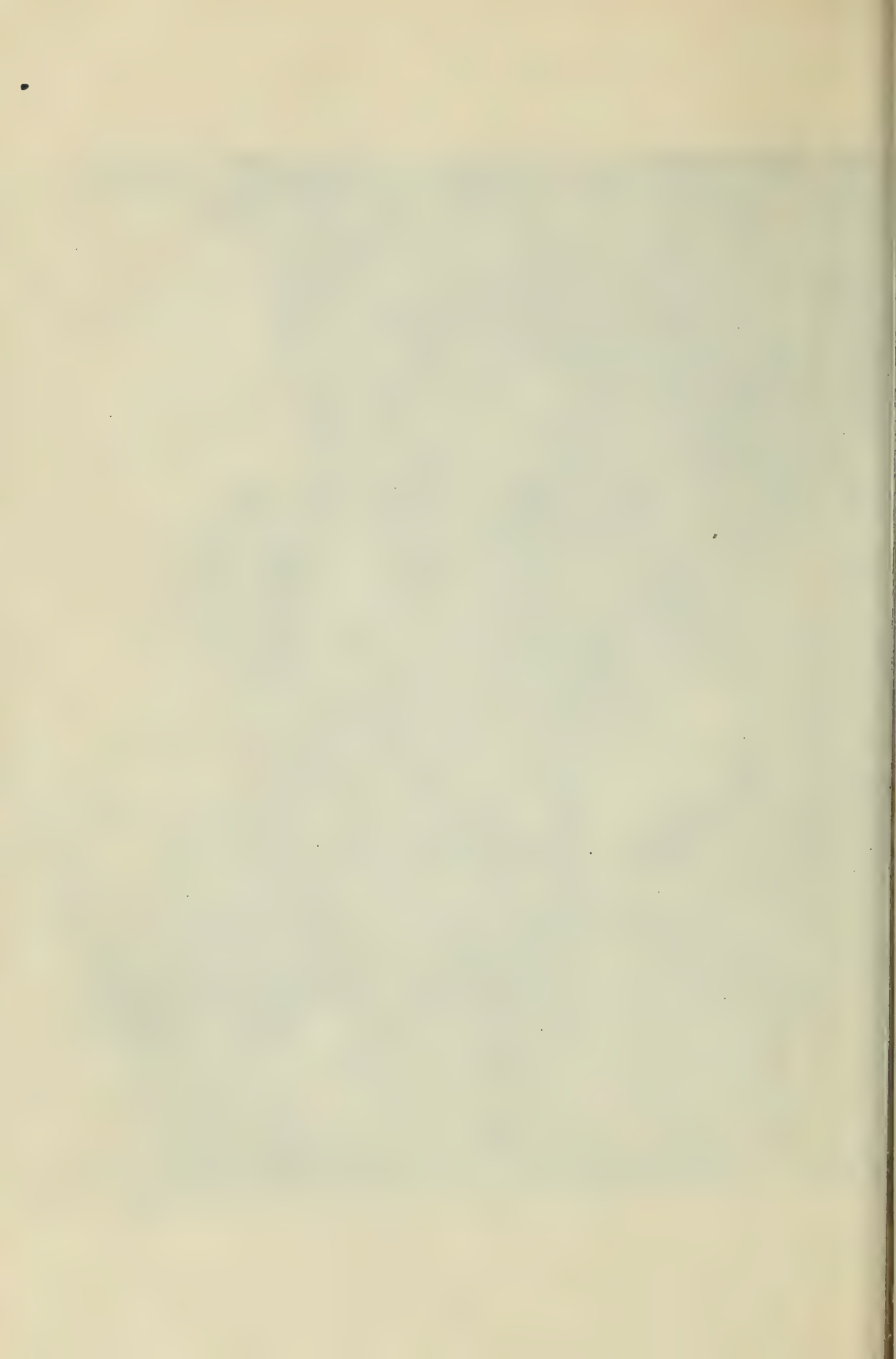
### **A ROMISH UNDERGROUND PRISON.**

The following photo-engravure is as true a representation of a Philippine prison as the unerring camera can produce. These prisons exist in the Philippine Islands and Puerto Rico, also in other countries that are solely under the control of the Roman Church. To be incarcerated in one of these prisons is equivalent to forever closing your eyes to the world, and never again feel the warm rays of the sun and hear the joyful sounds of Nature. These prisons are built in a hill side, on the top of which a residence of a Priest and the guards (of morals) are located, fitted up in luxurious style, while beneath human souls, for some refraction of an order of a Catholic Dignitary, groups in darkness away from the warm embrace of those dear to him. "How long! Oh, Lord how long!"











But now let me come to penance. Here are the decrees of the Council of Trent:

1. Whoever shall say that penance in the Catholic Church is not truly and properly a sacrament for the reconciliation of the faithful to God as often as they fall into sins after baptism, instituted by Christ, our Lord; let him be accursed!

2. Whoever, confounding the sacraments, shall say that baptism itself is the sacrament of penance, as if these two sacraments were not distinct, and that, therefore, penance is not rightly termed, a second plank after shipwreck; let him be accursed!

3. Whoever shall say that those words of our Lord and Savior: Receive the Holy Ghost; whose sins you shall forgive, they are forgiven them, and whose sins ye shall retain, they are retained; are not to be understood of the power of remitting and retaining sins in the sacrament of penance, as the Catholic Church has always understood, from the beginning, but shall falsely apply them against the institution of this sacrament, to the authority of preaching the gospel; let him be accursed!

9. Whoever shall say that the sacramental absolution of the priest is not a judicial act, but a mere ministry to pronounce and declare that sins are remitted to the person making confession, provided that he only believes that he is absolved, even though the priest should not absolve seriously, but in joke; or shall say that the confession of a penitent is not requisite, in order that the priest may absolve him; let him be accursed!

10. Whoever shall say that priests who are living in mortal sin do not possess the power of binding and loosing; or that the priests are not the only ministers of absolution, but that it was said to all and every one of Christ's faithful: whatsoever you shall bind upon earth shall be bound also in heaven; and whatsoever you shall



loose upon earth shall be loosed also in heaven ; and whose sins you shall forgive, they are forgiven, and whose sins you shall retain they are retained ; by virtue of which words any one may forgive sin ; public, sins by reproof only, if the offender shall acquiesce ; and private sins, by voluntary confession ; let him be accursed !

11. Whoever shall say that bishops have not the right of reserving cases to themselves, except such as relate to the external polity of the Church, and, therefore, that the reservation of cases does not hinder the priest from truly absolving from reserved cases ; let him be accursed !

12. Whoever shall say that the whole penalty, together with the guilt, is always remitted by God, and that the satisfaction of penitents is nothing else than the faith by which they apprehend that Christ has satisfied for them ; let him be accursed !

14. Whoever shall say that the satisfactions by which penitents redeem themselves from sin through Jesus Christ, are no part of the service of God, but traditions of men, obscuring the doctrine concerning grace, and the true worship of God, and the actual benefit of Christ's death ; let him be accursed !

We will now listen to Dr. Challoner in "The Catholic Christian Instructed." "What do you mean by the sacrament of penance?" "An institution of Christ, by which our sins are forgiven which we fall into after baptism." "In what does this institution consist?" "On the part of the penitent, it consists in these three things, viz: contrition, confession, and satisfaction."

Turning over a leaf, I find this statement: "By satisfaction we mean a faithful performance of the penance enjoined by the priests." Can it be that I have got out of the gospel of Christ into the gospel of the Koran? No, it is neither ; it is the gospel of Rome. I have been looking in my Bible for this sacrament of penance, and the nearest

approach I can find to it is the worshippers of Baal on Mount Carmel ; and the demoniac in the tombs, crying and cutting himself with stones. A little further on, Dr. Challoner asks "the Catholic Christians" this question : "But by what rule shall a person be able to form a judgment whether his sins are mortal or venial?" "All those sins are to be esteemed mortal which the word of God represents to us as hateful to God, against which He pronounces a woe, or of which it declares that such as do those things shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven."

What blasphemy ! to speak of God as only hating great or mortal sins ; when he tells us that "He is of purer eyes than to behold evil, and can not look on iniquity." Yet Rome tells us "little, venial sins" are not hateful to that holy being, in whose presence the angels veil their faces.

I am interested and amazed by this Bishop Challoner ; let us follow him a little further.

"What if the penitent should, through forgetfulness, pass over some mortal sin in confession ?"

That is an important question ; so mark closely the infallible answer of the only true Church, out of which there is no salvation. Here is the answer : "That omission, provided there was no considerable negligence which gave occasion to it, does not make the confession invalid." Now I beg you to remember that the Council of Trent declares confession to a priest to be absolutely essential to salvation ; but here out of their own Catechism I prove to you that confession is not necessary to salvation, but that forgetfulness is equally good. I submit that this addition should be made to the gospel of Rome : Blessed is the man who has a poor memory. This Beatitude is my own, but if the Pope will adopt it, I will present him with the copyright, accompanied by an "apostolical tradition" that it was delivered on the Mount.



Let us hear "The Catholic Christian Instructed" still further. "In what case is a confessor to defer or deny absolution?" "The rule of the Church is to defer absolution, excepting in a case of necessity, to those of whose disposition the confessor has just cause to doubt" So then it appears that repentance is not necessary in order to obtain absolution; for "in a case of necessity" the priest may absolve those "whose disposition he has just cause to doubt." Has it come to this, that the priests of Rome have more power than God, and can absolve sinners regardless of their disposition? Yes, so it appears; and I defy you Rome, from Pope to priest, to evade the conclusion; and I call upon you in the name of the honest, intelligent people of St. Louis to confess that you have been teaching lies in our public prints for the past months, when you affirmed that the priests did not claim to have the power to forgive sins. Here are the words of the confessor, taken from your own books: "I absolve thee from all thy sins, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." Now it is not egotism for us to claim as good a knowledge of our mother tongue as the average Catholic possesses; and if that language does not, in the strongest form, state that the priests forgive sins, then I am ignorant of the meaning of language. I must not, however, detain you longer on this topic, though it is so opposed to the gospel of Christ, and so destructive of all morality that it merits a most searching investigation and a most scathing exposure.

I will just state my three chief objections to this doctrine. First, it denies the full atonement of Christ. The Council of Trent calls it "a second plank after shipwreck." But the gospel of God knows no plank for the shipwrecked sinner, save the Lord Jesus Christ. That I do not misrepresent the Papal Church will appear from this decree of the Council of Trent: "Whosoever shall affirm that men are justified either solely by the imputation of the righteous-



ness of Christ ; or, also, that the grace by which we are justified is only the favor of God, let him be accursed. ”

The grand old sage, Thomas Carlyle, has styled Darwinism the Gospel of Dirt ; but this teaching of the Council of Trent can only be fitly characterized by calling it the Gospel of the Devil. The Bible says (Eph. ii. 8), “ By grace are ye saved, through faith, and that not of yourselves ; it is the gift of God, not of works, lest any man should boast. ”

Again (Titus, iii 5), “ Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us. ” My second objection to this pretended sacrament is that it makes slaves of the people. It is in the confessional that the priesthood get the consciences of the people into their hands. No man or woman comes out of the confessional as free as they went into it.

The toils of Rome are wrapped around them, until they are completely beneath the feet of the priests. And right well do these men know how to use their power ; hence you will find that in every thoroughly Catholic country the people are impoverished, and the Church aggrandized ; hence, our daily papers inform us, the late Pope was worth more millions than any of our merchant princes, and he the representative of that meek and lowly one who had no place to lay His head ! Verily, in the expressive language of the Council of Trent, these things “ savor of filthy lucre. ”

My third objection to this doctrine is, that it leads to the grossest immorality. I do not propose to enlarge upon this statement ; it does not bear explanation before a polite and promiscuous audience. I will say this much : I have before me Dens’ Moral Theology, a standard work in the Catholic Church. It contains forms of question and answer for the confessional, many of which I could not be induced to read to you ; you would be insulted if I did. Yet that is what the Catholic meets in the confessional of “ holy

mother Church." Both by way of conclusion and contrast let me ask you all to take to your heart these sweet, pure words of Jesus (Matt. xi. 28), "Come unto me all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest."

"Take my yoke upon you and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy and my burden is light."

I come now to the last topic of the evening, viz: persecution. But some one may say, Mr. Wilson, you do not mean to tell us that the Church of Rome believes in persecution. My friend, that is just exactly what I wish to state with all plainness.

This is a grave charge, I confess, and I am truly sorry that I have to make it. But it is not my assertion simply. It is the indictment of the centuries; it is the record of history; it is the voice from the graves of countless martyrs; it is the cry from the soil of sunny France, steeped with the blood of the victims of Rome; aye, the Bible tells us it is the solemn charge brought before God by the souls of the saints who were slain. I will only touch at this vast subject to-night. It would require years instead of moments to tell it all. For a full account of the outrages perpetrated by this apostate Church in the name of religion, you must read the history of Europe for the last ten centuries. But let me give you their written law. I could wish it were only tradition. There would then be some probability of it being false.

The Council of Toledo decreed: "We, the Holy Council, promulge this sentence, or decree, pleasing to God, that whosoever hereafter shall succeed to the kingdom shall not mount the throne till he has sworn, among other oaths, to permit no man to live in his kingdom who is not a Catholic. And if, after he has taken the reins of government, he shall violate this promise, let him be anathema maranatha in the sight of the Eternal God, and become food for the



eternal fire.' Still further, the Council of Lateran, under Innocent III., decreed as follows: "We excommunicate and anathematize all heresy, condemning all heretics by what name soever they are called. These, being condemned, must be left to the secular power to be punished. And those who are only suspected of heresy, if they purge not themselves in the appointed way, are to be excommunicated; and if within a year, satisfaction is not given they are to be condemned as heretics."

In order that those who were delivered to the secular power might be well cared for, the said secular power was required to take an oath "that they will endeavor with all their might to exterminate from every part of their dominions, all heretical subjects universally, that are marked out to them by the Church."

But I need not take your time by multiplying decrees and authorities of every kind. Have these decrees ever been repealed? or can an infallible decree of an infallible council be repealed? They have not been repealed. The same sentiment is taught in their works on theology to day. Pope Pius IX., in the syllabus of 1864, condemned as one of the principal errors of our time, this sentiment: "It has been wisely provided by law in some countries called Catholic, that persons coming to reside therein shall enjoy the public exercise of their own worship."

That was one of the principal errors of the times.

Pope Pius only believed in religious toleration in Protestant countries. What sort of liberty, think you, was there in Rome when the Pope controlled it? Just this much; No Protestants could meet together in the city for worship. I repeat it; up to the day that arch-heretic, Victor Emanuel, kindly relieved the aged Pope of the harassing duties of state, no Protestants could assemble to worship God according to the dictates of their own conscience. I am speaking now of what I saw in 1870, the



memorable year in which Popes became infallible! Such was Rome's conception of liberty. Yet this was under the benignant rule of that enlightened and liberal-minded Pope, Pius IX., to whom some "good-goody" Protestants are now singing te deums, and giving the worship of dulia. Such is Rome's very kindest treatment of Protestants where she has the power. But when you or I tell what Rome was, and is, she cries out, persecution, persecution! No, we do not persecute. Worship your idols; make and eat your god, as you do, on the corners of our chiefest streets; if need be, I will be one of a posse to defend you; but permit me you must, to stand up in my place and say it is idolatry and blasphemy. I say—Protestants say—let the Bible be circulated and freely discussed and freely taught; and then if it can not prevail against error, let the Bible be burned. Let the sun shine, and if he can not scatter the clouds and dispel the darkness, let us have an eternal night. I do not want your manufactured lights, glimmering from Roman candles; I want the clear and constant light of the sun of Righteousness—or nothing. But I am told the Protestants burned Servetus. I grant it. Coming fresh from the bloody school of Rome, would it not have been marvelous if they had not brought with them some of her lessons? and I submit to any honest Judge if this is not a good plea in abatement. But notwithstanding this mitigating circumstance, every Protestant denounces that act as an outrage. But do Roman Catholics denounce the burning of John Huss, and Jerome of Prague, and John Rogers, and the thousands and tens of thousands whom she has sent to the stake? No, they do not. In this respect her boasted unchangeableness is true. The spirit of the Inquisition still animates her old and decaying frame. Why, we have had glowing eulogies of that glorious institution delivered in our country by Romish priests

If they had the power they once possessed, and to

regain which the Jesuits are moving earth and hell, they would have me at the stake before day-dawn; a genuine *auto-de-fe* would be witnessed in our hay market, and you, in your kindness of heart, would have to go and gather up my ashes, a service which congregations have often had to render to their pastors during the palmy days of Rome.

You will perhaps expect me to speak of the St. Bartholomew massacre. But I will not attempt to portray the sickening scenes in that fiendish atrocity. I will just mention that history records that the bleeding head of Coligne, the most prominent Protestant of the time, was sent to Rome to feast the eyes of the Pope and Cardinals. "The Holy Father," says Mezerai, "and all his Court displayed a great rejoicing, and went in procession to the Church of St. Louis to render thanks to God for so happy a success." The Pope sent Cardinal Ursini to France for the special purpose of thanking the French King, and had a medal struck to commemorate the great and glorious event. Yet that man, forsooth, was the Vicar of Jesus Christ, who wept over Jerusalem when He thought of her coming sorrow. The mere mention of St. Bartholomew, plotted by priests and gloried in by "the faithful" everywhere, is enough to make even the "scarlet woman" blush and hang her head in silence.

Go to what country of Europe you will, and you will find in the museums such a variety of instruments of torture as to suggest that the genius of those ages of Catholic rule had been exhausted in devising the most hellish methods of banishing heretics from the face of the earth.

Think of Christ commanding his apostles: Go ye into all the world and kill all who differ from you, and who will not receive your doctrines! Such a command would have stamped him as the veriest impostor. But that is just the teaching of the Church of Rome, and her practice, too,



wherever she has the power. I submit to any candid mind if that fact does not, beyond all question, prove the papal Church to be the great apostacy—the very antichrist.

But I would not only be just toward Rome—I would be generous. I shall mention, then, that she boasts of the edict of Nantes, which gave partial freedom to Protestants; and also points with pride to the settlement of the Maryland colony by Lord Baltimore. I admit the edict of Nantes showed considerable toleration. But by whom was that edict issued? By Henry IV., who had been educated by a Protestant mother, and whose better instincts were all Protestant, and who was assassinated, history says, by a tool of the Jesuits. But by whom was that edict repealed? By Louis XIV., a bigoted Catholic, under the control of a mistress, who in turn was the artful instrument of the Jesuits. If Papists can extract any glory out of the edict of Nantes I do not grudge it to them. It will be drawing honey from a fouler carcass than that of Samson's lion.

Of the Maryland settlement I have not time to speak; but I will refer you to an able work, entitled the "Papacy and the Civil Power," by the present Secretary of the Navy, Hon R. W. Thompson, in which he shows that this piece of boasted toleration was only the usual Romish selfishness. It is a little uncommon to find a statesman lifting up his voice against this destroyer of Governments; but, thank God, we have a few men in our age who will not worship the image of "the Beast."

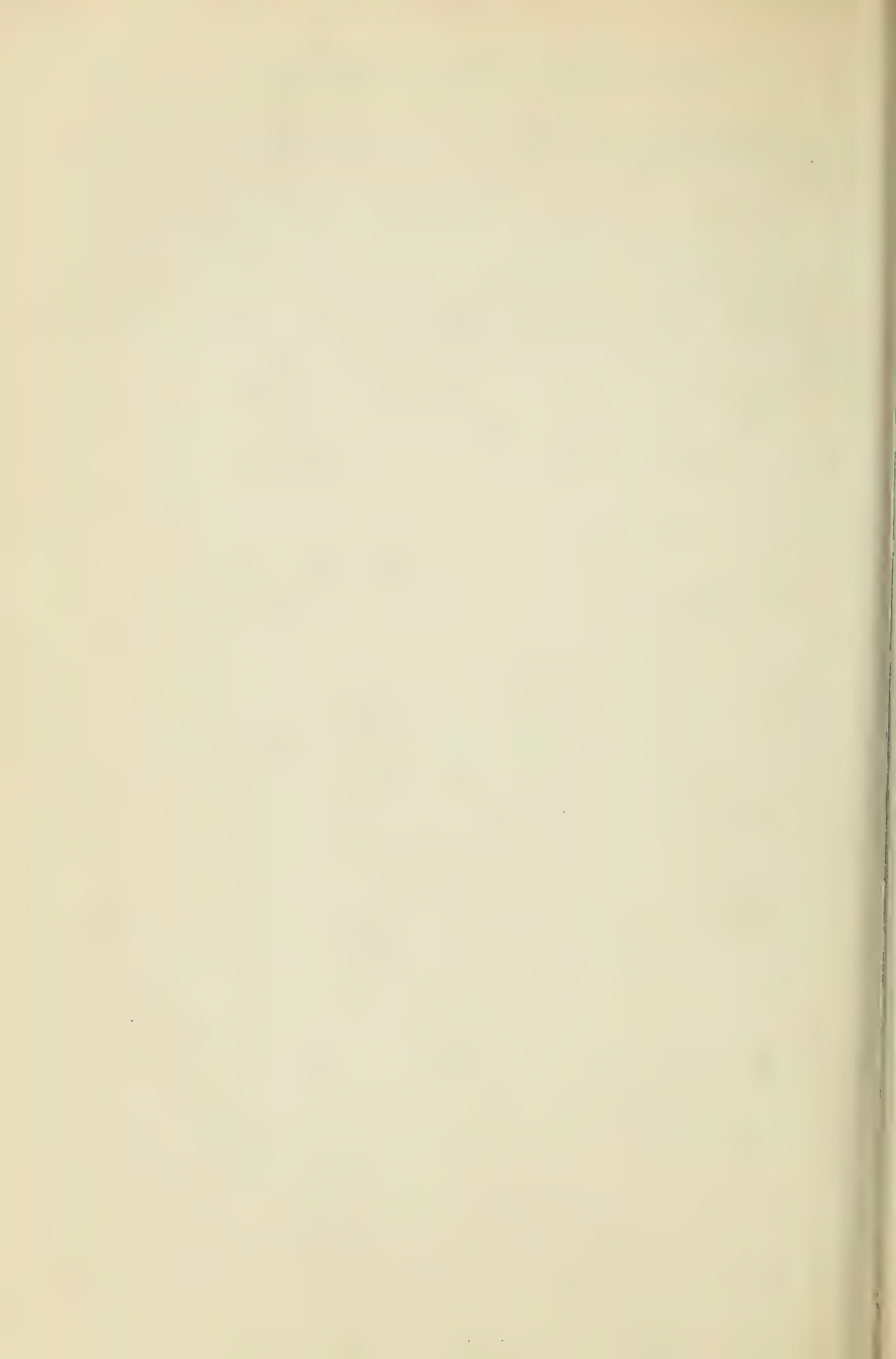
No one will call Gladstone an enthusiast, or Bismarck a fool, or Thompson a knave. Yet these, and a host of others, are telling the world the danger there is from this subtle, selfish, centralized power, which claims to be head of both Church and State.

But I must close. I might detain you all the night, and then only hint at the horrible outrages of the Papal Church, in which the life-blood of 70,000,000 of human beings was



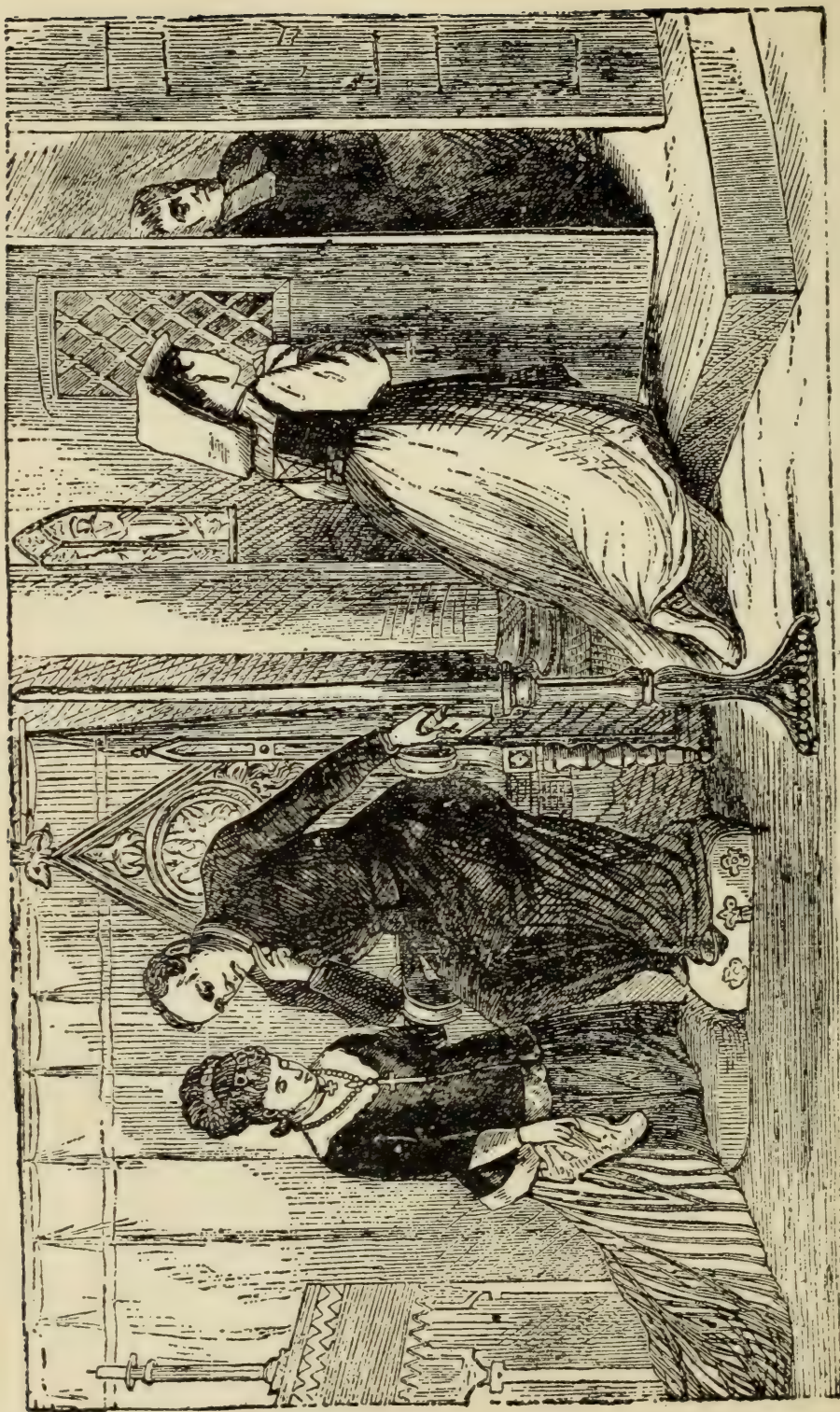
poured out. Is it any wonder her robes are scarlet? Is it any wonder she is drunken with the blood of so many saints? Come out of her, O men and women of America, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues. For her sins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

Extract from Oath which each Bishop is required to take at his consecration: "Heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our said lord, or his aforesaid successors, I will, to the utmost of my power, oppose and *persecute*."









At the Confessional—With Open Doors, Bars are No Protection.

# THE DOBSON WAVE

The Dobson Wave is a phenomenon that has been observed in the behavior of the Dobson beetle, *Coleoptera: Carabidae*. It is a wave of activity that moves across the population of the beetle, and it is thought to be a result of a combination of factors, including social interaction and environmental conditions.

The Dobson Wave is a phenomenon that has been observed in the behavior of the Dobson beetle, *Coleoptera: Carabidae*. It is a wave of activity that moves across the population of the beetle, and it is thought to be a result of a combination of factors, including social interaction and environmental conditions. The wave is characterized by a sudden increase in activity, which is followed by a period of inactivity. This pattern of activity has been observed in a variety of environments, including forests and fields. The wave is thought to be a result of a combination of factors, including social interaction and environmental conditions. The wave is characterized by a sudden increase in activity, which is followed by a period of inactivity. This pattern of activity has been observed in a variety of environments, including forests and fields. The wave is thought to be a result of a combination of factors, including social interaction and environmental conditions.

The common School System of the United States is the worst in the world.

CARDINAL MANNING.

Religious liberty is merely endured until the opposite can be carried into effect, without peril to the Catholic Church.

BISHOP O'CONNER.

I would as soon administer the sacrament to dogs as to Catholics who send their children to the Public Schools, for the Public Schools are the nurseries of vice, and are Godless schools, and they who send their children to them cannot expect the mercy of God.

PRIEST WALKER.



# CHAPTER XI.

## THE ROMISH MASS,

VIEWS IN THE LIGHT OF SCRIPTURE, REASON AND HISTORY.

---

By REV. GEO. A. LOFTON, D.D.

---

Bishop Ryan, in his lecture, asserted the motto: "Rome and Reason." The question of "Rome *or* Reason," he declared, no longer existed. Rome appeals to Scripture, Reason and History. To this dread tribunal shall she go, on the subject of the Mass; and if this arch-sacrament of the Catholic Church be proved a scriptural perversion, a rational absurdity, a historical novelty, then we have knocked the keystone out of Rome's grand arch of sacramentalism, at least. Built upon the triangular foundation of churchism, priestism and sacramentalism, Rome claims to be the *Savior* of the world. The Church, so to speak, is the manufacture, the priest the manufacturer, and the sacraments are the mill or machinery by and through which—sinners are turned into Christians, kept sanctified, and finally prepared, as so many intellectual machines, for heaven. Christians are not directly the "workmanship" of God, "created in Christ Jesus unto good works;" but the entire system of human redemption, wrought out in Christ Jesus, has been vested in a hierarchy, a priesthood, and in seven sacraments; and there can be no personal redemption through Christ, outside of the organism of Rome. Grace *exists* and *consists* only

in the Catholic Church ; and the gospel doctrine that we are saved by grace alone, or that we are justified by faith only, was anathematized at the Council of Trent. "Who-soever shall affirm that grace is not conferred by these sacraments of the new law, by their own power (*ex opere operato*) ; but that faith in the divine promise is all that is necessary to obtain grace : LET HIM BE ACCURSED." What is affirmed of all these sacraments, is affirmed of each, respectively, according to the peculiar grace which each confers ; although it is granted that all these sacraments are not necessary to every individual—such as *orders* and *matrimony*. The other five, namely, baptism, confirmation, the eucharist, penance and extreme unction are essential to the salvation of all. These are *conductors* of grace, from baptismal regeneration to the absolution and indulgence of the soul in Purgatory, by extreme unction. The salvation or damnation of the world is in the hands of the Pope of Rome, who holds the keys of the kingdom of God !

To reason correctly, is to deduce just inferences from true premises. Faith is above reason, but not contrary to it ; and faith, to be true faith at all, must have, to begin with, the aid of correct reason upon testimony. That testimony must be credible to reason, else credulity, and not faith, must follow. No rational being can believe anything without reasonable testimony. The existence of God is based upon rational evidence. Man is a rational, moral, and therefore, accountable creature. He is a depraved and sinful being. He needs a revelation and a Redeemer. Upon these universally admitted premises we accept the Bible, bearing its own evidences of divine inspiration within itself, as a rational, infallible and all-sufficient revelation to man. It develops Jesus Christ, its one idea, from Genesis to Revelation ; the infinite sacrifice for sin ; the principle, life and inspiration of redemption. Faith is made the simple term



of justification—repentance of pardon—in the application of this grace to the human heart. The Bible philosophically commends itself to our belief. Its *rationale*, its unity, its fulfilled prophecies, its doctrines, its well attested miracles, its analogies, its exemplifications, its corroborating witnesses, its purity, its history, its effect upon the human race, its applicability to all classes, climes, conditions and races—all go to prove its origin from God. It is a perfect book; and can neither be “added to,” nor “taken from,” without the curse of God. “But though we or an angel from heaven,” says Paul, “preach any other gospel than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.” The Bible is the most rational testimony, as a whole, and in all its parts, ever offered to the faith of man

Such, however, is not true of a single dogma or institution of Rome. Not one gospel truth but she has perverted; and her entire system is “Christianity reversed.” Her every assumption is founded upon an unwarranted inference from misinterpreted scriptures, which inference she has exalted into a law of her own. Not a single precept of the New Testament mentions, by word, or reveals by implication, a pope, a priest, a hierarchy, a sacrament, an inquisition, a persecution, a form or ceremony, as held by the Catholic Church. It is Antichrist! Yet Rome appeals to scripture, reason and history for her positions! The scriptures, however, are not a sufficient rule of faith and practice to her; and she has beclouded them with false translations, traditions and legislations. The Old Testament was added to, or taken from, by the traditions of the elders; and Christ and his Apostles stripped the Pharisees of this garb of deception, perversion and hypocrisy. Likewise has Rome rendered the last will and testament of our Lord of none effect by tradition; and the scholar and the historian must strip modern pharisaism of its false garb. The Old Testament was a complete revelation to the Jew; the New



Testament is a complete revelation to the Christian. Then to the law and to the testimony of Christ—the only rational basis or standard to which we can ever appeal in controversy. Rome appeals to Reason! The gospel of Christ is the consummation of reason—a complete and infallible testimony—the last will and testament of the Testator. By the Word of God, by reason, by history, we shall test the chief sacrament of Romanism; and having tested this, we have tested the claims of all.

1. *The Romish Mass is a scriptural perversion.* “This is my body”—“This is my blood,” said Jesus, in the institution of the Lord’s Supper. These expressions, according to Rome, are the foundation of the Mass. On page 9, of the Roman *Missal*, compiled by Bishop England, I find this definition :

“In the Mass, Christ is the victim; he is produced by the consecration, which by the power of God, and the institution of the Redeemer, and the act of the priest, places the body and blood of Christ, under the appearance of bread and wine upon the altar; then the priest makes an oblation of this victim to the Eternal Father on behalf of the people, and the victim undergoes a destructive change, showing forth the death of the Redeemer, and making commemoration thereof, by the exhibition of the apparent separation of the body from the blood; the former being under the appearance of bread, and the latter under the appearance of wine, and by the consumption of both by the priest.” The bishop says that the Mass is a “sacrifice,” and that “it is not a different sacrifice from that of the cross; for the victim in each is the same.” The Roman Catechism says, “Not only is it the true body of Jesus Christ, to wit: all that is proper to the human body—the bones, the nerves, contained in the sacrament—but farther, Jesus Christ, whole and entire.” The Council of Trent decreed that “whoever shall affirm that a true and

proper sacrifice is not offered to God in the Mass," or that it was "not a propitiatory offering," or that it "ought not to be offered for the living and the dead, for sins, punishments, satisfactions and other necessities: LET HIM BE ACCURSED.

By these definitions and decrees we are to understand. (1.) That Jesus Christ—body and blood, flesh and bones, soul and divinity, whole and entire, without mutation or extension of his physical being, identical in heaven and at the same time identical on earth, is produced in a wafer of bread and a drop of wine, under the consecrating act of a human priest. (2.) That this priest makes an "oblation" of the victim produced, by a "destructive change in the production of the body and blood, the former under the appearance of bread, the latter separated from the former, under the appearance of wine. (3.) That the priest completes the sacrifice by the "consumption" of the body and blood of Christ. (4.) That this is not simply a commemoration of the sacrifice on Calvary, but a "propitiatory offering" of the Son of God afresh, for the sins of the people. And, (5.) That in this act of consecration, the bread and wine only retain their "appearance," their substance being converted into the body and blood of Christ. This is transubstantiation! The priest creates his God, immolates him, eats him, offers him for the sins of the people!

This is either awful blasphemy, or else it is the consummation of all divine power, the exercise of supreme authority, at the hands of a mortal being! Jesus himself could do no more than this! Can it be according to God's word, by the utmost torture of inference? Reason alone can guide us in the interpretation of language. A law, to be a law, must be *declared* in the primary use of language. "Do this," says Jesus, "in remembrance of me." Laws are never declared in the figurative, secondary or remote



use of language; but a law which involves a symbol, can be *described* only in figurative language. Baptism is enacted in literal language: "Go ye into all nations," &c.; but it is described as a burial, a resurrection, a washing away of sin, in the appropriate figures which express its emblematic significance. The Lord's Supper, likewise, is described only in figurative language, because it is a symbolic institution. If the descriptive language of the Savior is literal, and the doctrine of the Mass be true, then he ate his own body and drank his own blood, and his disciples did the same while He himself stood, whole and entire, unbroken and without mutation, before them. He said to his disciples, as he instituted the Supper: "This is my body"—*this bread*; "This is my blood"—*this wine*. What does the word "*this*," in each case, refer to? First, to the entire loaf, broken, symbolically, into twelve parts, afterwards; second, to the entire cup of wine, afterwards divided, likewise, and drunk by the disciples. There can be no escape from the argument, that a figure must be used in calling the loaf a "broken" body, before it was broken. Immediately after the Savior's words of institution, he says (Matt. xxvi. 29), "I will not drink henceforth of *this* fruit of the vine, until the day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom." So said he of the bread. Is it not clear that Christ and his disciples, in their own conception, were eating literal bread, the "fruit" of the field? drinking literal wine, the "fruit" of the vineyard? His body had not yet been broken, nor his blood shed. They were eating bread, drinking wine, the symbols of that body which was to *be* broken, of that blood which was to *be* shed, on the morrow. Jesus was speaking, descriptively, as only he could speak, in the institution of a symbolic and ceremonial ordinance, in figurative language—the most potent of all expression. He so spake, often, in less



figurative matters. Even of himself he said, "I am the door," "I am the way," "I am the true vine." So spake Paul, when referring to the ancient types of baptism and the Lord's Supper, he says, "And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea, and did eat the same spiritual meat; and did drink the same spiritual drink; for they drank of that Spiritual Rock that followed them; *and that Rock was Christ.*" The manna from heaven, and the water that followed Israel from the smitten rock, were figures of the body and blood of Jesus, pointing forward to the coming "Crucified One," just as the Lord's Supper points back to him; but neither did the Hebrews, nor do Christians now, eat the literal body, nor drink the literal blood of Christ. That manna and that rock in the desert was Christ in a figure; and so Jesus said of the bread and wine: "This is my body"—"This is my blood."

Is it possible that when Christ, as he declares he will, eats the fruit of the field, and drinks the fruit of the vine, anew, in the Kingdom of his Father, be eating and drinking, again, with his chosen, his own body and his own blood? Why should there then be any more sacrifice, or why, in any event, should Jesus have ever eaten his own body, or drunk his own blood? In all the language used, in describing the Supper, Jesus employed a figure, to signify its deepest import. "This cup," said he, "is the New Testament in my blood, shed for the remission of the sins of many." Did he mean that "*this cup*" was a literal testament, or only the symbol of the new covenant, established by his shed blood? Will any Romanist answer? Rome arrays, John vi., as proof of the literality of Jesus' expressions in the institution of the Eucharist: "The bread that I shall give you, is my flesh," etc.; but in the very same chapter Jesus interprets his own language as figurative, and all the more potent and significant, when he says, "The flesh profiteth nothing; the words that I speak unto you,

they are spirit and they are life." The literal flesh and blood of Christ can be no food of the soul. He was born of a woman, just as we are, and however immaculate, his flesh and blood could convey no spiritual or divine life. His "words," however, which are figuratively represented by his crucified flesh and his shed blood, "they are spirit and they are life." The *truth* of Christ is his power unto salvation. Christ is adduced and produced in the potent figures of God's Word, which strikingly represent the broken body and shed blood of the Redeemer; and whoever takes in these truths, under the literal or symbolic forms of the glorious doctrine, spiritually and faithfully eats the flesh and drinks the blood of Christ. Thus, alone, is Jesus food to the soul, whether so received in the Supper, or in the reading or hearing of the gospel. Any blind, idolatrous and superstitious effort at discerning, worshipping, sacrificing, or feasting on the literal body and blood of Christ, is not only awful blasphemy, but an utter obscuration of the truth, so beautifully, powerfully and spiritually involved in the symbolic representation, or commemoration of that truth in the Lord's Supper.

Jesus and his apostles never dreamed of the doctrine of the Mass. The scriptures are as silent upon such an idea as the grave. It is nowhere hinted at in the Acts of the Apostles, or smacked of in their epistles. The Communion is mentioned, in the simplest terms, as "breaking bread," or as "eating the Lord's Supper." Paul rebuked the Corinthian Church for its abuses of the ordinance, reiterating the institution in the same figurative language of the evangelists, concluding: "For as often as ye eat *this bread*, and drink *this cup*, ye do show the Lord's death till he come." Paul did not dream that we should eat the literal body or drink the literal blood of Christ. "This bread"—this cup," he says, we eat and drink. Distinguishing the Supper from a common feast, into which the Corinthians



had perverted it, he pronounces, in a beautiful figure, the Supper as the Communion of the body and blood of Christ. In other words, it was a participation, under the symbol of a feast, of the soul in the glorious life of Christ, through the truth and spirit of his shed blood and broken body, set forth in the Supper. He warned the Church, therefore, to eat "worthily"—warned each "man" in that Church to "examine himself," lest he should eat "unworthily," or with an improper design, and thus eat "damnation" to his own soul. He enforced the great design of the Master, in the institution of the ordinance, that under these symbols of a broken body and shed blood, the Church and each individual member of it should "*discern the Lord's body.*" Did he mean that they should discern a literal body and literal blood, under the mere "appearance" of bread and wine? Why did he not say so? This would be impossible, physically, mentally, spiritually. What would be the use of a man examining himself upon this point? with all the scriptural acumen, logical clearness and experimental knowledge of things, human or divine, no man has ever yet discerned the literal body and blood of our Lord, under the "appearances" of bread and wine. A man may imagine, or be credulous, that such a thing takes place; but such discernment can never be predicated of any true faith based upon rational testimony. The language of Paul is still keeping up the symbolic idea of Christ in the institution of the Supper. It is a memorial, or monument, of the crucifixion and the symbol of the Christian's spiritual fellowship with the sufferings of Christ, under the "form of doctrine" set forth in the ordinance. To the extent that true experimental faith exists in the Christian, it can "examine" itself and "discern," through the symbols of the ordinance, the Lord's broken body and shed blood, upon testimony; and to this extent the soul can feast upon the truth and commune with the spiritual



life of Jesus, represented by flesh and blood, and figuratively set forth by bread and wine. Any other but a spiritual and faithful discernment of the truth symbolized, would be no discernment at all. Faith and obedience, here, would not be a "reasonable service," under a "real presence" idea, but only blind credulity, superstition, idolatry and cannibalism, having no permanent effect upon the life and character of the communicant. Let each man in the Church, where the ordinance is celebrated, "*examine* himself," and so let him eat and drink—discerning, by faith, the Lord's body, under the symbols of bread and wine, lest he should eat "unworthily." A "real presence" discernment, is not only useless, but absolutely impossible, to faith—much less to sense or reason.

Finally, under the head of scripture, the Mass, as an "oblation—sacrifice—for the sins of the people," at the hands of a human priest, is a subversion of the entire theory of human redemption, by the "one offering"—"once for all," and "forever" made by Jesus Christ. It is a subversion of the scriptural doctrine of the one and only priesthood of Jesus Christ. It is a subversion of the gospel truth that salvation by grace, through faith, is a one act—wrought out by a single sacrifice and accomplished at but one time, "once for all," and "forever." I affirm here that the New Testament declares but one priest, one offering, one salvation; and that, in a saving sense, there never was but one priest, one offering, one salvation, or one plan of human redemption. The Priests, offerings, and salvation of the Mosaic ritual were solely typical—shadows of good things to come; and every Jew before Christ, in order to be saved, had to rise above legal righteousness and ceremonial observances, and, through the figures, prophecies and precepts of his dispensation, see Jesus the Messiah, and believe on him that was to come. So were Adam, Enoch, Noah, Abraham, Moses, David, and thousands of

others, saved. They saw Christ and his day, afar off, "*believed*," and were "*glad*." The law was too "*weak*," with all its grand formula of commands and ordinances, either to atone for moral guilt, or inspire regeneration, or produce resurrection. Jesus Christ was an absolute necessity to the atonement, regeneration, sanctification and resurrection of the sinner—and the only necessity

Paul is clear on this point in Hebrews. Jesus is a Priest, forever after the order of Melchizedek, and Aaron and his successors were only types or shadows—their sacrifices and atonements only the types or shadows of God's only and eternal sacrifice and atonement, at the hands of his Son. "For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us. *Nor yet that he should offer himself often*, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with the blood of others; for then he must have suffered since the foundation of the world; but now *once* in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men *once* to die, and after this the judgment; so Christ was *once offered* to bear the sins of many." (Heb. ix. 24-28.) Again says Paul, "And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins; but this man, *after he had offered one sacrifice for sins forever*, sat down on the right hand of God. \* \* For by one offering he hath perfected forever them that are sanctified." (Heb. x. 13, 14.) All these expressions go to prove that there never was, is not now and never can be but one Priest—Jesus Christ; that he made one sacrifice, once for all and forever in the end of the old age, and that he neither repeats this sacrifice himself, nor appoints others to do the same; that every man once sanctified, saved, under this sacrifice,



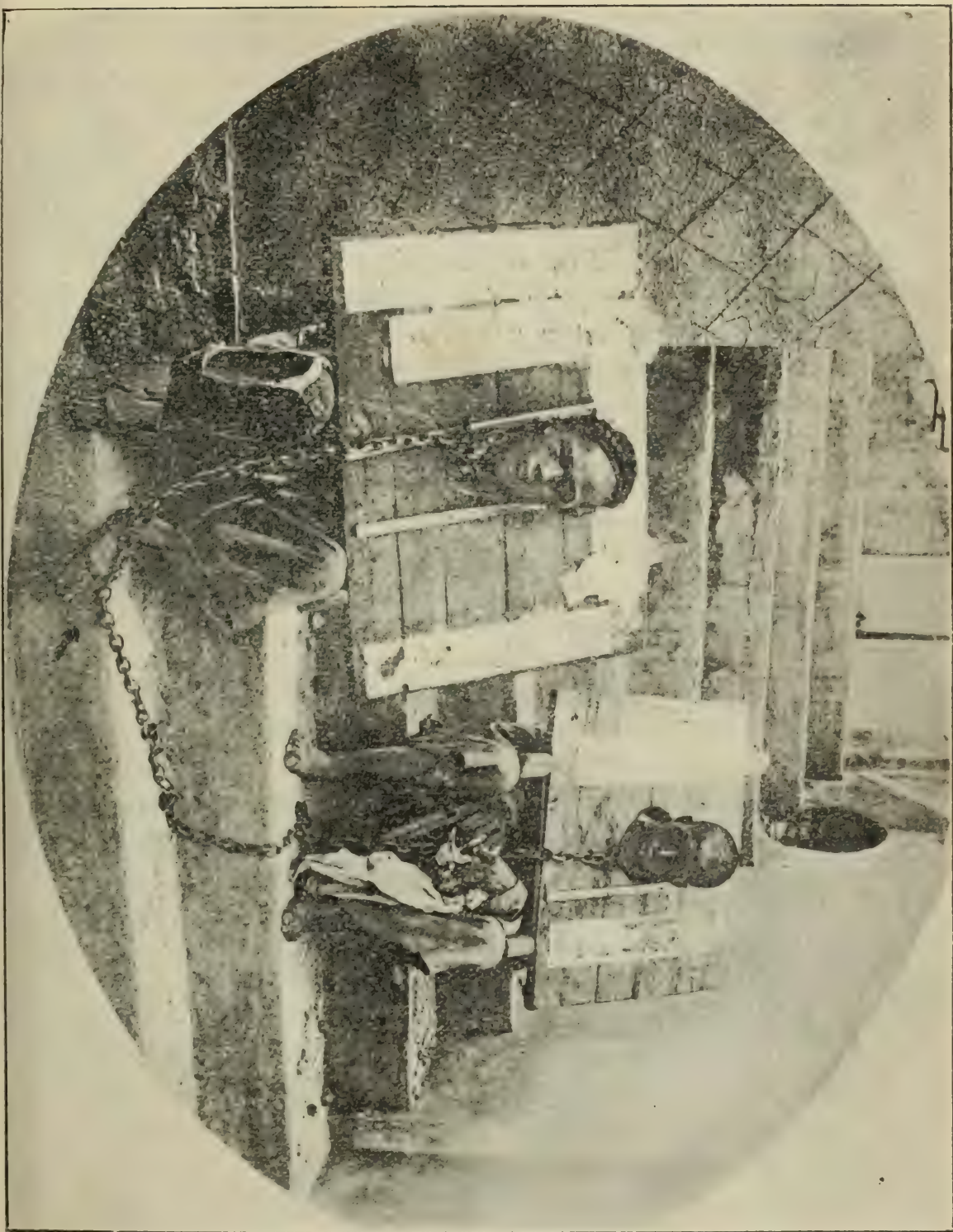
is "forever perfected." "By the which will," says the Apostle, "we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ, once for all." (Heb. x. 10.) "Worshippers, once purged," says he, "can have no more conscience of sins." (Heb. x. 1.) "Where remission of these is, *there is no more offering for sin*"—"their sins and iniquities I will remember no more." "After those days (in the days of Christ) saith the Lord, I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them." In other words, when a man is "saved by grace," "through faith in our Lord Jesus Christ," he is justified, "once for all," and "forever;" and, as Peter says, "kept through faith, by the power of God, unto salvation, ready to be revealed at the last time." A man is neither saved by sacraments, nor kept by them. He is justified the moment he believes, and virtually saved to all eternity—the progressive work of sanctification, resurrection and glorification, continuing on by the same grace, through faith, which first regenerates and justifies. Our Great High Priest, Jesus Christ, becomes our Surety, Advocate and Intercessor—whose blood cleanseth us from all sin. By penitence and faith, every child of God can go at every moment, personally into the Holy of Holies on high—bearing his own priestly and kingly offerings of a broken and a contrite heart—and receiving the blessings of God, by virtue of the blood shed on Calvary. Hence, Paul says, again, (Heb. x. 19–22), "Having, therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the veil, that is to say, his flesh; and having an high priest over the house of God; let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed with pure water." It does seem as if Paul wrote the Epistle to the Hebrews in contemplation of the Romish sacrifice of the Mass—and to head off this



### NO MONEY, NO MASS.

The following photo-engraving, "No Money, No Mass," represents two unfortunate natives of the Philippine Islands who have incurred the displeasure of Rome's oppressors of human liberties by not having the required amount for the saying of masses for their dead and confessional fees. It is a common thing in these Islands to see the benighted natives chained together and wearing upon their necks a platform of wood that weighs from fifty to one hundred pounds. That the natives who see these poor wretches, while undergoing this punishment, and through fear of a similar fate, submit to the selfish demands of the Priest, a statement of their crime is made in public, also written in Spanish, Chinese, and their native language on these wooden collars.









monstrous perversion of the one priesthood, the one sacrifice, and the one salvation, wrought out by Jesus Christ for all his people.

The Mass, in any conceivable sense, especially as a propitiatory offering—repeated over and over again—at the hands of a fallible priest, for the sins of God's people, is a novelty of the grossest superstition. It is worse than Paganism, which never pretended to sacrifice or eat its gods. It is absolutely undreamed of in the gospel; and is without the shadow of analogy in the law. Paul declares that the blood of legal sacrifices never cleansed from sin. There was no salvation by the law or its ceremonies. The gospel knows only one priest, one sacrifice, one redemption. Every Christian, so far as earthly authority or sacrifice is concerned, is his own king and priest. He knows no law but the gospel; no prophet, priest or king, but Christ. He wears the royal badge of gospel liberty, and offers his own broken heart and devotion as the seal of his personal freedom. The Church of Christ, therefore, is a "holy nation," a "peculiar people," a "royal priesthood," offering up "spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God (only) by Jesus Christ," our great High Priest.

2. *The Mass is a rational absurdity* We shall now try the Mass from a purely rational stand point. We have no shadow of scriptural testimony for it—but all scripture against it. I do not hesitate to say that the Mass is the most unreasonable, the most unphilosophical, of all the absurdities ever foisted upon the world. There is nothing in Greek or Roman Mythology, in Oriental or barbarous superstition, which can compare with this refined and subtle assumption of power and miracle. Without scriptural premise or testimony, upon which to support itself, it has not even a rational analogy by which to illustrate or explain itself. It is contrary to all the axioms or deductions of truth. You cannot reason upon it, *a priori*,

nor *a posteriori*. Every effort to reason upon it, produces a *reductio ad absurdum*. It is not only contrary to reason, but it is contrary to every man's five senses—contrary to every imaginable conception of intellect, and to every perception of experimental knowledge of ideas or things. Nothing could have been invented, so contrary to every philosophical or scriptural method of thought, sensation or faith.

(1.) I am called upon to believe that God has constituted a human priest (contrary to his word), the agent by which, under the act of consecration, the Son of God is produced, created, in a drop of wine and a wafer of bread. To be sure, the Son of God was born, in the flesh, of the Virgin Mary; and we can conceive, by observation and analogy, how, by the power of God who gave all our bodies birth, the body of Christ, with its human nature, was thus created. God teaches us, that, in this human form, “dwelt all the fullness of the Godhead bodily.” This we rationally conceive God able to do; and we discover that from that body did emanate all the manifestations of God's attributes. It was clear to all who were in his presence, that God did dwell in the person of Christ. He was “God with us”—“God manifest in the flesh.” The Mass, however, gives us no such manifestations, either in the act of production, immolation, or in the life and character of those who produce and eat this created God. There is no law for such a creation in God's word; there is no analogy for it at the hands of a priest; and there is not the slightest evidence or manifestation of the assumed fact. Men say so; and men say, “*Credo*”—but this is simply all we know of the matter. I call for the law and the testimony; and I call for the manifestations of such an assumption of power, before I can submit my reason to the blind dictum of “*Credo*.” At least, I want some analogy for the fact.



(2.) Leaving out the irrational assumption that Christ is offered as a sacrifice for the sins of the people, which is met by the scriptures, I am called upon to believe that Jesus Christ; body, blood, flesh, nerves and bones; soul and divinity; whole and entire; is produced in a drop of wine and a wafer of bread! He is identical, whole and entire in heaven, and at the same time whole, identical and entire—without physical mutation or change of his heavenly existence—on earth. If need be, he is, physically, in a million of places at the same time, not by the extension of his physical being; but identically the same, and unchanged being, whole and entire, in every place. The Council of Trent anathematizes a man who does not believe this! Well, this is to believe, contrary to every philosophical conception of physical law, that one body can occupy two places at the same time, or a million of places, and be the same body; or that two bodies can occupy the same place at the same time! Spiritually, God can be everywhere; and God can create a million of beings, at the same time, similar in character, nature and constitution—indeed, exactly alike. That, however, is not the assumption of the Mass. In every instance, by every priest, Christ in heaven is the same Christ in every place, where the wafer is consecrated, without any change of physical identity or being! This requires me to believe that God has established two new laws, contradictory of every other natural law of existence, (1), that one body can occupy two places at the same time, and be the same body; and, (2), that this same physical body, whole and entire, can occupy an invisible and infinitesimal space in a wafer of bread and a drop of wine without change—of which occupancy I can have no perception. This is the same as to require me to believe that God can make a round square, or a square circle; the circumference of a circle, every point of which is not equidistant from the center; two hills without a depression between

them. This is to ask me to believe that a mountain can be a mole-hill without change, or a mole-hill a mountain. This is to ask me to believe that God contradicts himself; or that he has constructed laws of nature, at variance with all other laws, and of which he has given me no sensible or rational demonstration. This is a *reductio ad absurdum* “Rome and Reason!”

(3.) But this is not the worst of it. I am required to believe that, in the act of priestly consecration, the substance of the bread is changed into the body of Christ, and that the substance of the wine is changed into the blood of Christ; and yet the form, color and taste of the bread and wine remain. The substance of the elements is gone, converted, but the bread and wine only remain in their accidents or species. This is Transubstantiation! Now how am I to know or believe that this is true? I am met with the reply that it is a “miracle.” The creation of the incarnate God in the bread and wine is a miracle; and the bread and wine retaining their form, color and taste, after transubstantiation, is another miracle, concealing the first! This is the reason why you can neither see, touch, nor taste, the body and blood of Christ. This is a double miracle! another contradiction of all natural law! another violation of all common sense! The elements look like bread and wine; taste like them; feel like them; smell like them; sound like them; have the same effect that bread and wine do; would intoxicate or gloat you like bread and wine; would poison you if adulterated; and yet they are, substantially, the body and blood of Christ! Here is a law of creation which makes a thing to be one thing and another at the same time! As well ask me to believe that flesh can be fish, or stone, at the same time be flesh. Where are my reason, my intellections, my five senses, my philosophy, my faith founded on testimony? Oh, but it is a miracle—a double miracle! a miracle ingeniously concealing a miracle, and concealing itself! But



how am I to believe it is a miracle, unless I am sensible of it? It is a fact, that a miracle must be proved to be a miracle, before one can believe it. All the miracles of the Bible were visible, manifest, to somebody. The writers of God's word declare that they either performed them, or saw them; and that others were sensible of them, by physical or ocular demonstration. Not one of those miracles were performed contrary to reason, or what we can philosophically conceive God able to perform. He who made the sun, could make it stand still; he who made the waters, could walk on them; he who created man, could destroy him, and raise him up again. God who made the laws of nature, can suspend them, interfere with their operation, or intensify their action, so as to produce supernatural results. Not a Bible miracle, however, necessitates the contradiction of, or creation of new law, at variance with, all other laws; and not a Bible miracle was performed, or believed, that did not interpose physical or ocular demonstration to those who were affected by them. The Mass, as we have seen, presupposes a new set of organic laws, beyond all conception of what reason, or credible faith, is capable of supposing God able to perform—contrary to every existing law, by which God controls the action of physical existences—without a particle of testimony on the subject—and yet Rome demands that we believe this unproved miracle! a miracle concealing a miracle, and then concealing itself! All Bible miracles are above reason, but not contradictory of all reason and sense; nor without credible testimony. All true miracles have been consistently performed in accordance with God's immutable laws of creation, so far as we are informed. Until such a miracle, as that of the Mass, is demonstrated to be such, we cannot believe it. I cannot submit my reason to "Credo," without credible testimony.

Rome and Reason! The Mass gives up all reason.



Catholics have always seen their difficulty here; and in vain they have tried to meet it. The important distinction between what is above reason and what is contrary to reason, on this point, is admitted by Bossuet. However, he says, "Every time that a man shall object that a point of faith is not only above reason, but directly contrary to reason, must we enter with him into the inquiry?" He who refuses, abandons the discussion; and whether Roman Catholics will refuse to prove the miracle of the Mass to be such or not, it is certain that Protestants will inquire into its claims. Anything proved to be contrary to reason, cannot be made an article of faith, and a law, to a rational and moral being. If Rome were going to controvert with an infidel upon the proof of Bible miracles, she would reason upon testimony, just as Protestants do; but when the Mass is in question, she cries, "Credo." This is the end of all controversy. "Anything contrary to reason cannot be proved;" and as long as the miracle of the Mass stands unproved—though performed around us every day—we shall conclude that it is contrary to all reason; stands without a shadow of testimony or analogy, and we shall not submit our reason to it. Alas! that a man like Cardinal Bellarmin should say, forty years after the Council of Trent, "For me, I believe, like the Council, that transubstantiation may be proved by scripture, but it may nevertheless be doubted whether it be so, since very learned and very ingenious men have been of a contrary opinion."—*On the Eucharist, book iii., ch. 25*

Rome and Reason! What tyranny of the Church over the mind! To believe the Mass, is a degradation of physical, mental and moral philosophy. It is a surrender of the manhood and the conscience of the human race to blind credulity. It is an irrational and superstitious bending of the soul to idolatry. It is declared to be a propitiation, an offering, for the sins of the living and the dead. The priest

not only judicially absolves from sin, but he makes a sacrifice for sin. He stands at the altar in the place of God, by appointment; and thousands are trusting their immortal souls to priestly absolution, and to the efficacy of priestly propitiation in the Mass. It is not a mere formality, a mere sentimentality, and mere convenient observance, but it is claimed as an absolute reality, that the Mass is a sacrifice for sin and a conductor of grace to the soul. Rome has no "non-essentials to salvation" in religion. She is, through her priests, a savior of the soul by sacraments, *in toto et partibus*. These sacraments are not "*generally* essential to salvation," as Pedobaptists sometimes say; but they are absolutely essential. If Rome be true, we are altogether wrong in our doctrine of salvation by grace, alone, through faith; if we are right, Rome is altogether false in her system of ecclesiastical, priestly, and sacramental salvation. She thrusts a Church, a priest and a sacrament between the soul and Christ; and with the iron hand of an absolute despotism over the conscience, she anathematizes all who deny her dogmas. I and you are "accursed," if we cannot believe this doctrine of the Mass—the sum of all Romish sacramentalism, this masterpiece of all assumption, this contradiction of all scripture, reason, sense, analogy and history!

3. *The Mass is a historical novelty.* The Mass has given great trouble, historically, in the Roman Catholic ranks. Step by step has Rome developed into her colossal proportions and into all her stupendous assumptions. She was in embryo for five centuries, when Boniface III., put on the tiara of "universal bishop," contrary to the protestations of Gregory, his predecessor, against the similar claim of John of Constantinople, which he denounced as antichristian and diabolical. Antichrist which began to work in the apostolic churches had now become enthroned as the "man of sin," sitting in the place of God and exalting himself above God. Errors which crept, like "little foxes" into the first churches,



gradually developed into stupendous dogmas. Among the elders of the Churches there rose in each congregation the bishop, *primus inter pares*; from this sprang the distinction between *presbyteros* and *episcopos*; from this distinction grew the diocesan episcopate; from this usurpation originated the provincial bishop; from this enlarged the patriarchate; from this resulted ultimately the papacy of Rome—the mistress of the world—in A. D. 606. This claim had been conceived before; but in this year papal supremacy reached its birth. Hierarchy had established its dominion under the sanction and authority of the State; and the various orders of ministerial government were supremely fixed over the congregations of God's heritage. The presbyter took the name of *priest*, and the deacon aspired to an office never bestowed in the gospel. In the course of time, bishops became the successors of the apostles; and archbishops and cardinals graced the extended dominions of the pope. Priests, deacons, subdeacons, acolytes, exorcists, readers and porters comprised the seven orders of the ministry. By inference and tradition sprang corresponding errors in dogmas and ceremonies. Baptismal regeneration; the conferring of perfect grace under the priestly hand of confirmation; eucharistic sacrifice and the impartation by it of divine life, penance (including contrition, confession and satisfaction), with the power of priestly absolution; extreme unction, absolving the sins of life and indulging the soul in Purgatory; a host of other sacraments—all of which, except seven, were excluded, as such, at the Council of Trent; the confessional, indulgencies, the inquisition, persecution, infallibility, temporal sovereignty—all these and a hundred more unwarrantable assumptions gradually sprang into the legislation of the papal hierarchy over the Christian world. Endless ceremonies—fasts, feasts and days; with altars, candles, robes, images, crosses, banners, rosaries, relics and charms; mingled with the worship of Mary, saints, angels,



Question—Are Protestants willing to confess their sins to a Catholic Bishop or Priest, who alone has power from Christ to forgive sins?

Answer—No, they generally have an utter aversion to confession and therefore their sins will not be forgiven throughout all eternity.

Q.—What follows from this?

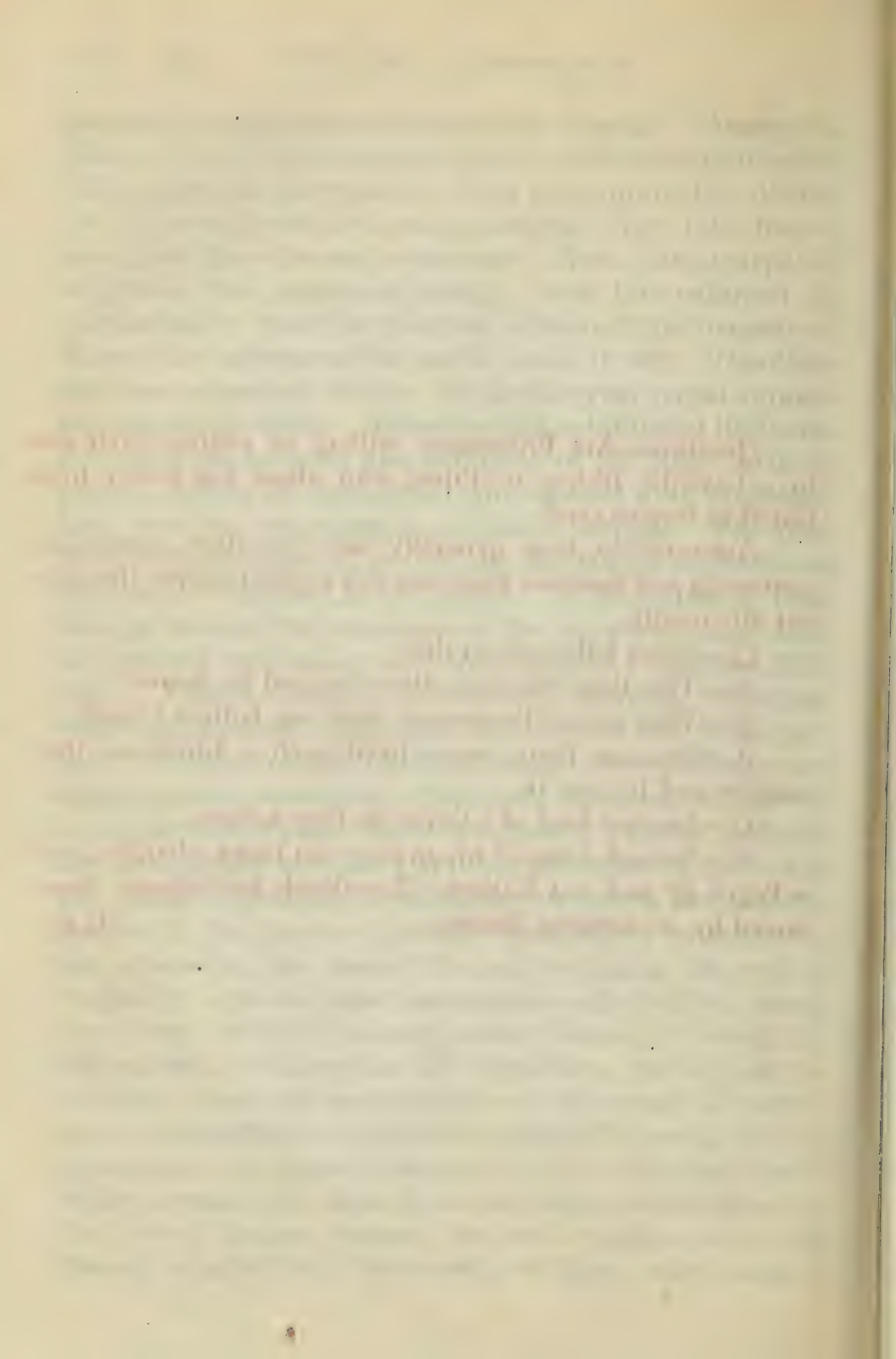
A.—That they will die in their sins and be damned.

Q.—Why cannot Protestants have any faith in Christ?

A.—Because there never lived such a Christ as they imagine and believe in.

Q.—In what kind of a Christ do they believe.

A.—In such a one of whom they can make a liar, etc., etc.  
—Pages 97 and 104 Catholic Text-Book for Schools, Sanctioned by Archbishop Bayley.





"Many perished in the Mountains." Page 506.





pictures and even of the pope himself—all these grew, until the bondage of a system worse than Pharisaism was bound upon the backs of the idolatrous and superstitious devotees of Romanism. Jesus and his apostles never dreamed of these additions to the gospel; and yet Rome claims inspiration from God for these things—nay, goes back to the original scriptures to find most of them. We demand in vain for her “thus saith the Lord.” The declarations of a pope, *ex cathedra*, are all that can be replied; but even his infallibility is an assumption unproved.

Thus popery has grown—an entire historical novelty in itself—and with it all, the sacrament of the Mass. Christ and his apostles knew nothing of it. The apostolic fathers are silent upon the subject. The Epistles attributed to Clement, Barnabas, Ignatius, Polycarp, Herenas and others, give no clue to such a doctrine as is set forth in the Council of Trent. These were the companions and co-laborers, some of them, of the apostles. Gross usurpations and errors had already sprung up in their day; and some of these very writers had imbibed some of them; but this doctrine of transubstantiation was unknown to them. The Church fathers are quoted by the Catholics as teaching this awful heresy; but whatever they may have written, figuratively, which seemed to favor such a theory of the Eucharist, has been contradicted by other writings which explain their meaning. Even if the early Church fathers had favored transubstantiation it is of no authority, if it cannot be found in the written law of Jesus Christ. We shall quote a few passages, however, to show that these fathers could not have known the doctrine of transubstantiation.

Justin says, in his famous apology: “On the day of the sun we meet. The Scriptures are read, and then an elder exhorts the people to follow such beautiful examples. We rise, we pray anew; water, bread and wine are set down. The presbyter gives thanks, and those present say,

Amen. A part of the consecrated things are distributed, and the deacons take the rest to the absent." There was no separation there of the cup from the laity. Tertullian (against Marcion, Book iii) says: "Jesus Christ having taken bread, and having distributed it among his disciples, made it his body, saying, 'This is my body,' that is to say, the figure of his body." Origen (against the Marcionites), says: "If Christ, as the Marcionites claim, had neither flesh nor blood, of what body and of what blood were that bread and wine the signs and images?" In his Commentary on Matthew, Origen calls the bread of the Eucharist "a figurative body." Of course Origen was a heretic according to Cardinal Duperron. Ephrem, speaking against the curious inquirers into the body of Christ, says: "Taking bread into his hands, he gives thanks and breaks it in figure of his immaculate body." Macarius (Homily xxvii) says: "Bread and wine are offered, being the figure of the flesh and blood of Jesus Christ. They who participate in this visible bread eat, spiritually, the flesh of the Lord." Theodoret (in his first Dialogue Against the Eutychians) says: "The Lord has honored these reliable signs with the name of his body and blood, not changing their nature, but adding grace to nature." Vigilius (against Eutychius) says: "When Christ's flesh was on earth, it was not in heaven; and now that it is in heaven, it is not on earth." Chrysostom (against Adimant, ch. xii.) says: "Before the bread is consecrated, it is called bread; but when divine grace has sanctified it through the intervention of the priest (presbyter) then it no longer bears the name of bread; it becomes worthy of being called the Lord's body, *although the nature of the bread remains in it.*" St. Augustine, whose figurative expressions seem to have furnished so many weapons to the partisans of the real presence theory, says to Boniface: "Had the sacraments no resemblance to the things whereof they are the sacraments, they



would not be sacraments. But in consequence of that resemblance, they take most frequently the name of the things themselves " He said (against Adimant ch. xii.): "The Lord had no difficulty in saying, 'This is my body,' when he gave the *sign* of his body." In an Epistle to Deacon Peter on the Faith, he says again: "This sacrifice (of the Eucharist) is a thanksgiving and a commemoration of the blood of Christ which he offered for us." In his Christian Doctrine he says: "If a commandment forbids anything that is shameful or criminal, or recommends what is useful and good, that command is not figurative; but if he commands a bad thing or forbids a good thing, it must not be taken literally." He then gives the Eucharist as an instance: "'If ye eat not,' saith the Savior, 'the flesh of the Son of Man and drink not his blood, ye have no life in you.' It looks as if in these words he commanded a crime. It is a figure, then, by which we are recommended to communicate in our Savior's passion, by engraving in our memory, in a manner at once affecting and useful, the killing and crucifying of his body for us." So much for these fathers. Whatever they may have written which seems, in their tropical style to favor the dogma of transubstantiation, is opposed by other writings, which clears them from such a charge, or else renders them useless witnesses.

The doctrine of transubstantiation has created since the days of the fathers, great conflict of opinion. Whatever date may be assigned to transubstantiation, it was an opinion, not an article of faith, until the tenth century. The Council of Constantinople, 754, in opposing the worship of images, pronounced the substance of the bread the only "*image*" of Christ. The second Council of Nice, 784, however, in supporting the worship of images declared on the contrary that the sacrament, after consecration, was not the "*image*" of Christ's body and blood, but "properly his body and blood." So says Archbishop Tillotson.

Bellarmin says (Bellarmin de Eucharista, lib. i.), “None of the ancients who wrote of heresies hath put this ‘*error*’ (of the corporeal presence) in his catalogue, nor did any of them dispute about this ‘*error*’ for the first six hundred years.” Archbishop Tillotson, replying to this expression of Bellarmin, says: “True, for this doctrine of transubstantiation was not in being during the first six hundred years and more, as I have shown there could be no dispute against it.”—Tillotson on Transubstantiation, Ser. xxvi., p. 182. It was in the early part of the ninth century that Paschasius, a Benedictine monk, began to advocate the doctrine of transubstantiation. “Charles the Bald ordered the famous Bertram and Johannes Scotus, of Ireland, to draw up a clear and rational explication of that doctrine which Paschasius had so egregiously corrupted.”—Dowling’s Hist. Rome, p. 194. Bertram and Scotus both decided that the bread and wine were the signs and symbols of the “*absent* body and blood of Christ.” Rabanus Maurus, archbishop of Mentz, replied, in 847, to Paschasius, in which he opposed the “error” of transubstantiation with all his “might.” The discussion originated among the learned divines of that day—the question of “*Stercorianism!*” Long after this, in 1045, Berenger, of Tours, in France, firmly maintained the doctrine of Johannes Scotus against the monstrous doctrines of Paschasius. Berenger however was persecuted and opposed by Leo IX., Hildebrand and Nicholas II. ; and in several private Councils his theory was silenced. He died in 1088 ; but it was not until 1215, in the Council of Lateran, that transubstantiation was decreed to be a doctrine of the Church of Rome. The word transubstantiation was applied to the Eucharist about the year 1100 ; and it was inserted in the decree of the Council by Pope Innocent III. The decree read as follows, for the first time : “The body and blood of Christ are contained really in the sacrament of the altar, under the species of bread



and wine: the bread being *transubstantiated* into the body of Jesus Christ, and the wine into his blood by the power of God.'

All opposition to the doctrine was by no means silenced. Between the Council of Lateran and that of Trent there were doctors who, while declaring their belief in it, were yet admitting that they could not see it in the Scriptures. Duns Scotus, (Commentar Yon, Book iv. of Sentences) says: "I know not any Scripture declaration which, by itself, can oblige me to admit it." Cardinal D'Ailly (*ibid* Commentar) says: "This opinion, that the substance of the bread always remains, is not repugnant either to reason or scripture. It is even easier of comprehension, and more rational, if it could accord with the determination of the Church." Gabriel Biel, (in his Lessons on the Mass), says: "We do not find in the Bible in what manner Christ's body is there. That is proved by the authority of the Church and the saints, for by reasons it cannot be proved!" Bishop Fischer (against The Captivity of Babylon), just before the Council of Trent, said: "Here (in the narrative of the institution of the Supper) there is not a word by which one might prove the true presence of the body and blood of Jesus Christ. One cannot prove that, then, by Scripture." Hundreds of learned and pious Catholics have never believed this horrid doctrine, having neither scriptural authority, rational testimony, nor the historical axiom, "what has always and everywhere been taught, must be true," to support it.

The Council of Trent went squarely over to transubstantiation, which was unknown for more than six centuries; which was hinted at in the Council of Nice, 787; which was first taught by Paschasius in the ninth century; which received its name about the year 1100; which was hotly contested by learned and able Catholics until the Council of Lateran in 1215; which was not admitted by many erudite and pious Catholics between the Councils of Lateran



and Trent. There was scarcely any debate upon the doctrine at Trent—save between the Dominicans and Franciscans, as to whether Christ was *adduced* or *produced* in the Eucharist! The adversaries of the dogma were anathematized in the gross; and it is but just to say that transubstantiation was the great “*burning article*” in the language of Archbishop Tillotson, during the days of Roman Catholic persecution. Since the days of Innocent, multitudes of holy men and women have expired at the stake for not assenting to this contradiction of reason and scripture, first established by law in 1215. During the reign of bloody Queen Mary of England this dogma was generally made the “test question” by the persecutors of the Romish hierarchy. Rome has anathematized even her own historians who have been candid enough to relate the origin and progress of this doctrine. Bellarmin himself declares that it was Paschasius who first positively taught the “real presence,” in the ninth century. Paschasius himself admits that many of his brethren accused him, as we have already seen, of exaggerating the meaning of Christ’s words. It is not possible that so many eminent personages—abbots, bishops, archbishops, could have controverted, against Paschasius, what they knew or thought to have been an article of faith in the Church. Nobody, at the beginning of this controversy, was anathematized, persecuted, or burnt at the stake, for taking part against the doctrine. It is unquestionably a historical novelty—gradually developing into an absolute dogma at the Council of Trent. Canon I, of that Council, reads, as follows :

“If any one shall deny that in this most holy sacrament of the Eucharist, there are contained, truly, really, and substantially, the body and blood, together with the soul and divinity, of our Lord Jesus Christ; or say that it is only a sign, or figure, or by his influence (virtute); LET HIM BE ACCURSED !”

There are numbers of canons upon every phase of the subject, cursing, indiscriminately cursing, all who do not accept it as a whole and in all its parts. A wafer-god, the Host is now an object of idolatrous worship; and, in the language of Urban, the priest at the altar can boast of "the eminence granted to none of the angels, of creating God, the Creator of all things!" This is the great "burning article," so revolting to reason and sense, and for which millions of honest and intelligent Christians have been anathematized and consigned to an ignominious death. "O blessed Savior!" exclaims Archbishop Tillotson, "thou best friend and greatest lover of mankind, who can imagine that thou didst ever intend that men should kill one another, for not being able to believe contrary to their senses? for being unwilling to think that thou shouldst make one of the most horrid and barbarous things that can be imagined, a main duty and principal mystery of thy religion? for not flattering the pride and presumption of the priest who says he can make God, and for not complying with the folly and stupidity of the people who are made to believe that they can eat him?" Think of a mortal man, and often a corrupt one, creating his God in a wafer! making an oblation of him for the sins of God's people! eating the Son of God, whole and entire, for the impartation of divine life and grace! rational men and women bowing before the wafer-idol in worship and adoration! and you have before you the awful assumption of the Mass! Behold the *Feast of Corpus Christi*, established by Pope Urban IV., in which the wafer-idol is carried through the streets of Romish cities, in procession, signalized by scenes of merriment, rejoicing and illumination, and upon its approach all fall down upon their knees to worship it, till it has passed—and you have some idea of the spirit of idolatry and superstitious devotion which this monstrous invention has created in the hearts of a stupefied and benighted world! On any occasion,



whether public or private, the Host receives special adoration and honor; and it has a talismanic power over the great Roman Catholic heart, which no obligation, no reason, no scripture, no cause, no sense, no other power, can resist. It is the mystery of all other mysteries; and in proportion to the mystery of mystery, is mystery a blind, conscienceless, irrational power. A sacrament which atones for sin in the present world—which can indulge in, and raise the soul from, Purgatory—is something which the naturally depraved heart of mankind would rather believe, than to fall upon the simple heart faith, heart purity, and personal responsibility, of salvation by GRACE. Natural religion all tends to machinery—to churchism, priestism, sacramentalism. It wants an *indulging* religion—even if it has to *pay* for it, *work* for it, *die* for it! Catholicism pretendedly holds salvation by grace in its own hands. The authority, power and work of Christ has been usurped and vested in the Church, the priest, the sacrament; and, according to her, whosoever is saved must go through the ecclesiastical mill of Rome! In itself, Romanism is a system of redemption by works; and without her Church, priesthood, and sacraments—of which the Mass is chief—the grace of God is of none effect! Rome, tried in the balances of Reason, Revelation and History, is found wanting!

In conclusion, I assume that whatever can be proved of the Mass, can be proved of every other dogmatic assumption of Rome. They are, all of them, scriptural perversions, rational absurdities, historical novelties. The germ of all religious error lies, first, in taking *inference* for law; and, second, in canonizing *tradition* as the word of God. This leaves the Church a legislator; and legislation implies either an infallible Church, or an infallible human head. That the Church is “the pillar and ground of the truth”—its interpreter and supporter—I have no doubt; but its Head and Lawgiver is Christ only; its law is the revealed



scriptures which have been handed down to us; and the Holy Spirit its guide and inspiration. The last will and testament of our Lord Jesus Christ is our only law; and the sentiment of Chillingworth is true, "*The Bible only is the religion of Protestants.*" True Protestantism has always been a unit upon the great fundamental doctrine of salvation by grace—justification by faith; and whatever errors Protestantism, of any character, has imbibed, has arisen more from symbolization with Rome, than from any other variation from the scriptures. Upon vital questions, Protestantism has been substantially a unit, however unfortunately divided upon less essential points of an ecclesiastical and ceremonial character. Rome, herself, has not always been a unit. A novelty of gradual development, she has had a multitude of variations upon almost every dogma she holds. Popes have contradicted popes, and some of them have been deposed for corruption and heresy. Councils have contradicted councils; and scarcely a doctrine she holds now, but was once unknown as such, and has been hotly controverted in its origin and development. There is the Greek Catholic, Roman Catholic and Anglican Catholic, Churches—each condemning the other for heresies, and each claiming that the other is a schism. I had rather have the moral and substantial unity of Protestantism, with the Bible as its only law, Christ as its only Head, the Spirit as its only Guide—stripped of a thousand vague inferences and traditions—than to have the so-called unity of several Catholic despotisms, each claiming to be the only Church of Christ, each claiming apostolic succession and authority, each claiming infallibility and sanctity, when scripture and history contradict each and all these claims. What is unity and succession, if they be a unity and succession of error, corruption, crime and blasphemy? I do not doubt the unity and accession of Antichrist, right directly from the apostolic Churches—

although the unity, like the succession, has been gradual and conflicting in its origin, growth and development. Lucifer and his angels could, by usurpation and assumption become the successors of Jesus Christ and of his first disciples and apostles, and establish a universal church. Rome, with her celibacy, mariolatry, monkery, worship of saints and relics, with her striking resemblance between pagan and papal ceremonies, with her inquisitions and persecutions, with her swords and her keys, with her arrogation of infallibility and supremacy, with her corruptions and bloodshed, is welcome to her claim of succession and unity! So of all other churches which have had a similar history of superstition, tyranny, cruelty, error, and crime. It is only the fulfillment of that prophesy which points out, characterizes and symbolizes the Apocalyptic woman, "drunken with the blood of the saints," and the mother of a progeny which has, to some extent, resembled herself.

"The gates of hell" have never prevailed against the people of God—the true Church of Jesus Christ—holding to the simple and venerable doctrines, ordinances and practices of the New Testament. Like Israel of old, in the wilderness, the Church of Christ has been a wanderer and a pilgrim, or, like Jerusalem, a besieged city; sometimes in the fair open plain of prosperity; again amid the rugged crags of mountain fastnesses; again in caves and dens, and hid from the sight of history, as the "woman in the wilderness;" and always and everywhere persecuted and "spoken against." There is and can be no Catholic church, in the sense of a "universal church," until the Millennium. The church may be sometimes "*general*," but never "*universal*," until Jesus comes and binds Satan, and reigns himself, personally, on the earth. We are to preach the gospel to all nations; but there is no promise that all nations shall be converted, until Jesus comes and when a nation

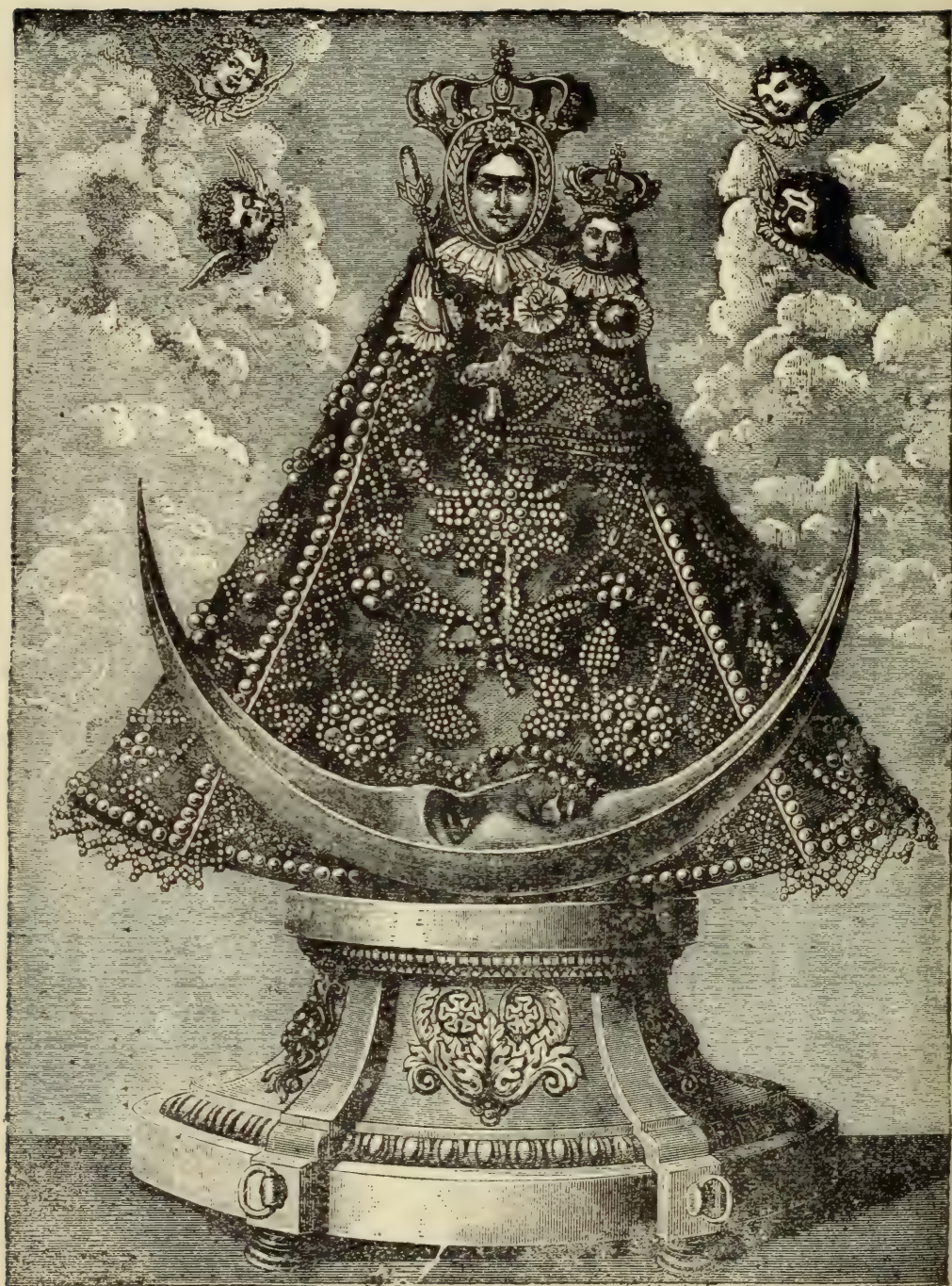


shall be converted in a day. There are 1,300,000,000 of people on earth, to-day—not one fourth of them true Christians—and for any Church to be claiming “catholicity,” is puerile and anti-scriptural. There is no church universal, even in any one country; and it is certain that the Church of Christ never has yet dreamed of being universal in this gospel age. The word “catholic,” itself, is a historical novelty; much more the title, “*Roman Catholic!*” “The Church” or “Churches” of God and of his Christ, are all the assumptions of title which are made in that modest, pure, holy and unpretentious gospel of Jesus Christ. There is nothing in that book which resembles the pompous characteristics, claims, ceremonies, forms, dogmas and assumptions of Catholicity. The republican simplicity, independence, purity, individuality and humility of Christ, of his apostles and early churches, have not the slightest correspondence with the Catholic pride, imperialism, absolutism, royalty, and gorgeous paraphernalia, of the Anglican, Roman and Greek Catholic Churches. These, and everything else, to the extent of favoring these, are novelties, unknown to Christ and his early Churches; and sprung up and developed out of false inferences from God’s word, and from unreliable traditions of the first anti-christian errorists. What is true of the Mass, as a scriptural perversion, a rational absurdity and a historical novelty, is true of the entire system of Roman, and of all other Catholicism. We want more evangelism and less catholicism. A catholicity which is not gospel, is anti-christian, whether it be the claim of liberalism or absolutism, of rationalism or ritualism. The only catholicity I recognize, is that which accepts Christ and him crucified, as the one and only Priest of our profession; his sacrifice on Calvary, as the one and only offering for sin; his salvation by grace, alone, through faith, as the one and only redemption; his word, the one and only law of our faith and practice; his Spirit, the one



and only guide of the Christian ; a New Testament Church or ordinance, as the one and only organism or institution of our government—each and all stripped of unwarrantable INFERENCE and TRADITION.





The Virgin as Worshipped in Mexico.





We are Catholics first and citizens next.

BISHOP GILMORE.

The most obvious, interesting and important view of the Catholic in his relations to the century is that of voting.

[189]

*Catholic World.*

## CHAPTER XII.

REV. JOHN A. WILSON,

ON

IMAGES, INDULGENCES AND INFALLIBILITY.

---

“For the priest’s lips should keep knowledge, and they should seek the law at his mouth; for he is the messenger of the Lord of hosts. But ye are departed out of the way; ye have caused many to stumble at the law; ye have corrupted the covenant of Levi, saith the Lord of hosts.”—[Malachi, ii. 7, 8.]

Such were the priests of God’s ancient people. They corrupted God’s ordinances; they made void God’s law by their traditions, and the people whom they should have guided and upheld, they caused to stumble. The blind led the blind, till finally both fell into the ditch. History is constantly repeating itself; as the wise man tells us, “The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be, and that which is done, is that which shall be done; and there is no new thing under the sun.”

In the priests of apostate Rome I find an exact counterpart of the priests of apostate Israel. They have polluted and profaned all religious rites; they have made the commandment of God of none effect by their tradition, and they are rapidly leading on a deluded people to a dreadful ditch which you can see described in the closing chapters of the book of Revelation. They teach men that the most infamous crimes can be confessed to them and pardoned



for a sum of money. They teach men that if all their sin is not washed away at the hour of death, they have still "another plank after shipwreck," and can confidently count on the remaining dregs being boiled and fried and beaten out of them in that laboratory of punishment and purification termed purgatory.

Let me repeat one of the principal arguments with which they seek to establish this fable and false hope. In Matt. xii. 32, Christ says that whosoever shall speak against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. "Wherefore," says Bishop Challoner, "our Lord, who could not speak anything absurd or out of the way, would never have mentioned forgiveness in the world to come, if sins not forgiven in this world could never be forgiven in the world to come."

I will analyze that argument; and the best way to do so, will be to put it in the form of a syllogisim. Some sins are not forgiven in this world; some sins are not forgiven in the world to come; therefore, some sins *are* forgiven in the world to come. Is that Reason, or is it Rome? Is that logic, or is it lunacy? I see Professors and logicians before me. I will submit to any of them if it would not be as true a conclusion from the above premises, to say, therefore the moon is made of green cheese! Verily, Aristotle and the makers of Romish Catechisms must have fallen out. Surely the whole family of authors on logic must be honored with a place in the Index Expurgatorius. From that specimen of a *Bishop's* reasoning, what, think you, must be the logic of the *laity*? If that be a fair sample of their reason, I am the less surprised at the readiness with which they sacrifice it upon the altar of "Mother Church." It is a violation, however, of the old Levitical law, which forbade offering to the Lord the lame, and the halt, and the blind! I must not linger here, however, but pass on to the

broad and inviting field which opens up before us this evening; so broad,\*indeed, that I can but briefly touch the several topics. I have promised to show you this evening that the Roman Catholic Church believes in images and saints; in indulgences and in infallibility.

The worship of images and saints is very closely connected, so I will give you a hasty sketch of the Papal belief on both these doctrines.

On the subject of image-worship, the delightful unity of the happy family of Rome is fairly illustrated. Her Councils flatly contradict one another, and her commentators are at war. I might just say here, that you have read history, to little purpose if you have not discovered a natural bent in fallen humanity toward idolatry. Hence, as the Church began to apostatize, we would look for the introduction of images. They were introduced; and, in a Council held in Constantinople in the year 754, they were solemnly condemned. But in the year 787 the Empress Irene, an infamous woman, who had murdered her husband, called a Council for the express purpose of authorizing image-worship. Let me ask you to notice as we pass along, that for many centuries it was the civil rulers, and not the Popes, who called the Councils of the Church. But to come back to Irene and her Council. It met, as directed, in Constantinople; but the hatred of images was so intense in that city, that the Council did not dare to issue the decree which was demanded. It either adjourned, or was dissolved, and called to meet the next year at Nice. There, under the name of the Second Council of Nice, and under the influence of such a woman as I have described, this Council denounced the previous anti-image Council as heretical, and ordained the worship of images.

But this is not all. In the year 794 the Emperor Charlemagne called a Council, to meet at Frankfort-on-the-Main. This Council emphatically condemned the decrees of the



previous Council, and forbade the worship of pictures and images.

Other Councils and synods were held, which condemned image worship in no unmistakable terms. But apostacy was steadily gaining ground. In 842 the Empress Theodora called a Council at Constantinople. She had lately deposed the Patriarch John, with 200 lashes, for his opposition to images; so you can readily imagine that her Council, with great unanimity, gave its sanction to the worship of idols.

But let this suffice to show the struggle through which the Church passed in contending against this monster error, which struck at the very seat and center of her life, her spirituality. It was a struggle like that of a noble animal battling against the ever tightening folds of a huge serpent. The resistance grew gradually less, till at length spiritual worship lay prostrate, and idolatry, bold and bald, held up its hydra head in triumph.

But now let me show you a sample of the evidence with which this Church, which possesses a monopoly of salvation, seeks to establish the worship of images. I will quote first from Dens' Theology: "Prove that the images of Christ and the saints are to be worshipped." "It is proved in the first place from the Council of Trent, where it will say against sectarians, that the images of Christ, and of the Virgin Mother of God, and of the other saints, are to be kept and retained especially in temples, and that due honor and veneration are to be paid to them."

Now mark, the first great authority for the worship of images is drawn, not from Scripture, but from the Council of Trent. I can tell you, further, that the Council of Trent presented no Scripture proof, but in its last session hastily passed over this subject of image-worship, evidently feeling that it was not able to grapple with it, and that the less said the better.

But now as to the quality of the worship given to



the images, what does the Church of Rome teach? for this is the loophole through which she seeks to escape from the charge of idolatry.

I quote again from Dens' Theology. "With what worship are the images of Christ and the saints to be worshipped?"

"Saint Thomas replies to the question, that images may be honored with the same worship with which their prototype is honored, but only with a relative or respective worship; therefore, the images of the saints are worshipped with the respective veneration of *dulia*; of the Divine Virgin with the relative worship of *hyperdulia*; of Christ and of God with the respective worship of *latria*."

'Many, however, maintain that this respective worship paid to images ought to be less than the worship shown to the prototype itself; and hence they infer that the worship of *latria* is due to no image. They rely upon the Seventh Synod,' (which synod or Council I have shown you was denounced and cursed by the Second Council of Nice) "which says that *latria* is not to be shown to images, because it belongs only to the divine nature. But others explain the seventh synod concerning absolute *latria*, which is not due to the images of Christ, although the respective worship of *latria* is due to them; and, therefore, they may be adored with less honor than the prototype, which are not repugnant to one another. However this may be, it is sufficient for us against sectarians, that all Catholics teach and prove that the images of the saints are to be worshipped!"

I find then, from authority which no one will dare call in question, that the great Saint Thomas Aquinas, one of the very first authorities in the Church of Rome, teaches that an image may receive the same worship as that which is represented by it; Christ's image may receive the same worship as Christ himself. I find, moreover, that others, among whom is the celebrated Cardinal Bellarmine, another

Papal light of the first magnitude, teach that the same *quality* of worship is to be given to the image as to that which it represents, only it should be *less in degree*.

Now, I ask, has that Church of endless inventions ever yet devised a meter to indicate to her people the length to which it is safe to go in this worship of images? Who is going to tell the poor, ignorant, bigoted worshipper before that picture, when he has gone as far as the law allows? Can any such line of distinction be drawn? You answer, I am sure, from the depths of your souls. it is impossible, it is impossible!

You are aware, perhaps, that the Church of Rome divides worship into three grades, *latria* being the name of the highest sort; that which is something less is styled *hyperdulia*, while the lowest order of all is called *dulia*. Now, I confess my inability to comprehend fully such a division of worship. It reminds me of an Irishman who used to work for us on the farm at home. He had different rates which he charged for a day's labor; his very highest price was for what he termed his "best licks." Can it be that "*latria*" is only another name for the Papist's "best licks" in devotion!

Now, with one blow I will demolish "*dulia*," and pass on. The Church of Rome makes a distinction between the Greek words *douleia* and *latreia*, and tells us that the former means an inferior worship, which may be given to images, while the latter expresses the homage which is due to God. Now I assure you that distinction springs from the fertile imaginations of Papal theologians, and has no support from the word of God. Here are two examples; Matthew vi. 24, "Ye cannot serve God and Mammon." But here turning to my Greek Testament I find that the word translated serve, or worship, is the very same from which Romanists draw their "*dulia*," their inferior worship. Christ says in these words, then, ye cannot give the worship of



“dulia” to God and Mammon; or, in other words, ye must not give “dulia” to any object but God. One other text, I Thessalonians, 1-9: “Ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living and true God.” Here again I find in the Greek that the service which the Thessalonians gave to the living and true God, is but the translation of that word in which my Roman Catholic friends find their inferior worship “dulia.” Taking, then, their own divisions of worship, I submit to you if I have not proved, beyond all controversy, that those who give the worship of “dulia” to pictures and images are guilty of idolatry.

Indeed the Romish theologians were so well satisfied that their practice was unscriptural, that they struck the second commandment out of the decalogue. “I defy any man,” says Dr. Berg, “to show me the second commandment in any one of the manuals of the Romish Church, before the Reformation.” If any of you happen to have Butler’s Catechism, much used in Ireland, just look for the second commandment in it. It is said that in a spelling-book commonly found in Italian schools, the fourth commandment is also omitted, and in its stead is inserted this command of Rome: “Remember to keep holy the days of festivals.”

In Dens’ Theology I read as follows: “Prove that it was not forbidden to make these images.” “It is plainly proved; for we read, that likenesses and images of cherubim were made by Moses at the command of God; also, by the command of God, Moses erected a brazen serpent.” Dr. Dens does not add, however, as he should have done in all honesty, that these cherubim covered the mercy seat in the holy of holies, and were never seen save by the High Priest once a year. He does not add, that when the people fell to worshipping the brazen serpent, the good Hezekiah broke it in pieces; he broke, also, the images.

The great uneasiness of the Romish Church on this sub-



ject is indicated in all their catechisms which I take up. They seem to consider Protestants a very good and safe authority, so the question is always asked, "Have you any instances of this kind of relative honor allowed by Protestants?" "Yes; in the honor they give to the name of Jesus, to their churches, to the altar, to the Bible," etc. Now, do you ever see a Protestant kneeling to any of these things, and praying *to* them, or *through* them? If you do, then exercise your privilege as a Protestant, and tell him to go home to Rome!

None deny that the highest worship is given to the bread and wine in the sacrament of the Supper. The Council of Trent says, "The faithful must give to the holy sacrament of the altar that divine adoration that is due to God only; and it must be no reason to prevent this, that Christ our Lord gave it to be eaten."

Now, from a Protestant stand-point, this is *confessed idolatry*. But with the fifty causes and more, which they say prevent the sacrament from being formed, it amounts to a moral certainty, even from a papal point of view, that at times transubstantiation does not take place, and the poor, deluded people are giving the divine worship of *latria* to a bit of bread.

I will just say now, in conclusion on this topic, that the Papists' plea for images is just the plea of all idolaters. We do not worship the image, say some Romanists, but God through the image. So say the heathen. No heathen, so far as I am informed, teaches that the worship terminates on the idol. The worshippers of Jove and of Minerva certainly did not; the Egyptians certainly did not; the worshippers of Baal certainly did not. Israel made a calf at Sinai, but only as "a help to devotion," for Aaron said, "to-morrow is a feast of Jehovah." But God was angry with them, and punished them for their idolatry. Again and again, Israel resorted to these heathenish "helps to

devotion," and were as often punished severely for it. At length Jeroboam led off the ten tribes, and set up two calves to be worshipped "relatively;" but for this act, he received that title of infamy, "Jeroboam, the son of Nebat, who made Israel to sin," and he brought upon his nation such utter destruction that no man knoweth their dwelling place until this day.

Now, concerning this false worship of Jeroboam, let me say, the people sacrificed nominally to the Lord, just as in Jerusalem; but they bowed before the calves and kissed them.

If, however, you want to see bowing and kissing, to an extent which Jeroboam's calves never enjoyed, just go to some favorite image of the Church of Rome, that of St. Peter, for instance. Though the statue is of brass, the great toe is very considerably worn away by this osculatory process. The worshipper first bows till the forehead touches the toe, then kisses it, then bows again. Yet this, forsooth, is only lifting his heart aloft to God! Is any one so simple as to believe this? Surely not. The distinguishing mark of the faithful in the days of Elijah was that they did not bow the knee to Baal, nor kiss his image. (1 Kings, xix. 18.) Let me now give you the prayer used in the consecration of images, as it is found in the *Rituale Romanum*, authorized by Pope Urban VIII.

"Grant, O God, that whosoever before this image shall diligently and humbly, upon his knees, worship and honor thy only begotten Son, or the blessed virgin (according as the image is that is consecrating), or this glorious apostle, or martyr, or confessor, or virgin, that he may obtain by his or her merits, and intercession, grace in this present life, and eternal glory hereafter."

Against all this teaching and practice of the Church of Rome, I might bring you the uniform testimony of history, that image-worship invariably leads to the grossest forms



of idolatry, even when introduced under pretense of aiding true devotion. I will only detain you, however, while I cite the command of God: "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth; thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them." (Ex. xx. 4.)

That is surely sufficiently plain and precise. But lest there should be any mistake on this vital matter, God says again, in the fourth chapter of Deuteronomy: "Take ye, therefore, good heed unto yourselves, lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure, the likeness of male or female, for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the Lord spoke unto you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire." "God is a spirit; and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth." (John, iv. 24.)

On the subject of saint-worship, I will add but a word, for it is all of a piece with that of which I have been speaking. In the first place, let me say, we do not know that the departed dead hear us when we pray to them. The Bible nowhere implies such a knowledge on their part, but always the reverse. Elijah told his devoted servant to ask what he would *before he was taken away from him*.

Another matter would have to be settled before I could be induced to pray to saints. Is it perfectly certain that all the Roman Catholic saints are in heaven? You can readily see the necessity of having this point definitely settled; because if the dead do hear us and come at our call, and if by mistake I should call upon one who is not in heaven, but somewhere else, I would then be in the embarrassing position of having, not a *white elephant*, but a *black saint* on my hands. Yet if history does not do vast injustice to the canonized, the real saintship of some of them is, to say the very least, apocryphal. But I have another difficulty.



If the saints can hear the prayers of those on earth, can they hear the cry of all from every quarter of the globe? If they can, then are they omnipresent and equal with God.

But we are told in the "Catholic Christian Instructed" that "the saints may know them by the angels, whose conversation they enjoy." Now, that does not help me out of my difficulty in the least, for I deny that angels hear our prayers. But suppose they did; then picture to yourself such a scene as this would imply. Imagine an angel before the throne crying out, Ho, St. Patrick, some one in Cork is praying to you. But his voice has not ceased to echo when another, and another, and ten thousand times ten thousand others cry out to the saint that his immediate help is invoked in every quarter of the globe. Fancy the confusion of poor Patrick. Would he not wish he had never been canonized?

There is another objection to this doctrine which appeals very strongly to my Protestant mind, that is, the Bible forbids this practice. In the "Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine" I read: "We desire no more of the saints than what we desire of our brethren here below." Take, then, the example of the great Apostle Peter: when the Centurion fell down at his feet, "Peter took him up, saying, stand up, I myself also am a man." Another example conclusively condemning this custom, is found in Rev. xix. 10, where we are told that John fell down at the feet of the angel to worship him; but the angel answered, "see thou do it not." Dr. Dens explains this by saying, "it was on account of the great holiness of John." But in the "Abridgment of Christian Doctrine," Dr. James Doyle, with less candor, cites this text in support of saint-worship, and artfully omits the angel's answer. Is that a sample, I would ask, of the honesty of "Holy Mother Church," out of which there is no salvation? Is it any wonder that the Church, which can so utterly pervert and mutilate and misrepresent

and dismember the Word of God, should be anxious to keep it from the people, in order to cover up her deception?

Let me give you now a sample of the prayers offered to the saints, from the "Christian's Guide to Heaven," page 198: "O, blessed Virgin, Mother of God! and by this august quality worthy of all respect from men and angels, I come to offer thee my most humble homage, and to implore the aid of thy prayers and protection. Thou art all-powerful with the Almighty, and thy goodness for mankind is equal to thy influence in heaven; \* \* \* and whatever graces I have received from God, I confess, with humble gratitude that it is through thee I received them," etc., etc., ad nauseam.

In contrast with this blasphemy, let me quote a few passages from the word of God: "If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the Righteous; and He is the propitiation for our sins." (1 John, ii. 1.) "There is one God, and one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus." (1 Tim. ii. 5.) "Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me." (John, xiv. 6)

"Come unto me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." (Matt. xi. 28.) This is the privilege and the duty of all. Why, then, will men leave the fountain of living waters, and make them cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water? O brother man! let us accept the Lord Jesus as our intercessor and our friend; let us hide ourselves, like Moses, in the Rock, and there the Lord will show us His glory, and make His goodness pass before us.

I come now to the Papal doctrine of indulgences.

And here I must be very brief, though the subject is very broad. It involves one of the principal differences between Papists and Protestants. No doctrine of the Romish Church is more destructive, as none is more opposed to



the teaching of the Scriptures. If you asked me what indulgences were, I could not answer you more briefly, or more plainly, than by saying, the Romish doctrine of indulgences, stripped of all its trimmings, is simply *justification by works*. It was against this teaching, and in defense of the Bible doctrine of *justification by faith alone* that Luther made the issue which led to the Reformation.

Happening upon a Bible in the library of the monastery, Luther read in it, "The just shall live by faith." That little text, brought to the great man's soul by the Spirit of God, was the seed of the glorious Reformation. The infamous John Tetzel was sent out armed with full power by Pope Leo X., to sell indulgences. Luther refused to acknowledge their legality, and complained to his bishop. But the Bishop, meek man, advised him to be quiet or he would get into trouble. The agent from Rome even went so far as to have piles of wood set on fire, to suggest to the heretic the propriety of not interfering with his trade. But Luther was cast in the wrong mould to be frightened by fire. He nailed his ninety-five propositions to the door of the Church in Wittemberg, and offered to defend them by argument. Thus, the sale of indulgences were made of God the means of bringing about the Reformation, to which we are indebted to-day for civil and religious liberty—aye for civilization itself, in all its truer and higher forms. But let us come to the exact teaching of the Church on this doctrine. The Council of Trent says that "Whoever shall affirm that when the grace of justification is received, the offense of the penitent sinner is so forgiven, and the sentence of eternal punishment so reversed that there remains no temporal punishment to be endured before the entrance into the kingdom of heaven, either in this world or in the future state in purgatory, let him be accursed."

In Dr. Dens' Theology this question is asked, "What is an indulgence?" "It is the remission of temporal pun-



ishment due to sins remitted as to their guilt, made by the power of the keys, apart from the sacrament, by the application of satisfactions which are contained in the treasury of the Church."

"What is meant by the treasury of the Church?" "It is an accumulation of spiritual blessings remaining in divine acceptance, and whose disposition is intrusted to the Church."

The Doctor goes on to explain that the resources of this treasury are infinite by reason of the satisfaction of Christ, and the superabundant satisfactions which are daily added by pious men.

Now I will illustrate this doctrine as clearly and candidly as I can. During our late war, men were sometimes drafted to serve in the army. If they furnished substitutes who passed muster, the Government was satisfied; but if they could not do this, the Government would itself, for a sum of money, provide a substitute. Now the Church of Rome teaches that part of the punishment due to sin, and part of the redemption price of the sinner, is not borne and paid by Christ, but the sinner must bear it, or pay it himself. He may, however, provide a substitute to take it in part, or in toto. But here comes in the charity of "Mother Church," and her great care for her children. Lest some poor fellow should be unable to find a substitute who had more righteousness than he needed, or knew what to do with, the Church erected a great reservoir, or elevator, or treasury, and all the goodness of the faithful, over and above what they barely needed for themselves, reverts to the Church, and is stored away, to be disposed of to other faithful who are a trifle "short." To a grain or oil merchant this would look a little like getting up a "corner" in the "heavenly treasures of the Church;" but where there is a "savor of filthy lucre," or "an appearance of falsity," the Council of Trent recommends that no questions be asked! I must, however, present a few objections to this

toll gate on the way of life, and if I sin in so doing, I promise to never draw on the "heavenly treasures" of Rome to pay my commutation.

In the first place, I deny the very point which the Church of Rome takes for granted, viz: that a part of the sinner's ransom price is paid by himself. The Bible, from beginning to end, cries out against such teaching. I deny that the sufferings which God's children may be called upon to endure are any part of the price of redemption, and I deny also that priests or Pope have any treasury in Heaven, or earth, or under the earth, from which they can draw to pay the least part of the price.

In all the Roman Catholic Catechisms which I have seen, the case of David is referred to as an example. It is said "that although upon his repentance the Prophet Nathan assured him that the Lord had put away his sin, yet he denounced unto him many temporal punishments which should be inflicted by reason of this sin, which accordingly afterwards ensued."

This punishment, however, could have been remitted by an indulgence. How absurd! how profane! to tell us that if Ahithophel, the perjured traitor to his friend, and the would-be murderer of his King, had only been in "holy orders," he could have, for a little backshish, saved the King from all the agony and misfortunes of his afterlife, and done that which the Lord God, merciful and gracious, long-suffering and abundant in goodness and truth, was unwilling or unable to do! What a privilege we enjoy who live in these last days, in which the Lord has resigned His throne and the reins of government to man! No, no, David could never have been saved in this way, nor would he have been if he could. Like the great Paul, he gloried in tribulation as a Fatherly discipline for developing his spiritual nature, and not as a part of the price of redemption which he was compelled to pay, for he was already redeemed—



not after the manner of Rome, with corruptible things, such as silver and gold, but with the precious blood of Christ, which cleanses from all sin, and pays the whole price. I object to this doctrine again, because it teaches that *the atonement of Christ is not sufficient for our salvation*; therefore, when He said, upon the cross, "it is finished," he uttered a falsehood.

I have showed you in my last lecture that the Council of Trent pronounces him accursed who shall say that the favor of God and the righteousness of Christ are the only ground of our justification and salvation.

No; after our way has been paid, we must either work our passage, or fee the pirates who have seized upon the ship. Now what say the Scriptures?

"And by him all that believe are justified from *all things*." (Acts, xiii. 39.) "Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight." (Romans, iii. 20.) "Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that heareth my word, and believeth on Him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; (neither in purgatory nor any other place), but is passed from death unto life." (John, v. 24.) I object still further to this doctrine because it teaches that *we may do more, and be better, than God's holy law requires*. This surplus goodness goes into "the heavenly treasures of the Church," and is, for a consideration, applied to the account of some one else. This is the way the Church of Rome seeks to frustrate the grace of God. But turn to the law and the testimony: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind and with all thy strength." (Mark, xii 30.) What room does that leave for a *surplus* of good works? But again: "When ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, we are unprofitable servants; we have done that which was our duty to do." (Luke, xvii. 10.)



If supererogation is a doctrine of our religion, one thing is certain, the Author of that religion knew it not. I object still again to this doctrine, because it teaches that *pardon may be purchased with money*; hence the extensive and lucrative traffic in indulgences. But in my Bible I read: "They that trust in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches; none of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him." (Ps. xlix. 6.) I read in the eighth chapter of Acts, of one who tried to buy the gift of God with money; but his experience should surely warn others to not repeat the experiment. O, that every one in the Church of Rome could hear this joyful message of the gospel, "The gift of God is eternal life and this life is in His Son."

My last objection is, that the Church which teaches this doctrine does not believe it. In proof of this assertion I need only remind you of the fact that they are now praying, and saying masses for the deliverance of their dead Pope. Yet think of how many "planks" he had "after shipwreck." Here was the whole "heavenly treasure of the Church" under his own control. He had likewise the sacraments of penance, and of extreme unction, and I know not how many more. Yet, after all, there remains a doubt—a dreadful, dreadful doubt—*he may be in purgatory*.

How can a man with such a faith, or, I should rather say, with such an absence of faith, approach death without fear and trembling?

O how much better the simple faith of the Protestant, who, leaning only on the rod and staff of the Great Shepherd, can smile at death, and say, I am going home; when I am absent from the body I shall be present with the Lord.

But I must now speak of the greatest and newest dogma of the Roman Church, viz: Infallibility. That is her dogma of dogmas; the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last of a good Catholic's faith.

I have not time this evening to enter upon an exhaustive discussion of the subject. Nor is such an argument necessary. On its face the doctrine is such a palpable absurdity, that it was no sooner born than it became the laughing-stock to the whole civilized world—aye, and to the uncivilized even. It is the most conspicuous example in history of ambition and impiety overleaping themselves. But while I may not follow this doctrine from the day when Christ said, “Thou art Peter,” to the day the Vatican Council said, “Thou art God,” I will yet present a few thoughts on the subject, as clearly and concisely as possible. Here is the decree of the Vatican Council of July 1870:

“We, therefore, faithfully adhering to the tradition, received from the beginning of the Christian faith, for the glory of God our Savior, the exaltation of the Christian religion, and the salvation of Christian people, the sacred Council giving its sanction, teach and define that it is a dogma divinely revealed, that the Pope of Rome, when he speaks *ex cathedra*—that is, when discharging the duty of pastor and teacher of all Christians, he defines a doctrine by his supreme apostolic authority, either about faith or morals, to be held by the universal Church, by the divine assistance promised him in most blessed Peter—is possessed of that infallibility by which the divine Redeemer wished His Church to be instructed; therefore, definitions of the Roman Pontiff of this description are of themselves irrefragable, and not from the consent of the Church. But if any one shall presume to contradict this definition of ours, which may God avert, let him be anathema.”

I have called this a new doctrine in the Romish Church. The proof of this is not hard to find; it is stated by many of their Councils and many of their authors. A catechism authorized in England prior to the late Council contains the following question and answer: “Are not Catholics bound to believe the Pope in himself to be infallible?” “This

Question—Did Jesus Christ himself assure us most solemnly and in plain words, that no one can be saved out of the Roman Catholic Church?

Answer—He did when he said to his Apostles, “Go and teach all nations, etc.”

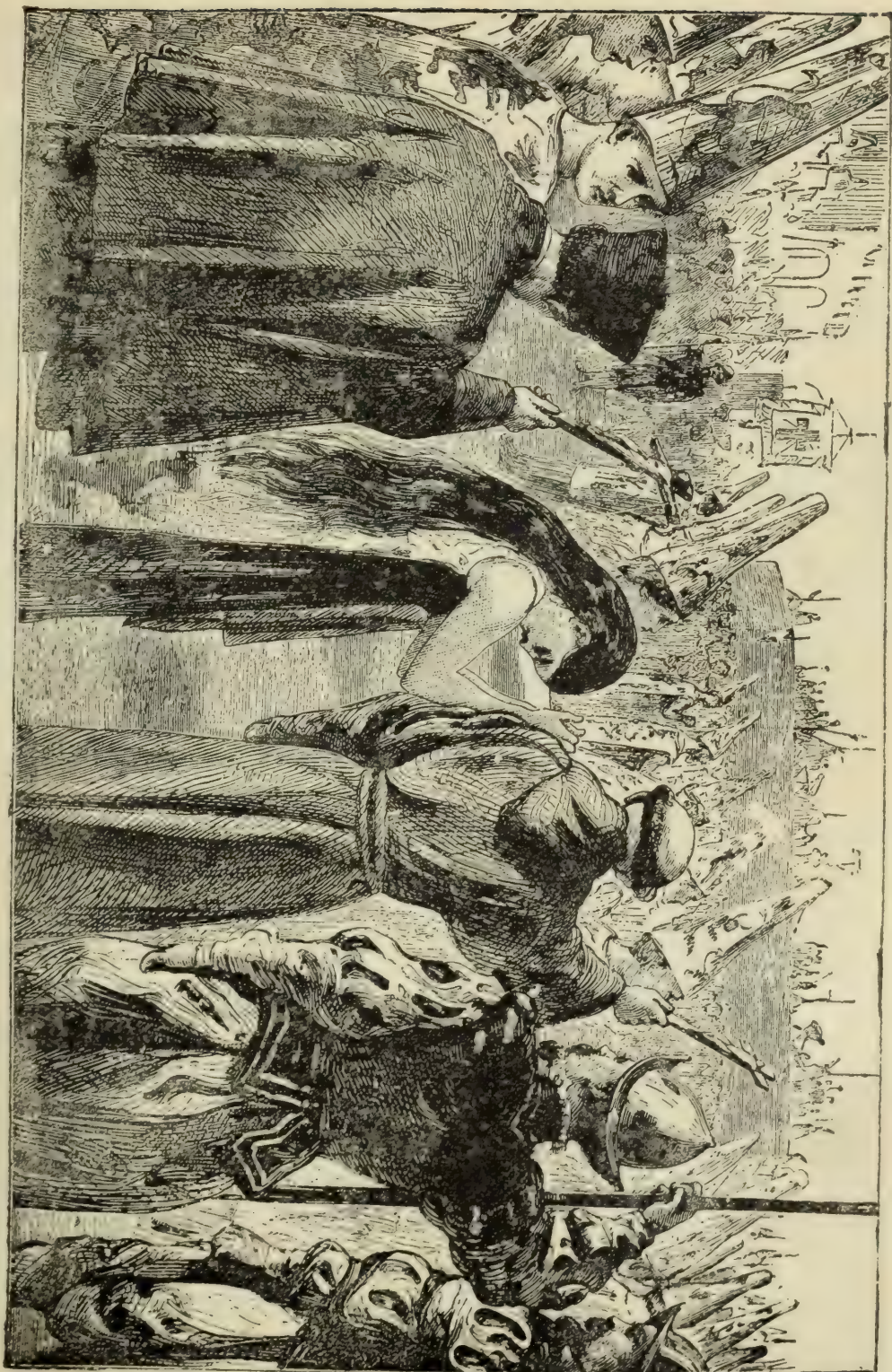
Q.—Why cannot Protestants who die out of the Roman Catholic Church be saved?

A.—1. They have no divine faith. 2. They make a liar of Jesus Christ, of the Holy Ghost, and of the Apostles. 3. They fell away from the true Church of Christ. 4. They are too proud to submit to the Pope, the Vicar of Jesus Christ. 5. They slander the Spouse of Jesus Christ—the Catholic Church.—From Catholic Text-Book for Schools, Sanctioned by Archbishop Bayley. [206]





Victims of the Inquisition Marching to the Stake.







is a Protestant invention, and is no article of the Catholic faith."

The Council of Constance, which deposed three Popes, and, likewise, the Council of Basil, decreed, "That a Synod has its power immediately from Christ, to which every one, of what State soever, or dignity he be, yea even the Pope himself ought to be obedient, which if he be not, but shall contumaciously condemn the decrees, statutes and ordinances of the Council, except he repent he shall suffer condign punishment, though it be the Pope himself."

I believe I am correct in stating that the generally accepted doctrine of that Church, prior to the meeting of the late council, was that the Church's infallibility lay in the council and Pope acting together.

But behold! in a moment a new planet is seen in the Ecclesiastical firmament. Nor is it any vagrant comet, but a genuine fixed star, which has been there from the beginning, but is only now discovered by the dim-eyed sons of men. The chief Scripture authority on which the Pope founds his pretensions is those well-known words of Christ: "Thou art Peter," etc.

But this old argument has been explained and exploded ten thousand times, so I will not go over it this evening. I will give you, very briefly, a few of my reasons for rejecting the Pope, and with him, of course, his infallibility.

First, then, there is no evidence that Peter was over the other apostles, or even that he was *first among equals*. After the text to which I have just alluded, Bishop Challoner, in the Catholic Christian Instructed, proves Peter's supremacy in this wise: "Matthew, reckoning the names of the apostles, says: The first, Simon, who is called Peter. Now it does not appear that he could be said to be the first upon any other account, but by reason of his supremacy." The Bishop settles the whole question, however, when he adds, "It is worth observing that our Lord was pleased to

teach the people out of Peter's ship, and that he ordered the same tribute to be paid for himself and Peter." Now I am sure you have never met with anything more thoroughly puerile, even in the nursery. Yet such is the evidence upon which we are asked to accept the doctrine of the Papacy, with all its endless train of absurdities, even to infallibility. In the Council of Jerusalem, it was James who gave the opinion which was adopted.

Paul "withstood Peter to the face because he was to be blamed;" and the Church *sent* Peter to Samaria to aid Philip. These things surely prove that Peter was not a Pope. But if a belief in this doctrine is essential to our salvation, as the Vatican Council declares, do you not suppose, *are you not sure*, it would have been as clearly revealed as the saving doctrine of justification by faith, or that glorious fact, the resurrection of the dead?

My next objection is, Peter never was in Rome, as far as we know. There is not the least evidence in Scripture, or in history, to show that Peter ever visited "the Eternal City;" yet despite this absence of evidence the Church of Rome coolly declares that he was there, and pronounces her anathema on all who ask for proof.

My next objection is, if Peter had been in Rome and established a Church, there is not an atom of evidence in Scripture, or anywhere else, to prove that the Pope is his successor, and the head of the universal Church.

This, you will notice, is a very important link in the chain of evidence, but unfortunately for the Papist, it is a missing link. Where did Peter say that Linus, or any other man, was to succeed him as Pope or apostle? Nowhere! Nowhere! Indeed Mr. Darwin does not lack so many links in his chain of evidence that the Pope's ancestors were apes, as the Church of Rome lacks in her chain of proof that the Pope's ancestors were apostles.

My next objection to the Pope and his infallibility, is the



utter absence of resemblance between him and Peter. Here is a little picture of the Popes of Rome from the Ecclesiastical Annals of Cardinal Baronius of that Church. "What unworthy, vile, unsightly—yea, what execrable and hateful things the sacred and apostolic see has been compelled to suffer. To our shame and grief be it spoken, how many monsters, horrible to behold, were intruded by them into that seat which is revered by angels! With what filth was it her fate to be besprinkled which was without spot or wrinkle; with what stench to be infected; with what impurities to be defiled!"

That is a sorry picture of the Papacy by a Papist. But, further, Dr. Dens says that some admit that Pope Marcellinus burnt incense to an idol, but he claims it was done through fear of death, "and, therefore, that he sinned against the faith, but did not lose the faith internally."

I am aware, however, that this is not evidence in the case, since the Roman Catholic Church teaches that her clergy may be living in mortal sin, and yet perform the highest and most holy functions of the Church.

Peter, however, was not only pure, he was unpretentious as well. He never dreamed of supremacy. He says, "The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder."

He was only an equal among equals. He forbade being lords over God's heritage.

But how different the Pope. One of his titles is "*Dominus Deus noster Papa*"—Our Lord God the Pope.

The editor of the late Pope's Speeches, Rev. Don Pasquale, speaks of the inspired author in this way, "He is the portentous Father of the nations; he is the living Christ; he is the voice of God; he is Nature, that protests; he is God that condemns."\*

I could give you many more such blasphemous titles

---

\*See "Speeches of Pope Pius IX.," by Right Honorable W. E. Gladstone, M. P.



from Romish authors, but I spare you. The Apostle Peter lifted up Cornelius, and refused to let him kneel before him. Does the Pope of Rome do likewise? No, by no means. I have seen the late Pope, arrayed in gorgeous apparel, and seated upon a throne, borne into the Cathedral on the shoulders of men. "The faithful" kneeled before him as to a god. You would expect the successor of Peter to object; but no, he snuffed up with complacency, like Herod of old, the impious incense, and smiling blandly, he waved his hand to and fro, scattering his blessings over the kneeling idolaters. Yet this modern Herod claimed to be the vicar of the meek and lowly Nazarene, who, when men would force him to be a king, withdrew from them into a mountain alone.

I might also speak of the contrast between Peter and the Pope, inasmuch as the former taught submission to kings and governors, while the latter—the infallible Pope—teaches that he is supreme over *all kings and governments*, and can free subjects from their allegiance. But my last objection to this doctrine, is, that *it kills itself*. If you erect a great building on the sand, it is sure to tumble about your ears; just so does this pretentious and unfounded doctrine of the Church of Rome fall by its own weight. Let me prove this. Gregory the Great, who was Bishop of Rome from the year 590 to 604, used this language, "But I confidently say, that whosoever calls himself universal Bishop, or desires to be called so, in his pride, is the forerunner of antichrist, because in his pride he prefers himself to the rest." Now was Pope Gregory infallible? if so, then the present Pope is the forerunner of antichrist, and, my point is proved.

But was Gregory not infallible? then is my position equally well established, and away go Rome's proud pretensions. Take which horn of the dilemma you please, it matters not to me, but down goes your ridiculous dogma

of infallibility forever ! Dr. Dens explains this statement of Gregory in the following lucid language, "St. Gregory means that it is blasphemous in this sense, as though one man were bishop of the whole Church, and the rest were not true bishops of their own Churches." But again, Pope Urban and his learned counsellors condemned the teaching of the immortal Galileo in these words, "The proposition that the sun is the center of the world, and immovable from its place, is absurd, philosophically false, and formally heretical, because expressly contrary to the holy Scriptures." Is the sun still spinning round our earth ? or is this infallible decree of Urban, an infallible falsehood ?

Again, "The Holy Council of Basil pronounces, decrees, and declares Pope Eugenius IV. to be notoriously contumacious, a simoniac, a perjured man, an obstinate heretic." His Infallible Highness returned their compliments in the following elegant style : "The evil spirits of the whole world seem to have collected in that den of robbers at Basil : we declare and decree that each of the above were and are schismatics and heretics." Beautiful infallibility !!

But again, I find John XXIII. deposed by the Council of Constance. Had John lost his infallibility ? or was the Council of Constance fallible ? And if councils can ever be fallible, may it not be that the Vatican Council had one of those fallible "spells" when it pronounced the Pope infallible ? How am I to reconcile these things ? How am I to get any firm footing for my faith ? Still further, I find that not once or twice, but many times, there were rival Popes ; yet all Roman Catholics admit that but one could be a true Pope, the rest were impostors. But here arises a very serious difficulty : these impostors—who, by the confession of Catholics, were no more successors of Peter than I am—created cardinals and bishops, some of whom afterward became Popes. In view of this notorious fact, let me ask,



what becomes of *the glorious succession from the Apostles*, of which the clergy of the Catholic Church boast so loudly? The answer must be, It vanishes like darkness before the day; it fades away like "the baseless fabric of a vision."

Another hindrance to my accepting the dogma of infallibility is this: I find three Popes, Benedict XIII., Gregory XII., and Alexander V., all infallible at one and the same time; but alas! my poor heart sinks within me as I read on, and find that each eternally damned and demolished the other, so far as papal bulls, and paper bullets, can damn and demolish. *They spoke ex cathedra, too!* Now, must I go to hell if I cannot reason away my reason, and believe that these men were all infallibly right and infallibly wrong at one and the same time?

Council contradicts Council, and Pope curses Pope, yet everything is serene, and all are not only "honorable men," as Brutus was, but they are *infallible* as well!

Is this reason, or is it Rome? Is it heresy to come out from a Church which makes such drafts upon our credulity? Is it heresy to protest in the strongest terms against such nonsense—against such absurdity—against such impiety? If it is, then let me die the death of a heretic, let my last end be like his!

I must, with Archbishop Kenrick, live and die in the belief that "*God only is infallible.*" But you will ask very properly, what are the effects of these doctrines upon the people? If they are deceitful, must they not be destructive? One word on that point, and I will close. The Pope's mouth-piece in St. Louis, says, "Behold an age sweeping onward toward destruction. Behold that united body, the Catholic Church. Behold the real power to reform the world!" Let me illustrate her capacity as a reformer. So nearly as I can gather, statistics show that in proportion to our Roman Catholic population, there are



four times as many criminals from that Church as from all classes and creeds put together.

How long would it take such a Church to "reform an age sweeping on to destruction?" About as long, it seems to me, as it would take the current of our river to float a vessel from St. Louis to St. Paul !

There is certainly but little inducement for you and me to cease our heresy, and go back to the bosom of "Mother Church," when the glaring fact stares us in the face, that the chances would be increased by fourfold, that we would come to the alms house, the work-house, the penitentiary or the scaffold.

But for the full and fearful effects of Romanism, you must leave our Protestant country, and go to lands controlled by that Church.

In Protestant England there are annually, it is said, four murders for every million of population.

But cross the channel into Catholic France, and you find thirty ; in Naples one hundred ; and in Spain it is said the rate is still higher. Visit Mexico, and South America, and you will see what Popery is, and what it does, where it has the power. But I must conclude. I am well aware I have not gone to the depths of this "mystery of iniquity ;" I have but touched at its "deceivableness of unrighteousness," but I have presented enough of proof to convince any candid, thinking man, that the claims of the Church of Rome are unfounded, and that her teaching is false. I urge you all, Protestants and Catholics, to examine this, and every subject for yourselves. Be not afraid to read. Be not afraid to bring your belief on every subject to the test of history, but above all, to the touch-stone of God's word.

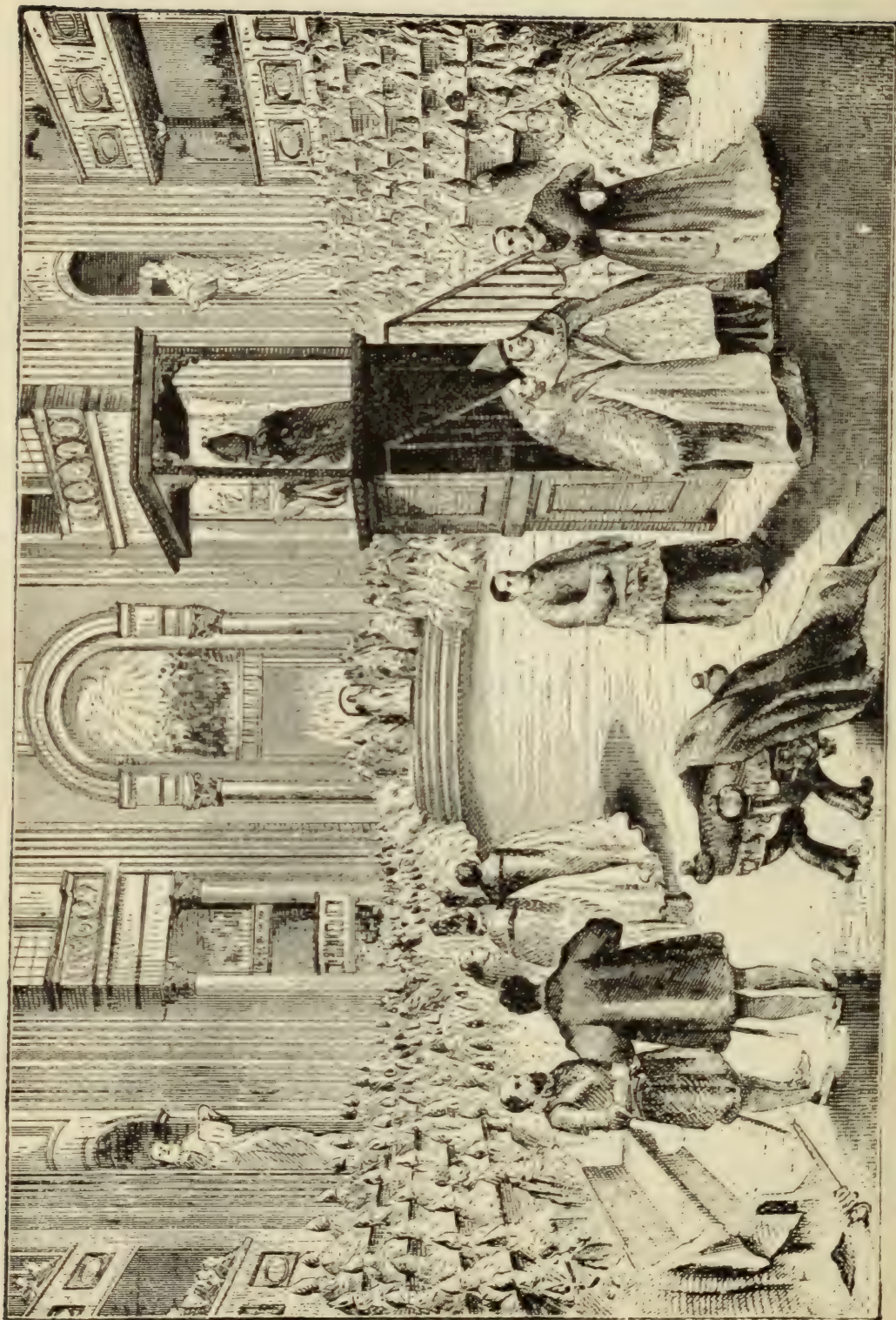
Having done so for myself, I am more than ever of this conviction ; The Reformation was neither a misunderstanding nor a mistake ; but a grand moral revolution in the in-

terest of God and humanity—in the interest of truth and purity and justice—in the interest of the present and eternal well-being of the race.

It was a sublime declaration of independence from the most abject bondage that has ever laid its polluting and unmanning grip upon poor humanity.







Reading the Dogma in the Council.

## CHAPTER XIII.

BY J. G. PILSON, D.D.

1871.

NEW YORK: PUBLISHED BY J. G. PILSON.

1871.

THE AUTHOR'S NOTE.—This book is a reprint of the first edition, published in 1871, and is intended to be a permanent record of the work done by the author in the field of the history of the United States.

The author's note is a reprint of the first edition, published in 1871, and is intended to be a permanent record of the work done by the author in the field of the history of the United States.

The author's note is a reprint of the first edition, published in 1871, and is intended to be a permanent record of the work done by the author in the field of the history of the United States.

The author's note is a reprint of the first edition, published in 1871, and is intended to be a permanent record of the work done by the author in the field of the history of the United States.

The author's note is a reprint of the first edition, published in 1871, and is intended to be a permanent record of the work done by the author in the field of the history of the United States.

The author's note is a reprint of the first edition, published in 1871, and is intended to be a permanent record of the work done by the author in the field of the history of the United States.

Popery is a double thing to deal with and claims a two-fold power, ecclesiastical and political. JOHN MILTON.

The head of the Roman Church has only to determine on any subject and I obey. I wish to be understood that such is the duty of all Catholics. DANIEL O'CONNEL.

The present opposition to Catholicism is not against the RELIGION of Catholics, but against their POLITICAL Morals, that are a disgrace to their religion.



## CHAPTER XIII.

REV. J. G. WILSON, D.D.

PASTOR

ST. JOHN'S CHURCH (M. E. C. SOUTH),

ST. LOUIS.

---

PETER NOT THE CHURCH.

---

Matt. xvi. 18— "Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church."

Luke xii. 32— "But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not."

### THE ISSUE DEFINED.

There are two conflicting theories as to the unity of the Church of Christ.

The Roman Catholic Church holds to an ecclesiastical unity with Peter, as the Vicar of Christ, at its head, and his alleged successors, the Popes, inheriting his authority.

Protestantism holds the Catholic or Universal Church to be a spiritual body with Christ for its head, present with it by the Holy Spirit, and its present head needing no Vicar. It holds all true believers to be members of this spiritual body, and discerns a religious or spiritual unity amidst the diversities of ecclesiastical forms and tenets as to theological or religio-philosophical dogmas.

The action of the Vatican Council, especially in formulating the dogma of the infallibility of the Pope,

has more sharply defined the issue and intensified the Controversy. Nor is this to be regretted. Professor Taylor Lewis, in one of his Vedder Lectures, well says, "In a feature of the times, which is much dreaded, may be discovered one of the chief sources of hope for the cause of truth. We may reverently thank God that it is a day of sharp and inevitable issues. The most sacred truth, the foulest forms of error stand face to face." He says again, and truly, "error must develop itself. It is especially true of religious error. It has no tenacity, no holding-place. It cannot stand still." Such has manifestly been the case with the errors of the papal theory of the church, which have gone on developing until we see their culmination in the decrees of the Vatican Council.

#### SCRIPTURAL ARGUMENT.

True to Protestantism, which always appeals to the sacred Scriptures as the prime authority, we begin with the argument from Scripture, especially from the New Testament. We have in the New Testament four histories of the life and teachings of Christ, containing special instructions to His apostles as to things to be done after His death, and conversations with them after His resurrection. We have, in the Acts of the Apostles, a history of the infant Church, including, amongst other things, sayings and doings of Peter himself. We have apostolic epistles written to churches and individual believers, instructing them as to Christian faith and practice. We have, in the book of Revelation, letters—sent by Christ through John to seven important churches—containing commingled praise and censure in regard to their doctrines and discipline.

Now, we lay this down as a rational and almost self-evident proposition, that if the unity of Christ's Church was to be maintained by universal submission to Peter as the Vicar of Christ, and its purity of doctrine preserved by

accepting with unquestioning faith the teachings of Peter and his successors, the Popes of Rome, as inspired and infallible teachers, there must be found in these sacred Scriptures plain and unmistakable proofs and declarations to this effect. These inspired and apostolic writers, instructing the churches in matters pertaining to faith and morals, doctrines and discipline, would not have left them to doubtful inferences or unrecorded tradition as to a matter of such fundamental importance to the ecclesiastical and doctrinal unity of the Church.

How stands the case upon this appeal to Scripture? It can be safely asserted that as regards Scripture warrant, the whole structure of Peter's primacy rests upon two sayings of our Lord, addressed to Peter, already given as our text.

Now, as to the first of these, if this language be a commission given by Christ to Peter, constituting him his Vicar, the fountain of all authority in the church and ultimate arbiter of its faith, it is passing strange that this transaction, so stupendous in importance, should have been recorded by but one of the four Evangelists; the one, too (Matthew) who wrote in Hebrew, from an eminently Jewish stand-point, and for the Jews. Passing strange especially is it that John, writing his gospel at a later period, for the Gentiles, and for the evident purpose of opposing heresies that were creeping into the faith, should make no allusion to Peter or to his successor at Rome, as divinely commissioned to decide infallibly all matters pertaining to faith and morals.

But what says the text? As a support for the Papacy, Christ must be understood to have made Peter himself the rock upon which His Church should be built, not Peter's faith in Him, not Himself the objective of Peter's subjective faith, but Peter himself as the Commissioned Primate of the Church. Does Christ say so? He says, "Thou art



Peter (Petros), and upon this rock (petra—a different word and of different signification) I will build my Church.”

Now, upon the authority of Councils and Popes, we must interpret Scripture according to the unanimous consent of the fathers, although, as the Roman Catholic Archbishop Kenrick of St. Louis pertinently says, “It is doubtful whether any instance of that unanimous consent can be found.” He adds, “But this failing, the rule seems to lay down for us the laws of following, in their interpretation of Scripture, the major number of the fathers that might seem to approach unanimity.” Following, then, this modified law of interpretation laid down for us by such eminent Roman Catholic authority, What must we accept as our Savior’s meaning? Archbishop Kenrick, in his famous speech, which he was, by the gag-law, so rigorously enforced in the Vatican Council, prevented from delivering, or even from printing in Rome for distribution amongst the members of the Council, gives five different interpretations by the fathers, of this passage. Of the third of these, which “asserts that the words ‘on this Rock,’ etc., are to be understood of the faith which Peter had professed—that this faith—this profession of faith—by which we believe Christ to be the Son of the living God, is the eternal and immovable foundation of the church,” He says “This interpretation is the weightiest of all, since it is followed by forty-four fathers and doctors.” It may be added that the preponderance is in weight, as well as in number, an important matter in considering authorities. This accords well with the spirit and teachings of Christ, who exalts the spiritual matters of faith and love far above all considerations of localities or times, rites or persons, rules or organizations. Napoleon understood this correctly, when he said that Alexander, Cæsar, and himself, had founded empires on force and they had fallen, but Jesus Christ had founded His on love and it stood. This principle of loving

trust in Him is the foundation and cement—the unifying and perpetuating element of His Church militant on earth and triumphant in heaven.

Dr. Philip Schaff happily sums up the objections to the Roman Catholic interpretation of this passage in modern times, as follows: (1.) “It obliterates the distinction between *petros* and *petra*; (2.) It is inconsistent with the true nature of the architectural figure: the foundation of a building is one and abiding, and not constantly renewed and changed; (3.) It confounds priority of time with permanent superiority of rank; (4.) It confounds the apostolate, which, strictly speaking, is not transferable, but confined to the original personal disciples of Christ and inspired organs of the Holy Spirit, with the post-apostolic episcopate; (5.) It involves an injustice to the other apostles, who, as a body, are expressly called the foundation or foundation stones of the church; (6.) It contradicts the whole spirit of Peter’s epistles, which is strongly anti-hierarchical, and disclaims any superiority over his fellow presbyters; (7.) Finally, it rests on gratuitous assumptions which can never be proved either exegetically or historically, viz: the transferability of Peter’s primacy, and its actual transfer upon the Bishop, not of Jerusalem nor of Antioch (where Peter certainly was), but of Rome exclusively.” To this we may add, that Eph. ii. 20, shows that Christ did not now lay one foundation stone (Peter) for a new Church, but that the church, standing upon the Rock of Ages as its eternal and immovable foundation, had upon this rock as strong foundation stones the prophets of the old dispensation and the Apostles (Rev. xxi. 14, twelve foundations) of the New Testament dispensation.

But Peter shows no consciousness of any such primacy as his prerogative. He speaks of the other apostles as his equals and co-laborers; calls himself not Pope or Lord, but an elder; claims no lordship and rebukes those ministers



who would make themselves lords over God's heritage; and, indeed, there is scarcely a prominent peculiarity of the modern papacy that is not signally reproved by him, as thus summed up by Stier: "Against lordship over the church—1 Peter, v. 3, 4; Against a separate priesthood, chap. ii. 5-9; Against assumption over the civil magistrate, v. 13-17; Against silver and gold and shameful gain—Acts, iii. 6; 1 Peter, v. 2; Against unbecoming marks of honor and slipper-kissing—Acts, x. 25, 26; Against infallibility, v. 34; Against celibacy——1 Cor., ix. 5; Against all righteousness by works, in harmony with Paul—Acts, xv. 10, 11; 1 Peter, i. 13, etc." He rejected the adoration offered Him by Cornelius, so readily accepted by Pius IX. from the Vatican Council, and by the recently elected Leo XIII., from the kneeling Cardinals.

St. Paul, mentioning the Chief Apostles at the Council of Jerusalem, does not even name Peter first: and James, not Peter, delivered the decision of the Council. When Peter, afterward, in his department toward Gentile converts, departed in practice from this decision, Paul withstood him to his face. So far was Peter from claiming to be Universal Bishop over the Gentiles that, in his conference with Paul, he agrees to be specially the Apostle of the Circumcision, while Paul should be the Apostle of the Gentiles. Indeed, if any Apostle should be regarded as having Scripture warrant to his claim to be the Universal Bishop of the great Gentile Church and Pope of Rome, Paul, not Peter, is the man.

Called of God apart from any connection with or dependence upon the apostles at Jerusalem, the apostleship to the Gentiles was specially committed to his charge. Under his ministry especially, Antioch, where believers were first called Christians (a significant expression, showing the more marked separation of the new Church among the Gentiles from Judaism,) became what Jerusalem had



been to the Jews. Afterwards Paul preached for several years at Rome, where it cannot be positively proved that Peter ever was, and from that city sends out apostolical epistles to the churches, in which he never alludes to the authority of Peter.

As the first of our two texts is made the pillar of the primacy, so the second is perverted into a support for the infallibility of Peter and his successors—"I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not." Roman Catholics interpret the term faith here to mean knowledge of and belief in doctrine, not personal trust and fidelity. But this does violence to the context, which shows plainly that the Savior's reference was to Peter's fidelity to his Master, which, as the after history shows, gave way for a time, but was afterwards restored. Following again, the Roman Catholic law of interpretation, we find forty-four fathers—a great majority, understanding this passage to refer to Peter's subjective faith and loyalty, which interpretation was generally held by the doctors of the church for centuries. The Savior here prays specially for Peter, because he was in special danger, but, in His memorable prayer in John, xvii., He prays for all His apostles and for all who should believe on Him through their word. He says of His apostles, "I have given them (not Peter) thy word;" and, just previous to this prayer, He says to them, "When He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you (not Peter only) into all truth." The prophet Joel, predicting the times of the gospel, and this coming of the spirit of Truth, shows that he is not to be confined to any one man, or class of men, but says, "I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions; and, also, upon the servants and the handmaids in those days will I pour out my Spirit." In striking fulfillment of this prediction many humble be-

lievers, such as the tinker of Bedford and the dairyman's daughter, have shown a keener insight into gospel doctrine and spiritual truth than many crowned Popes and mitred Bishops.

But to close the argument from Scripture, suppose we grant that these texts secure primacy and infallibility to Peter, "*Quid haec. ad Romam?*" What has this to do with Rome and her Popes? Where is there a word about Peter's right to convey these prerogatives to any successors? and, if to any, Where the hint from Scripture that his successors in his bishopric of Rome were to inherit his primacy over the whole church and his infallibility?

With such scanty warrant for Papal claims and theories by the Scriptures, it is no wonder that the Roman Catholic Church disparages the Bible and exalts tradition. In the creed of Pius IV., prepared by order of the Council of Trent, faith in apostolic and ecclesiastical traditions, is expressed before the acknowledgment of faith in holy Scriptures, and the latter, it is expressly stated, is to be understood only as "the holy Mother Church has held and does hold, to which it belongs to judge of the true sense and interpretation of the Scriptures," and the injunction is laid down that Scripture is only to be interpreted according to the unanimous consent of the fathers. We have already had from high Roman Catholic authority the opinion that it is doubtful whether any instance of such unanimous consent can be found, and hence that this broad positive dictum of an infallible Pope must be taken with some grains of modification, and, as we cannot get a unanimous consent, we must get as near to it as we can.

The fourth rule of the index of the Council of Trent says, "Forasmuch as the reading of the Scriptures in the vulgar tongue has been productive of more evil than good, it is expedient that they be not translated into the vul-



gate, or read or possessed by any one without a written license from the inquisitor or the Bishop of the diocese." Pope Clement, in his famous bull, *Unigenitus*, quotes certain propositions, as follows: "The reading of the Scriptures is for all men," and "to forbid Christians the reading of the Holy Scriptures is to interdict the use of light to the sons of light," and condemns these and similar propositions in the following strong language: "We declare and condemn, and reprobate these as false, captious, ill-sounding, offensive to pious ears, impious, blasphemous, suspected of heresy and savoring of heresy." Now, remember that the decree of infallibility not only declared Pius IX., infallible, but was retroactive and declared that all Peter's successors had been infallible, therefore this formal dictum of Clement, as to the dreadful danger of permitting all persons to read the Bible is, and must be, the belief of the present Pope, Leo XIII., and of the whole Roman Catholic Church of to-day. In sympathy with this principle of Pope and Bishops interpreting everything for the simple people, hundreds of whom are much more learned than their Bishops, we find Bishop Ryan, in his recent eulogy on Pius IX., contending that his syllabus had been misunderstood, and that it was not intended to be read and interpreted by the common people, but for the Bishops.

How different the course of Christ and His apostles! He denounced tradition which added to, and subtracted from the Word of God, and taught for doctrine the commandments of men. He quoted largely from the Scriptures, and bade the people at large to search the Scriptures. His apostles did the same and commended as noble those who, like the Bereans, did not believe merely upon their word, but searched the Scriptures to see whether the doctrine preached had their sanction. How forcibly does this contemptuous opinion of the Catholic clergy, as to the ability of the people to read and understand the Bible,



remind us of the haughty and sneering expression of the Scribes and Pharisees concerning the common people who heard Christ gladly—"Have any of the rulers or the Pharisees believed on him? But this people, *who knoweth not the law*, are cursed."

These infallible Popes, who are to decide for the universal church in all matters pertaining to faith and morals, are themselves the creatures of fallible men, elected as they are by General Councils or Colleges of Cardinals, in whom, according to the Vatican Council, infallibility does not reside. They may, in their fallibility, elect a man who is an infidel at heart, as at least one Pope was strongly suspected to be, or a man of notoriously immoral and scandalous character, as several Popes have, manifestly, and according to high Roman Catholic authority, been; or heretical in doctrine, as some of them have been pronounced by other Popes and by councils to have been. Political interests and intrigues are known to have had much to do with the election of Popes, and Catholic States have held an acknowledged right of veto upon an election. At one period we have seen three rival Popes, each claiming to be the duly constituted head of the church, and anathematizing the others with their adherents, and declaring their orders null and void, with no infallible tribunal to decide which of the three was the true Vicar of Christ. The Apostles knew themselves to speak by the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, and God attested their authority by signs and miracles. But here we have a different case altogether. We are called upon to accept the monstrous theory that Christ holds himself ready always to ratify elections, often carried by unscrupulous means and improper and profane influences, and resulting it may be, in the elevation to the Papal chair of not only ignorant and incompetent men, but of men destitute not merely of religion, but of morality and common decency. It was

a strong argument against the theory of creationism which taught that the physical nature was transmitted from parent to child, but that, in every instance of conception, the soul was created by act of God, that this put God at the bidding of unholy lust and adulterous intercourse to create souls for its fruit. A more monstrous theory is this which puts Christ at the bidding of General Councils, often tumultuous and riotous, or of corrupt and intriguing cardinals, and bids Him put upon the man of their choice, however unfit in body, mind or spirit, such a measure of His Holy Spirit as to invest him with plenary authority over the Universal Church, give him the Keys of Heaven, and make him the infallible teacher of faith and morals. Believe it who can !

The alleged necessity for an infallible Pope at the head of the church to pronounce authoritatively as to what is truth, is based, by Roman Catholics, upon the liability to error in interpreting the Scripture. But the difficulty is increased, not lessened by this expedient. This but adds to the list of inspired writings all bulls, decretals, encyclical letters, or other utterances of the Pope, speaking *ex-cathedra*. These, in addition to the Scriptures, are to be interpreted by the Bishops and priests, and their meaning taught by them to the people. But these documents are to be translated into various languages, and the translators are fallible and may err, and these bishops and priests are fallible and may err, in their interpretation, and the people are fallible and may mistake the utterances of their Bishops. There will even be difficulty in deciding what utterances of the Pope are fallible, and what infallible. The fallible Vatican Council assumed to limit the infallibility of their infallible Pope. He is infallible only when speaking *ex-cathedra* and on matters pertaining to faith and morals. What wide room for variety of opinion as to when he is speaking *ex-cathedra* and by inspiration of the Holy Ghost,

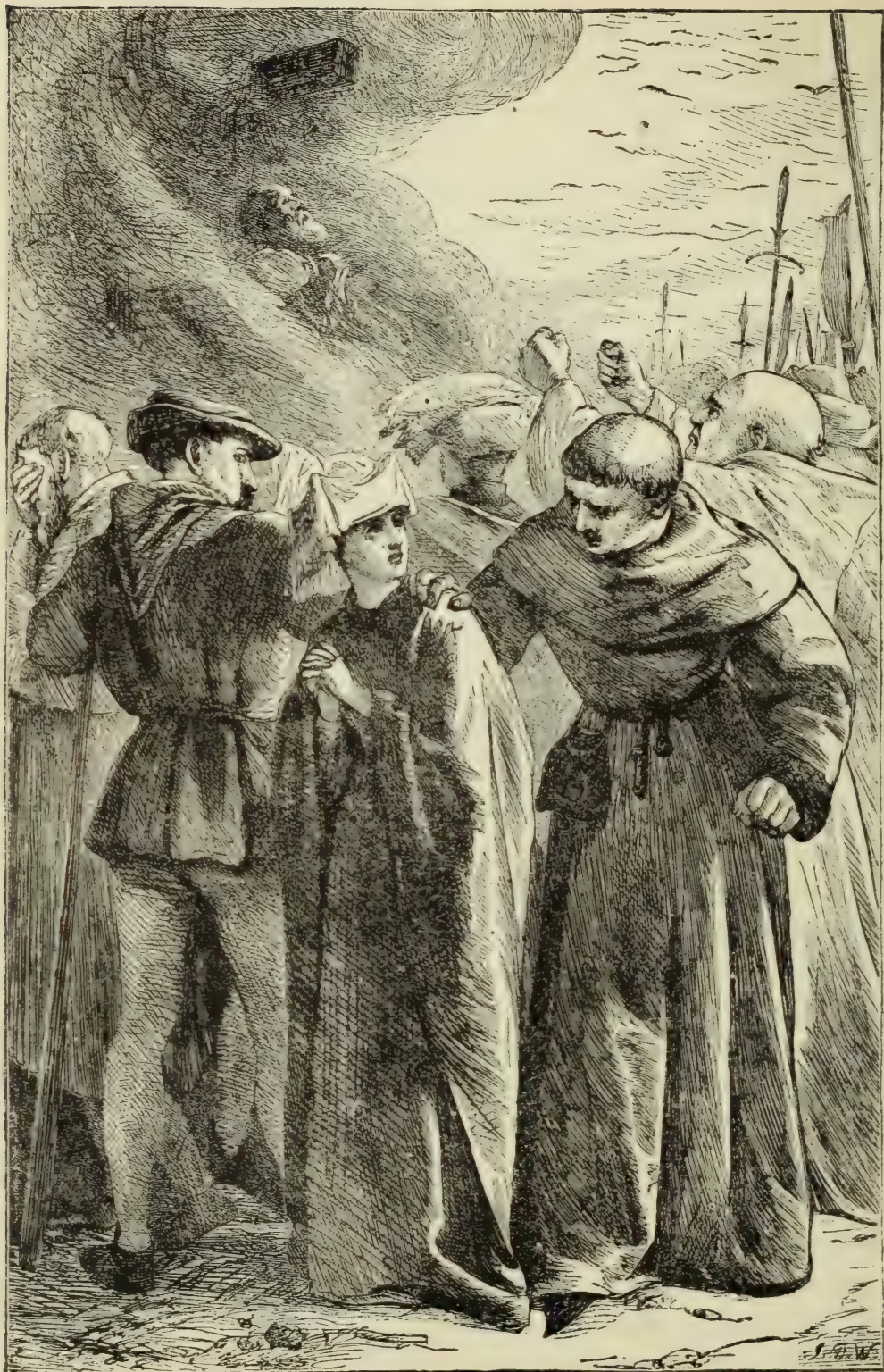


and when as a fallible man giving his private opinion. Again, Who shall define the scope of the terms *faith* and *morals*, so that we shall absolutely know within what limits he is infallible and christian consciences bound by his utterances? Do politics and the functions of civil government come under this broad term *morals*, or not? Is the Pope competent to decide infallibly between political parties, and to ratify or annul the legislation of States, and bind or loose at his will the loyalty of subjects to their governments, because these are matters of morals? We see how wide the field of discussion and consequent uncertainty is still left open, and how momentous the questions involved in limiting with precision the sphere of the Pope's alleged infallibility.

In arguing that God must be expected to provide man with such means that he *cannot* miss the knowledge of what is true in religion, Roman Catholics demand that God must do what He has done in no other department of human knowledge and interests. Civil institutions and governments have a powerful influence on human happiness and progress. God has simply ordained society by constituting man a social being, and endowing him with reason and the capacity of profiting by experience. He has not unmistakably pointed out to him the best form of government, but has left the nations to work out the problem for themselves, and develop themselves by so doing. Nature abounds in substances and powers adapted to promote, by the right knowledge and use of them, the well-being of men. God has provided no infallible teachers of science and art. He has simply placed man, endowed with the necessary powers, in the midst of this wealth of nature, to subdue it under his dominion, and He has so done as a Latin poet says, *acuere mortalia corda*—to sharpen human wits. Thus from analogy we may expect Him to deal with man in regard to moral and religious truth.







Execution of Sir John Oldcastle. Page 517.





The cause of the failure of what we call Catholic education is in the fact that we educate not for the present or the future but for the past. Catholic education has its ideal of perfection in the past, and it resists as un-Catholic, irreligious and opposed to God, the tendencies of modern civilization. In other words we fail to recognize human progress.

[229]      A. O. BROWNSON'S *Quarterly Review* (Catholic).

He will furnish the mine and the requisite powers, and then, whosoever will seek for wisdom, as for hid treasure, shall find it. If any man is willing to do His will, he shall know of His doctrine. Love of truth is better than knowledge of it, and search after truth may tend more to moral and spiritual culture and progress than even the possession of it. Just here lies one fundamental distinction between the Roman Catholic and the Protestant. The former generally, as in the interpretation of the Savior's prayer for Peter, understands the term faith to mean *the faith*, *i. e.*, correctness of doctrine, orthodoxy of creed. The latter understands it to signify the subjective faith of the soul that, loving and trusting, professes with Peter, "Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God." To quote again from high Roman Catholic authority, Archbishop Kenrick commenting on Luke, xxii. 32, says, "The words of Christ, then, are to be understood, not of faith as a body of doctrine, *in which sense it is never used by the Lord*; nor yet of faith, the theological virtue by which we believe in God, in which sense it occurs in His discourse no more than once or twice; but of that *trust* by which, thus far, he had clung to him as his Master."

Dr. Hodge, of Princeton, speaking of the theory of papal infallibility, says: "There is something simple and grand in this theory. It is wonderfully adapted to the tastes and wants of men. It relieves them of personal responsibility. Everything is decided for them." Many have sought a royal road to learning and been deluded by plausible schemes of learning made easy, but have found by painful experience, *nil deus dedit mortalibus sine magno labore*—that excellence results from diligent toil. The blind submission to authority and shifting off of personal responsibility on the one hand, and personal probing into the cause on the other, are happily brought out by Shakespeare in Henry V., Act i., Sc. 1: King Henry, disguised, pleads that

the King's cause is just and honorable, and is answered by a soldier :

*Will.*—That's more than we know.

*Bates.*—Aye, or more than we should seek after, for we know enough, if we know we are the King's subjects ; if his cause be wrong, our obedience to the King wipes the crime out of us.

*Will.*—But if the cause be not good, the King himself hath a heavy reckoning to make.

Read Pope for King, and this applies well to the controversy in hand. "But if the cause be not good," etc.; tremendous if ! and be it remembered that in the Vatican Council scores of learned and distinguished Roman Catholic prelates and scholars pronounced the cause of papal infallibility not good. In harmony with many widely accepted catechisms and other doctrinal writings of the Catholic Church, and with the oaths of Irish Catholic Bishops, taken before the British Government, they protested that the dogma of Papal infallibility was no article of the faith. Keenan's Controversial Catechism declared it to be "a Protestant invention."

Would it not be well for Protestants to get out a writ of injunction on Popes and Cardinals for an infringement on their patent, and stop their promulgation of this Protestant invention !

Most men like to shirk heavy responsibility, but thus to remit our faith to the keeping of Pope or priest, is like a King becoming weary of the responsibility of his royal station, and laying aside his robe and crown, descending to a beggar's estate. It is a man resigning his manhood and ceasing to speak rationally the convictions of his own reason and conscience, becoming an automaton, moving only as he is wound up by a Pope, or a parrot glibly but unintelligently repeating words taught him by his priest.

This primacy of Peter and his successors, as involving



lordship over the faith and discipline of the universal Church, is comparatively a modern invention. A moderate primacy, which made the Bishop of Rome *primus inter pares*, enjoying a right of presidency and a superiority of influence by virtue of the importance of the diocese over which he presided, was indeed claimed, though even this was far from being universally recognized. In the early centuries General Councils were not even called by the Popes, much less presided over by them or their legates. Learned Roman Catholic authority (in the Pope and the Council) tells us truly, "For the first thousand years, no Pope ever issued a doctrinal decision intended for and addressed to the whole church. \* \* \* The Popes possessed none of the three powers which are the proper attributes of sovereignty, neither the legislative, the administrative, nor the judicial." Not until the twelfth century did a Pope (Calixtus II.) publish in his own name and as of his own authority the decrees of any Council. It is a significant fact that, prior to about this time the Popes wore the simple mitre of a Bishop, but henceforward, their brows are pressed by a crown, not of thorns like their Master's, but of gold. Yet there have been some Popes who, honestly desiring a reformation of the church, and finding themselves more powerless in face of accumulated abuses than Hercules in presence of the filth of the Augean Stables, have found the tiara to be a crown of thorns, and almost cursed the day of their election, as Job did that of his birth. But religious error, as we have said, must develop itself; the possession of great power is corrupting and engenders a thirst after greater, and so we have passed from Gregory the Great, who rejected the title of Œcumenical Patriarch as "wicked and blasphemous" to the monstrous spawn of the Vatican Council, and see the universal Church of Christ, its discipline and faith, embodied in the trembling old man

of the Vatican, Pio Nono. Now, with a pride more haughty, and a power more absolute than that of Louis, Peter in the person of his pretended successor says, “*l’église c’est moi—I am the Church.*” Where slept the thunders of the Almighty when this decree was passed? Nay, they slept not. While the decree of infallibility was being read, an ominous storm raged about the Vatican. Blinding flashes of lightning and reverberating peals of thunder attended the reading of each clause, and so thick a cloud of darkness brooded over this scene of arrogant blasphemy, that the reading must be finished by the light of a candle, held by an attendant, strikingly symbolizing this attempt to substitute the rush-light of papal teaching for the sun of righteousness.

While we may, and should in defense of the truth, speak thus strongly, and even bitterly, of Papal errors and usurpations, let us not forget that this whole system is an enormous excrescence upon the Catholic Church and not the body itself. In her fold are to be found many pious and devout souls; as such, were found, as Dr. Schaff observes, in the Jewish Church, though their corrupt and intolerant hierarchy crucified the Savior, and cast out of the synagogue all who believed on His name. In the Vatican, where the Roman Curia and the Society of the Jesuits achieved their triumph in foisting by unhallowed means upon the Church the dogma of infallibility, stands a splendid specimen of the sculptor’s art. It represents Laocoon and his two sons struggling in agony and vainly in the folds of two enormous serpents. Gaze upon it, and behold a type of the episcopate, the Presbytery and the laity imprisoned and crushed in the slimy folds of the Curia and the Society of Jesus, both of them modern monstrosities unknown to the Church in her purer days. With them the theory and policy of the Church have undergone a sad and fearful change. Read the testimony of Macaulay, confirmed, too, by numerous witnesses, both Catholic and



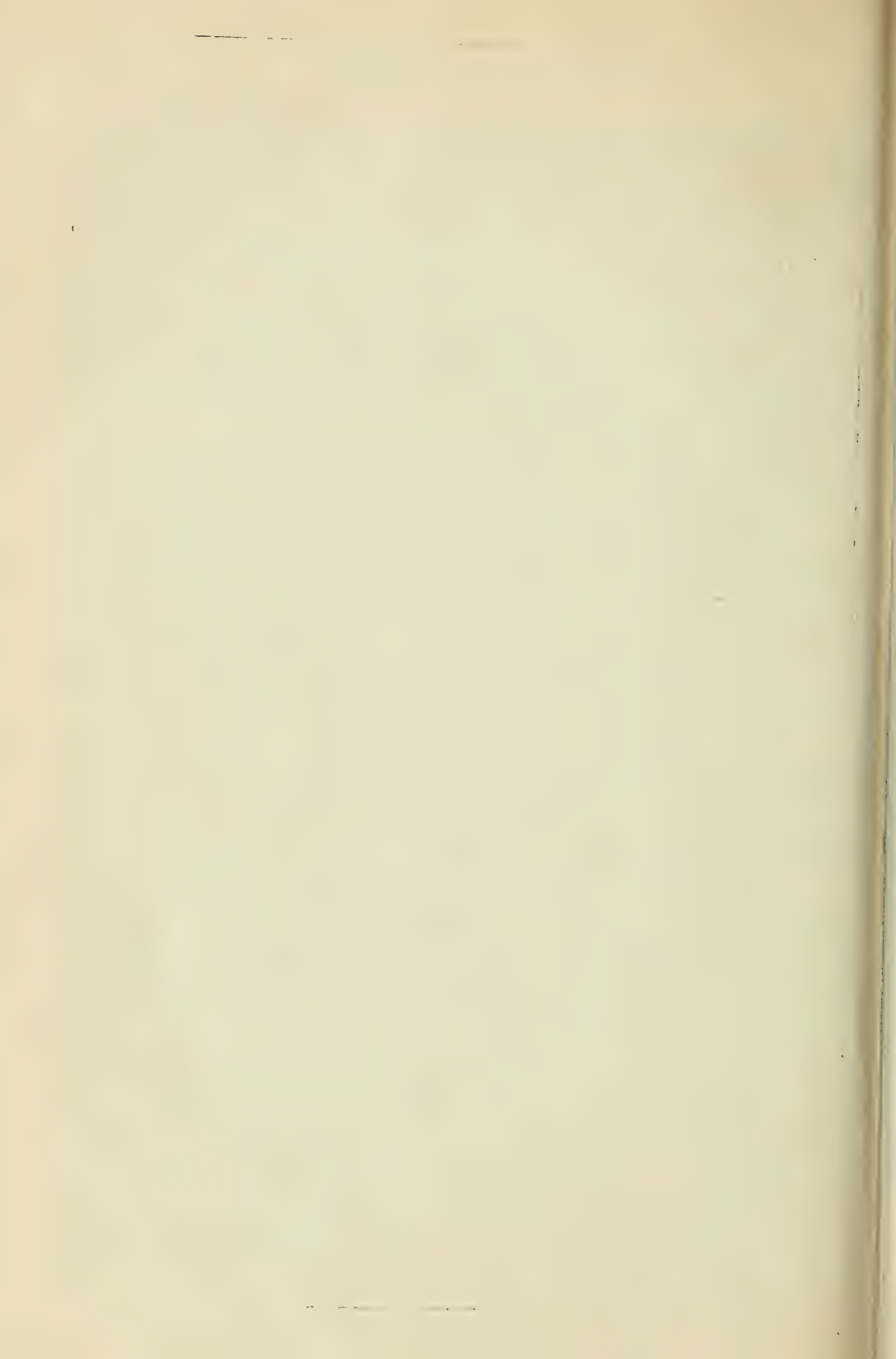
Protestant: "From the time when the barbarians overran the Western Empire, to the time of the revival of letters, the influence of the Church of Rome had been generally favorable to science, to civilization and to good government. But during the last three centuries, to stunt the growth of the human mind has been her chief object. Throughout Christendom, whatever advance has been made in knowledge, in freedom, in wealth and in the arts of life, has been made in spite of her, and has everywhere been in inverse proportion to her power."

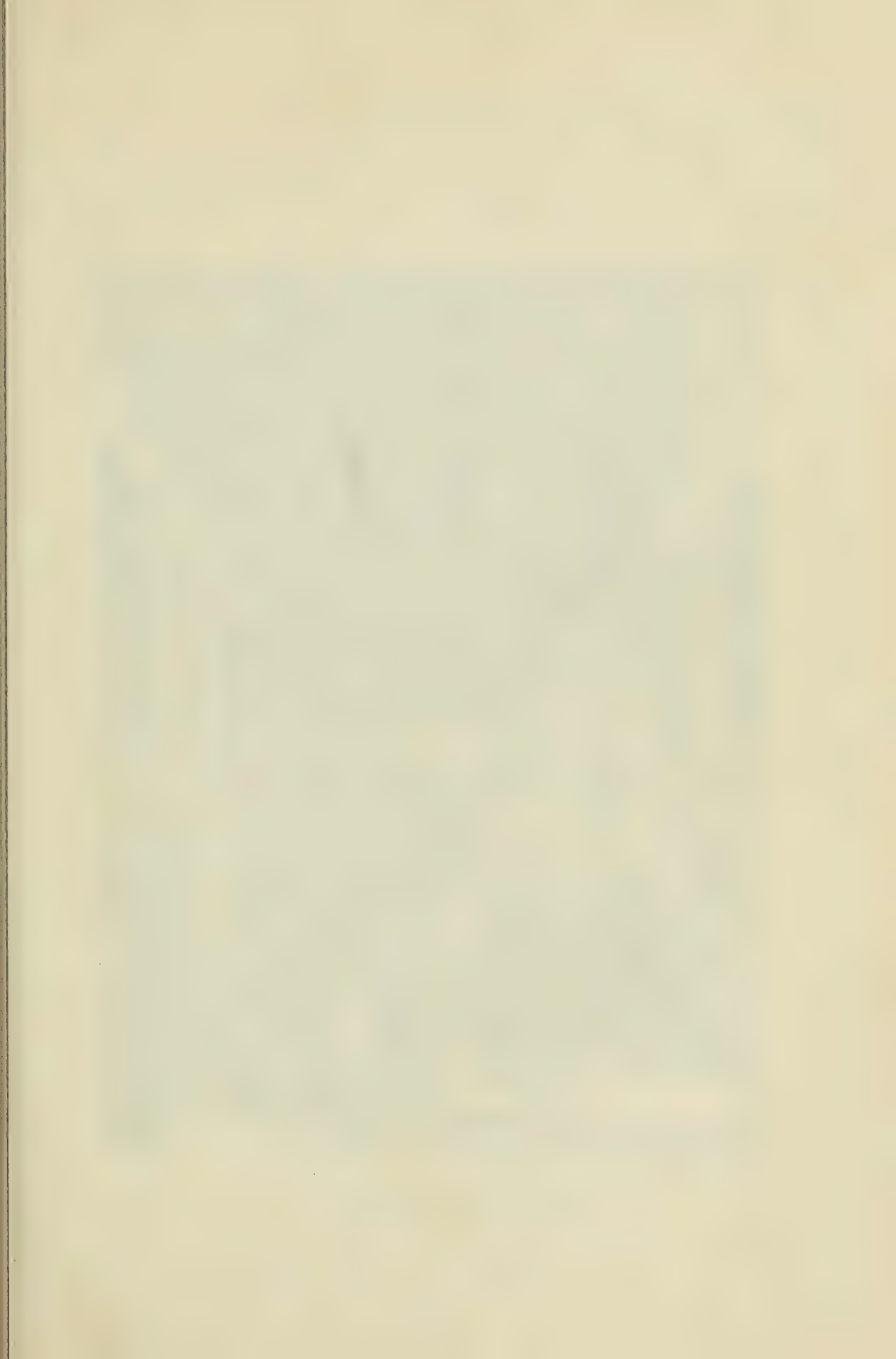
Evil, by its very enormity, often produces a revulsion and becomes its own cure. Apparent victory often proves a real defeat. Hell exulted over the crucifixion of the Redeemer, which was his triumph and Satan's downfall, and it may yet appear that Jesuitical ambition has o'erleaped itself, and at some not distant day, "The destruction of the infallible and [consequently] irreformable Papacy may be the emancipation of Catholicism and lead it from its prison house to the light of a new Reformation." So mote it be. Meantime it behooves us, as Americans, to watch with a sleepless eye the working amongst us of a system so, not only un-American, but anti-American.

Scarcely a single principle recognized as distinctively American has escaped its ban, and it is no improbable thing that the warfare, now manfully waged in defense of his country and her institutions against Papal encroachments, by the German Bismarck, shall have to be maintained by some American statesman.

Let us rejoice in our freedom from Papal domination, prize our civil and religious liberty, guard the freedom of the press, and the right of private judgment in matters religious and political, exult in Christ our living Head, and know assuredly that with Him as the chief corner-stone, elect and precious, the gates of hell shall never prevail against His Church









Nun Taking the Veil





### CONFESSION OF A NUN.

I shall never induce another to come to the Convent. I have two rooms, one where are the dying Nuns, the other where the patients come from without; that means people belonging to the world. In my nursing ministry of thirty years, I have never yet seen a Nun die in peace, they seem terrified when death is near. In the other room where the people of the world are, death does not seem to frighten them, many of them smile at its approach. Have they heard of something better than Convent work?

[235]

Quarterly Record of Bible Society.

# CHAPTER XIV.

## CELIBACY OF THE CLERGY.

---

REV. THOS. O. SUMMERS, S.T.D., LL.D.

---

According to the discipline of the Church of Rome, the clergy are forced to remain in a state of celibacy. Siricius, Bishop of Rome (A. D. 385), held that the marriage rites, which he stigmatized as *obscæne cupiditates*, are inconsistent with the clerical state. His successors adhered to his decision. At first the prohibition referred only to bishops, priests and deacons, but from the fifth century, sub-deacons were not allowed to marry after ordination. The clergy of the minor orders were allowed to marry once, but not with widows. As the clergy were restive under these unnatural restrictions, the Council of Trent settled the matter by its authoritative decision. It affirmed that those who had received merely the lower kinds of consecration, might marry on resigning their office, but a papal dispensation was necessary for all above a sub-deacon. A priest who marries incurs excommunication, and is debarred from all spiritual functions; and if a married man wants to become a priest he must leave his wife, who must of her own free will take the vow of chastity. In Session xxiv., Canon 9, the Council says, "Whoever shall affirm that persons in holy orders, or regulars, who have made a solemn profession of chastity, may contract marriage, and that the contract is valid, notwithstanding any ecclesiastical law or vow; and that to maintain the



contrary is nothing less than to condemn marriage; and that all persons may marry who feel, that though they should make a vow of chastity, they have not the gift thereof; let him be accursed—for God does not deny his gifts to those who ask aright; neither does he suffer us to be tempted above that we are able. Canon 10: Whoever shall affirm that the conjugal state is to be preferred to a life of virginity or celibacy, and that it is not better and more conducive to happiness to remain in virginity or celibacy, than to be married; let him be accursed.”

In passing, we must denounce the Tridentine sophism, insinuated in the contrast between marriage and *chastity*. Everybody knows that the Scriptures never oppose the one to the other. Those who are true to their marriage vows are as chaste as those who live continually in a state of celibacy. It ill becomes those who make matrimony one of the seven Sacraments, to say otherwise.

The superior sanctity supposed to reside in the clerical character and profession, does not therefore require that ministers should be celibates—indeed it rather requires that they should enter “the holy estate of matrimony.”

Marriage “is an honorable estate, instituted of God in the time of man’s innocency, signifying unto us the mystical union that is between Christ and his Church; which holy estate Christ adorned and beautified with his presence and first miracle that he wrought in Cana of Galilee, and is commended of St. Paul to be honorable among all men.” Christ and the apostles speak in the highest terms of matrimony, and exhort to chastity in this holy estate. Matt. xix. 3–12; 1 Cor. vii.; Eph. v. 22–33; 1 Thess. iv. 3–8; 1 Tim. ii. 15; iv. 3; v. 14; Titus, ii. 4, 5; Heb. xiii. 4; 1 Pet. iii. 1–7.

How gloriously does our great poet descant on this inspiring theme! Speaking of our first parents and their connubial love, he says:

Whatever hypocrites austerely talk  
 Of purity, and place, and innocence,  
 Defaming as impure what God declares  
 Pure, and commands to some, leaves free to all.  
 Our Maker bids increase—who bids abstain  
 But our Destroyer, foe to God and man?  
 Hail, wedded Love, mysterious law, true source  
 Of human offspring, sole propriety,  
 In Paradise, of all things common else!  
 By thee adult'rous Lust was driven from men  
 Among the bestial herds to range; by thee  
 Founded in reason, loyal, just, and pure,  
 Relations dear, and all the charities  
 Of father, son, and brother, first were known.  
 Far be it that I should write thee sin or blame,  
 Or think thee unbefitting holiest place,  
 Perpetual fountain of domestic sweets,  
 Whose bed is undefiled and chaste pronounced,  
 Present or past, as saints and patriarchs used.  
 Here love his golden shafts employs, here lights  
 His constant lamp, and waves his purple wings,  
 Reigns here and revels.—[*Par. Lost*, iv. 743-765.]

One is amazed at the inconsistency of the Church of Rome, which places matrimony among the Sacraments, as it is so holy and divine an institution, and yet prohibits it to the clergy because of their great sanctity.

Were not the Jewish priests holy? or, at least, was not superior holiness required of them? And yet they were not only allowed to marry, but commanded to do so; and the high priest in particular was required to marry a virgin, or the widow of a priest, because it was important to keep the sacerdotal blood pure and unmixed, as the priesthood descended from father to son. Romanists are fond of applying Jewish sacerdotal titles to their ministers, and claiming peculiar prerogatives for them, after the Levitical order; and yet they will not allow them to marry!

They claim for their hierarchy a direct, uninterrupted succession from the apostles, and especially from Peter, whom they call “the Prince of the Apostles,” and the first Pope! Yet this very same Pope was a married man! Our Lord wrought a miracle to cure Peter’s wife’s mother of a fever, and said not one word about his putting away



of his wife in order to become a Pope! On the contrary, Jesus enjoyed the hospitalities of his house at Capernaum, which, in fact, appears to have been his principal stopping-place. John seems to have had a house in Jerusalem, and it might be inferred that he had a family there. John xix.

Eusebius (Ec. His. iii. 30) says, "Clement gives a statement of those apostles, that continued in the marriage state, on account of those who set marriage aside. 'And will they,' says he, 'reject even the apostles? Peter and Philip indeed had children. Philip also gave his daughters in marriage to husbands, and Paul does not demur in a certain Epistle, to mention his own wife, whom he did not take about with him, in order to expedite his ministry the better.' Since, however, we have mentioned these, we shall not regret to subjoin another history worthy of record, from the same author, continued in the seventh book of the same work, *Stromateus*. 'They relate,' says he, 'that the blessed Peter, seeing his own wife led away to execution, was delighted, on account of her calling and return to her country; and that he cried to her in a consolatory and encouraging voice, addressing her by name, O thou, remember the Lord!' Such was the marriage of those blessed ones, and such was their perfect affection toward their dearest friends."

In the next chapter, Eusebius quotes Polycrates, Bishop of Ephesus, as saying, "Philip, one of the twelve apostles, sleeps in Hierapolis; another of his daughters rests at Ephesus." But Eusebius seems to confound him with Philip the Evangelist, "one of the seven," who had four virgin daughters that prophesied, as Luke says in The Acts. But this is a matter of little consequence, as Romanists will not allow evangelists or deacons to marry any more than priests, bishops, or apostles.

In his twentieth chapter of this third book, Eusebius speaks of the grandchildren of Juda the Apostle, called



the brother of our Lord. Epiphanius says, "Peter, Andrew, Matthew, and Bartholomew, were all married men. Tertullian did not think Paul was married, others of the Fathers thought he was."

Now, we attach no importance to the statements of the Fathers, whatever Rome may say of their authority; but Romanists can consistently say nothing against them. One thing is certain, the Fathers never dreamed that the apostles or other ministers were debarred from matrimony.

Paul himself says: "Have we not power to lead about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?" (1 Cor. ix. 5.) The Rhemists, indeed, render, "a woman, a sister." The Romanists say this refers to the custom of rich women following the apostles to minister to them, as some followed our Lord. But, as Whitby says, "This interpretation seems to have had its rise from Tertullian when he was a Montanist. Theodoret mentions it without seeming to approve it. Clement of Alexandria confutes the enemies of matrimony from these very words, and says, "They carried their wives about, not as wives, but as sisters, to minister to those who were mistresses of families, that so the doctrine of the Lord might, without any reprehension, or evil suspicion, enter into the apartments of the women." This exposition seemeth, (1) most agreeable to the words, which cannot be well rendered *a sister-woman*, there being no sister which is not a woman. (2) It is most agreeable to the context, which plainly seems to speak not of such wealthy women which could nourish the apostles out of their abundance, but of such which were to be nourished with them by others. And, (3) to the language of the Jews who called their wives *sisters*. Thus Tobit saith to his wife, 'take no care, my sister.' (Tobit v. 20.) And Clement, in the words now cited, 'They were carried with them, not as wives, but as sisters.' And, lastly, this seems best to

consult the credit and esteem of the apostles, who could not without evil suspicion carry about with them single women, or the wives of other men. As for the women who are said to have followed Christ they were none of his retinue—they attended not upon his person, but upon his doctrine, and so they ministered no such ground of suspicion.”

It is clear that Paul here affirms that “other apostles,” including those of note, “the brethren of the Lord and Cephas,” took their wives with them in their apostolic journeys, and that he had the right to do so, but declined it for special reasons. Whether or not he had a wife, he does not say.

In his First Epistle to Timothy (c. iii.) he says, “A bishop, then, must be blameless, the husband of one wife—one that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity.” So of the deacons: “Even so must their wives be grave. Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.” Literally, “Let deacons be men of one woman”—meaning here, as in 1 Cor. ix. 5, a married woman, a wife, and the Rhemists (the Romish translators) here so render it.

Now, whether this was designed to exclude agamists, or bigamists, or digamists, from the ministry, one thing is very certain, it does not exclude monogamists. It has been variously construed to forbid celibacy—successive or simultaneous bigamy or polygamy—and second marriages. As the rule obtains in the case of “the widows” mentioned (1 Tim. v. 9), who must have been each “the wife of one man,” it cannot mean that bishops and deacons must be married, though it is generally best for ministers of every grade, and indeed all other men, to marry; nor does it refer to second marriages for there may be as good reason (as Origen says) for a minister to marry a second or third time, as there was for him to marry once.



The injunction seems to forbid polygamy of both kinds : they were not to have more than one wife at a time, and if, in their previous heathen or Jewish state they had unlawfully divorced their wives—as divorces were common among Jews and heathens—and more than one of their wives were living, they were adjudged unfit for the pastoral or the diaconal office, though they might be allowed a place among the laity of the Church, if they afterward restricted themselves to one wife. So a “widow” similarly circumstanced might be a member of the Church, but she could not be taken into the number of the “widows indeed,” specified 1 Tim. v. It was necessary to put the stamp of reprobation upon polygamy and polyandry which were so common among the Jews and heathens of that age.

It is of no consequence whether the bishop in this place is the same as the presbyter—which we affirm—or of the same order, though higher in office, as the Council of Trent seems to hold—he was what Romanists call “a priest”—one of the sacerdotal order—Paul says he may have one wife—Rome says he shall have none! Does not this make the word of God of none effect by the traditions of men —“forbidding to marry,” like the apostates denounced in the next chapter, 1 Tim. iv. 3?

It was very audacious in the Jesuit annotators of the Rhemish version to say in their note on Titus i. 6, “If any be blameless, the husband of one wife”—“If the studious reader peruse all antiquity, he shall find all notable bishops and priests of God’s Church to have been single or continent from their wives, if any were married before they came to the clergy. So was Paul, and exhorteth all men to the like. So were all the apostles after they followed Christ.” In their note on 1 Tim. iii. 2, they say, “This exposition only is agreeable to the practice of the whole church, the definition of ancient councils, the doctrine of the Fathers without exception, and the apostles’ tradi-



tion." They unblushingly add, "You may see how shamefully the state of the new heretical clergy of our time is fallen from the apostolic and all the Fathers' doctrine herein; who do not only take men once or twice married before, but which was never heard of before in any person or part of the Catholic Church, they marry after they be bishops or priests."

These notes were obviously written for the ignorant and credulous laity of the Romish Communion; but it is amazing that men of learning should perpetuate such arrant falsehoods.

Bingham (*Antiquities of the Christian Church*, Book iv., Chap. 5) says, "Bellarmin and other Romanists very much abuse their readers, when they pretend that the ordination of digamists, meaning persons twice lawfully married, is both against the rule of the apostles and the universal consent and practice of the Church. They still more abuse their readers, in pretending that a vow of perpetual celibacy, was required of the clergy, as a condition of their ordination, even from the apostolical ages. For the contrary is very evident from innumerable examples of bishops and presbyters, who lived in a state of matrimony without any prejudice to their ordination or function. It is generally agreed by ancient writers that most of the apostles were married. Some say, all of them except St. Paul and St. John; others say, St. Paul was married also, because he writes to his yoke fellow, whom they interpret his wife. (Phil. iv. 3.) This was the opinion of Clemens Alexandrinus, wherein he seems to be followed by Eusebius and Origen, and the author of the interpolated Epistle to the Church of Philadelphia, under the name of Ignatius. But passing by this about St. Paul (which is a matter of dispute among learned men, the major part inclining to think that he always lived a single life), it cannot be denied that others of the apostles were married; and in

the next age after them we have accounts of married bishops, presbyters, and deacons, without any reproof or mark of dishonor set upon them. As to instance in a few, Valens, presbyter of Philippi, mentioned by Polycarp; Chæremon, bishop of Nilus, an exceeding old man, who fled with his wife to Mount Arabion in time of persecution, where they both perished together, as Eusebius informs us. Novatus was a married presbyter of Carthage, as we learn from Cyprian's Epistles. Cyprian himself was also a married man, as Mr. Pagi confesses; and so was Cœcilius, the presbyter that converted him. As also Numidicus, another presbyter of Carthage, of whom Cyprian tells us this remarkable story: That in the Decian persecution, he saw his own wife with many other martyrs burned by his side; whilst he himself lying half burnt, and covered with stones, and left for dead, was found expiring by his own daughter, who drew him out of the rubbish, and brought him to life again. Eusebius assures us, that Phileas, Bishop of Thmuis and Philoromus, had both wife and children; for they were urged with that argument by the heathen magistrate to deny their religion in the Diocletian persecution; but they generously contemned his argument, and gave preference to the laws of Christ. Epiphanius says, Marcion the heretic was the son of a bishop, and that he was excommunicated by his own father for his lewdness. Domnus, also bishop of Antioch, is said to be son to Demetrian, who was bishop of the same place before him. It were easy to add abundance more such instances, but these are sufficient to show, that men of all states were admitted to be bishops and presbyters in the primitive ages of the Church.

“The most learned advocates of the Roman Communion have never found any other reply to all this, save only a groundless pretence of their own imagination, that all married persons when they came to be ordained, promised



to live separate from their wives by consent, which answered the vow of celibacy in other persons. This is all that Pagi or Schelstrate have to say in the case, after all the writers that have gone before them ; which is said not only without proof, but against the clearest evidences of ancient history, which manifestly prove the contrary. For Novatus presbyter of Carthage, whose case Pagi had under consideration, was certainly allowed to cohabit with his wife after ordination, as appears from the charge that Cyprian brings against him, that he had struck and abused his wife, and thereby caused her to miscarry ; for which crime he had certainly been thrust out not only from the presbytery, but the Church also, had not the persecution coming on so suddenly prevented his trial and condemnation. Cyprian does not accuse him for cohabiting with his wife or begetting children after ordination ; but for murdering his children which he had begotten ; which was indeed a crime that made him liable both to deposition and excommunication ; but the other was no crime at all by any law then in force in the African or in the universal Church. There seems, indeed, in some places to have been a little tendency towards introducing such a law by one or two zealous spirits ; but the motion was no sooner made, but it was quashed immediately by the prudence and authority of wiser men. Thus Eusebius observes, that Pinytus, bishop of Gnossus, in Crete, was for laying the law of celibacy upon his brethren ; but Dionysius, bishop of Corinth, wrote to him that he should consider the weakness of men, and not impose that heavy burden upon them. And thus matters continued for three centuries, without any law that we read of, requiring celibacy of the clergy at the time of their ordination."

Bingham shows that the Council of Nice (A. D. 325) and other councils of that age "decreed in favor of the married clergy," "and no vow of abstinence was required



of them at their ordination." He cites Socrates, the Church historian, in proof that in his days, many eminent bishops in the Eastern Churches had children by their lawful wives, and such as abstained did it not by obligation of any law, but by their own choice. In Africa, bishops cohabited with their wives at the time of the Council of Trullo. Bingham concludes his masterly historical argument, by the assertion that he has advanced sufficient to show that the married clergy were allowed to officiate in the primitive ages; and that celibacy was no necessary condition of their ordination, as is falsely pretended by the polemical writers of the present Church of Rome.

In addition to these testimonies, in proof that ministers of every grade married in the primitive ages of the Church, we refer to the monuments of the fact found in the Catacombs of Rome, which bring to light what obtained in the metropolis of Christendom, the holy mother Church herself, as the Church of Rome is fondly considered by Romanists.

The Rev. W. H. Withrow, in his excellent work on "The Catacombs of Rome" (Book iii., Chap. 4), says: "There is no trace of the ascetic spirit or celibate clergy of the Church of Rome in the inscriptions of the Catacombs. On the contrary, numerous epitaphs commemorate the honorable marriage of members of every ecclesiastical grade."

He proceeds to furnish a number of specimens of such epitaphs, giving the Latin inscriptions themselves:

"Thus, in the highest rank, Gruter gives the following, which is thought to be that of Liberius, Bishop of Rome, who died A. D. 366, and who was sometimes known by the name of Leo:

"My wife, Laurentia, made me this tomb; she was ever suited to my disposition, venerable and faithful. At length

disappointed envy is crushed. The Bishop Leo survived his eightieth year.'

"De Rossi gives the following, of a bishop's son, of date A. D. 404. The relationship is boldly acknowledged, and not yet disguised under the phrase *nepos*, or nephew:

"'Victor, in peace, son of Bishop Victor, of the city of the Ucrenses.'

"The following, of date A. D. 445, was found at Narbonne:

"'Bishop Rusticus, son of Bishop Bonosus.'

"There are also numerous inscriptions in which presbyters and deacons lament the death of their wives, 'chaste, just, and holy.' 'Would to God,' exclaims a writer in the *Revue Chretienne*, 'that all their successors had such.' The following are examples: 'Gaudentius the presbyter, for himself and his wife Severa, a chaste and most holy woman.' 'The place of Basil, the presbyter, and of Felicitas, his wife.' Observe, also, the tender recognition of family ties in the following: 'Once the happy daughter of the presbyter Gabinus, here lies Susanna, joined to her father in peace.'

"We have already seen the epitaph of 'Petronia, the wife of a deacon, the type of modesty,' with whom were buried two of her children. The following, of similar character, is accompanied by the epitaph of a deacon on the same stone, probably the husband who so tenderly lamented the loss of his faithful consort:

"'Maria, the wife of a deacon, ever well-pleasing to me. That departure of thine prostrated the hearts of thy friends, leaving perpetual tears and grief to us. Chaste, grave, wise, simple, venerable, faithful. God fulfilled thy wishes; for thee thy husband, thee thy children bewail; nor did death bear any away from thee.' (A. D. 451.)

"Epitaphs are also found indicating the prevalence of marriage in the inferior ecclesiastical ranks, as in the



following examples: 'Claudius Atticanus, the reader, and Claudia Felicissima, his wife,' 'Januarius, the exorcist, made this for himself and his wife.' Terentius, the fessor, for Primitiva, his wife, and himself.'"

After a while, however, exaggerated notions of the superior sanctity of celibacy crept into the Church, derived largely from the Jewish Essenes, the Gnostics, Montanists, Encratites, and others, whose ascetic notions, indeed, began to inoculate the Church even in the days of the apostles. See Col. ii. 18-23; 1 Tim. iv. 1-5.

Here and there a fanatic dealt out denunciations against the marriage of the clergy—a provincial Council—as that of Illiberis in Spain, A. D. 300—prohibited it. In 692, the Council in Trullo decreed that bishops must observe celibacy, while presbyters and deacons might live with their wives, though the Roman Church made them promise at their ordination that they would not. The rule laid down by the Council in Trullo, has been always observed since that time in the Greek Church, which allows priests to live with their wives, but not to marry after their ordination.

A long struggle was kept up between the rigid disciplinarians and the more moderate party—the former denouncing all marriage of the clergy, and the latter allowing and practising it. But the imperious Hildebrand, Pope Gregory VII., set himself to stop it effectually. He held a Council at Rome, A. D. 1074, in which the marriage of priests was considered as concubinage; and from that time to the present, the Romish Church has not allowed its clergy to live in the holy estate of matrimony. Thousands of them have lived, and still live, in illicit relations with women, but marriage is not allowed among them.

In 1076, a Synod was held at Winchester, England, which decreed that canons should have no wives—that no priest should marry—no bishop should ordain any but



celibates—though it allowed priests in the country who were already married to live with their wives. Under Anselm (A. D. 1102) it was decreed that neither priest nor deacon, nor even sub-deacon, should be ordained, who did not profess chastity, *i. e.*, celibacy—which decree was confirmed by the Council of London. The Council of Trent followed it up with its canons and curses.

This enforced celibacy of the clergy, in connection with the votive celibacy of monks and nuns, and the detestable Confessional, led to such scenes of debauchery among these ecclesiastical orders, as are too revolting for portrayal. Those who want to wade through the sloughs of filth, which constitute so much of the history of celibacy in the Romish Church, are referred to Elliott's *Delineation of Roman Catholicism* (Book iv., Chap. 2, and the works there cited); to the works cited in McClintock and Strong's *Cyclopædia*, Article "Celibacy," and the works there cited; to the "Startling Facts" of the Rev. J. G. White, and the authorities cited by him. The decrees and bulls against fornication, sodomy, bestiality, among the clergy, tell the dismal tale! Even Anselm himself, who enforced celibacy on the clergy, laments, as Burnet says, that unnatural lusts were become both common and public, of which Petrus Damiani made great complaints in Gregory the Seventh's time. Bernard, in a sermon preached to the clergy of France, says it was common in his time, and that even *bishops* with *bishops* lived in it. The progress of that horrible vice led the Abbot Panormitan to wish that the clergy were allowed to marry. Pius II. said there are far better reasons for freedom to marry than for enforced celibacy. To prevent sodomy, bestiality, and other unnatural crimes, resulting from enforced celibacy, dispensations for concubinage became common, so that "instead of giving scandal by them, they were rather considered as the characters of modesty and temperance; in such concu-

binary priests, the world judged themselves safe from practices on their own families." It is well known that this is the case in Mexico, South America, and other Romish countries, at the present time.

The Churches of the Reformation restored the liberty of marriage to the clergy. In their address to the Diet at Augsburg, the Reformers say :

"There has been general complaint among persons of every rank, on account of the scandalous licentiousness and lawless lives of the priests ; who were guilty of lewdness, and whose excesses had risen to the highest pitch. In order to put an end to such odious conduct, to adultery, and other lewd practices, several of our ministers have entered the matrimonial state. They themselves declare, that in taking this step they were influenced by the dictates of conscience, and a sacred regard for the holy volume, which expressly informs us, that marriage was appointed of God to prevent licentiousness : as Paul says (1 Cor. vii. 2), 'To avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife.' Again, 'It is better to marry than to burn,' (1 Cor. vii. 9) ; and according to the declaration of Christ, that not all men can receive this word. (Matt. xix. 12.) In this passage, Christ himself, who well knew what was in man, declares that few persons are qualified to live in celibacy ; for 'God created us, male and female.' (Gen. i. 27.) And experience has abundantly proved how-vain is the attempt to alter the nature, or meliorate the character, of God's creatures by mere human purposes or vows, without a peculiar gift or grace of God. It is notorious that the effort has been prejudicial to purity of morals ; and in how many cases it has occasioned distress of mind, and the most terrific apprehensions of conscience, is known by the confessions of numerous individuals. Since, then, the word and law of God cannot be altered by human vows or enactments, the priests for this and other reasons have entered into



the conjugal state. It is moreover evident from the testimony of history and the writings of the Fathers, that it was customary in former ages for priests and deacons to be married. Hence the injunction of Paul to Timothy (1 Tim. iii. 2); 'A bishop then must be blameless, *the husband of one wife.*' It is but four hundred years since the clergy in Germany were compelled by force to abandon the matrimonial life, and submit to a vow of celibacy; and so generally and resolutely did they resist this tyranny, that the Archbishop of Mayence, who published this papal edict, was well nigh losing his life in a commotion excited by the measure. And in so precipitate and arbitrary a manner was that decree executed, that the pope not only prohibited all future marriage of the priests, but even cruelly rent asunder the social ties of those who had long been living in the bonds of lawful wedlock, thus violating alike not only the laws of God, and the natural and civil rights of the citizen, but even the canons which the popes themselves made, and the decrees of the most celebrated Councils.— If, therefore, it is evident from the divine word and command, that matrimony is lawful in ministers, and history teaches that their practice formerly was conformed to this precept; if it is evident that the vow of celibacy has been productive of the most scandalous and unchristian conduct, of adultery, unheard of licentiousness, and other abominable crimes, among the clergy, as some of the dignitaries at Rome, have themselves often confessed and lamented, it is a lamentable thing that the Christian estate of matrimony has not only been presumptuously forbidden, but in some places speedy punishment has been inflicted, as though it were a heinous crime! Matrimony is moreover declared a lawful and honorable estate, by the laws of your imperial majesty, and by the code of every empire in which justice and law prevailed. Of late, however, innocent subjects, and especially ministers, are cruelly



tormented on account of their marriage. Nor is such conduct a violation of the divine laws alone, it is equally opposed to the canons of the Church. The apostle Paul denominates that a doctrine of devils which forbids marriage (1 Tim. iv. 1-3)."

The Emperor Charles V. favored a relaxation of the law, and so did some of the bishops; but in vain—Rome prevailed—and the yoke remains on the necks of the clergy to this day.

The Thirty-second Article of the Church of England, and the Twenty-first of the Methodist Confession, being a revision of the former, teach that it is lawful for ministers, as well as other Christians, to marry at their own discretion. They "are not commanded by God's law, either to vow the estate of single life, or to abstain from marriage."

There is no such command in Scripture; there is no example of such vow—but abundance of testimony to the contrary. Yet papists have the hardihood to appeal to the Scripture for support.

They refer to Matt. xix. 11, 12: "But he said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs which were so born from their mother's womb; and there are some eunuchs which were made eunuchs of men; and there be eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it." But what bearing has this on the subject? Is that any command for the clergy, or any others, to take the vow of celibacy? The passage simply states that there is one class of so-called eunuchs constituted of those who have no natural inclination to marriage, or are impotent; another class constituted of those who are mutilated, as by Oriental princes, to take care of their women, or for the purpose of procuring peculiar voices to sing in the Pope's Sistine Chapel, to the everlasting disgrace of "His Holi-

ness." Then there is a third class constituted of those who made themselves eunuchs, not in a literal sense (as in the case of Origen), but metaphorically, in the sense of subduing natural inclinations, so as to be at liberty to promote the cause of the gospel in such a way as cannot be done in the married state. Cf. 1 Cor. vii. 26, 34; ix. 5, 15, 16. In the first instance a man's will has nothing to do with the matter; in the second it is against his will; in the third, it is with his will, concurring however with divine aid. Now, our Lord says, "He that is able to receive it, let him receive it"—implying that some cannot live in celibacy, but permitting those to do so, who can and are willing to do it for the kingdom of heaven's sake; otherwise it seems to be the duty of all to marry. Heb. xiii. 4.

This passage, therefore, gives no more countenance to the enforced celibacy of the clergy, or of monks and nuns, than Luke xviii. 29, which Bishop Hay absurdly brings forward. He says, "This is also manifest from the special reward promised by our Saviour, and bestowed in heaven upon those who lead a chaste life: our Saviour says, 'Amen, I say unto you, there is no man that hath left house, or parents, or wife, for the kingdom of heaven's sake, who shall not receive much more in this present time and in the world to come, life everlasting.'" If he had quoted the parallel passage, in Matt. xix. 29, he would have had also children, and lands, and brethren, and sisters—indeed, some of these are in Luke—and more than all these in Luke xiv. 26: "If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple." But what do all such passages prove? That it is not lawful for a disciple of Christ to have a wife? Then he must not have parents, brothers, or sisters, or children—he must not have houses or lands—in a word, he must not have himself—he must commit suicide! The plain meaning



is, and Bishop Hay could not escape it, that when the cause of Christ demands it, and the kingdom of heaven can be thereby promoted, we must part with our most valued possessions, our dearest friends, and even our lives, looking for the recompence beyond this world.

So of 1 Cor. vii., which is pressed into the argument for the celibacy of the priesthood. There is no reference to ministers apart from others in that chapter. The apostle counsels those of the Corinthians who could do so, to remain single, "because of the present distress,"—the persecutions and trials through which the Church was passing, when there was frequently but a step between the font and the stake. (1 Cor. xv. 29-32.) They would thus be saved from many cares and anxieties, and would attend upon the Lord without distraction. But if they had not the special gift of continence, he advises them to enter the conjugal state; "for," says he, "it is better to marry than to burn." The whole scope of the chapter is directly against the vow of celibacy, or the enforced state of single life; no distinction being made between clergy and laity.

Some of the more romantic of Romish polemics press into their service Rev. xiv. 4: "These are they which are not defiled with women; for they are virgins." A very slight acquaintance with the style of the *Apocalypse* would teach them that this has no reference to literal virginity. It simply means that the hundred and forty and four thousand—a symbolical number, there mentioned—were free from uncleanness, the symbol of idolatry.

There is one *profound* argument which we have reserved for the last. Romanists are obliged to allow that in the first age married persons were admitted to the ministerial office; but this, they say, was because other persons were so scarce! Our Lord and his apostles, forsooth, would have chosen single men for the ministry, but they were not to be had, so they were obliged to take married



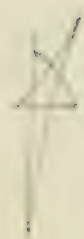
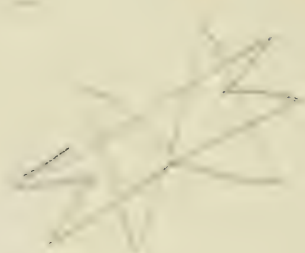
men! In after times single men were not scarce, and so they were chosen, and married men rejected. We were going to ask why they were permitted to retain their wives, as we see they were for several centuries; but perhaps it is better to leave that formidable argument unanswered! The simple stating of it shows the utter hopelessness of the Romish cause.

Any one can see plainly enough why the Pope and the hierarchy of Rome are so strenuous in enforcing the celibacy of the clergy, and of monks and nuns, and why they so hate and denounce Luther, Cranmer, and other Reformers, for breaking the accursed bonds, and proclaiming their freedom. The Pope and his prelates want to have absolute control of the priestly and monastic orders, and so they doom them to a life of celibacy, that they might be made more available as ecclesiastical janizaries—available for all places and all occasions throughout their spiritual empire. They are bound by no domestic ties, restrained to no locality, ready at a moment's notice to go whithersoever their services are needed. Illicit connections can be formed and dissolved *ad libitum*. This, indeed, gives amazing power to the hierarchy, and wonderfully subserves all its projects and intents; and that is the reason why the oft-repeated and passionate request of the clergy, to be allowed to marry, to save themselves from a life of misery in contending against nature, or doing worse, yielding to its demands by living in debauchery, has been, still is, and is likely to be, persistently and emphatically refused.

We conclude this discussion by a passage from Jeremy Taylor's curious, learned, and masterly dissertation, "Of the Marriage of Bishops and Priests." (Works, vol. III., page 579.) Speaking of the law requiring celibacy, the erudite and eloquent prelate says:

'The law of the Church was an evil law. made by

an authority violent and usurped, insufficient as to that charge ; it was not a law of God—it was against the rights and against the necessities of nature ; it was unnatural and unreasonable ; it was not for edification of the Church ; it was no advantage to spiritual life : it is a law, therefore, that is against public honesty, because it did openly and secretly introduce dishonesty [unchastity] ; it had nothing of the requisites of a good law ; it had no consideration of human frailty, nor of human comforts ; it was neither necessary, nor profitable, nor innocent—neither fitted to time, nor place, nor person ; it was not accepted by them that could not bear it ; it was complained of by them that could ; it was never admitted in the East ; it was fought against and declaimed and railed at in the West ; and at last, is laid aside in the Churches especially of the North, as the most intolerable and most unreasonable tyranny in the world ; for it was not to be endured, that upon the pretence of an unreasonable perfection, so much impurity should be brought into the Church, and so many souls thrust down to hell.”





## CHAPTER XV.

# SOME THINGS CATHOLICS DO BELIEVE

BY

THOS. P. HALEY,

PASTOR FIRST CHRISTIAN CHURCH,

ST. LOUIS.

---

LADIES AND GENTLEMEN :—In a recent lecture by Bishop Ryan of St. Louis—"the silvery-tongued defender of the faith" in the Mississippi valley—we have a statement of "what Catholics do not believe." It is proposed in this lecture to review briefly the leading positions of the distinguished lecturer, and to contrast them with the teachings of Holy Scripture.

The public is not however so much interested to know "what Catholics do *not believe*." It is a matter of more practical concern to know what Catholics do believe.

The importance of this inquiry does not arise so much out of the fact that there are two hundred millions of Catholics (there are more of the followers of Confucius and Mahomet) as out of the baseless and bold assumption, that "without 'the true Catholic faith' no one can be saved." Every man on the earth who does not accept "with a firm faith, and profess all and every one of those things" which are contained in that creed, which the holy Catholic Church maketh use of, is to be damned.

If Catholics held and taught their *peculiar* Beliefs as the result of honest investigation of the word of God, and allowed other men the same right which they claim and exercise for themselves, and that "the amount of light and knowledge possible to men in all their environments is the measure of their responsibility," their beliefs and disbeliefs would not so vitally concern the christian public. But when it is remembered that they claim that the "Church of Rome" is *infallible* and can not err; that she alone is the interpreter of God's word, the expounder of God's truth; that men must accept and profess her Creed, or reject it on pain of eternal damnation; and the further claim, so often asserted in dungeons, in tortures and in blood, that she has the right to compel and coerce the faith of men, it becomes a matter of immense importance to test, while we may, the truth of her mighty pretensions.

In the Bishop's introductory, in which he refers to the presence of a large number of Protestants during the delivery of his lecture, he uses the following language: "I hope I said nothing that could pain them. It is not, and never was in my heart to do so in discussing religious questions with outsiders. The Jews did not speak to the Samaritans, but our Lord and Master did speak to the Samaritans, and did select a Samaritan as a model of fraternal charity, though he also said salvation is of the Jews." Now, if this illustration mean anything, it means that the charity of the Bishop constrains him to condescend to speak to the Protestants, but "Salvation is of the Catholic Church." This statement, even in the introduction, confirms my assertion that Catholics do believe that all persons outside of the Catholic Church will be damned.

In order to test the claims of the Catholic Church, or, indeed, of any other church, it is necessary to appeal to the only "Divine Standard," the word of the living God, which



declares that "all scripture given by inspiration is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works." The closing words of the holy scriptures are words of warning: "For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book. If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book, and if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book." Jesus is declared to be "the *Author* and Finisher of the faith." With the death of the last apostle of Jesus, Revelation closed.

The all sufficiency and supreme authority of the holy scriptures in matters of religion, is a fundamental truth. If the scriptures are not inspired, are not all sufficient and of supreme authority, and an infallible guide, and the only infallible guide, then certainty in matters of religion is an impossibility. If God in His word has not made the way of salvation plain, in vain may we expect certainty from bishops and priests in council or out of council.

It is in vain to attempt to prove Romanism false because her doctrines are *unreasonable*. True, that would raise a presumption against her, for religion, to receive the approbation and meet the acceptance of men, must be reasonable; but there are things in nature, and may be in religion, that are above reason and beyond. There is a limit to man's reason—a limit beyond which it can not go. Nor will it prove Romanism false to show that it differs from Protestantism. There are popular doctrines and practices in Protestantism that are as indefensible, from a Bible standpoint, as the grossest absurdities of Romanism.

It must be shown that the Bible, the word of God, as



well as human reason, is opposed to the chief dogmas of the "Mother Church." It must be shown that her doctrines are not found in the word of God, and that her practices are not therein sanctioned. That we may do this, we must "begin at the beginning." "We must believe only the things for which we have divine authority." We must disregard all the assumptions and dictations of fallible men, whatever be their official name or rank.

It is now proposed to place in striking contrast the teachings of the holy scriptures in regard to the Church of Christ upon earth, and the assumptions of Romanists. That we may do this, we present the following summary of scripture teaching in the language of another:

1. "The Church of Christ upon earth is essentially one—intentionally and constitutionally one, consisting of all those in every place that profess their faith in Christ, and render obedience to him in all things according to the scriptures, and that manifest the same by their temper and conduct, and of none else, as none else can truly and properly be called Christians.

2. That the Church of Christ upon earth must necessarily exist in particular and distinct societies, locally separated from one another; yet there ought to be no schisms, no uncharitable divisions among them. They ought to receive each other as Christ Jesus hath also received them to the glory of God, and to this end they ought all to walk by the same rule, to mind and speak the same thing, to be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgement.

3. That in order to do this, nothing ought to be inculcated upon Christians as articles of faith, nor required by them as terms of communion, but what is expressly taught and enjoined in the word of God. Nor ought anything to be admitted as of divine obligation in church constitution and management. but what is expressly

enjoined by the authority of our Lord Jesus Christ and His apostles upon the New Testament Church, either in express terms or by approved precedent.

4. That although the scriptures of the Old and New Testament are inseparably connected, making together but one entire and perfect revelation of the Divine will for the edification and salvation of the Church, and, therefore, in that respect can not be separated, yet as to what directly and properly belongs to their immediate objects; the New Testament is as perfect a constitution for the worship, discipline and Government of the New Testament Church, and as perfect a rule for the particular duties of its members, as the Old Testament was for the worship, discipline and Government of the Old Testament Church and the particular duties of its members.

5. That with respect to commands and ordinances of our Lord Jesus Christ *where the scriptures are silent* as to the express time or manner of performance, if any such there be, no *human* authority has power to interfere in order to supply the supposed deficiency by making laws for the Church of God. Nor can anything more be required of Christians in such cases than that they so observe these commands and ordinances as will evidently answer the declared and obvious ends of their institution. Much less has any human authority power to impose new commands or ordinances upon the Church which our Lord Jesus Christ has not enjoined. Nothing ought to be received into the faith or worship of the Church, or be made a term of communion among Christians, which is not as old as the New Testament.

6. That although inferences and deductions from *scripture* premises, when fairly inferred, may be truly called the doctrine of God's holy word; yet are they not formally binding upon the consciences of Christians, further than they perceive the connection, and evidently see that they



are so, for their faith must not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God. Therefore no such deductions can be made terms of communion, but do properly belong to the after and progressive edification of the Church. Hence it is evident that no such deductions or inferential truths ought to have any place in the Church's confession.

7. That although doctrinal exhibitions of the great system of Divine truths and defensive testimonies in opposition to prevailing errors, be highly expedient, and the more full and explicit they be for those purposes the better, yet as these must be in a great measure the effect of human reasoning, and of course must contain many inferential truths, they ought not to be made terms of Christian Communion, unless we suppose what is contrary to fact, that none have a right to the communion of the Church, but such as possess a very clear and decided judgment, or come to a very high degree of doctrinal information, whereas the Church from the beginning did, and ever will consist of little children and young men as well as fathers.

8. That as it is not necessary that persons should have a particular knowledge or distinct apprehension of all Divinely revealed truths in order to entitle them to a place in the Church; neither should they for this purpose be required to make a profession more extensive than their knowledge, but that on the contrary, their having a due measure of scriptural self knowledge respecting their lost and perishing condition by nature and practice, and of the way of salvation through Jesus Christ, accompanied with a profession of their faith in, and obedience to Him in all things, according to His word, is all that is absolutely necessary to qualify them for admission into His Church.

9. That all that are enabled through grace to make such a profession and to manifest the reality of it in their temper and conduct, should love each other as brethren,



children of the same family and father, temples of the same spirit, members of the same body, subjects of the same grace, objects of the same Divine love, bought with the same price, and joint heirs of the same inheritance, whom God hath joined together, no man should dare to put asunder.

10. That divisions among Christians is a horrid evil, fraught with many evils. It is anti-christian, as it destroys the visible unity of the body of Christ, as if he were divided against himself, excluding and excommunicating a part of himself. It is anti-scriptural as being strictly prohibited by his sovereign authority, a direct violation of his express command. It is anti-scriptural, as it excites Christians to contemn and hate and oppose one another, who are bound by the highest and most endearing obligations to love each other as brethren, even as Christ has loved them. In a word, it is productive of confusion and every evil work.

11. That, in some instances, a partial neglect of the expressly revealed will of God, and in others, an assumed authority for making the approbation of human opinions and human inventions a term of communion, by introducing them into the constitution, faith or worship of the Church, are and have been the immediate obvious and universally acknowledged causes of all the corruptions and divisions that ever have taken place in the Church of God.

12. That all that is necessary to the highest perfection and purity of the Church upon earth is, first—

That none be received as members but such as having that due measure of scriptural self knowledge, described above, do profess their faith in Christ, and obedience to him in all things according to the scriptures; nor,

Secondly, that any be retained in her communion longer than they continue to manifest the reality of their profession by their temper and conduct.

Thirdly, that her ministers, duly and scripturally qualified, inculcate none other things than those very articles of faith and holiness expressly revealed and enjoined in the word of God, that in all their administrations they keep close by the observance of all Divine ordinances, after the example of the primitive church, exhibited in the New Testament, without any addition whatsoever of human opinions or inventions of men.

13. Lastly, that if any circumstantialia indispensably necessary to the observance of Divine ordinances, be not found upon the page of Revelation, such, and such only, as are absolutely necessary for this purpose, should be adopted under the title of human expedients, without any pretense to a more sacred origin, so that any subsequent alteration or difference in the observance of these things, might produce no contention or division in the Church."

Now, assuming that the holy scriptures are of supreme authority in matters of religion, and a complete revelation of the faith and worship of the Church of Christ, and that the foregoing facts and principles are founded upon the same: it is not difficult to see that the Roman Catholic Church bears little resemblance to New Testament Church.

The scriptures of the New Testament say nothing of popes, cardinals, arch-bishops, priests, monks, friars, nuns, sisters of charity, reverends, right reverends, and doctors of divinity, these, one and all, are of human origin.

The Lord Jesus commanded, "Call no man your father upon the earth, for one is your Father which is in heaven; neither be ye called masters, for one is your Master, even Christ; but he that is greatest among you shall be your servant."

The New Testament Church consisted of such, and such only, as accepted Christ by faith; repented of their sins, and broke off their sins by righteousness, and were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.



The Church of Christ at Jerusalem was composed of saved, pardoned persons. Not a man of the New Testament Church claimed for himself infallibility. The apostles of Jesus Christ, except when speaking by inspiration, were like other disciples of Jesus, fallible, while the Church, therefore, is a "Divine Institution" in the sense, that it was established by Divine authority, and was to be divinely guided, or guided by the teaching of the Divine Spirit in the word of God. It is a bold, rash assumption, that the Church, composed of fallible and sinful men, is a "Divine Institution," in the sense that it is infallible, and can not err. This assumption is the root, the foundation of all the errors and absurdities of the Roman Catholic Church.

Bishop Ryan, in his attempt to show that men do not dethrone their reason in accepting the unreasonable dogmas of the Church, says: "They have first convinced themselves that the Church to which they pay allegiance, and by which they are taught the truths of Revelation, is a 'Divine Institution, an unerring messenger of God to them.' If, therefore, they submit to a decision of the Church, they submit to a decision of a tribunal which their reason has already accepted as unerring. If they were obliged to receive decisions on matters of faith, without having been already convinced that such decisions were given by a tribunal that could not err, *then Catholics would be slaves.*"

This, I repeat, is the error out of which grow all other errors and absurdities of the Roman Catholic Church. In what passage of the holy scriptures is it said that the "Church" is an unerring messenger of God to men? Inspired apostles, when speaking by inspiration, were unerring messengers of God to men; but the Church composed of uninspired men exclusively since the death of the last apostle, is not, and can not, in the nature of the case, be the "unerring messenger of God to men."



If it be said that Jesus said to his disciples, "If he neglect to hear the Church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican;" it is answered, the language has no reference to matters of faith or worship in the Church of Jesus Christ, but to the settlement of personal difficulties between brethren. When they have failed to adjust their difficulty between themselves, and by themselves, the offended must tell it to the Church, and the Church through her scripturally qualified and appointed ministers, executes the *revealed will* of God. They do not legislate in the case, but simply execute the revealed law of Christ as found in the holy scriptures. The Church can not make that an offense which the scriptures have not made an offense. The Church can not make that a duty which the scriptures have not made duty. The Church can not make nor enforce a penalty which the scriptures have not made and commanded to be enforced.

If it be said that the scriptures assert that "the Church is the pillar and ground of the truth," it is answered that we have the truth first, and the Church simply maintains and defends it.

I now propose to show by the Bishop's admission, that Catholics *are slaves*. I affirm what every intelligent man knows, and what every Catholic will admit, that no Catholic, born of Catholic parents, ever did "convince himself" that the Church is a "Divine Institution," and can not, therefore, err. He does not examine the question at all; he would not be permitted to examine it. Suppose the Bishop should find one of the children of his parish in the public Library of St. Louis, with a heap of Catholic and Protestant authorities before him (especially with a Bible open before him) examining this question: "Is the Church a Divine Institution and can she err?" What would the Bishop say to such? Would he not answer: "The Church says she is a 'Divine Institution,' and can

not err," and you must believe what the Church believes or be damned! Bishop Ryan knew when he made the assertion, that the Catholic child is taught from his infancy that the Church can not err, and he must accept her dogmas on pain of eternal damnation. He is required to say every time he repeats the Creed, "I believe and profess all and every one of those things which are contained in that Creed which the Holy (Roman) Church makes use of." It is simply and palpably false that such as are born in the Church, or born of Catholic parents, exercise their reason in determining the question that the Church is a "'Divine Institution' and can not err." No good Catholic is ever found in any such heretical work as investigating religious questions. He leaves that to the Church. He accepts this dogma as he does all other unreasonable and unscriptural dogmas of the Church on authority, and is, according to the Bishop's own admission, a *slave*. Catholics are therefore slaves, all slaves, Bishop Ryan himself being Judge.

But the Protestant who becomes a Catholic is allowed to use his reason *once*, that is, he is allowed to "convince himself" that the Church is a "Divine Institution," ever after that when the most unreasonable dogma is presented he can only say, the Church declares it, therefore, I believe it.

How does the Protestant convince himself? By an examination of the word of God. Where is the doctrine taught? Protestants are accustomed to say: 'No testimony, no faith; no evidence, no conviction.'

Now, while the Church of Christ was divinely instituted, I shall show that she has erred; apostles, individual members, and whole Churches have erred. I shall also show that the Roman Catholic Church has erred, and that her history is one marked by such gross errors as have shocked humanity in all the ages of her corrupt history.



The New Testament teaches that the chosen apostles of Jesus erred. The apostle Peter, who it is claimed was the first Pope of Rome (an unscriptural assumption), denied his Lord in the hall of the High Priest, and denied Him with cursing and bitter oaths. Was this an error?

If it be said that he was then uninspired and then not pope; it is answered that he erred long after his inspiration came. Paul says of him, "but when Peter came to Antioch I withstood him to the face because he was to be blamed, for before that certain came from James he did eat with the Gentiles; but when they were come he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision, and other Jews dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas was also carried away with their dissimulation. "'Pope Peter' the First," dissembled, was guilty of dissimulation!! and yet popes can not err, are infallible!! Now, surely if Peter erred, so might all the apostles, and doubtless they did, always, excepting when they were guided by the Holy Spirit. It is not necessary to write a line to show that, as individuals, the Bible convicts all men of sin—"there are none good (that is perfect) no, not one."

In the address to the seven Churches in Asia, the holy spirit arraigns nearly every one of the seven for error in doctrine or in practice, so that whole Churches, though "Divine Institutions," are convicted of error.

"Unto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus write: Nevertheless, I have somewhat against thee, because thou hast left thy first love; remember, therefore, from whence thou art fallen, and repent and do the first works, or else I will come unto thee quickly and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent." The Church in Ephesus left its first love and was fallen; why not the Church of Rome?

"To the Angel of the Church of Pergamos write:



But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam who taught Balac to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel; to eat things sacrificed to idols; and to commit fornication. So thou hast also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate. Repent, or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth." The Church in Pergamos erred in doctrine and practice, why not the Church of Rome? "Unto the Angel of the Church of Thyatira write: Notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed to idols."

"Unto the Angel of Sardis write: I know thy works, thou hast a name to live, and art dead; and to the Angel of the Church of the Laodiceans write: I know thy works that thou art neither cold nor hot. I would thou wert cold or hot, so then because thou art neither cold nor hot I will spew thee out of my mouth, because thou sayest I am rich and increased with goods and have need of nothing and knowest not that thou art wretched; and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked. I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich, and white raiment that thou mayest be clothed and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear, and anoint thine eyes with eye-salve that thou mayest see. As many as I love I rebuke and chasten. Be zealous, therefore, and repent." I might add to these, quotations from all the epistles, showing that the Church of Jesus Christ, though a "Divine Institution," even in the time of the apostle, did err in doctrine and in life. Can any man in the exercise of right reason convince himself that the Church can not err, with these New Testament facts staring him in the face during his investi-

gations? But we must not forget that it is asserted by Romanists that "it is only when the pope speaks as pope that he is infallible, and that it is only when the Church speaks in council that she is infallible." "There is, or has been a variety of opinions among Romanists respecting where this infallibility resides." They all say it exists in the Church, but when they come to fix on its seat they divide into at least four sects. Some place it in the universal Church scattered over the world; some place it in the pope; others in a general council independent of the pope; while others assert that a general council with a pope at its head is infallible. It has already been shown that the universal Church, or the Church in every place, is fallible; is convicted of error by the Holy Spirit. Infallibility, therefore, can not reside in the universal Church; besides, it may be seriously doubted whether there ever was a council of the universal Church. An additional fact should be noted that councils of the universal Church (so called) have decided contrary to one another.

The Council of Nice, in 325, and of Ephesus, in 431, decree with an anathema, "that no new article forever shall be added to the Creed of Faith of Nice." But the Council of Trent in more than twelve hundred years added twelve new articles to this very creed, pronouncing an anathema on all who will not embrace them. If the former was right, the latter was wrong; if the latter was right, the former was wrong; therefore, neither the one nor the other can be regarded infallible.

The Council of Laodicea, in 360 or 370, and the Council of Trent, in 1545, have decided in direct opposition to each other respecting the canon of scripture. The former decided on the canon which Protestants acknowledge, rejecting the Apocrypha, and the latter pronounced the Apocrypha to be canonical.

The Council of Constantinople, in 754, unanimously



decreed the removal of images and the abolition of image-worship; but the Second Council of Nice decreed that image-worship should be established. (See Faber's *Difficulties of Romanism*, p. 41.)

Infallibility can not reside in the pope (the recent decision of the World's Council to the contrary, notwithstanding), else, when the pope is dead, the Church is fallible, and a fallible Church can not make an infallible pope.

Respecting the supremacy of the pope, "Councils with popes at their head have differed." "The first Council of Nice, Canon 6, decreed that the bishop of Constantinople should possess equal privilege with the bishop of Rome. Everyone knows how this has been contradicted by both Councils and popes."

But it is needless to pursue this subject. It is simply certain that we have an infallible book; that this book nowhere asserts the infallibility of the Church. It nowhere mentions a pope fallible nor infallible, and that the record of the Roman Church herself, in regard to her own infallibility, is inconsistent and contradictory.

The Bishop says, "She does not hide the scriptures from the people. The Church interprets what needs interpretation. Does that lessen the dignity of the scriptures? Are the laws of Missouri degraded because there is a Supreme Court to interpret them?" Suppose we had an infallible, inspired law makers in Missouri, and every word of every line of law was dictated by the Spirit of Almighty God, would it not then degrade the laws of Missouri to have an uninspired Court to interpret inspired laws? Suppose the Supreme Court were inspired to interpret the inspired laws of Missouri, would we not need another Court to interpret the interpretations of the interpreters.

The Bishop says: "The apostolic body still remains until to-day unshorn of a single apostolic power." The Bishop must believe this enormous falsehood because the



infallible Church asserts it, as there is not the shadow of proof of it in the word of God, and no living man can give the signs of an apostle by speaking languages he never learned and working miracles as did the twelve. It is a bold and mischievous assumption without the shadow of support. In proof of this assumption, however, he asserts that God provided the Jewish people a tribunal to settle disputes: "They were directed to the High Priest. It was death to dispute the decision of the Priest." But the High Priest was inspired. The Pope, the Council nor the Church claims to be.

Judaism had its "Supreme Court," as the Bishop asserts, but it was an "inspired Court." We have seen already that the so-called Supreme Court of the Catholic Church is inconsistent with itself and contradictory in its decrees.

The Bishop says that "God or some one whom Almighty God would preserve from error in teaching, must speak," and, therefore, there is constituted in the Catholic Church this supreme deciding power—Supreme Court in spiritual matters.

Now, the truth is that God has spoken by his inspired apostles, and has decided whatever it is needful to decide, and the things which are not thus decided in and by the word of God, are the things about which men may differ and still serve God acceptably and attain to immortality and eternal life. The boast of the Bishop that this Supreme Court has secured the perfect unity of the belief of two hundred millions of people, is another way of asserting that this Supreme Court has succeeded in *enslaving* this great company whom God intended to be freemen.

The Bishop attempts a defense of the "magnificent ceremonial" and the use of the arts in the Catholic worship. On this subject, the eloquent Bishop grows unusually eloquent. He is an ardent and enthusiastic believer in

the value and power of the "ceremonials" and the arts in the worship. "The object of the use of the ceremonial and the arts is "to aid man to worship in spirit and in truth." Now we simply ask, why did not our heavenly Father, in giving the Law upon Mount Sinai, suggest to Moses and to Israel the value of the "ceremonials" and the arts? Why did the Majesty of heaven forbid the use of the arts in His worship? Why did He say: "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them; for I, the Lord, am a jealous God." (Ex. xx. 4, 5.) .

All the idolatrous nations have ever had their "ceremonials" and their "arts" in worship, and the purpose of God to establish a spiritual worship, demanded the overthrow of image-worship, and in the very constitution of the Church, he has forbidden the possibility of their introduction. In the primitive apostolic Church there was not even the thought of "ceremonials" and the "arts" in the worship. It is barely possible that many Catholics use the "images" "to aid them in the spiritual worship," but it is simply certain that the "*masses*" *worship the images themselves*. God commands that men "shall not bow down to any image," and yet all Catholics do bow down to images, and in the act defy God, if, indeed, they do intend to use these images simply as aids. Whenever God undertook the overthrow of idolatry, he always destroyed their images. The fact, however, that God forbade the making of images for any purposes, and that such are not found in use in the New Testament, is enough for any man who reverences God's word. It may be denied in terms more eloquent and glowing than any used by our eloquent Bishop, but while images remain in Catholic temples, this part of their worship remains idolatrous.



The Bishop says: "They kneel before these images," "of course they do not adore them." They do, and every time they thus kneel, they defy God and commit an act of idolatry—whether they intend it or not.

The Bishop denies that "Catholics believe that the blessed virgin or any saint or all the saints together, can receive anything like the slightest act of adoration." Now I would ask an intelligent audience, if it is not generally supposed that prayer and praise are acts of adoration? I have before me a volume called "The Pious Guide," a book which is found in the hands of all devout Catholics, and in this volume I find in the "Confiteor," page 30, these words: "I confess to Almighty God, to the *Blessed Mary*, ever a virgin, to blessed Michael the Archangel, to blessed John the Baptist, to the holy apostles Peter and Paul, and to all the saints, that I have sinned," etc. On page 36 we have this prayer: Blessed St. Michael, defend us in the day of battle. Oh, Angels of God, enlighten, govern and defend us this night from all sin and danger.

On page 80, in a prayer addressed to the Virgin, we have these remarkable words: "Thus affected, and upon this consideration, I throw myself at thy sacred feet, and though the greatest of sinners, most unworthy and least corresponding with the graces I have received, I here enter my protest against such unwarrantable proceeding, and beseech thee, Oh, Virgin, more than martyr, to accept the same as a reparation of honor. Pardon my past offenses and indignities; pardon those of mankind." The same prayer makes mention of the "profanation of altars dedicated to thy name."

We have here "the dedication of altars" to the name of the Virgin; we have the worshipper prostrate at the feet of the Virgin, and we have a prayer offered to the Virgin in which she is invoked to *pardon* the worshipper, and, indeed, to *pardon* all mankind, and still the Bishop



assures us that Catholics do not believe that the Virgin "can receive the slightest act of adoration." It may be that Catholics have very peculiar notions as to what constitute acts of adoration, but these acts paid to Almighty God, would certainly constitute worship. How singular that in the many prayers of the Old Testament, not one was ever offered to any of the angels or the saints; that in the New Testament prayers, not one was ever offered to the Virgin Mary, nor to any angel, martyr, or saint. Surely if the angels, the Virgin, and the saints might be worshipped, and had such power with God, those saints would have availed themselves of their intercession; but neither in these prayers nor in any letter of instruction to the Churches is any reference made to the Virgin, much less is any Christian instructed to pray to the Virgin or to any of the saints.

Prayers in the Old Testament are addressed to Jehovah, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob; in the New Testament, to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Not one prayer is formally addressed to Jesus; not one to the Holy Spirit. To one who follows the "infallible Book," and not the fallible Church, this is sufficient to condemn the practice of the "Church" in offering prayers to the saints as idolatrous.

The Bishop insists that the "Old Church" does not "demoralize the individual or the national conscience by her use of that power which God gave to his Apostles upon the very day of his resurrection, when he said: 'Whose sins ye shall forgive, they are forgiven them.'"

This passage is quoted to justify the daring impiety of the priests of the Church when they forgive sins. It is not denied that the "confessional" has been an engine of great power in the hands of the priests and the Church. It is not denied that the Catholic is taught that he must repent of his sins and purpose to renounce them: nor is

it denied that the "confessor" professes to be only "God's agent;" but how strange it is that Jesus said nothing of this agent; that, on the contrary, he taught each disciple to say: "Our Father who art in heaven" \* \* "forgive us our sins as we forgive those that sin against us," and how remarkable, that in all the New Testament Scriptures that not one word should be said in reference to the great value to the worshipper of confessing his sins to a priest. Surely the holy scriptures must be woefully deficient in instruction to the saint. But does not the Savior's words, "Whose sins ye remit, they are remitted," justify the priest in absolving the sinner, when he has complied with the prescribed conditions? It is answered that the apostles themselves are the best interpreters of this commission, and nowhere in their preaching or writing do they make the most distant allusion to their power, even as "God's agents," to forgive sins. These words of Jesus must therefore be understood in the light of apostolic practice, and since they never required men to come to them, "confessing their sins" in order "to be absolved" from them, the Romish inference is unfounded. The only sense in which they remitted and retained sins, was in proclaiming the terms of the remission of sins in the gospel of Christ. They taught the people to "believe on the Lord Jesus Christ," "to repent and be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins," that is, upon their "faith in Christ, repentance for sins and baptism in the name of Jesus Christ," God would forgive their sins. No apostle ever used the formulary, "I absolve thee," it was reserved for uninspired and erring priests to do this.

The Bishop draws a graphic picture of "that old man, over eighty-five years of age, moving towards that bare-footed monk in the confessional." This old man kneels down before the monk, and says: "Bless me, father, for



I have sinned." Now this "barefooted Monk" and this "old man" ought to learn a lesson from the Apostle Peter (and Peter ought to be good authority with both). When Peter was sent to the house of Cornelius, to tell him what he "ought to do to be saved." This scene, described in these words, occurred. "And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and *fell down at his feet* and worshipped him; but Peter took him up, saying, Stand up, I myself also am a man." (Acts x. 25, 26.) Peter, an inspired apostle, allowed no man to kneel before him, even as "God's agent" or messenger. He remembered the words: "Thou shalt worship the Lord God, and Him only shalt thou serve." He seemed to be shocked that any man should so degrade himself as to bow down before a man. A grosser violation of God's word, and a more dishonoring practice to God and man, than this of kneeling in the confessional, has not been invented, notwithstanding the fact, that this practice is wholly without warrant from the holy scriptures, and does violence to teaching of God's word, the Bishop affirms that "the ordinary mode of forgiveness is through this ministry." The apostle John teaches that "If any man sin," he has "an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous," and "If we confess our sins, God is faithful and just to forgive our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." (1 Jno. i. 9; ii. 1.) We need no monk, no confessional, and no absolution from man.

The bishop very ingeniously introduces the anathemas of the Church on such as believe certain false doctrines, such as the following: "Cursed is he who commits idolatry, who prays to images or relics, or worships them for God." Now we ask, whence the necessity for this curse? If there is no Catholic in any danger of worshipping these relics, why this anathema? The truth is, that the presence of these images in Catholic temples, places of



worship, makes it almost certain that the masses of worshippers do worship these, and thereby commit idolatry.

“Cursed is every goddess worshipper who believes the Virgin Mary to be any more than a creature; who worships her, or puts his trust in her more than in God.” (He may put his trust in her, and he does, else he would not pray to her, only he must not put his trust in her more than in God.) “Who believes her above His son, or that she can in any way command Him?” Why did the authority which issued this curse, feel called upon to do so? No Protestant body has ever seen any necessity for legislating against image-worship, goddess-worship, saint-worship, angel-worship, etc.

The discovery that such worship really existed in the Catholic Church, would justify the issuance of such a document. This work must have grown out of such a discovery, for surely we should not have these fearful anathemas against practices which had no existence, and which were not likely to arise.

The denial and anathema are evidence that the tendency of Catholic worship is ever towards idolatry.

The remainder of this lecture shall be devoted to a consideration of the unscriptural doctrines of the Church of Rome. These shall be taken from authoritative sources. Let the hearer, with the New Testament in hand, see whether they are in harmony with the word of God, or not—

1. The doctrine of the Church in reference to the holy scriptures, may be stated as follows: “All the doctrines of Christianity are derived from the word of God *which includes scripture and traditions.*” (Trent Catechism page 19.) Again, “If we would have the whole rule of Christian faith and practice, we must not be content with those scriptures which Timothy knew from his infancy

that is, with the Old Testament alone, nor yet with the New Testament without taking along with it the *traditions* of the apostles, and the interpretation of the Church to which the apostles delivered both the book and the interpretation of it. (See note on Catholic version, on 2nd line, 3, 16 ) The Catholic rule of faith is not merely the written word of God, but the whole word of God written and unwritten ; in other words, scripture and tradition, and these explained by the Catholic Church.

Thus it is seen that traditions and the interpretations of the Catholic Church constitute a part of the word of God, and are to be received. It is not at all difficult to see that the word of God has little to do with the faith and practice of the Church, since it is not the word of God which Catholics receive, but the Church's interpretation of the word of God. The traditions and the interpretations of the Church hold equal authority with the holy scriptures. In view of this fact, the "Battle Cry" of the Protestant reformers has an immense significance, "The Bible, and the Bible alone, is the religion of Protestants." No man can become a Catholic till he can believe that the fables of the fathers and the contradictory decrees of the Church are of equal authority with God's holy word ; and this no man can do, until he has surrendered his reason to the authority of the Church. The Church does not believe the statement of Paul, that the scriptures, Old and New Testament, "make one wise unto salvation" and "thoroughly furnish him unto every good work."

Pope Pius VII., on June 29, 1816, published a Bull against Bible Societies, addressed to the Primate of Poland, in which he refers to the Council of Trent, and pleads its authority for refusing the people in general the Bible in their own language, except under such limitations as would deprive them of the free use of the scriptures. The pope represents the circulation of the scriptures by Bible



Societies as “a crafty device by which the very foundations of religion are undermined ;” a *pestilence* which must be remedied and abolished ; a *defilement* of the faith, eminently dangerous to souls ; *impious machinations* of innovators, *wickedness* of a *nefarious scheme* ; *snares prepared* for men’s everlasting ruin, a new species of *tares* which our adversary has abundantly sown. This Bull further declares that, “agreeably to the ‘Index,’ the Bible, printed by Protestants, is to be numbered among other prohibited books, for it is evident from experience, that the holy scriptures when circulated in the vulgar tongue, have, through the temerity of men, produced more harm than good.” Strange, indeed, that God’s word for God’s children should produce all this evil ! Does not this zeal against the circulation of God’s word among the people, excite the suspicion that Catholics know that men will find no resemblance between the Church of the holy scriptures and the Roman Catholic Church. If its organization, ministry, doctrine and worship are authorized by the word of God, why this “mortal fear” of its circulation among the people. Is it not the experience of Protestants that the more they read the holy scriptures, even those published by Bible Societies, the more pious and godly they are ? that the people who possess and read the Bible are far more moral and more excellent people in all relations of life. “It is remarkable that the period of the world’s history when the morals of mankind were in the worst state, the places where iniquity prevailed most, were the times and places when and where the greatest scarcity of the word of God prevailed.” Roman Catholic countries, too, where the word of God is little read, and less known, furnish ample proofs of the corrupting effects of prohibiting the general reading of the word of God, by the ignorance, errors and immorality which prevail.

The doctrine of Catholics in reference to TRADITION,



has been incidentally stated in the foregoing paragraph. In determining any question, tradition has an *equal authority* with the "word of God," and in case of conflict between the teachings of the holy scriptures and tradition, the latter is always to be received.

The doctrine of INFALLIBILITY, already considered at some length in the preceding part of this lecture, is stated authoritatively, as follows:

"But as this one Church, because governed by the Holy Ghost, can not err in faith and morals, it necessarily follows that all other societies, arrogating to themselves the name of Church, because guided by the spirit of darkness, are sunk in the most pernicious errors, both doctrinal and moral." (See Catechism of the Council of Trent, p. 100.) According to this statement, all Protestant Churches are "societies arrogating to themselves the name of Church, guided by the spirit of darkness," that is, by the Devil, and sunk in pernicious errors of doctrines and morals.

The decision of the Council of Florence, on the 5th of July, 1439, will include something equivalent to this: "The Pope of Rome hath the supremacy over all the earth; he is the successor of Peter, the prince of the apostles, and the head of the Church; the father and teacher of all Christians;" that Jesus Christ hath given him in the person of St. Peter, the power to feed, to rule and govern the Catholic Church, as it is explained in the acts of œcumenical councils and in the Holy Canons. (Dupins' Ecclesiastic History, vol. 3, p. 35.) This decision has been reaffirmed by the recent World's Council, even in more explicit terms. We have now without any equivocation whatever, the doctrine of "papal infallibility," as the doctrine of the Roman Catholic Church in the 19th century. These infallible popes, however, have often contradicted each other. Gregory, surnamed the Great, about the conclusion of the sixth century, says:

"I confidently say, that whosoever calls himself the universal priest, or desires to be so called in his arrogance, is a forerunner of antichrist." (Greg. Max. Ep. bib. vi. ep. 30.)

Gregory VII. declares "that the Roman pontiff alone can be properly called universal. Innocent the I. and his followers till Pope Gelasius, asserted the communion of infants as necessary, which was condemned by subsequent popes. Popes Leo and Gelasius condemned communion in one kind, while all modern popes enjoin it."

"Gregory the Great condemned the worship of images, the title of Universal Bishop, and the canonicity of the Books of Maccabees. Stephen VI. annulled all the acts of Formosus, one of his predecessors. Jno. IX., his successor, in a council held at Ravenna, annulled Stephen's acts with respect to Formosus."

"Some popes acknowledged their own fallibility. Innocent IV. taught that a pope is not to be obeyed when his commands are heretical. Urban V., Gregory XI. and Clement VI. disavowed everything which they had advanced contrary to "the faith," either in consistory or in council. (See Barrow on Supremacy, pp. 393-400; Ousley, p. 134, for several instances of striking disagreement.) Pope Virgilius erred as pope when he first condemned and then approved the decision of the Fifth General Council held A. D. 533. (Dupins, vol. i., p. 709; Mosheim, cent 5, part ii., chap. iii., sec. 10.) Pope Liberius, in the fourth century, erred as pope in condemning Athanasius, and in consenting to the heretical faith of the Arians, and holding communion with them. On this account he was anathematized by Hilary. (Dupins, vol. i., p. 190.) If it be said, that popes who erred were no popes, it does not relieve the case, for then there were no popes for centuries; and since it is now defined that the infallibility of the Church resides in the popes, then for centuries was there no infallibility in the Church.



I frankly confess that the Catholics stand before the Country the enemies of the Public Schools.

FATHER PHELAN.

It is a sad sight to see a congregation whose combined wealth is millions, pleading exemption for their orphanage. My mother was left a widow with three little orphans to care for. Her little country home was taxed. If any orphanage should be exempt from taxation, such a one as that ought to be.

REV. MADISON C. PETERS.



The first of these is the fact that the British Empire is not a homogeneous entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests. The second is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time.

The third is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests. The fourth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time. The fifth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests.

The sixth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time. The seventh is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests. The eighth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time.

The ninth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests. The tenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time. The eleventh is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests.

The twelfth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time. The thirteenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests. The fourteenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time.

The fifteenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests. The sixteenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time. The seventeenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests.

The eighteenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a static entity, but a dynamic one that has evolved over time. The nineteenth is the fact that the British Empire is not a monolithic entity, but a collection of diverse and often conflicting interests.



"He commended himself unto God." Page 534.





Of the ANCIENT FATHERS in the Church the Catholics hold—that the scriptures are to be interpreted “according to the unanimous consent of the fathers.” To this it may be replied that the fathers do not agree among themselves, and the thing proposed, is not possible. Many of the fathers taught *false doctrines* and *heresies*, the Catholic Church herself being judge. Clemens Alexandrius taught that “Christ felt no hunger;” Hilary taught that “Christ in His sufferings had no sorrow;” Cyprian taught “rebaptization;” Origen taught that “the pains of hell would only be temporary;” several of the fathers taught that “Christ descended into hell, and there preached that they who would confess might be saved.”

The fathers contradict each other in many things: Augustine did not think that the fathers before him were infallible, when in a question between himself and Jerome, about Peter and the second chapter of Galatians, he was pressed with the authority of six or seven Greek fathers, he answered, that “he gave no such honor to any writer of books as to think them not to have erred, but to the scriptures only. He believed other authors when they taught according to scripture.” Now, however, the scriptures are to be interpreted by the fathers; when the fathers speak according to the scriptures, let them be heard; but if any man, be he pope, or priest, or father, “speak not according to the word of God, he speaks without authority.”

Of the SACRAMENTS, the Church of Rome teaches in the language of Pope Pius IV.: “I also profess that there are truly and properly seven sacraments of the new law, instituted by Jesus Christ our Lord, and necessary for the salvation of mankind, though not all for every one, to wit: baptism, confirmation, eucharist, penance, extreme unction, orders and matrimony, and that they confer grace; and that of these—baptism, confirmation and orders—can not be reiterated without sacrilege.”

The teaching of the Church of Rome in reference to what they call "the sacrament of baptism," is unscriptural, and therefore false. In the first place, the scriptures do not call baptism a *sacrament*. It is not a "Church ordinance," but is without the Church, and was never administered by any inspired minister to anyone within the Church of Jesus Christ; nay, more, it was never administered to anyone who had already received the remission of sins.

The New Testament teaches that Jesus commanded His disciples in these words: "Go teach all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit" (Matthew); and again, "Go ye therefore into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature: he that believeth and is baptized shall be saved" (Mark). The only authority to baptize anyone is contained in the commission thus quoted, and only the persons included in the commission are commanded to be baptized. "Go teach the nations, 'baptizing the taught'" only those who have been taught are to be baptized; and the command, preach the gospel to every creature, explains the teaching. Those taught by having the gospel preached to them only, are to be baptized. Those who are taught are to *believe* the gospel, and only those who believe are to be baptized; for "he that believeth not shall be damned" (Mark). According to the commission which authorizes baptism, only those who are taught and can believe that which is taught, are permitted to be baptized. The Romish practice, therefore, of baptizing infant children is unauthorized by the holy scriptures, and the reasons which they assign for such baptism are also without scripture foundation. The Roman catechism teaches "that the law of baptism extends to all insomuch that unless they are regenerated through the grace of baptism, be their parents Christians or infidels, they are born to eternal misery and everlasting destruction."



That this law extends not only to adults, but also to infants, and that the Church has received this, its interpretation from *apostolic tradition* (not from God's word) is confirmed by the authority and strengthened by the concurrent testimony of the fathers. If, then, through the transgression of Adam's children they inherit the stain of primeval guilt, is there not still strong reason to conclude that the efficacious merits of Christ the Lord must impart to them that justice and those graces which will give them a title and reign in eternal life.

This happy consummation, baptism alone can accomplish. Again, infants unless baptized *can not enter heaven*, and hence we may well conceive how deep the enormity of their guilt who through negligence suffer them to remain without the grace of the sacrament longer than necessity may require. (Catechism, pp. 162, 163, 164.)

Now, the scriptures are as silent as the ashes of the dead about infant damnation, and by the terms of the commission they are not and can not be subjects of baptism—only he that “believeth may be baptized.” Infants dying in infancy, receive in Christ, without their agency (and without ordinances) all they lost in Adam without their agency. They do not, therefore, need baptism. Whatever may be said of original sin and hereditary depravity, it is clear that children are not accounted sinners until they have committed actual transgression. They do not, therefore, need baptism, nor the Church, in order to be saved. Jesus said, “Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven.” The baptism of infants unborn, of idiots and of insane, rests on no scripture, but on authority of tradition only.

Jesus never authorized the baptism of anyone who did not believe on Him as the Son of God and the Savior of sinners; who did not repent of all sin, and confess His name before men. Catholics do baptize children which



can not believe, and have no sins to repent of, and which can not profess faith in Christ. They do also authorize the baptism of unborn children, of dumb and mad persons, and the children of Jews and heretics, even without the consent of their parents. The thirteenth canon of the Council of Trent on baptism, says: "that children are to be reckoned among the faithful by baptism; or in other words, they become members of the Church of Rome whenever they are baptized," no matter who administers, whether heretic or schismatic, Jew, Turk or infidel—this is clear from the fourth canon. The eight and ninth canons affirm that all baptized persons are bound by all the precepts of the Church of Rome, whether written or traditional, and that they are obliged to observe them, whether willing or unwilling; that when they grow to maturity they are not to be left to their own choice, but are *to be compelled to lead a christian life by other punishments* besides exclusion from the eucharist and other sacraments. What passage of God's word authorizes this doctrine? The New Testament teaches that baptism is a "burial" "in water," in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, and nearly all the commentators affirm that the ancient mode of baptism was immersion, and it is a matter of history that the Greek Church has always practised immersion, and that, except in cases of clinics, or sick persons, the Roman Catholic Church practised immersion until the year A. D. 1311, when it was declared in a council held at Ravenna, "that immersion or sprinkling was indifferent." The Roman Catholic Church does, therefore, not only disregard the teachings of the holy scriptures in regard to the *subjects* of baptism, but is responsible for the departure from apostolic teaching and practice, in regard to the mode or action.

The teaching of the Roman Catholic Church in regard

to the "*design of baptism*" is also unscriptural. The scriptures teach that baptism of a "penitent believer" is "for the remission of sins," (see Acts ii. 38,) but baptism is not only not for the remission of the sins of infants, unbelievers, or inpenitent persons, but baptism is not for such persons for any purpose.

The doctrine of CONFIRMATION, as taught by the Catholic Church, is without the shadow of sanction in the holy scriptures.

The matter of Confirmation is thus presented: "This is Chrism, a compound substance made of oil of olives and balsam, and consecrated by a bishop." The form of confirmation is as follows: "I sign thee with the sign of the cross, and I confirm thee with the Chrism of salvation in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Ghost." The ceremonies of Confirmation (see Catechism) are as follows: 1. "Those to be confirmed, before they come to the Sacrament are required to wash their foreheads. 2. "The males are placed in one part of the Church and the females in another." "The males are first confirmed and then the females." 3. "The bishop with his hand raised on the head of the person to be confirmed, advokes the Holy Spirit, and at the same time anoints the forehead with the blessed Chrism, saying, I sign thee with the sign of the Cross, etc." 4. "The unction is made in the form of a cross, to teach that no Christian should glory save in the Cross of Christ." 5. "The person confirmed receives a blow on the cheek from the hand of the bishop." 6. "Then he receives the kiss of peace."

The scriptures quoted in support of this ridiculous ceremony have not the remotest reference to any thing of this kind. "Then laid they hands on them and they received the Holy Ghost." (Acts viii. 17.) This is said of the Samaritans whom the apostles confirmed, but it is simply evident that they received, by the imposition of the apostle's



hands, the miraculous gifts of the Holy Spirit; for when Simon Magus saw that they were enabled to work miracles, he proposed to buy the gift with money. What bishop, by the imposition of hands, now in the ceremony of Confirmation, can confer miraculous power?

They used no anointing oil, they made no sign of the cross, they did not smite the confirmed with a blow. These ceremonies are pure inventions and remind us much more of the proceedings of heathen temples than those of the administration of any ordinance of the Church of Jesus Christ. The apostles confirmed the souls of the disciples by teaching, exhortation and admonition. No man places his hands on the heads of disciples in any ceremony of confirmation by authority of God's word.

The Romish doctrine of TRANSUBSTANTIATION is thus stated in the Catechism of the Catholic Church in the United States: What is the holy Eucharist? It is a sacrament which contains the *body* and *blood*, the *soul* and *divinity* of Jesus Christ, under the forms and appearance of bread and wine. It is not bread and wine which is first put upon the altar for the celebration of the Mass? Yes, it is always bread and wine till the priest pronounces the words of consecration during the Mass. What happens by these words? The bread is changed into the body of Jesus Christ, and the wine into His blood. What is this change called? It is called *transubstantiation*, that is to say, *a change of one substance into another*. It is clear that this doctrine is not found in any scripture concerning the Lord's Supper. Jesus took the bread in His hand, and after He blessed it, He said: "This is My body!" Were there then two bodies of Jesus present at the institution of the "Eucharist?" Jesus was present in His body, He held the bread in His hand, after the "consecration"—Did He hold the real body of Christ in His hand? He took the cup, and gave thanks. Was it changed to



His blood, while His blood still coursed through His veins? Did not the senses—sight, touch and taste—declare that this is bread, and this is wine? Did it not have the appearance, the specific gravity, the taste of bread and wine—how then could it be His body and blood? Jesus did not assert it; the scriptures nowhere assert it; reason rejects it—why then do Catholics believe it? Simply because the Catholic Church *says it*; she is a “Divine Institution, and can not err.” But did not Jesus say: “This is my body;” “This is my blood.” Yes, and did not Paul say: “They drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ.” Was Christ, therefore, a *literal Rock*? But we are told that the bread and wine are the “soul and divinity of Christ.” Now then, when the words of consecration are spoken, Christ’s “body and blood, soul and divinity” lie on the altar. He is not in heaven, but on the altar; but what is marvelously strange, upon a thousand altars at the same moment of time. Does any rational man believe it? He may believe that the Church teaches it, that he must not deny it, but it is as impossible that he should believe it as that Bishop Kendrick should believe the dogma of papal infallibility.

“THE SACRIFICE OF THE MASS” is another unscriptural doctrine of the Roman Catholic Church. To understand properly what Roman Catholics understand by the sacrifice of the Mass, it must be remembered that they believe the eucharist contains really and substantially the body and blood, soul and divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ, that is to say, the whole Christ. The sacrifice of the Mass is offering Him up to God as literally, a propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead, as He was offered on the cross of Calvary, that it is as meritorious as His first sacrifice was.”

The first and third canons of the Council of Trent thus

present the doctrine: 1. If anyone shall say that a true and proper sacrifice is not offered to God in the Mass, let him be accursed. 3. If anyone shall say that the Mass is only a service of praise and thanksgiving, or a bare commemoration of the sacrifice made on the cross, and not a *propitiatory* offering, or that it only benefits him who receives it, and ought not to be offered for the living and the dead, for sins, punishments, satisfactions, and other necessities, let him be accursed.

It is a scripture doctrine that "God has set forth" Jesus Christ to be a propitiation through faith in His blood, to declare His righteousness for the remission of sins that are passed through the forbearance of God. That Jesus "is the *propitiation* for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world." Now the apostle Paul makes it clear, that we do not need "daily sacrifices:" "For such an high priest became us, who is holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens; who *needeth* not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people, *for this he did, once when he offered up himself.*" (Heb. vii. 26, 27.) "But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; neither by blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood He entered *in once* into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us."

The teaching of the Roman Catholic Church derogates from the fullness of the sacrifice, that Jesus Christ hath made for the sins of the world; and even if Christ were literally present in the bread and wine, He would not need to be offered, since He hath "put away sins by the sacrifice of Himself." The worshipper may offer Christ by faith, or in other words, may plead the sacrifice of Christ for his sins, but he can in no true sense offer a sacrifice for his own sins.



The Roman Catholic doctrine of "HALF COMMUNION" or Communion in one kind, is unscriptural. The words of Jesus when instituting the Supper, were: "Take, eat, this is My body," or this represents My body. Of the wine he said: Drink ye all (everyone) of it, for this is My blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. Again, Paul teaches in 1 Cor. xi. 23-26: For I have received of the Lord that which I also delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus, the same night on which He was betrayed, took bread, and when He had given thanks, He brake it, and said: Take, eat, this is My body which is broken for you; this do *in remembrance* of Me. After the same manner also He took the cup, when He had supped, saying: This cup is the New Testament in My blood, this do ye as oft as ye drink it in remembrance of Me, for as often as ye eat this bread and drink this cup ye do show the Lord's death till He comes." These scriptures make it plain that the disciples partook of both the bread and wine, and "the Council of Constance, assembled in 1414, declares that Christ instituted the sacraments in both kinds; that in the primitive Church both kinds were received by the laity as well as the clergy." After this declaration, however, this same council, in defiance of the holy scriptures and their own admission, dared to enact the following, and thereby demonstrate the fact, that where the scripture and the opinions of the clergy are in conflict, the former must yield to the latter: "That although this sacrament was received by the faithful under both kinds in the primitive church, it was afterwards received in both kinds by the officiating priests and by the people, under the species of bread only. Likewise this holy synod decrees and declares as to this matter, to the Reverend Fathers in Christ, Patriarchs, Lords, etc., that they must effectually punish all such as shall transgress this decree, or shall exhort to communicate to people in both kinds." In utter defiance



of the command of Christ, the priest only takes the bread and wine, and gives to the people the bread only, and yet this is the "Apostolic Church."

The Romish practice of "WORSHIPPING THE HOST" is not only unscriptural, but it is idolatrous. Their doctrine on this subject is stated by the Council of Trent as follows: "There is, therefore, no room to doubt that the faithful of Christ should *adore* (worship) His most holy sacrament with that highest worship due to the true God, according to the constant usage in the Catholic Church. If anyone shall say that this holy sacrament should not be adored, nor solemnly carried about in procession, nor held up publicly to the people to adore it, or that its worshippers are idolaters, let him be accursed."

I need not say to any intelligent persons that the worship of the host (the round wafer) is idolatry—the worship of that "which a mouse may eat," "or a priest himself may eat and vomit and eat again."

The doctrines of "PENANCE AND ABSOLUTION" are without the sanction of the word of God. It is true that the scriptures make repentance the duty of every sinner; that Jesus said, "except ye repent ye shall all likewise perish;" still we have no such "sacrament" as Penance even hinted at in the holy scriptures. The Council of Trent, in the 4th Canon, thus defines this sacrament: "If anyone denies that three acts are requisite in a penitent for the entire and perfect remission of sins, *which are as it were the matter of the sacrament of Penance*, namely, contrition, confession and satisfaction." When such conditions are present, the priest says: "*I absolve thee from thy sins*, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." No such sacrament and no such custom are mentioned in holy writ.

This practice of "ABSOLUTION BY A PRIEST" is one of the most daring impieties ever practised among men.

No such language as "*I absolve thee*," ever escaped the lips of an inspired apostle, how much less should they be uttered by men who can lay no claim to inspiration. The apostles of Jesus Christ never attempted to exercise such power; they knew what had been so truly said, "Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but God only?" (Mark ii. 7.) In the matter of forgiveness of sins, He has no agents—God alone can forgive sins.

The Romish doctrine of "CONFESSION" is also without the warrant of holy scripture. The form of Confession used in the "Catholic Church," and which every Catholic is bound to use at least once a year, is as follows:

"I confess to Almighty God, to blessed Mary, ever a virgin, to blessed Michael the Archangel, to blessed John the Baptist, to the holy apostles Peter and Paul, to all the Saints, and *to thee*, father, that I have sinned exceedingly, in thought, word and deed, through my fault, through my most grievous fault, therefore, I beseech thee, blessed Mary, ever a virgin, the blessed Michael the Archangel, the blessed John the Baptist, the holy apostles Peter and Paul, all the Saints, and thee, father, to pray to God for me." Now, it ought to be sufficient to say, that neither Jesus Christ nor any one of the apostles ever taught the use of any such confession, that on the contrary, men were taught to confess their sins to God, confess their faults one to another, but the erection of the "confessional" was not an achievement of the apostolic age. The Council of Trent, in the year A. D. 1545, decreed it. It is, therefore, of purely human origin.

The doctrines of CONTRITION and SATISFACTION, as held by the Catholic Church, are doctrines wholly unknown to the holy scriptures; but our space forbids any examination of them in this lecture. Let the scriptures be carefully examined, and no trace, especially of the Romish doctrine



of Satisfaction, can be found. The Romish doctrine of Justification is not only unscriptural, but most hurtful and fruitful of many corruptions, such as the "merit of works, intercession of the saints, pilgrimages, penances, indulgences, masses for the dead, and purgatory." They repudiate the doctrine of "Justification by faith without the deeds of law," and hence all *the works* enumerated above, are essential to save the soul from purgatory.

The doctrine of PURGATORY is without the shadow of foundation in God's word. In the Creed of Pope Pius IV. we have: "I constantly hold that there is a purgatory, and that the souls therein detained are helped by the suffrages of the faithful." Dens, in his Theology, defines it thus: "It is a place in which the souls of the pious dead, obnoxious to temporal punishment, make satisfaction."

"The modes of deliverance are two: first, by suffering the punishment due; second, by interference of the Church through indulgences, masses said for the dead, by the suffrages or votes of the faithful variously given by prayers," etc. How strange that so important a doctrine as that of purgatory should not be once named in the holy scriptures, and that the methods by which the pious dead should be extricated, should be left to the discovery of Romish priests. There can be no doubt that the creation of purgatory by the Catholic clergy has been one of their most successful tricks for draining the purses of their ever credulous subjects. Who would not give all that he has, if required, for the repose of the souls of his loved ones?

The doctrine of the Roman Catholics on the subject of "INDULGENCES" needs only to be stated to show that it has no place in the scriptures: "What is an indulgence?" "It is the remission of the temporal punishment due to sins, remitted as to their guilt, by the power of the keys,



without the sacrament, by the application of satisfactions which are contained in the treasury of the Church." (See Dens de Indulgences, No. 241.) This granting indulgences for money, was one of the scandals which aroused the indignation of Martin Luther. The cry of Tetzal, that "the moment the money tinkles in the box, the soul escapes from purgatory," was "the straw which broke the camel's back."

The doctrine of "EXTREME UNCTION" is equally without the warrant of the word of God, and implies nothing less than the power to work miracles. It is an anointing of the sick with oil of olives, "the eyes," the ears, the nose, the mouth, the hands, the feet and the veins. The words used are: "By this unction and His own great mercy, may God indulge thee whatever sins thou hast committed by sight," etc. No such ceremony is mentioned in the scriptures, and no fair interpretation of any scriptural language justifies it.

The doctrines of the Church of Rome on the subjects of ORDERS and MATRIMONY, are also without foundation in the holy scriptures, but having detained you long already, I hasten to bring this hastily written and very imperfect lecture to a close. Let us remember that if any man speak, he should speak as the oracles of God; and the doctrines and practices of any Church not founded upon the word of God, have no claims upon intelligent men; and that the assertion that the Church, composed of fallible men, can legislate for the people, is a bold, bad, assumption.

In conclusion, if the Bishop whose lecture is the occasion of this paper, had been as diligent to tell the people what Catholics do believe and teach, as he was successful in concealing the most offensive doctrines of the Church, he would have entitled himself to more respect.

No amount of eloquence and elegant rhetoric can conceal from the people the facts that Roman Catholicism is not New Testament Christianity, and bears little resemblance to it. That God may bless this effort to His glory, is our devout wish. Amen.





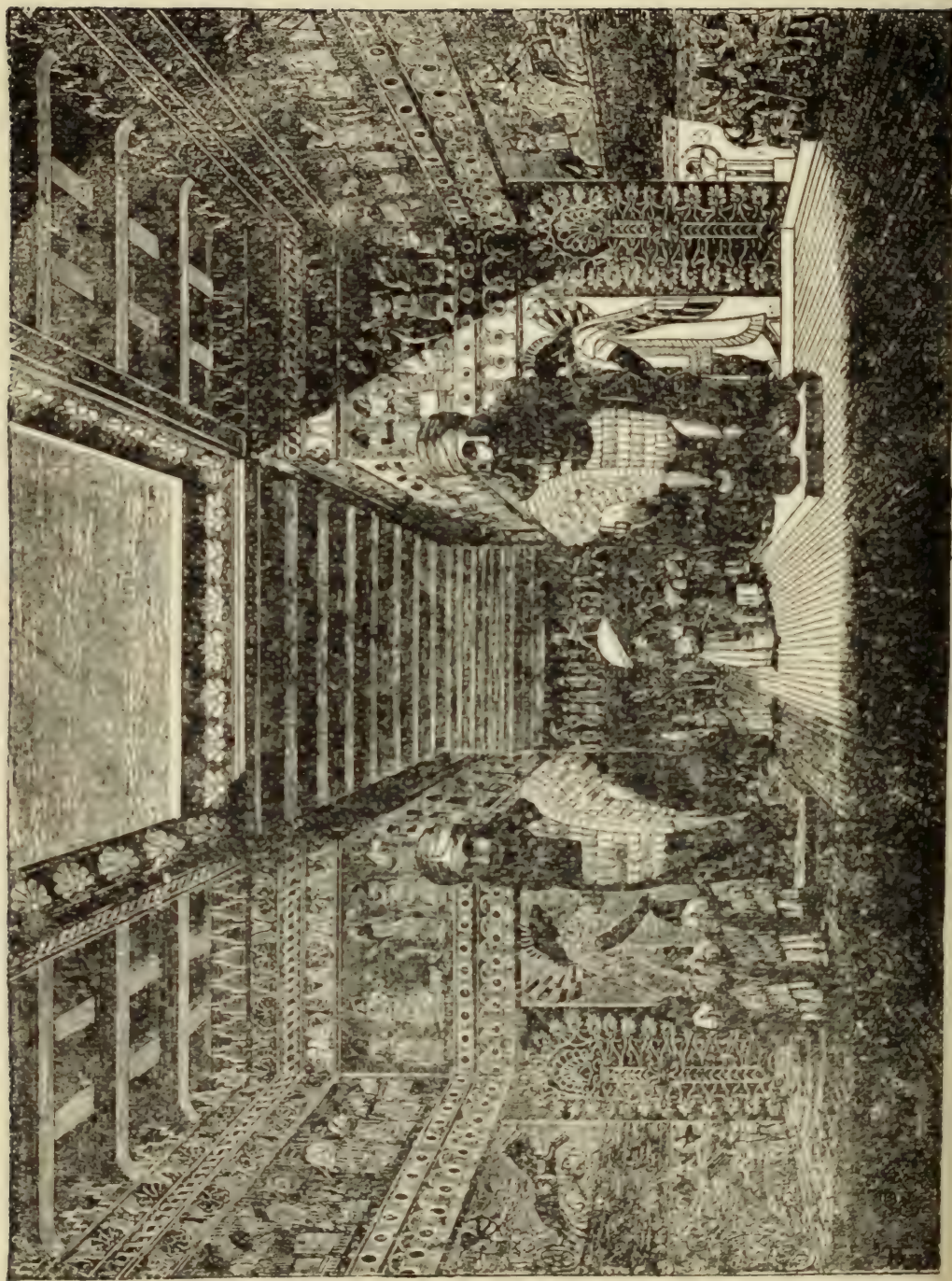


Image Worship in Ancient Times.



When the church needed armed men to enlist as Crusaders, the young men of the church shouldered the musket and sabre and obeyed the orders of the church. When the church wanted to get rid of the Saracens the faithful arose en masse and exterminated them. The church may have to call on you to defend her right in this country, and I know the young men will obey the church, and take up arms to EXTERMINATE THE ENEMIES OF THE ROMAN CATHOLIC CHURCH.

[299]

PRIEST MESNARD, (Detroit).



## CHAPTER XVI.

# THE CHARGE OF IDOLATROUS WORSHIP

MADE AGAINST THE ROMAN CHURCH: IS IT TRUE?

---

REV. SAM'L J. NICCOLLS, D. D.

---

In the controversy between Romanism and Protestantism, one of the most important questions at issue is, the charge of idolatry. Protestants, ever since the time of the Reformation, have asserted that the worship of the church of Rome is idolatrous in its nature and tendencies. This charge constitutes one of the chief reasons of their opposition to that church. They claim that the usages of worship which prevail in it, are not only contrary to the practice of the primitive church, but that they are in direct contradiction to the positive commands of the Word of God.

On the other hand, the adherents of the church of Rome have most strenuously denied this charge as slanderous in the extreme; they have complained that they have been misrepresented in this matter, and that their true belief is the very reverse of what has been charged against them. It is not strange that they should resent this accusation, for it is indeed a most serious one, the most dishonoring that could be brought against a professedly Christian church. The Scriptures compare idolatry in the church, to the sin of whoredom in the marriage relation. It is a crime most foul and hateful in the sight of God; it is one which has drawn down the

severest judgments upon His people. Wide-spread and persistent idolatry is the infallible mark of an apostate church. No one can fail to see what grave issues are involved in this charge of idolatrous worship, so far as both Protestantism and Romanism are concerned. If it is not true, one party is a slanderer of the church of God, and a chief reason for its existence turns out to be a lie. If it is true, the other against whom the accusation is made, is branded with guilt and dishonor. It is proposed to set the facts of this controversy plainly and fairly before the intelligent reader, that he may judge for himself.

First of all, in order to reach a right decision, it is necessary to know what constitutes idolatry. Both Protestants and Romanists are agreed that it is a most heinous sin ; that the word of God condemns it ; and that idolatrous worship is hateful in the sight of God. But what is idolatry ? What are the characteristics of an idolatrous worship ? These questions are to be answered by the Scriptures, and by them alone. Man is not competent to declare what worship will be acceptable to God. In this matter we are to be guided by the revealed will of God, who, as the Lord of angels and men, has the unquestioned right to decide how He shall be approached by His creatures. Idolatry is that which the word of God declares to be such. Idolatrous worship is that which the same authority points out and forbids. The Scriptures set forth the living, eternal God as the supreme and only object of worship. "Thou shalt have no other gods before me." (Ex. xx. 3 ) "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God and Him only shalt thou serve." (Matt. iv. 10 )

The internal act of worship consists in giving to God the supreme reverence, love and confidence of our hearts. Whatever usurps His place in the soul of man, is an idol, a false god ; and the giving of this supreme honor, love and trust of our hearts to any other being or object than



God, is idolatry. For this reason the Scriptures pronounce covetousness to be idolatry.

The external act of idolatry consists in worshipping false gods, or in giving to other objects than God that homage and worship which are due to Him alone. Any form of worship which robs God of the supreme homage due Him, by ascribing divine attributes and offices to creatures; or which sets before the worshipper as the object of his trust and adoration, a being who is not God, is plainly idolatrous. It is a violation of the first commandment.

But it is also taught in the Scriptures that God must not be worshipped by the use of images or pictures. The second commandment clearly forbids this, and stamps such worship as idolatrous. The precise thing forbidden by it, is the making of images or pictures as objects of worship, and bowing down to them and serving them, that is, performing acts of religious worship before them. The Hebrew word translated "serve" includes all kinds of external homage, such as burning incense, making offerings, and kissing in token of subjection. The use of images has through all ages been one of the characteristic marks of idolatrous worship. It was so in the times of the Old Testament dispensation, and the people of God were forbidden under threat of the severest judgments, to use any images or symbols of Jehovah in their worship. God commanded them, saying: "Take ye, therefore, good heed unto yourselves (for ye saw no manner of similitude on the day that the Lord spake unto you in Horeb out of the midst of the fire): lest ye corrupt yourselves, and make you a graven image, the similitude of any figure, the likeness of male or female, the likeness of any beast that is on the earth, the likeness of any winged fowl that flieth in the air— to worship them and serve them. Take heed unto yourselves, lest ye forget the covenant of the Lord your God, which he made



with you, and make you a graven image, or the likeness of any thing which the Lord thy God hath forbidden thee. For the Lord thy God is a consuming fire, even a jealous God. When thou shalt beget children, and children's children, and ye shall have remained long in the land, and shall corrupt yourselves, and make a graven image, or the likeness of any thing, and shall do evil in the sight of the Lord thy God—the Lord shall scatter you among the nations, and ye shall be left few in number among the heathen.” (Deu. iv. 15–27.)

Thus, one essential mark of the true worship of Jehovah, as contrasted with idolatrous worship, was that in it no images or visible objects representing the invisible object of worship were to be used. The Jews from the time of Moses until now, have always considered the worship of the true God by images as much an act of idolatry as the worship of false gods. That this was a right view of the teachings of the Word of God, is proven not only by its plain commands, but also by the terrible judgments that fell upon the people whenever they attempted to worship God by images. When in the wilderness the people demanded of Aaron that he should introduce image-worship among them, their purpose was not to renounce Jehovah as their God; they only asked a symbol of Him, as the heathen had their symbols. “Their sin lay not in their adopting another god, but in their pretending to worship a visible symbol of Him whom no symbol could represent.” For this reason they were visited with a fearful punishment, the very same denounced against idolaters. Indeed, the scriptures make little or no difference between the worshipping of God by images, and the worshipping of false gods. Both are idolatrous. If, then, we find any church which in its teachings or practice, gives to men, or saints, or angels, the homage and praise which are due to God alone, we are right in calling it idolatrous; or if we find a church

which claims to worship the living God alone, and yet uses images or symbols to represent Him, and bows down to them, and serves them, we have a right to say, that such worship is idolatrous.

Having thus seen in what idolatrous worship consists, the next question to decide is: What are the teachings and practices of the Roman Church as to its worship? Are they in conformity with the teachings of scripture? There are, in general, four things taught and practised by the church of Rome against which Protestants bring the charge of idolatry. These are: the invocation of saints and angels; the worship of the Virgin Mary; the use of images in the worship of God; and the adoration of the Host.

As to the first—the invocation of saints—the doctrine of the Roman church, as declared by the council of Trent, is as follows: “That the saints who reign together with Christ, offer to God their prayers for men; that it is good and useful suppliantly to invoke them, and to flee to their prayers, help, and assistance, on account of the benefits to be obtained from God, through His Son, our Lord Jesus Christ, who is our only Redeemer and Savior.” Saints and angels are confessedly the objects of worship in the Roman church; but a distinction is made between the worship offered to them, and to God. The worship of *douleia* is due to saints and angels, while that of *latreia* belongs to God alone. It is on this distinction that the Romanist relies to defend himself from the charge of idolatry. It has, however, been well remarked by a distinguished theologian, that this distinction is of little use. “The important principle is this: Any homage, internal or external, which involves the ascription of divine attributes to its object, if that object be a creature, is idolatrous. Whether the homage paid by Romanists to saints and angels be idolatrous, is a question of fact rather than theory; that is, it is to be



determined by the homage actually rendered, and not by that which is prescribed. It is easy to say that the saints are not to be honored as God is honored, but this does not alter the case, if the homage rendered them assumes that they possess the attributes of God ; and if they are to the people the objects of religious affection and confidence." The facts are, as can readily be learned from the books of devotion in common and authorized use in the Roman church, that blessings are sought from the saints, which God alone can bestow, and that they are relied upon to obtain these blessings for their worshippers. All blessings, temporal and spiritual, are sought for at the hands of the saints. Such prayers as these are offered : "Holy Peter, save me ; open to me the gates of heaven ; give me repentance, courage, etc." "Holy St. Joseph, we fly to thy patronage : Deliver us from all danger, and secure for us the favor of God." Prayers are addressed to the saints for "recovery from sickness ;" "for a prosperous journey ;" "for protection against enemies ;" "for the pardon of sin ;" "for growth in grace and holiness ;" in short, for all manner of blessings, temporal and spiritual. This is not only the teaching and practice of the Roman church, but it furthermore declares "that we may plead for acceptance, grace and mercy with God for their (the saints) merits and works."

Thus the saints are asked to give that which God alone can bestow, and as they are addressed by their worshippers from every part of the earth, and by many thousands at the same hour, the mind of the worshipper must clothe them with the attributes of omniscience and omnipresence. Practically, they stand before them worshippers in the place of God. The confidence, love and trust which are to be given to Jesus Christ alone, who, as the Scriptures declare, is "the only Mediator between God and man," are given to these false mediators and intercessors. The



tendency of the whole system of saint-worship is so manifestly idolatrous, as is plainly proven by its fruits, that no extended argument is needed on this point. The numerous shrines of the saints, visited by thousands of deluded worshippers, who come to pray before their images, and to leave offerings at their altars, and the constant looking to and trusting in the saints, so characteristic of Roman Catholic countries, furnish undoubted proofs of the nature of this worship.

Not only is there no foundation for this system of saint-worship in the Scriptures, but it has often been observed that it is the counterpart of the polytheism of heathen Rome. According to Pagan theology, there were middle powers between the chief gods and men; these were called *daimonioi*, or demons, the same word which is translated "devils" in the New Testament. These "demons" were of two classes, evil and good. Plato, a competent authority in this matter, says: "God is not approached by man, but all the commerce and intercourse between the gods and men, is by the mediation of demons." Another heathen writer says: "Demons are middle powers by whom both one's desires and deserts pass unto the gods; they are carriers between men on earth and the gods in heaven; hence of prayers, thence of gifts." These good "demons" were of two classes: first, immortal spiritual beings; and second, the souls of men deified or canonized after death. Plato maintains that when men of extraordinary valor or goodness die, they become "demons," and that we ought ever afterwards "to serve and adore their sepulchres as the sepulchres of demons." All this was a part of that idolatrous worship which prevailed in the Gentile world, when the gospel was first proclaimed; but in opposition to it, the apostles preached "one God and one Mediator between God and man, the man Christ Jesus." It was predicted by the apostles that a great apostacy would take place in the

Christian church; many would "depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils (literally, 'of demons')." (1 Tim. iv. 1.) St. John, in describing what would be the condition of a large part of Christendom at the time of the rise of Mohammedanism, and after the invasion of the Saracens, writes: "Yet they repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils (demons), and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood." (Rev. ix. 20.) Both these passages declare that this idolatrous "demon"-worship, that is, worshipping the souls of the dead, was to be one of the characteristics of the apostacy. It is a well known fact that the worship of the saints was not introduced into the Christian church until in the third and fourth centuries; but with the incoming of the large number of baptized heathen, who were incorporated into the church when Christianity became the established religion of the Roman Empire, the evil grew with fearful rapidity until it became universal. The historian, Gibbon, writes: "The Christians of the seventh century insensibly relapsed into a semblance of Paganism; their public and private vows were addressed to the relics and images that disgraced the temples of the East. The throne of the Almighty was darkened by a crowd of martyrs, and saints, and angels, the objects of popular veneration." So manifest was the correspondence between this idolatrous saint-worship, and the old Pagan-worship of demons, that some of the fathers used it as an agreement with the heathen to commend the gospel. Theodoret says: "For our Lord hath brought his dead into the place of your gods whom he hath utterly abolished, and hath given their honor to the martyrs; for, instead of the feasts of Jupiter and of Bacchus, are now celebrated the festivals of Peter and Paul, and Thomas, and the other martyrs. Wherefore, seeing the advantage of honoring the martyrs, fly, O friends, from the error of the



demons, and using the martyrs as lights and guides, pursue the way that leadeth directly to God." This fact cannot be successfully set aside: that it is in the ancient heathen-worship, and not in the practice of the primitive church, nor in the Scriptures, that we find the counterpart of saint-worship as it is still practised in the Roman church.

The second ground for the charge of idolatry is the worship of the Virgin Mary. The memory of the mother of our Lord is highly revered by all Christians. The Scriptures declare her "blessed" as "the most highly favored of women." The highest honor ever conferred upon any sinful child of Adam was given to her, in that she became the mother of the Redeemer of Men. Her exalted position among women, her pure character, and her many sorrows and sore trials, led the primitive church to revere in a special manner her memory, and to look upon her as the ideal of womanly perfection and tenderness. But as the spirituality of the church declined, this feeling degenerated into a superstitious regard, and at last culminated in her worship as an object of divine honors. It would be interesting, were this the place to trace the whole process by which, step by step, the deification of the Virgin was accomplished in the church of Rome. It is enough to say that while the first step was the declaration of her "perpetual virginity," the last act in the series was to declare her "immaculate conception." She was, according to this dogma, born without the least stain of original sin, and is thus placed, as to complete sinlessness, on an equality with her adorable Son. According to the doctrines of the church of Rome, the Virgin Mary is entitled to a higher degree of worship than any other saint. Some of the popish divines have designated the honor due her as "*hyperdouleia*." The catechism of the council of Trent, approved by Pope Pius V., teaches: "That we might piously and suppliantly resort to her to conciliate the friendship of God to us sinners



by her intercession, and to procure the blessings that are necessary for this life and for eternity. Therefore, we exiled children of Eve, who inherit this vale of tears, ought assiduously to invoke the mother of mercy and the advocate of the faithful, that she may pray for us sinners, and to implore help and assistance from her in this prayer (the Ave Maria), whose most exalted merits with God, and whose great willingness to afford help to our race, no one can doubt without impiety and wickedness." It is but fair to say that the Romanists claim, that the worship which they give to the Virgin is not the same as that which is due to God. Here, as in the former case, they rely upon the difference between *uperdouleia* and *latreia* to defend themselves from the charge of idolatry. But a technical and theoretical definition will not avail to avert the charge, if, in actual practice, divine honors and offices are ascribed to the Virgin. It is a fact which cannot be denied, that she is the most popular object of devotion in the Roman church; more prayers are addressed to her than to any other mediator. Daily prayers are offered to her and are prescribed in Romish books of devotion. Seven annual festivals are established in her honor; more churches are dedicated to her than to any other among the saints; and in all papal churches her image occupies the most prominent position. Further light is shed upon the kind of worship actually given to her by the names and titles by which she is addressed. In the "Litany of the Blessed Virgin" she is called in the prescribed prayers "the Queen of Angels, of Patriarchs, Prophets, Apostles, Martyrs, Confessors, Virgins, and all Saints." Among her titles are "Most Powerful" and "Most Merciful." She is styled the Ark of the Covenant, Gate of Heaven, Refuge of Sinners, Help of Christians, Health of the Weak, and Comforter of the Afflicted. She is sought not only as a mediator, but as one having authority, as in the following prayer, which may

be found in the "Garden of the Soul," a prayer-book officially approved by † John, Archbishop of New York: "We fly to thy patronage, O holy Mother of God; despise not our petitions in our necessities, but deliver us from all danger, O ever glorious and blessed Virgin."

Another prayer (by St. Bernard) is as follows: "Remember, O most holy Virgin Mary, that no one ever had recourse to thy protection, implored thy help, or sought thy mediation without obtaining relief. Confiding, therefore, in thy goodness, behold me a penitent sinner, sighing out my sins before thee, beseeching thee to adopt me for thy son, and to take upon thee the care of my eternal salvation." A prayer of the same kind is in the "Secular's office," approved by the Archbishop of Baltimore: "O holy Mary! my Sovereign Queen and most loving mother! receive me under thy most blessed patronage and special protection, and into the bosom of thy mercy this day, and every day, and at the hour of my death. I recommend to thee my soul and body, I commit to thy care all my hopes and comforts, all my afflictions and miseries, my life and my death; that by thy intercession and through thy merits, all my actions may be directed and disposed according to thy will, and that of thy blessed Son. Amen." More cannot be asked of Christ in the way of salvation than is asked in such prayers as these, of the Virgin Mary.

Praise is also given to her such as is due to God alone; hymns are sung in her honor, and she is saluted as "Mother of Divine Grace," "Mirror of Justice," and "Seat of Wisdom." The whole Psalter has been so changed as to apply all its solemn praises and supplications to the Virgin. For example, the first Psalm is made to read: "Blessed is the man that loveth thy name, O Virgin Mary: thy grace shall comfort his soul." The ninth psalm reads: "I will confess to thee, O Lady (Domina): I will declare among the people thy praise and glory; to thee



belong glory, thanksgiving, and the voice of praise." In short, throughout the whole Psalter thus changed, the Virgin is addressed as the inspired Psalmist addresses God, and thus the Romanist is taught to give to a creature the honor that is due to God alone. It may be said that this Psalter, compiled by St. Bonaventura, was never officially sanctioned by the popes or councils; but the incontrovertible fact is, that it was sanctioned by high authority and used in the Roman church; nor was its use ever condemned by any pope or council. While it is admitted that the standards of the Roman church disavow the worshipping of Mary as a divine being, the universal practice of that church unquestionably convicts its adherents of giving to the Virgin the honor, praise, and confidence, due to God alone. She shares equally with Christ in the affectionate trust of her worshipers, and to thousands upon thousands in the communion of that church she is more than her Divine Son. No one conversant with the state of affairs in Mexico, in South America, or in Spain, where Roman Catholicism is the prevalent faith, can for a moment deny that the Virgin Mary is the most popular object of worship among the people, and the one who is chief in their prayers and supplications.

If the Scriptures are to be regarded as the supreme authority in this matter, it cannot be doubted that the worshipping of the Virgin Mary, even on the ground presented in the acknowledged standards of the Roman church, is idolatrous in its tendencies. It places before the mind of the worshiper another mediator than the only One whom God has appointed; it teaches him to confide in her as merciful and gracious to sinners, and as having peculiar power with God, and as being somehow endowed with the attributes of omniscience and omnipresence, so that she can know the hearts, and be present with the great multitude of her worshipers in all parts of the earth. All this is so utterly



inscriptural, and without foundation in fact, that we cannot suppose it has any tendency to honor God, unless we believe that lies have a tendency to truth, and that God is glorified by delusions. If the definitions already given of idolatry and idolatrous worship be correct, there can be no question that the worship of the Virgin Mary, as practised by thousands in the Roman church, and with the knowledge and consent of those in authority, is idolatrous. She is, to all intents and purposes, a goddess, received and honored as such; and all attempts to excuse or defend this corrupt and Christ-dishonoring practice, by saying that it is only honoring Christ by giving due honor to his mother, or that her intercession is invoked just as we ask saints on earth to pray for us, are far from meeting the facts in the case. They only show that some Romanists are at heart ashamed of what exists in their churches. The language of prayers and litanies, of Psalters and Te Deums, of altars and votive offerings, utters a different testimony which no convenient theoretical explanation can set aside.

A third ground for the charge of idolatrous worship, is the use of images, as sanctioned and practiced in the Roman church.


The teachings of the council of Trent, with reference to the use of images in worship, are very warily worded. They declare "that the images of Christ, of the God-bearing Virgin, and of the saints, are to be had and retained, especially in churches; and due honor and veneration rendered to them; not that it is believed that there resides in them any divinity or virtue on account of which they are to be worshiped, or that anything is to be sought from them, or that confidence is to be placed in images as was formerly done by the Gentiles who put their trust in idols; but since the honor which is shown to them is referred to the originals which they represent, so that though the images which we kiss, and before which we

uncover the head, and fall down, we adore Christ and venerate the saints, whose likeness they bear." Thus, according to the plain teachings of Rome, to adore the image of Christ, is to adore Christ himself. "Due honor and veneration" to his image, is the honor and veneration due him. That this attempt to worship the invisible Head of the church through an image, is a plain and positive violation of the second commandment, needs no argument. Besides, the defense which the council of Trent makes for the use of images, is precisely the one urged by intelligent heathen to justify their image-worship. They did not think that their sacred images were real gods. No intelligent Greek supposed that Jupiter was a marble statue; nor did the heathen, mentioned in the Bible, believe that the sun was Baal, or the moon Ashtoreth; but they supposed just what the Romanist does, that some connection existed between the image and the divinity it represented, so that the honor and worship given to the one was "referred to the original which it represented." As a matter of fact, Romanists do believe that peculiar virtues or powers reside in certain images. They have "winking Madonnas" who miraculously manifest their approval to their worshipers. It is claimed for many of these images, that they have miraculous powers in healing diseases and in averting calamities, so that the sufferer, desiring help, comes to some particular image, or it is carried to him. The *Bambino Santissimo*, in Rome, will serve as an illustration of this. It is a little wooden image of Christ; but it is asserted that it can heal diseases and avert pestilence, and stay the progress of fire. It is taken in a carriage, in charge of a priest, to visit the sick who are unable to come to its shrine. It has been brought out into the streets to stay the progress of a disastrous fire. Once a year it is carried in a religious procession, to a hill overlooking Rome, and there held up by a high church official to bless the city.



If there is "no divinity or virtue, residing in this image," why is it sought after and held in such special honor above other images in Rome? Scores of cases similar to this, in which an image of Christ, or of the Virgin, or of some saint, has become an object of special worship, because of some supposed supernatural power belonging to it, could readily be mentioned; and until the church of Rome purges itself of this universal practice, so manifestly in violation of the second commandment, it must rest under the charge of sanctioning idolatrous worship, no matter what is the language of its professed teachings.

But the obscure and carefully worded utterances of the council of Trent, are more fully explained by the decisions of an older council, known in history as the second council of Nice. As the council of Trent approved and commended its decisions, and as they are to-day an authoritative and infallible expression of the doctrines of the Roman church, they have the greatest possible importance in deciding the question at issue. This second council of Nice, which met A. D. 787, was the first œcumenical council which sanctioned image-worship. The controversy which it claimed to decide, had been carried on in the church for three centuries. Such a thing as image-worship was not known in the apostolic church, and for the first three centuries the spirituality and simplicity of Christian worship were preserved. But, in course of time, that baptized but unconverted heathenism which had been incorporated into the church, became so strong in its influence as to overcome the old opposition to image worship. At first, pictures and statues were introduced under the plea of instructing the people; but even this step encountered serious opposition. The council of Elvira, in Spain, A. D. 305, condemned the use of pictures in churches. "Augustine complained of the superstitious use of images; Eusebius protested against their being made objects of worship; and Gregory the





Great, bishop of Rome, allowed their use only as means of instruction." As late as the eighth century, we find many in the church heroically struggling against the increasing tendency to idolatry. In A. D. 726, the Emperor Leo III., a good Catholic, issued an ordinance forbidding the use of images in churches as heathenish and heretical. The council of Constantinople, which met in A. D. 754, vigorously upheld his views and supported his decree with their ecclesiastical sanction. This was the law of the church for thirty-three years, until the Empress Irene, a fanatical devotee of image-worship, under instigations from Rome, called another council to consider this matter. It first met at Constantinople; but as the opposition in that city to the use of images was so strong, the council was adjourned and met the following year in Nice. There, by bribery, and fraud, and intimidation, a decision was procured reversing the decrees of the former council called by Leo III., and declaring it heretical; it also ordained the use of pictures and images in worship. The council went so far as to make their use an indispensable necessity and anathematized and cast out of the church all who refused to receive and use them. Its language is, "Anathema to them that are ambiguous or doubtful in their minds and do not confess with their hearts that sacred images are to be worshipped." This same council announced the principle by which image-worship was to be defended, namely, that the worship paid the image terminates on the object it represents. Its decisions were sanctioned by the pope, and thus, according to the new dogma of infallibility, they are as binding upon the consciences of men as the Word of God itself. But at that time they met decided opposition within the church. Then, there were noble and eloquent bishops, who instead of defending or excusing this miserable idolatry, boldly called it by its true name. A council was summoned to meet at Frankfort-on-the-Main,

at which were present delegates from Germany, Britain, France and Italy; and even two legates from the pope were there. After careful deliberation, the decrees of the council of Nice, were "rejected," "despised" and "condemned." All worshiping of pictures and images was forbidden; but their presence was allowed in the churches for ornament and instruction. No less a person than the Emperor Charlemagne wrote a book to refute the decrees of the council of Nice, denouncing them as pernicious in their tendency, and as establishing idolatry in the church. Thus, upon the testimony of Catholics themselves, the worshiping of images, as ordained by this council of Nice, and approved in later times by the council of Trent, was regarded as idolatrous; but, in spite of these earnest protests within the church, the advocates of image-worship gained the ascendancy so completely as to silence all opposition. Thomas Aquinas, the greatest theologian in the Romish church, in the thirteenth century, taught that the reverence due to Christ, is due to his image. He declares that "since Christ is to be adored with the worship of '*latreia*,' it follows that his image may be adored with the worship of '*latreia*;' " that is, that divine honors may be given to a statue of wood or stone which is supposed to represent the invisible Lord! This is undisguised idolatry, according to the Scriptures. Yet this view is the one most widely prevalent in the Romish church; it is in accordance with the teachings of at least two of her councils; nor has it ever been condemned by any whose authority the church recognizes. The following remarks, made by the venerable Dr. Hodge, are not only pertinent to this argument, but they are abundantly sustained by the facts in the case:

"1. From all this, it appears that the Romanists worship images in the same way that the heathen of old did, and pagans of our own day still do. They 'bow down to them and serve them;' they pay them all the external homage



which they render to the persons they are intended to represent.

“2. The explanations and defense of such worship are the same in both cases. The heathen recognized the fact that the images made of gold, silver, wood, or marble, were lifeless and insensible in themselves; they admitted that they could not see, or hear, or save. They attributed no inherent or supernatural power to them. They claimed that the homage paid to them, terminated on the gods whom they represented; that they only worshiped before the images, or at most through them.

“3. Both among the heathen and the Romanists, for the uneducated people, the images themselves were the objects of worship. It would be hard to find in any heathen author such justification of image-worship as the Romish theologians put forth. What heathen ever said that the same homage was due to the image of Jupiter as to Jupiter himself? This, Thomas Aquinas says of the images of Christ and of the saints. Or what heathen ever has said, as Bellarmin says, that although the homage to be paid to the image is not strictly and properly the same as that due to its prototype, it is nevertheless improperly and analogically the same; the same in kind, though not in degree? What can the common people know of the difference between *proprie* and *improprie*? They are told to worship the image, and they worship it just as the heathen worshiped the images of their gods. As the Bible pronounces and denounces as idolatry not only the worship of false gods, but also the worship of images, ‘the bowing down to them and serving them,’ it is clear that the Roman church is as wholly given to idolatry as was Athens, when visited by Paul.”

A fourth reason for the charge of idolatrous worship against the Romish church, is to be found in the doctrine of the Mass.



Romanists regard the Lord's Supper not only as a sacrament, but also as a true and real sacrifice; and furthermore, it is as a sacrifice that the Mass becomes the central point in their worship. The doctrine of the council of Trent on this point is, that the bread and wine are changed by the power of God into Christ's body and blood. They do not represent, but they actually become the real Christ, and remain so. The consecrated wafer becomes the whole Christ—body, soul and divinity. In her formulary of faith prescribed by Pius IV., there is the following declaration: "I profess, likewise, that in the Mass there is offered to God, a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead; and that in the most holy sacrament of the Eucharist there is really, and truly, and substantially, the body and blood, together with the soul and divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ; and that there is made a change of the whole substance of the bread into the body, and of the whole substance of the wine into the blood." This change, called "transubstantiation," the Romanists teach, is a permanent one, so that the consecrated wafer containing the whole true Christ, may be preserved and carried to the sick, or borne about in processions. They also teach that it is to be adored. The worship given to it is not that which they profess to give to saints and images, but it is that of *latreia*—the solemn worship due to God alone. This worship is given in the belief that, as the bread has been changed into the true body of Christ, his soul and divinity are inseparably connected with it; and that as Christ was adored by his disciples when bodily present on the earth, so now he is to be adored in the Host. If such a change has indeed taken place, and the whole Christ is locally present in the wafer, then indeed the worship would be proper. But if it has not taken place, if the bread is no more the true, veritable body of Christ than any other bread, and if his soul and

divinity are no more present in it than in other bread, then even Romanists would admit that the worship of a piece of bread, over which some sacred words had been said, is flagrant and manifest idolatry. Unless, then, the doctrine of transubstantiation can be proven from the Scripture this charge of idolatrous worship against the church of Rome, must stand. "As all Protestants believe the doctrine of transubstantiation to be utterly unscriptural and false, they are unanimous in pronouncing the worship of the consecrated elements, to be idolatry."

When men place before themselves a piece of bread—a wafer made of flour—and give to it the homage due to God alone, as the Romanist confessedly does, they should be able to give clear and strong reasons in justification of their conduct, in order to clear themselves of the charge of idolatry. The arguments which are drawn from the Scriptures to defend the Romish doctrine of the Mass are contradictory, unsatisfactory, and in positive violation of well known and established laws of interpretation. The notion that the Lord's Supper is a true sacrifice "offered up for the living and the dead," is in plain violation of the teachings of the New Testament, which declare that Christ's once offering up himself a sacrifice, has made a complete atonement, and "by one offering he hath perfected forever those that are sanctified." It is a remembrance, a memorial of a sacrifice already made once for all, and not a repetition of that sacrifice. The idea that the words of institution used by Christ—"this is my body broken for you"—meant that he was then and there really giving his disciples his own flesh to eat, is so preposterous, that the wonder is how sane men could ever have adopted it. . To demand that these words shall be interpreted literally, is to introduce a principle of interpretation which makes nonsense out of the sacred Scriptures. Indeed, so manifestly weak is the argument drawn from the Scriptures in favor of the Mass, that



intelligent Romanists have admitted its inefficiency and claimed that they found full justification for their belief in tradition. Cardinal Bellarmin says: "The Lord made not this oblation, nor did the apostles themselves at the beginning." Salmeron, the Jesuit, ascribes the origin of the Mass, not to the Scriptures, but to unwritten traditions. Cardinal Baronius, in his Commentaries on Paul's Epistles, makes the same acknowledgment. As a matter of fact, the doctrine of the Mass was one of the superstitions "developed" in the church. It was not a recognized dogma of the Romish church until the year A. D. 1215, and the decision of the council which made it an article of faith, was not reached without much controversy and dissent in the church. It is also an insuperable objection to this doctrine, that it involves impossibilities and contradictions. It requires us to believe that a material object should be completely changed, and at the same time not changed. The bread remains bread, and the wine—wine; and yet we are required to believe that they are something else.

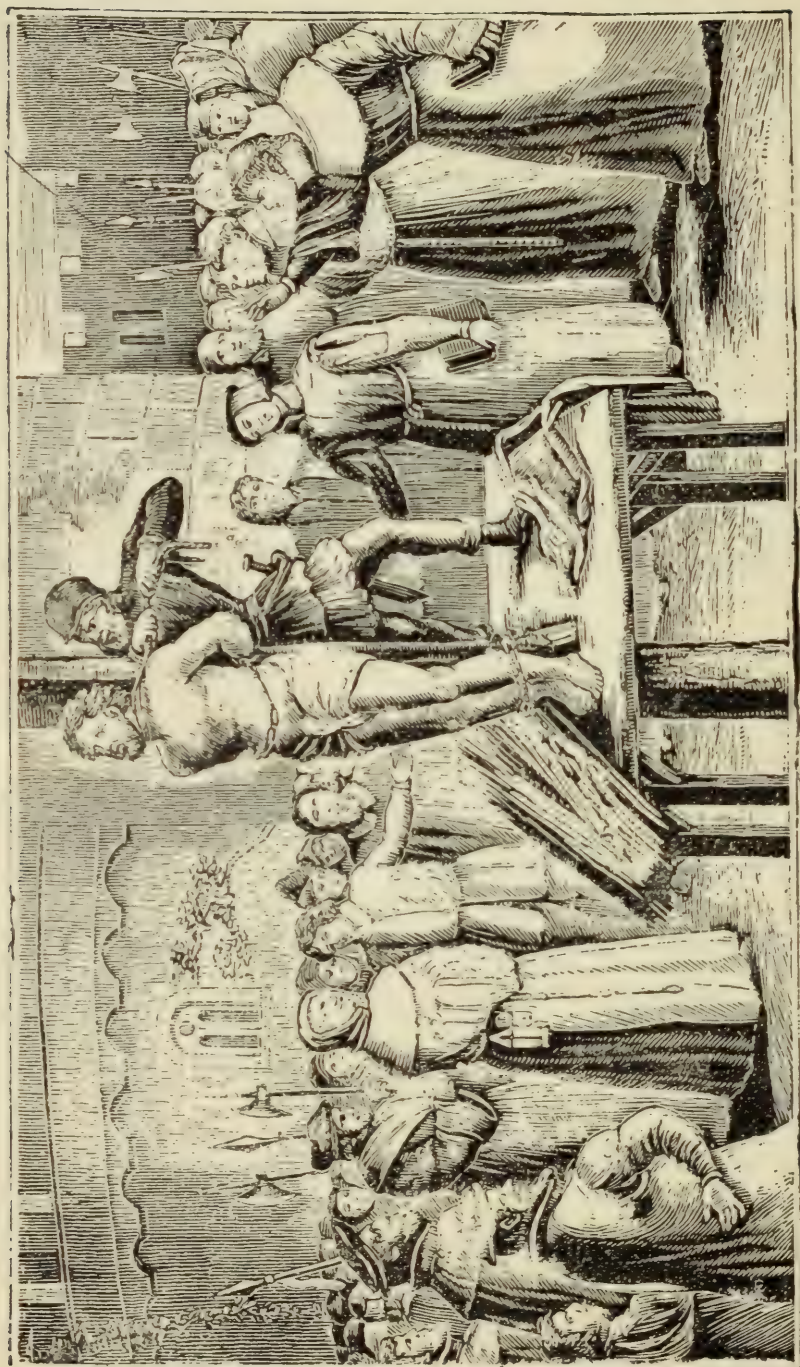
It requires us to disbelieve and set aside the well authenticated evidences of our senses. Much more might be said in the way of objection to this absurd notion of transubstantiation, a child of fanatical superstition, but the limits of this paper forbid. This, however, is plain: he who defends the Roman church against the charge of idolatry, must be able to defend and prove the doctrine of the Mass; he must show from the Scriptures, that upon the utterance of the words of consecration by a priest, a flour wafer becomes a true God, a being to be worshiped as reverently as he who died on the cross of Calvary!

Upon these four grounds, therefore, Protestants base their charge of idolatrous worship against the church of Rome. They are not ignorant of what that church teaches on these points, nor do they wish to misrepresent its doctrines; but they insist that worship, to be acceptable to



God, must be in accordance with his Word. It is plain from the teachings of history that there is a strong tendency in human nature towards idolatry—idolatrous worship has ever had a strange fascination for man. It was the besetting sin of the church under the Jewish dispensation, and at last, it so overspread and corrupted it, that the chosen people were given over to seventy years' captivity for their purification. A like apostacy was predicted to come to pass under the new dispensation. It is no strange thing in religion that men should be led by strong delusions, and earnestly believe lies, especially is this to be expected when human tradition is held to have equal authority with the Word of God. Our only safety is in holding fast to revealed truth as it is written in the Scriptures. The law of the Lord is "perfect," nor do we need any other "infallibility" than that which it furnishes, to guide us in the way of pleasing God.





Martyrdom of Wm. Tyndal, Translator of the Bible.





America is at heart a Christian country. As a religious system Protestantism is in hopeless dissolution, utterly valueless as a doctrinal or a moral power, and no longer to be considered as a foe which we must count. The Catholic Church is the sole living and enduring Christianity. Our work is to make America Catholic. Our cry shall be, "God will it." We know that the Church is the sole owner of truths and graces of salvation.

ARCHBISHOP IRELAND.

## CHAPTER XVII.

# ROMANISM

ENSLAVES, DEGRADES, CORRUPTS.

---

BY BISHOP THOMAS BOWMAN,

OF THE METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

---

Important events in the history of the past few years have served to awaken great interest in several questions relating to the Roman Catholic Church.

The meeting of the last so-called Œcumenical Council; the promulgation of the decree of papal infallibility; the striking changes which have recently taken place in several of the great Catholic countries of Europe; the demise of Pope Pius IX. and the election of his successor; the agitation of the Public School question, all these have added new value, in the public mind, to the whole subject of the Roman Hierarchy.

We propose, in this Lecture, to take a small part in the general discussion which is going on; and, if may be, to add a little to the interest which has been awakened. In doing this, we shall call attention to the following propositions:

*First*—The Catholic Church, by its doctrinal authority; by withholding the Scriptures from the people; and by its gorgeous ceremonies, enslaves the reason.



*Second*—By its worship of the Virgin Mary, Saints, Angels, etc., it degrades religion.

*Third*—By its Confessional it corrupts conscience.

But, before entering upon the discussion of these general topics, we wish to call attention to several preliminary thoughts.

In the first place, Roman Catholic writers complain that “non-Catholics” do not get their information, in regard to the Catholic Church, from Catholic sources; but from those who are not “properly informed.” They say, correctly, “No man has a right to protest against the opinions of another man, until he shall have known those opinions from the man who holds them, or from the organization that professes them.” With this we most cordially agree. Protestants and Catholics alike should be judged by their own standard authorities. But does the Catholic Church act upon this truly just principle? Are her people allowed to read the books of non-Catholic authors, or to listen to the discourses of Protestant ministers, so that they may judge correctly as to what is taught? While Protestants read Catholic books, and listen to lectures from Catholic prelates, how few Catholics are found reading Protestant books, or listening to discourses from Protestant speakers! In this respect, we think they demand of others what they are not willing to concede in return.

But further, the Romish Church not only keeps a keen eye towards the Protestant press, but keeps a watchful one over the Catholic press as well. Its writers are not permitted to publish what they please; nor are its people allowed to read freely what has been written, even by Catholic authors. Some books are expurgated, some are suppressed; some are cautiously circulated for the benefit of the favored few, while many are so carefully guarded that it is difficult to find them on sale even in the Catholic book stores.

A distinguished friend of mine who desired to investigate some of the questions now so earnestly discussed, spent large sums of money and years of labor in trying to get hold of certain standard Catholic books. Some of these were not old and rare, as might be supposed, but of recent date, and yet it required no little strategy on the part of booksellers and others to purchase some of these books. Another acquaintance had equal difficulty in procuring the productions of certain Catholic authors. In both these cases frequent applications were made in vain to priests and Catholic publishers, both in this country and in Europe, before the desired works could be secured. Even a distinguished Catholic Bishop has admitted, in a recent sermon, if correctly reported, that the Encyclical of the late Pope was not intended for the public, but somehow, unwisely, got into circulation. Has the world ever been furnished with a complete and authenticated report of all the debates and transactions of the last Œcumenical Council? Were the proceedings fair and just? Was there full liberty of speech? Were no improper influences employed to secure the desired results? How can we judge on questions like these, except by such reports as we get; and if these are imperfect, who is to blame, except the Romish Church itself, which so culpably withholds the facts from the people?

But we non-Catholics have still greater difficulty on this point. When we do get the authors, we find them so full of contradictions that we are thrown into still greater confusion. One papal bull contradicts another. One council affirms what another denies. One popish writer makes emphatic statements as historically correct, which another as emphatically pronounces to be forgeries. Which are we to believe? Some recent statements of Catholic writers are inconsistent with those of other Romish prelates. How are we to decide between them? Touching this



general statement, that there is great difficulty in finding out just what Romish writers have said, we quote from "the learned Father Paul," whose loyalty to the Catholic Church none will deny. Among other things of a similar kind, he says: "There wants not in Italy pious and learned persons which hold the truth, but they are not suffered to write, nor to print. Something comes written from another place, but presently it is prohibited." Again he affirms that Clement VIII. (pope from 1592 to 1605) taught that the books of Catholic authors "might be corrected and amended, not only by taking away what is not conformable to the doctrines of Rome, but also with adding to it." Then he says, "At this present, in reading of a book, a man can no more find what the author's meaning was, but what is the Court of Rome's who hath altered every thing." "Father Paul" is not alone in these statements. We could multiply quotations from various Romish authors to the same effect. It is not wonderful, then, that both Catholics and Protestants should at times be in confusion as to what the "true Church" and her authors do really teach.

In a discourse recently published, an eloquent Roman Catholic writer has given expression to another sentiment, to which we call attention, and which we most cordially reciprocate. He declares that "mutual good feeling ought to exist amongst members of all religious organizations, and indeed among all men;" and that his intercourse with non-Catholics has taught him "a great respect for what are called bigoted people." These are noble utterances. They recognize the fact that there may be "religious organizations" outside of the Roman Catholic Church, and that some of the members of these are worthy "the respect" of a Catholic prelate. Are we to attribute all this to the generous overflow of a kind nature, or to advanced sentiment in the Church which the liberal writer represents? In either



case we accept the expressions thankfully; in the latter case, joyfully.

But are these manly sentiments of the accomplished lecturer in harmony with the past teachings and conduct of his Church, or even with its general spirit to-day? If we are correctly informed, the oath which a Catholic Bishop has to take, requires him to say: "Heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our said lord, or his aforesaid successors, I will to my utmost persecute and oppose." It is well known to all readers of history, that in former years most fearful persecutions and wars were waged against Protestants, and that, too, by the sanction and authority of the Romish Church. The most sweeping denunciations against the right of private judgment and conscience in religion, and the most emphatic assumption of authority on the part of the Catholic Church to compel, by physical force, submission to her commands, have been sent from the Vatican and from the Council, again and again. These, so far as we know, have never been repealed. On the contrary, in the Encyclical of the late Pope, issued in 1864, they are both directly and indirectly reaffirmed. In an intensely interesting book, entitled "*Spiritual Struggles of a Roman Catholic*," the author of which is still living, we find the following: "*I was taught to hate and shun Protestants.*" Peter Den, a Catholic author, in his *Theology*, published in 1864, says: "Notorious heretics are infamous, and are to be deprived of ecclesiastical burial; their temporal goods are, of course, confiscated; they are deservedly visited with other penalties, even corporeal; as exile, imprisonment, etc." Pope Innocent III. and the fourth Lateran Council, according to Du Pin, the celebrated Roman Catholic author, "in the third canon, excommunicated and anathematized all the heretics who opposed the Catholic and Orthodox faith; ordered that the heretics should be delivered up to the secular power to be punished; granted the same indulgence

to those Catholics who shall undertake to extirpate heretics by force of arms as are granted to those who go to the Holy Land ; excommunicated those who entertained, protected, or supported heretics ; ordered that those who will not avoid the company of the excommunicated, shall themselves be excommunicated, and finally the bishops are threatened to be deposed if they neglect to purge their dioceses from heretics." To all this add the fact, patent to the world, that a spirit of intolerance prevails in all Catholic countries, and that the intensity of this intolerance is exactly proportional to the strength of the Catholic sentiment, and the power of the clergy to control the governments, and you have a sufficient reason for our opposition to Romanism. It is not, as Catholics suppose, because of our ignorance that we dread and oppose their Church ; it is because we know the teachings and history of the past and the spirit of the present Catholic Church, that we fear and oppose her. Let her authorities repeal the infamous teachings of the past ; let them repudiate and condemn the wicked persecutions of former years and the horrid spirit of intolerance wherever it may exist ; let them endorse such noble utterances as the one above ; let them cultivate Christian fraternity with "the good men and true" who are in every community struggling against sin, and striving to lift up degraded humanity ; let them abandon all right to control personal liberty, or to interfere with the rights of private judgment and conscience, and we will hail them as fellow laborers in the cause of Christ, and bid them God-speed in the work of saving souls.

There is one other subject upon which we desire to give a few words in these introductory remarks, viz: the oft repeated assumption of the universality and unity of "the Mother Church." In assuming and presenting these, we think Catholics presume a little too much on our supposed ignorance. The very title of their Church indicates that it



is not "universal." It is the *Roman* Catholic Church. It is *Roman* in its origin; *Roman* in its history; *Roman* in its very constitution. Because it has members scattered throughout the earth, is no reason why it should be called "the Catholic Church," any more than that the Methodist Church, for a similar reason, should be called "the Catholic Church." So far as either retains the great truths of the Gospel, so far and no farther, is it entitled to be called even a part of the great Catholic, or universal Church of God. But to call either "the Catholic Church," is a misnomer. As well might we speak of the "Greek" or "American Catholic Church."

As to the boasted "unity" of the Romish Church, who that is posted in history, does not know that the history of the Roman Catholic Church is an almost unbroken narration of discord, contention and division from the beginning? Witness the cruel, bloody wars that have been waged between the Catholic powers of Europe on theological and ecclesiastical questions, and often between some of these powers and the pope himself! Listen to the fearful thunders issuing, from time to time, from the Vatican against its discordant and rebellious subjects. Hear the terrific anathemas hurled by pope against pope, or by council against council; or, by pope against council, or council against pope! See the schismatics, as they are contemptuously called, who, under various names, have, from time to time, been driven out of the Roman Catholic Church, or have voluntarily retired from it, because they could not live peacefully in it and maintain their Christian manhood; and who have grown and multiplied until they have outstripped, in numbers, "Mother Church" herself, and to-day control the commerce, the wealth, the literature and the political power of the world!

But let us look a little more closely into the present condition of the Romish Church, and see as to its vaunted



unity. What do "clerical" and "anti-clerical" mean in Catholic France? Why did the Catholic powers of Europe watch with so much solicitude the recent election of the pope? Who does not know the bitter jealousy existing among many of the so-called "Orders," especially between the Jesuits and the anti-Jesuits? Have we forgotten that these same Jesuits, who are now in great favor at Rome, have been frequently cast off, and have even been expelled from several Catholic countries of Europe and America? Are we not all familiar with the fact that Italy herself stands to-day in open opposition to the pope as to some of his claims, and is in rebellion against his authority? In our own country, and in this city, there are members of the Catholic Church who declare that they do not believe in the infallibility of the pope. If we inquire what is meant by the pope's speaking *ex-cathedra*, we shall receive four or five different answers. If we ask to what subjects, and how far the papal infallibility extends, we will get as many more. If we seek for clear and well-defined information on any of the questions proposed in this discussion—as the use of the Scriptures, the object of the gorgeous ceremonials of the Church, the worship of images, etc., the nature and uses of the confessional—we shall receive so many different replies as to be left utterly in the dark as to the real views of the Church.

The same is true in matters of practice, as well as in questions of faith. A distinguished author has truly said: "Almost every celebrated schoolman in the Romish communion became the founder of a particular denomination, distinguished by a peculiarity of regulation and government. The Augustinians, Franciscans, Dominicans, Jansenists, Jesuits, Benedictines, have all been characterized by different rites, discipline and ceremonies." The boasted unity, therefore, is simply, in outward form, the unity of the chain-gang, or of the grave-yard!

Having thus claimed your attention to these preliminary thoughts, we will now consider the leading topics proposed for discussion.

It is affirmed that the Catholic Church, by her doctrinal authority, by withholding the Scriptures from her people, and by her gorgeous ceremonials, enslaves the reason; that by her devotion to the Blessed Virgin, and to saints and angels she degrades religion; and that by the confessional, she demoralizes conscience. To all this the Catholic, of course, enters a denial.

Does the dogma of the papal infallibility enslave the reason? The Catholic affirms it does not, because, "in submitting to a decision of the Church, they submit to the decision of a tribunal which their reason has already accepted as unerring."

To this statement of the case we demur. For, in the first place, it is not true, of the great mass of Catholics, that their reason has accepted any thing in the case. They have never reasoned on the subject; nor have the materials for a just conclusion ever been presented to their minds. Indeed they are forbidden to reason on the question. The Church has decided and they must submit. They are taken from infancy and the doctrines of the Church are ground into them before they can reason. The intellectual chains are forged and bound upon them before they have strength to resist, and the great wonder is that so many have succeeded in throwing off the shackles. There are, doubtless, many honest Catholics who believe in papal infallibility, for they have not heard any thing to the contrary. Books that might enlighten them, are earnestly condemned and prohibited. They are forbidden to go to those places where they might receive instruction. All means are employed to impress upon them the necessity of unquestioning acceptance. It is not, therefore, strictly true that the



Catholic reason is first convinced of the divine institution of the tribunal to whose decision it submits.

But would not the argument do as well for a Hindu, a Mohammedan, or a Mormon, as for a Catholic? Might not a devotee of any of these systems say: "My reason is not enslaved, because it is first satisfied of the divine institution of my system; therefore, in submitting to any dogma of my Church, I am free." To this, doubtless, the Romanist would answer: "Your systems are founded in error, and your reasoning is therefore false." So we say to the Romanist: "Your reason has accepted a falsehood, and therefore it is enslaved."

The question of papal infallibility as a fact, involves so many points that it would be impossible to thoroughly discuss them in one lecture. It embraces such points as the supremacy of Peter among the apostles; the promise of inspiration to his successors alone; the supremacy of the bishop of Rome over the other bishops of the Church; indeed, a long chain of facts wherein any one defective link would destroy the whole chain; but wherein, in fact, are not only many defective links, but many links are absolutely wanting, so that we believe the whole thing is as utterly deficient in foundation as "the baseless fabric of a dream." We shall have to content ourselves, then, by merely stating some general propositions.

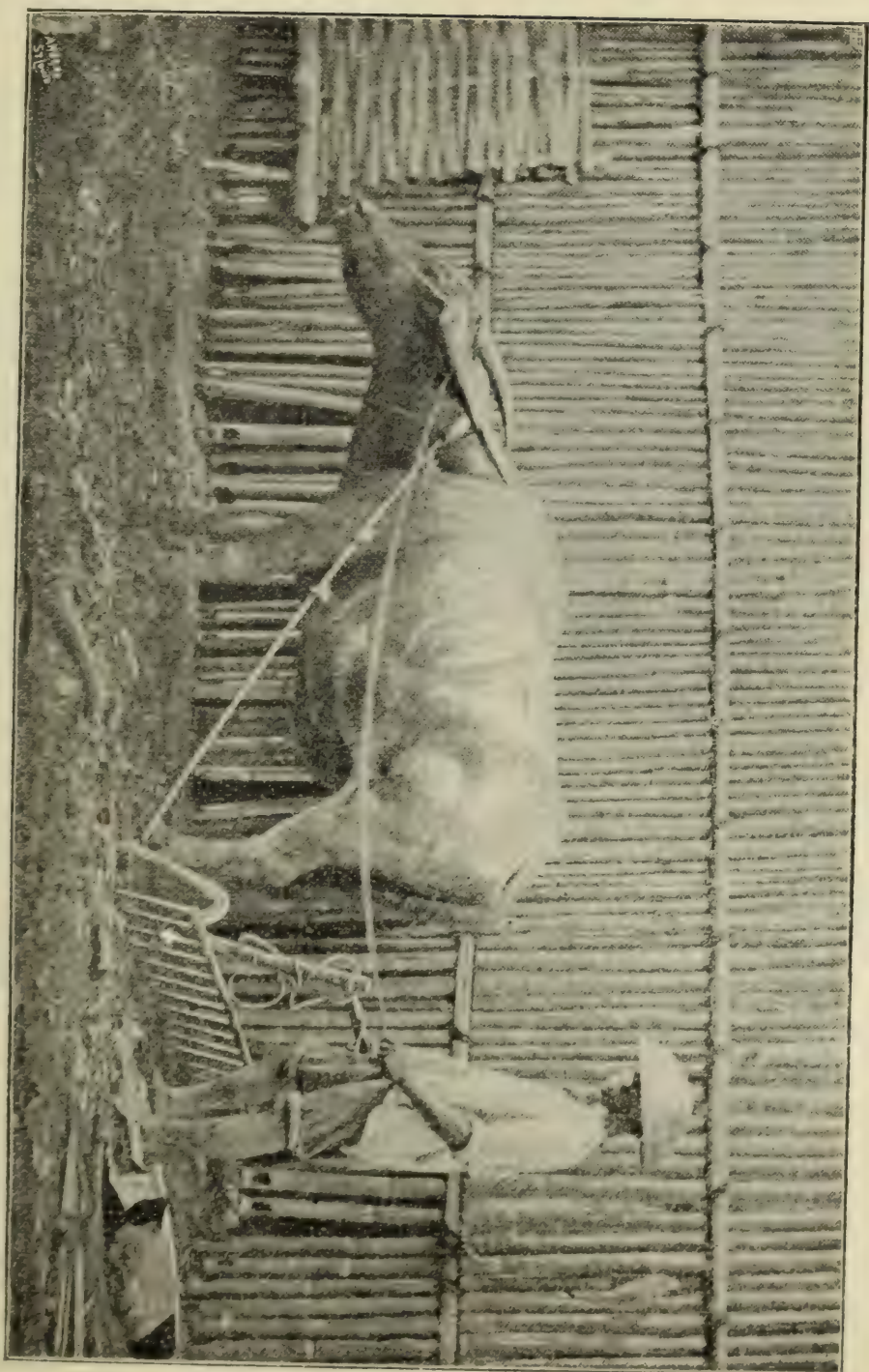
1. There is no proof from Scripture or from contemporaneous history, that Peter was ever regarded as superior in authority to his brother apostles. From the comparatively little that is said about him in the Scriptures or elsewhere, and from the comparatively little that he has written, we would not infer his superiority. He never speaks to his colleagues as though he thought himself superior, and they never approach him as if they regarded him in that light. The early Christian writers did not so understand and apply the Scriptures, or the conduct



### THREE HUNDRED YEARS OF ROMISH CIVILIZATION.

The Philippine Islands have been controlled by the Spanish Government for centuries, although the most primitive and ancient modes are still operative. The following photo-engravure describes the prevailing custom of preparing the ground for seeding. To enlighten and advance a Nation or People indicates Protestantism, to retard and keep in the most abject poverty and uncivilized state indicates Catholicism. Education wipes the cob-webs of superstition from the benighted heart and brain, therefore education to the Rulers of Idolatrous Catholicism is indicative of lost power, for without the cunning devices resorted to by Rome, the fabric of their benighted faith becomes tattered, and princely incomes at an end.





Three Hundred Years of Romish Civilization





of the apostles; nor do they intimate that the supremacy of Peter was ever thought of in those days

2. There is no proof from the Bible that Peter was inspired above any of his fellows, or that any special inspiration was promised to his successors. The pope, therefore, as the successor of Peter, has no more claim to infallibility than have the successors of the other apostles.

3. There is no evidence from history, sacred or profane, that Peter was ever bishop in Rome. The apostles did not act as bishops. They organized Churches, and ordained others to the bishoprics. The first Christian writers name Linus, not Peter, as the first bishop of Rome.

4. There is no evidence from history, sacred or profane, that Peter was ever in Rome. Peter himself makes no allusion to it. The New Testament writers and the Apostolic Fathers, though they have given many items of interest relating to the Church of Rome, and have even named many who belonged to it, give no intimation that Peter had anything to do with it. The story of his visit to the city began first to gain credit at the close of the second century, and was then based on tradition of a very slender character.

5. There is no proof from history that the bishop of Rome, for several centuries, ever claimed supremacy over other metropolitan bishops, or that such supremacy was accorded to them by others. On the other hand, there is much historical evidence to the contrary. Several of the first Ecumenical Councils were not called, or presided over by the bishop of Rome; their decrees were not referred to him for approval, nor did he have any special influence in these bodies. All this is inconsistent with the idea of his superiority in authority.

The claim to supremacy was not generally acknowledged by the other bishops until centuries after it was first made, and then only by the smaller portion of the

Christian world. Even so late as the close of the sixth century, Gregory the Great, then bishop of Rome, said: "But I confidently say, that, whosoever calls himself universal bishop, or desires to be called so, in his pride, is the forerunner of antichrist." The fact is, the Roman Catholic Church is a schism from the great Christian Church, because the majority would not admit her claims to supremacy.

6. Personal infallibility was never claimed by the bishops of Rome, or accorded to them, for several hundreds of years after the death of the apostles. When first suggested, infallibility was supposed to belong to the "General Councils;" afterwards it was claimed for the councils and popes acting conjointly; then, after many centuries, it was assigned to the pope alone. Not, however, until 1870 was it accepted as a part of the faith of the Church. Even up to the time of the meeting of the last General Council, in 1869, the Romish Catechism, used in England, affirmed: "This is a Protestant invention, and is no article of the Catholic faith."

In a pastoral address to the clergy and laity of the Roman Catholic Church in Ireland, dated January 25, 1826, the bishops use this language: "They declare, on oath, their belief that it is not an article of the Catholic faith, neither are they thereby required to believe that the pope is infallible." No wonder that the Irish bishops, in 1870, protested so earnestly against the passage of the decree of papal infallibility. But they were compelled to submit, not to Reason, but to Rome!

7. The late Council, which issued the dogma of infallibility, was not, in any just sense, an Œcumenical Council; nor was its decree secured by the methods always recognized as essential in the acts of an Œcumenical Council.

In the first place, the larger part of the Christian world was not represented in it at all. It was strictly a council



of Roman Catholics. Then, again, the large majority of the members were from Italy, and indeed from the old papal states. Hence the great body of the Roman Catholics themselves was not fully and fairly represented. It was emphatically a council of the Roman Church in Italy. Those who were directly under the personal influence of the pope, and who, with him, were longing for the restoration of his temporal power, had it all their own way.

Of the 1,037 who were entitled to seats in the Council, but 719 were present at its opening, and only 535 at the taking of the final vote. After all the debates had been heard, only 451 were found to vote in favor of the dogma—less than one-half of those entitled to seats in the body. Many had argued and protested against it. Some had gone home; others absented themselves from the Council. It is true, the most of them, some for one reason and some for another, finally acquiesced. But these facts show that their reason was not satisfied, but that they yielded to the power and authority of Rome.

The method of procedure in the Council was as much to be condemned as the composition of the conclave. Questions were decided, contrary to the generally received practice in such cases, by bare majorities. Liberty of speech was greatly restricted. Some of the ablest members were not permitted to speak. Others were heard very imperfectly; while one, at least, the eloquent Bishop Strossmayer, was compelled to cease speaking and leave the rostrum, amidst a scene of uproar and confusion rarely witnessed in the most noisy and violent political assemblies. Dr. Schaff, from whom some of these items are gathered, justly declares that the submission to this dogma "is an instructive lesson of the fearful despotism of the papacy which overrules the stubborn facts of history and the sacred claims of individual conscience. For the facts, so clearly and forcibly brought out before and during the Council by such men as

Kenrick, Hefele, Raucher, Maret, Schwartzenberg and Dupanloup, have not changed, and can never be undone.”

We conclude, therefore, that, inasmuch as the Council was so improperly composed and so unfairly managed, its decrees, so eminently partizan, do not deserve even our respect.

8. The claim to papal supremacy and infallibility, as indeed the whole papal system, is built mainly upon tradition and history, much of which is pure fiction, and not a little of it, downright, wicked forgery. About the beginning of the ninth century there appeared what is known as the “Isidorian or False Decretals.” These professed to be the letters and decrees of various popes, which had been lost, and were then, for the first, gathered from various sources and brought to light. They were intended to fill up the great gap in historical records from the year 91 to 385, A. D. These “Decretals” answered their purpose in those ignorant and superstitious ages. Although suspected at an early period, and afterward proven to be spurious, they were, nevertheless, used again and again, by popes and councils, to establish the claims and build up the system of the Roman hierarchy. The end has been gained. The pope holds his place by the right of possession, notwithstanding the original title was defective and the means used to secure it were “false Decretals.”

The spuriousness of these “Decretals” “has been fully admitted by the best of Catholic authorities, such as Bellarmin, Baronius, Petavius, Pagius, Thomassin, Giannone, Perron, Fleury, Marca, Du Pin, and Labbeus.” The last mentioned writer calls them “a deformity which can be disguised by no art or coloring.”

Another specimen of the art of manufacturing history, has been furnished in our own day. Within a few years, a Jesuit writer, Weninger, in a book for the faithful,



has affirmed that "the Council of Nice, held A. D. 325, was called by Pope Silvester, was presided over by his three legates, and that its acts, were sent to him to be approved." All three of these statements are directly in the face of all the history preceding, attending and immediately following that celebrated Council. A more palpable falsification of history can hardly be conceived. But this writer is still more audacious, and, in order to accomplish his purpose interpolates an important sentence in the eighteenth canon, and fabricates several canons that were never adopted, or even proposed in the Council. He says the twenty-ninth canon reads as follows: "The incumbent of the Roman See, acting as Christ's vicegerent in the government of the Church, is the head of the patriarchs as well as Peter himself was."

Now the whole of this pretended twenty-ninth canon is a forgery. According to all the authorities of that day, there were but twenty canons passed by the Council, and in none of them is there any reference to the supremacy of the bishop of Rome. It will doubtless be observed as we pass along, how all these fabricated "decretals" and canons tend to the one thing alone, viz: the building up of the papal power. Eusebius, who was a member of the Council of Nice, and wrote some of its history; Sozomen, Socrates and Theodoret, who wrote successively a little over a hundred years later, altogether furnish not one sentence confirmatory of the statements of Weninger just mentioned. On the contrary, they give abundant proof that the pre-eminence of the Roman bishop was neither claimed nor recognized in the slightest degree in that Council. Moreover, Theodoret states distinctly that "the bishops drew up twenty (not twenty-nine) laws to regulate the discipline of the Church." Du Pin, one of the ablest Catholic writers of France, writing in the seventeenth century, said: "These rules, which are called canons,



are in number, twenty, and never were more genuine." Tillemont, another eminent Catholic author, of the same century, wrote: "These are the twenty canons of the famous Council, which are come to our hands, and are the only ones which were made. At least, none of the ancients reckoned them more than twenty."

Now, in the name of all that is true and good, we ask, why these inventions and falsifications of history? If the papal claims are believed to be just, why resort to these wicked devices to establish them? Does not the fact that the Romish Church allows such means to be employed, and permits, without contradiction, such errors to be circulated among her people, give evidence that she is conscious that her cause rests on a sandy foundation?

9. The dogma of infallibility, if true, involves the highest interests of men, and is in itself the greatest miracle of all the ages. Would it not be an enslavement of reason to require men to believe such a doctrine, without good evidence, upon the mere "say so" of a pope, or of a council of fallible men?

When Christ and the apostles claimed to speak in the place of God, and by the inspiration of his Spirit, they gave, in their character, in their lives, in their teachings, and especially in their miracles, the evidence demanded by reason. If these were required to furnish proof of their commission, how much more should the pope; for he claims to supervise their work and to interpret their words which they failed to make plain! Reason has always, and justly, too, demanded the evidence of miracle-working power on the part of those professing to be divinely-inspired messengers of God. God has always, even in his humblest messengers, responded to this demand of reason. Has the Roman pontiff ever given any such proof of his transcendent claim to inspiration?

10. The doctrine of papal infallibility, as defined by

the late Council, requires us to believe, either that the pope is superior in divine illumination to the sacred writers, or that all the bishops and inferior clergy are inspired; or both. If the clergy and bishops are not inspired, how do we know that they correctly interpret the pope; and if the pope be not inspired above the apostles, how can he make their thoughts any more plain? If neither supposition be correct, then is the Catholic no better off with, than without, the doctrine of infallibility? For he is just as certain, to say the least, to get the truth from the Bible as from the encyclicals or bulls of the pope. In accepting, therefore, the dogma of infallibility, the Catholic accepts an unnecessary, useless, and therefore unreasonable thing.

11. This dogma further involves the monstrous absurdity that God has committed the keeping of the judgment and conscience of all men, so far as faith and morals are concerned, to one man, and he, generally, in no wise remarkable for either wisdom or goodness! Is not the reason enslaved that can accept such a thought?

12. This article of faith requires us to believe contradictions. Church history abounds in instances, in which popes have been condemned, not only by councils, but by other popes, for heresy, and that, too, of the worst kind. Some of the earlier popes taught that "heretical popes" ought not to be obeyed. This was an admission that popes might fall into error in doctrine. Pope Liberius professed Arianism; Zosimus endorsed Pelagianism; Vigilius affirmed and denied certain doctrines several times, and, at length, frankly "confessed that he was a tool of the devil!" Honorius I. was condemned for heresy by three or four councils and by several popes, and was finally denounced by Leo II. as "one who endeavored by profane treason, to overthrow the immaculate faith of the Roman Church." Almost every shade of heresy, and almost every phase of infidelity has been, at one time or another, entertained and



advocated by some pope ! Is not his reason enslaved who can believe in the infallibility of such men ?

13. This doctrine of papal infallibility demands that we should accept the blasphemous belief that God has, from time to time, selected as the recipients of his highest gift of the Holy Ghost, and as his only medium of communication with his Church, men who have not only been wanting in all the elements of Christian character, but who have been frequently monsters in iniquity. If we accept the statements of the best Catholic historians, we are bound to believe that many of the popes have been guilty of the most enormous crimes on record. Not a few secured their election to the papacy by bribery, deception and perjury. While in the papal chair, many were profligate and dissolute, and some were guilty even of murder.

Petrarch called Rome, "Babylon the great whore, the school of error, and the temple of heresy."

Mariana, another Romish writer, after giving a fearful description of the degeneracy of the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries, says: "The wickedness of the pontiff descended to the people."

A large body of bishops in France, addressed Pope Nicholas I., as follows: "Go to, thy cohorts of priests, soiled with adulteries, incests, rapes and assassinations, is well worthy to form thy infamous court; for Rome is the residence of demons, and thou, Pope, thou art its Satan."

Similar quotations, from approved Catholic authors, many of which we could not read before this audience, might be multiplied almost without limit.

Surely his reason must be enslaved who can believe that the Holy Ghost would dwell in characters like these. Nor are we alone in this view, Gerson, in the Council of Constance, represented "as ridiculous, the pretensions of a man to bind and to loose in heaven and in earth, who



is guilty of simony, falsehood, exaction, pride and fornication."

Cardinal Mendruccio, asserted, in the Council of Trent: "The Holy Spirit will not dwell in men who are vessels of impurity; and from such, therefore, no right judgment can be expected on questions of faith." To all this every pure heart and sound mind will respond. Amen!

These extracts, from Catholic authors, show, however, not only that they did not believe that the Holy Ghost would dwell in wicked men, but, also, that they did not believe in papal infallibility as now held by the Roman Catholic Church.

We have thus presented, as briefly as we well could, some of the reasons why we can not accept the Romish doctrine of infallibility. The discussion could be greatly extended. But we think enough has been said to show that the dogma has but a slender foundation in Scripture, in authentic history, in reliable tradition, or in reason; and that, therefore, the Roman Catholic Church, by its doctrinal authority, enforcing such an error, does enslave the reason

We now come to the second question under this general head, viz: Does the Catholic Church enslave the reason by withholding from the people the Scriptures—the necessary means of forming a judgment?

Catholics tell us: "The Church does not hide the Scriptures from her people." "She does not, and never did, forbid the people to read the Word of God. On the contrary, that she recommends her people to read them, is evident from what you will see in many of the Catholic Bibles which are for sale in our book-stores." These are cheering words to every lover of God's Holy Word; for the very fact that such words have been publicly uttered, and by one who stands so high in this community, is evidence that Catholicism is improving, or that we are

getting light. Perhaps both are true. In either case we do rejoice.

But have we been mistaken on this question; or are the above sentences the utterances of one, whose generous nature has lifted him above and in advance of his Church? The facts that so many Catholics are without Bibles, and that in many of their book-stores, they are not freely offered for sale, lead naturally to the inference that the Church does not, at least, encourage the general circulation of the Scriptures. In our childhood, our father as a contractor on public works, employed a large number of Catholics, and in later years, our own business has brought us into close relations with many Catholics. We have never known one to have a Bible. When asked why they had none, they have answered: "It is not for us to read the Scriptures."

In "The Spiritual Struggles of a Roman Catholic" we find this declaration: "Though several years a student in the college of the Jesuits in Montreal, I never saw a Bible of any kind there. The scarcity of Bibles among the Catholics of Canada is proverbial." Gentlemen who have spent years among the Catholic populations of Mexico, South America, Spain and Italy, report that they have seldom found a Bible in any family. There must be some reason for this state of things in Catholic countries. If the Church does not absolutely forbid the general reading of the Scriptures, she certainly must discourage it.

But let us question her authorities on this subject and see if there is not some explanation of this general absence of the Scriptures among Catholics. An Encyclical letter of Pope Pius VII., among others of similar character, contains this sentence: "It is evident from experience, that the Holy Scriptures, when circulated in the vulgar tongue, have, through the temerity of men, produced more harm than benefit." Leo XII., in 1824, declared that the publi-



ation of translations of the Bible was "in contempt of the tradition of the fathers, and in opposition to the celebrated decree of the Council of Trent, which prohibits the Holy Scriptures from being made common." Gregory XVI., in his bull of 1844, says: "We confirm and renew the decrees recited above, delivered in former times by apostolic authority, against the publication, distribution, reading and possession of books of the Holy Scriptures, translated into the vulgar tongue."

The documents from which these extracts are taken were approved and confirmed by Pius IX., in his famous encyclical of 1864. The sentiments, therefore, stand as the utterances of the highest, and, indeed, the ONLY AUTHORITY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH.

But we are frankly told that the Church must interpret for her people; and then, one triumphantly asks, "does that enslave the intellect?" "Are the laws of Missouri degraded because there is a supreme court to interpret them?" To this we answer, No. But what analogy is there between this and the case in hand? The supreme court is to do with imperfect human laws. It is composed of a number of men who are selected for their wisdom and learning, and who are subject to the laws they interpret. They are placed, as nearly as possible, above the reach of personal and selfish interests and prejudices. They are amenable, for their character and behavior, to another tribunal; and their decisions are subject to correction by subsequent legislation. The reverse of all this is true in the case we are discussing. The Christian's law is the Bible, the infallible Word of God, which men can interpret as well as they can interpret the words of the pope. The pontiff is the man whose decrees are absolute and irreversible. He is above all human authority, and in a position where all personal and official interests naturally tend to warp his judgment, and to lead him to seek his own aggrandizement



or that of his office. The comparison should be between the pope and an absolute monarch; for he possesses in himself the legislative, judicial and executive powers of government. As he has unlimited and irreversible power to interpret, he virtually makes the law, and then, by all the pains and penalties at command, he enforces the law. The pope speaks to the bishop, whom he has created; the bishop speaks to the priest, whom he has made; the priest speaks to the people, and they must submit; and that is the end of it. Hence we see why there are so few Bibles; there is no need of them. They might become troublesome by suggesting doubt as to the papal claims, and thus, as one pope has said, "through the temerity of men, produce more harm than benefit" to the Church, but not to the cause of truth. As the Catholic has no occasion to reason on matters of religion, he has no use for the Word of God, and the Church, practically, and through its highest authorities, discourages its use.

Another source of mental enslavement, though, perhaps, not so serious as the two considered, is the gorgeous ceremonials of the Catholic Church.

We believe in neat and tasteful churches, and in such adjuncts and surroundings as are suggestive of the "Upper Sanctuary." But rich and gaudy ornamentation and much pomp and ceremony may measurably enslave reason, and also, sadly degrade religion. Catholics, indeed, tell us: "We do not believe that religion consists in pomp and external show of ceremony; these things may aid man in worshipping in spirit and in truth." But what are the natural and necessary tendency and effect of these things? Do not experience and observation teach that, where the imagination and the emotional nature are unduly excited, reason is, to some extent, held in abeyance. Do not gorgeous ceremonials with their necessary attendant address themselves wholly to these susceptibilities of man?

This Pope, this foreigner, this Italian, is more powerful in this country than any other one man, not excepting the King. He would use fire and sword against us if he had the power, and he would confiscate our property, and would not spare our lives.

PRINCE BISMARCK.

The Church of Rome is not a body of theological beliefs but an immense secret society, animated in all parts of the world with one ambition, moving everywhere and in all times toward one end—the establishment of absolute power for itself over all men, in all lands.—ROBERT MONTAGUE, Member of the Queen's Privy Council.

[344]

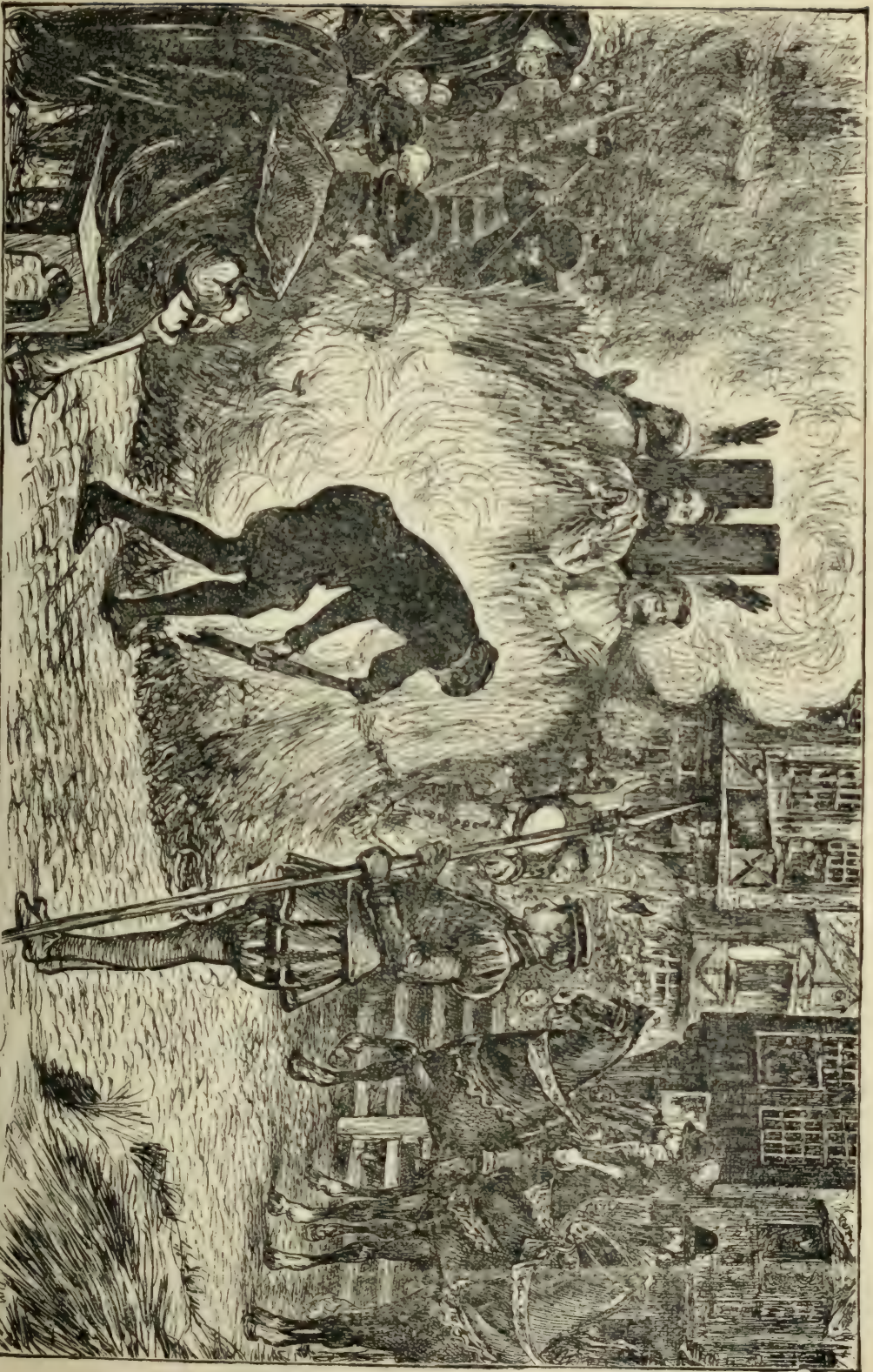
The first of these is the fact that the  
government has been unable to  
obtain the necessary funds to  
carry out its policy. This is due  
to the fact that the government  
has been unable to raise the  
necessary funds to carry out its  
policy. This is due to the fact  
that the government has been  
unable to raise the necessary  
funds to carry out its policy.

The second of these is the fact that  
the government has been unable to  
obtain the necessary funds to  
carry out its policy. This is due  
to the fact that the government  
has been unable to raise the  
necessary funds to carry out its  
policy. This is due to the fact  
that the government has been  
unable to raise the necessary  
funds to carry out its policy.

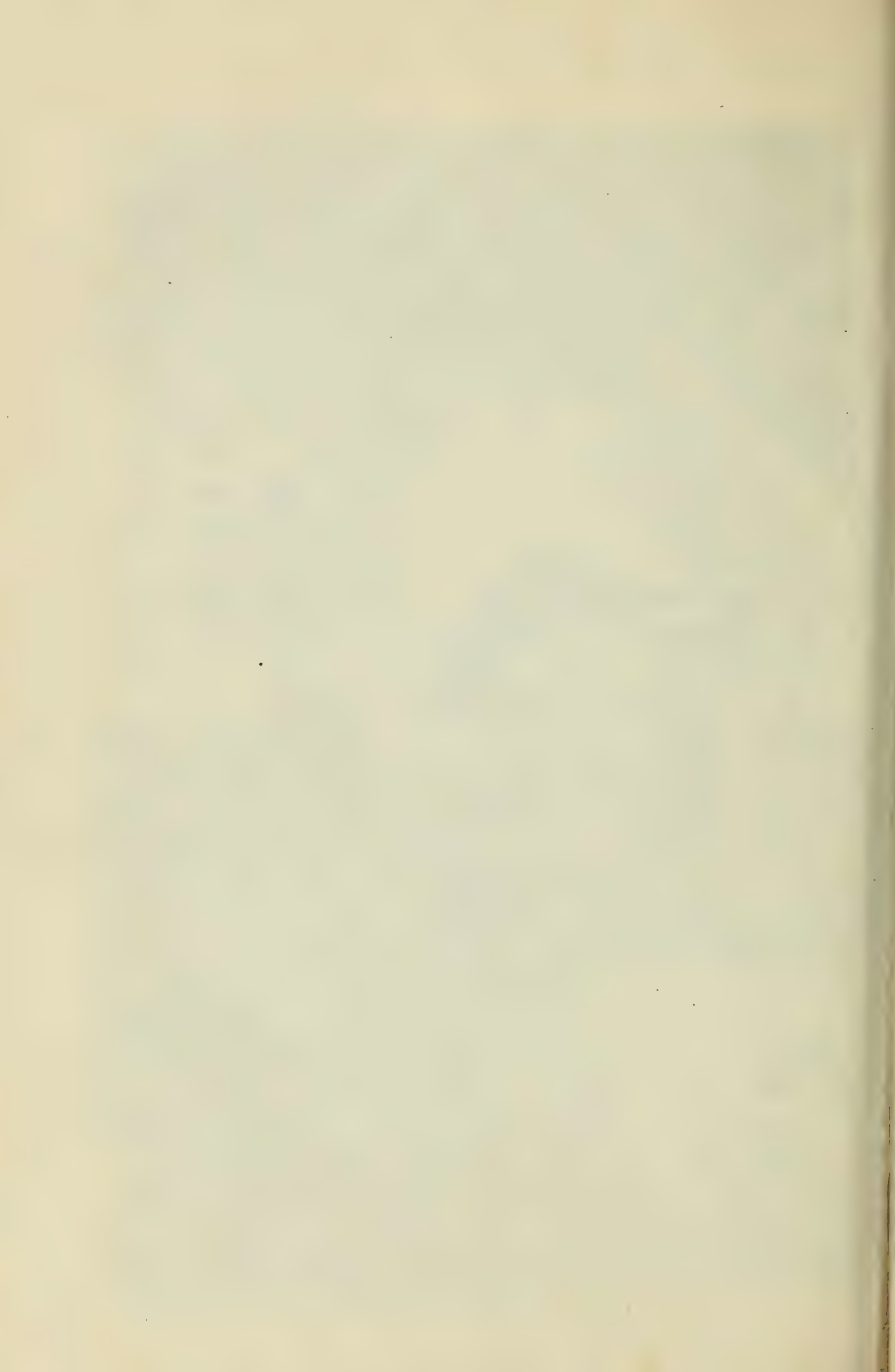
The third of these is the fact that  
the government has been unable to  
obtain the necessary funds to  
carry out its policy. This is due  
to the fact that the government  
has been unable to raise the  
necessary funds to carry out its  
policy. This is due to the fact  
that the government has been  
unable to raise the necessary  
funds to carry out its policy.

The fourth of these is the fact that  
the government has been unable to  
obtain the necessary funds to  
carry out its policy. This is due  
to the fact that the government  
has been unable to raise the  
necessary funds to carry out its  
policy. This is due to the fact  
that the government has been  
unable to raise the necessary  
funds to carry out its policy.





Four Martyrs Burned at Canterbury: 1555.





nature, and thus, to a large degree, overawe and silence reason? The grand cathedral with its stained windows and frescoed walls; the statuary and the paintings; the burning tapers; the solemn procession; the splendidly adorned priests, flitting around the altar and along the shadowy aisle; the tremulous music floating out upon the air, all these fire the imagination, quicken the sensibilities, and stir the emotions. But do they touch the reason or the conscience? If this be repeated and continued, as it is in the Catholic worship, to the exclusion of almost every thing else, reason becomes a captive and religion DEGENERATES INTO MERE SENTIMENTALISM.

Similar effects are produced by fiction and the drama. Men may be entranced by the story or the stage, and laugh and weep with the varying drift of the scenes, and then retire utterly unfit for the practical business of life, and with hearts steeled to the real wants of suffering humanity. So they may be moved to ecstasies by the pageantry of the "sacred tabernacles," and weep before the "stations of the cross;" and yet go forth unenlightened and unstrengthened for the work of life, and with hearts closed to the approach of all human sorrow. The Penitentes of Mexico, will pass through all the dramatic performances of "passion week," wrought up to the highest pitch of religious frenzy, and then out to the drunken revel, and even to murder. Priests and people of various Catholic countries, will rush from the gorgeous ceremonials of the Sabbath morning, to the cock-fighting, bull-baiting and gambling of the Sabbath afternoon. Is not this the natural result of a service in which sense and imagination are almost exclusively addressed? How different the simple and spiritual worship of the apostolic Church! Then the sweet music, the beautiful hymn, the precious lessons from God's Word, the instructive sermon, the fervent prayer, the hallowed Christian fellowship, and the blessed unction of the Holy Spirit, touched the whole



man and sent him forth happier and better for the duties of life.

Still further, there are two indirect, and yet necessary and important results of the Romish service which tend to restrain the reason. First, these numerous and attractive ceremonials so absorb the mind, that it has neither time nor disposition to read and study God's Word. Hence the mental discipline and quickening which come from the careful and thoughtful study of the great truths of revelation, and of such books as are helpful to the understanding of the same, are lost, and with the great mass of the people, the mind lies passive for the reception of all the errors and superstitions that may be presented. Again, the costliness of all this ceremonial, deprives the people of the means necessary for the acquisition of knowledge for themselves, or for the education of their children. Because of the expensiveness of their system the people, as a whole, have been kept poor, while the Church has been rich in magnificent buildings and splendid sculpture and paintings. Oftentimes under the very shadow of grand and costly cathedrals, are to be found thousands of people who have not the Bible, and who could not read it if they had it.

We come now to another question, closely related to the one just left, but proposed for separate discussion: "Does the worship of the Virgin, saints, angels and images degrade religion?"

Romanists tell us the Church "does not place any creature on the throne of God." "Catholics do not believe that the Blessed Virgin, or any saint, can receive the slightest act of adoration."

It is no doubt true that the intelligent Catholic makes nice metaphysical distinctions between different kinds of worship. We have never supposed that they intend to place any creature on the throne of God. But are

not their prayers to the Virgin, and other creatures, put in such form, and made so frequently, as to practically destroy the distinctions made, and to lead the people to take these creatures into their hearts and minds in the place of God? Whatever worship tends to divide the heart between God and any object, or to give to another any portion of the devotion and honor which belong to God alone, is idolatrous, and, of course, degrading to religion. God, in the second commandment of the Decalogue, has absolutely forbidden the use "of any graven image," or the "likeness of anything" in religious worship. The Catholic Church, it is true, usually, if not always, omits this commandment in her catechisms. But it stands in the Bible as a perpetual protest against the WHOLE SYSTEM OF IMAGE WORSHIP. The Scriptures, moreover, everywhere represent God as the only object of worship, and Jesus Christ as the only mediator, intercessor and advocate between God and man. Neither the Bible nor early Church history furnishes any foundation for saint or angel worship, or for the idea that they are ever employed in interceding for man in heaven. To suppose that they can hear the thousands of prayers addressed to them every moment from all parts of the earth, is to ascribe to them omnipresence, and make them equal to God. Such thoughts are debasing to reason, as well as to religion.

But an eloquent one has said: "Can you imagine an architect jealous of the stately building that he himself has designed? No. You would say this is mere folly, indeed. Neither can God be jealous of any honor given to these creatures—"as creatures." We reply, does the building deserve honor? We admire the building, but we honor the builder. So, while we may intensely admire God's handiwork, we can worship only the Creator. Such a sentiment, as just quoted, would justify Paganism with all its abominable idolatries. For Paganism does not hold all its



thousands of deities as equal, or as deserving of equal honors. Paganism has its first, second and third degree of worship, and with as much propriety as Catholicism.

But let us look at the facts in the case, whether the distinctions as to different kinds of worship are practically kept in view by the Catholic Church. If we examine many of the eulogiums pronounced on the Virgin by prominent writers of the Church, we will find language used that ought to be applied to God alone. If we ask the common people if they "adore" the Virgin, many of them will frankly answer, Yes. A celebrated bishop of the Catholic Church, in a recent lecture, affirmed that Catholics do not adore the Virgin. One of his people declared, "the bishop is wrong. I'll tell the priest," and then got her prayer-book to show that the bishop was in error!

In examining "the Mission Hand Book," used by Catholics in this city, we find the following expressions. They need no comment. "When you are tempted to anger, say, O, my Jesus, give me patience: Bless me, Mary, my mother." \* \* "If wicked thoughts enter your mind, say, quickly, Jesus and Mary help me." \* \* "To the most Holy and undivided Trinity, to the ever faithful virginity of the Virgin Mary, to the assembly of all the saints in heaven, may everlasting praise, honor, power and glory be given by every creature." \* \* "Most holy and immaculate Virgin, my mother, to thee the mother of my God, the queen of the world, and the refuge of sinners, I have recourse to-day. Do not leave me until thou seest me in heaven, occupied in blessing thee and singing thy mercies throughout eternity." \* \* "O, Mary, I am thine: save me, change me, Mary, my mother. Thou canst do it." \* \* "I haste to the Virgin of virgins. I fly to thee, O sweet mother, a wretched sinner. Despise not my prayer, O mother of the divine Word, but graciously hear and grant the same."

In a book called "The Way to Heaven," approved by



the archbishop of New York, Mary is called "Seat of Wisdom;" "Refuge of Sinners;" "Dispenser of Graces;" "Model of all Perfection;" "Source of Divine Love."

Again it said in the same book: "No intercession is so effectual as that of the Blessed Mother of God;" "let us therefore seek it."

Again, under the head of "Divine Praises," she takes the place of the Holy Spirit; for it is said: "Blessed be God;" "Blessed be the name of Jesus;" "Blessed be the Most Holy Mary;" and the Holy Ghost is entirely omitted! May we not say, truly, "this is not only idolatry, it is blasphemy!"

From these specimens, and many more like them could be furnished, we see that Mary is not merely asked to intercede for us, absurd as that would be, but as an intercessor SHE IS PLACED ABOVE CHRIST. She is represented as bestowing the greatest gifts; her name is coupled, without any mark of distinction, with that of Jesus and God, and she is addressed as worthy of equal praise and honor with God himself. How could such worship fail to dishonor God and degrade religion?

We have now reached the last question proposed in the beginning of this lecture, viz: Does the Confessional corrupt the conscience?

Auricular confession, like many other peculiar features of Romanism, is of comparatively modern date. It is an essential part of that great spiritual Absolutism which has seen the growth of many centuries. The Catholic Church has been for a long time, a politico-religious institution, claiming the control of the temporal as well as the spiritual affairs of men. The Confessional, as we believe, was designed, and is well calculated to secure this control to the papal power; because it supervises men's thoughts and feelings, and thus enables the Church to check and subdue the first inclination to doubt on questions of

doctrine, or to insubordination in matters of practice.

Confession to God for sin; confession to our fellows for personal wrongs; confession to society for public offences, and occasional confession to one another for mutual advice and help, are all both reasonable and scriptural. But private confession to a priest, of all the thoughts and feelings of the soul, is neither reasonable nor scriptural. Those passages of Scriptures usually quoted to sustain auricular confession, like those used to establish the supremacy and infallibility of the pope, the worship of the Virgin Mary, etc., admit of much more simple and natural interpretations, and were never understood by the first Christian writers, as they are explained by modern Catholics. Not only is the act of confession unreasonable and wrong, but the idea of priestly absolution is equally erroneous and therefore corrupting to the conscience. The Apostles never absolved from sin; they simply urged men to repent and believe for the remission of sin: so also did their successors and followers for many years after their death.

But Catholics tell us, "the confessor is simply God's agent; the power given to him is a delegated power; the priest can never forgive the sins of a man who is not truly contrite."

All this sounds well. But does it correspond with the general teachings of the Church, and with the practical workings of the system? The fifth canon of the Council of Trent, says: "Though the priest's absolution is the dispensation of a benefit which belongs to another, yet it is to be considered as the nature of a judicial act, in which sentence is pronounced by him as a judge." The ninth canon declares: "Whosoever shall affirm that the priest's sacramental absolution is not a judicial act, let him be accursed." In the Catechism of the Council of Trent, we find the following: \* \* "Our sins are forgiven by the abso-



lution of the priest. The voice of the priest is to be heard as that of Christ himself." \* \* "The absolution of the priest, which is expressed in words, seals the remission of sins, which it accomplishes in the soul." \* \* \* "Unlike the authority given to the priest of the old law, the power with which the priests of the new law are invested, is not simply to declare that sins are forgiven, but as the minister of God, really to absolve from sin."

If now, the priest is God's agent, as they tell us, he must know God's will, and therefore, must be able to read men's hearts in order to determine whether or not they are truly contrite and entitled to pardon; or he must be clothed WITH FULL POWER TO ACT FOR GOD and to bind him by his priestly acts. This latter view, as we understand, is what Catholics claim and teach. God has committed to the priest the power to "absolve from sin," and no matter what his character or life may be, or how he may blunder in the performance of his work, his act, in absolving the penitent, is absolute and irrevocable. To this effect is the teaching of the Council of Trent, when it says, "That even those priests who are living in mortal sin, exercise the function of forgiving sins, and those who contend that wicked priests have not this power, hold very erroneous sentiments." This absolute power to forgive sins, is clearly taught in a book used in some Catholic colleges, entitled "Contemplations on the Truths of Religion." It says: "To remit sins, to bind and loose consciences, this is what the priests of the Lord can do."

Abbé Jean Gaume, an approved Catholic authority, says: "Suppose the Redeemer should visibly descend in person in his Church, and station himself in a confessional, to administer the sacrament of penance, while a priest occupies another. The Son of God says, 'I absolve you;' and the priest says, 'I absolve you;' and the penitent finds himself absolved just as much by the one as by the



other. Thus the priest, mighty like God, can instantly snatch the sinner from hell, render him worthy of Paradise, and, if a slave of the devil, make him a child of Abraham, and God himself is obliged to submit to the judgment of the priest. The sentence of the priest precedes; God subscribes to it."

Another Catholic author says: "The angels and arch-angels are much below priests, for we can, in the face of God, pardon sins, which they have never been able to do."

How can such teachings as these do otherwise than corrupt both priest and people? To the priest will come, in the first place, pride and arrogance. These are evident in the tone and spirit of the extracts given; and they are manifest in the arbitrary manner and haughty demeanor of the priests in the management and government of the people, as "they lord it over God's heritage." Then again, there will come, as one has justly said, "the influence upon his heart and mind of the revelations of human depravity, which he is there to solicit and receive." If the priest be disposed to evil, the confessional, with its inviolable secrecy, affords a favorable opportunity to gratify his depraved nature, and to increase his corruption, while at the same time he may be corrupting others. If he enter the confessional a pure-minded man, he must have more than ordinary strength to prevent him from falling. Peter Den, the Catholic theologian, says: "That confessor who is every day occupied in the ministry of hearing confessions, falls very seldom in comparison with the times he does not fall." Still it is admitted that he does fall, and history shows that he falls frequently and grievously. The corruptions of the clergy, both social and moral, have frequently caused pain to her more pure and pious men, and the narration of them has filled many pages of the Church's history, as written by her best authors. Several of the popes have been constrained to issue bulls against the crime of solicitation to

sin in the confessional. Gregory XV., in 1622, issued such a bull, and Benedict XIV., so late as 1745, issued another. The corruption must have been wide-spread and fearful to have required interposition from such a source and in such a way.

THE DEMORALIZING INFLUENCE of the confessional upon the people is as distinctly marked. "It naturally," says one, "inspires a spirit of abject and servile submission to the priest." It, as naturally, we think, encourages and emboldens men to commit sin. "A boy, whom I was reproving for a certain sin," writes a gentleman who was trained in the Catholic Church, "remarked: 'O, it does not matter how often I do this. I'll confess it to the priest and he'll make it all right; for he can forgive many sins as easily as a few.'"

"As confession and penance are much easier than the extirpation of sin from the heart and the abandonment of vice in the life," says a celebrated writer, "many cease to contend against the lusts of the flesh, and prefer gratifying them at the expense of a few mortifications." We all know that, both in the private and public relations of life, the readiness with which men may escape the penalties of transgression, and the ease with which pardon may be obtained, encourages them in sin, and often lead to great crimes against individuals and against society.

Parents and teachers understand well how frequently the attempt to pry into the secrets of youth, and to keep them under constant watch begets artifice, deception and falsehood. Sometimes, too, conversation about sins of life, even with the purest intentions, will excite youthful curiosity, and thus lead to the knowledge and commission of sins of which the offender had been ignorant, and against which we desired to guard him. Human nature is such that familiarity with sin is apt to beget a love for it, and frequent meditation upon wickedness, even of thought, is



likely to cause the commission of wickedness in the life. Hence, many of the questions suggested for thought before entering the confessional, and others presented by the priest in the confessional, often corrupt the penitent, and always tend to corrupt him. Indeed, some of these questions are simply indecent, and would bring the blush of shame to any pure-minded, modest person.

Several years ago, in a town near which we were living, a lecturer before an audience where there were no ladies, had occasion to read some of these questions from Den's works. A young Catholic, who was present, became indignant, and had the gentleman arrested on a charge of *public indecency*. But before the trial came off the young man became wiser, and consequently no one appeared to prosecute the case.

In entire harmony with these general statements in regard to the tendencies of the confessional, is our observation of its practical workings. Do we usually find our Catholic friends, either before or after confession, giving evidence of deep contrition or genuine reformation? Is it an uncommon thing to see them, both before and after confession, indulging in deception, profanity and Sabbath-breaking; sometimes in drunkenness and other crimes? In communities where there is no outside sentiment to correct and restrain, these things are seen to a sad extent. While faithful to the confessional and other churchly duties, there is in Catholic countries a lamentable neglect of what are generally considered the common moralities of the gospel, such as the observance of the Sabbath, sobriety and purity. This individual and national demoralization, largely due to the confessional, has been the fruitful cause of schisms in the Church. It was this that called into activity Huss, Wickliff and Luther. It was this that gave strength and power to the Reformation.

We have now reached the end of this discussion and



have shown we think, that Catholicism does enslave the reason, does degrade religion, does corrupt conscience. Doubtless all have felt with us the difficulty of keeping these points distinctly separate in thought; for they run into each other; and the same facts and arguments which serve to illustrate and confirm the one, serve measurably to illustrate and confirm the others. In religious matters, whatever enslaves the reason, also, more or less, degrades religion and corrupts conscience; and whatever degrades religion also corrupts the conscience and enslaves the reason; and whatever corrupts conscience to some extent enslaves reason and degrades religion. These points are so closely connected that you can hardly touch one without touching all.

Before concluding this brief and necessarily incomplete lecture, we desire to offer two or three general thoughts.

First, We think the drift of this discussion suggests a very natural and satisfactory explanation of the extent, if not the existence of modern scepticism. Our Catholic friends are disposed to charge it to the freedom of thought which Protestantism approves and encourages. We, on the other hand, think it is the natural offspring of Rome—the natural result of the great reactionary law of our being—the tendency of mind to fly from one extreme to the opposite. The unreasoning and passionate lover of to-day, is the unreasoning and passionate hater of to-morrow. The bondman emancipated is likely to become the lawless rioter. When men accept of any system as the highest type of religion, and then discover their error, they naturally, in their great disappointment, rush into doubt and irreligion, or into open infidelity. We find this law of our nature exemplified in Utah to-day. The more intelligent men, who accepted, in good faith, the Mormon system as the best form of religion, are now the rejecters of all religion. Having been deceived in what they thought the best, they

can not now receive any. So has it been with thousands reared in the Catholic Church. Having been taught from childhood that Romanism is the legitimate offspring of Christianity, and its true and proper representative, when, by observation and study, they have learned its real character and history, and have seen how far it falls short of what a "Kingdom not of this world" ought to be, they have revolted against it, and in casting off its claims, they have naturally, though unwisely, cast off the claims of religion itself.

This result is seen not alone in the pronounced infidelity of the times. Men who have traveled largely and observed closely, tell us that there is a strong undercurrent of unbelief among the intelligent classes in Catholic countries, both in Europe and America. Personal experience and observation have led to doubt and distrust, if not to open disgust with the Church. Her services are ignored; and because no better form of religion is known, all religion is neglected or denied. Persons who have spent years in the Catholic states of our own continent, and of Europe, have assured us personally of the truth of these statements. Indeed, we do not see how it could be otherwise with many minds.

The papacy claims to be from God; nay, claims to stand in the place of God, and through its infallible head, to speak unerring truth for the enlightenment and salvation of men. She justly boasts of one of the most complete organizations the world has ever seen; she has had a wonderful history of a thousand years, or more; for many generations she wielded almost undisputed power, and distributed crowns and thrones at her pleasure. Although now deprived of temporal power, she still claims to be the only divinely inspired teacher of God's Word; and the only heaven-appointed governor of the hearts and consciences of all men.



Now, from such a system, men have a right to expect corresponding fruits. In the absence of these, is it wonderful that they should begin to doubt its truth, and in the end, to question the truth of all religion?

But we are glad to know, that to another class of minds more thoughtful and conservative by nature, or by habit, these disastrous results do not come. There are many who do not forget that the mosque of the false prophet stands where the temple of Zion once stood; that evil branches may be engrafted upon a good tree; that the stream may be polluted long after it leaves the fountain. These, amidst their religious doubts and uncertainties, begin to inquire after the original foundation, to seek for the natural branches, to search for the true fountain. Coming to the Holy Scriptures, accepted as from God by Catholic and Protestant alike, they find that the precious words of Him "who spake as never man spake," and whom, "the common people heard gladly," are still easy to be understood and able to make wise unto salvation. Searching the Scriptures as commanded, and studying the authentic records of the original Church, they find no papal infallibility; no fear of an open Bible; no costly or gorgeous ceremonials; no worship of images, saints, angels, or Virgin; no secret confession or priestly absolution from sin; in fine, no Roman Catholic Church. Therefore, in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost they protest against Rome, but cleave to Religion.

Finally, fellow citizens, let us rejoice for a moment, in the circumstances of this hour. Here, on this platform, within the last few months, have stood, successively, an eloquent Roman Catholic bishop, a learned Jewish Rabbi, and now an humble Protestant minister, each to proclaim, without let or hindrance, the honest convictions of his mind, and the cherished sentiments of his heart. This is that grand consummation so long desired, and



prayed for, by the host of devout and heroic men, who have, in the ages past, suffered for human freedom and religion.

Here, then, in this splendid Library Building, fragrant with the aroma of books; here, on the bank of our own great river, where, side by side, and unmolested, stand the Cathedral, the Church and the Synagogue; here, in our own adopted St. Louis, filled with her magnificent Public Schools, at once the offspring and the pledge of civil and religious liberty, let us lift up our hearts in devout thanksgiving to God for the joy of this hour.

The past is full of instruction; the future is full of hope. That gigantic power which once swayed its scepter over Europe, and before which kings and potentates bowed in meek submission, is gone. That strange spell, which for ages, held the nations in intellectual and spiritual bondage, is broken. The blessed Bible, so long hidden from the people in an unknown tongue, and confined to the cloister, is now read in all the languages of earth. Its precious seed-thoughts scattered broad-cast, are taking root in all lands, bearing fruit for the nourishment of the people and sending sweet fragrance to the skies. The old temple, with its pictures and images, musty with the relics of paganism, is beginning to decay. Another is rising in its stead, grander in its proportions and more simple and beautiful in its structure, "built upon the foundation of the prophets and apostles, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone." To it are the thoughtful and devout of all climes flocking. From it are already issuing those hallowed influences which are sweeping away the barriers which have so long separated men; gathering them into a broader and holier brotherhood, and lifting them up into the light and peace and joy of heaven.







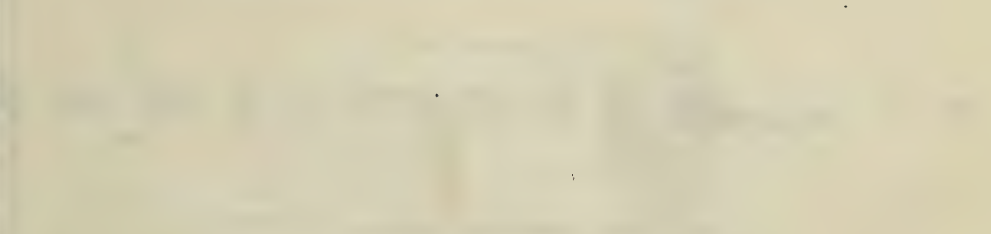
"Have mercy on this realm of England." Page 564.



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY

# THE APPEAL OF THE SOUTH

BY J. M. G. [illegible]



THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION  
155 N. 4TH ST. N. Y. C.

THE APPEAL OF THE SOUTH  
BY J. M. G. [illegible]

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY  
ASTOR LENOX TILDEN FOUNDATION  
155 N. 4TH ST. N. Y. C.

If we are to have another contest in the near future of our national existence, I predict that the dividing line will not be Mason and Dixon's, but it will be between patriotism and intelligence on one side, and superstition, ambition and ignorance on the other. Let us all labor for the security of free thought, free speech, free press, and pure morals; unfettered religious sentiments, and equal rights and privileges of all men, irrespective of nationality, color or religion.

[359]

U. S. GRANT.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

# THE APPEAL OF ROMANISM

### TO EDUCATED PROTESTANTS.

---

BY THE REV. R. S. STORRS, D. D., BROOKLYN, N. Y.

---

FROM "EVANGELICAL ALLIANCE CONFERENCE."

It is always easy, though always unsafe, to underestimate the attractive force of a system of belief adverse to our own. Standing on the outside of it, we see only its external proportions. The inner chambers, filled with whatever precious and pleasant riches, are hidden from us; and one must be of a remarkably sympathetic and comprehensive mind to be able to enter into them, and to see the whole structure as its inhabitants do.

It is especially difficult for us as Protestants to understand the attractive power of Romanism. Jealousy of it, of a stealthy and dangerous system, careless of virtue, eager for power, exquisitely adjusted to win mankind by abandoning their vices and consecrating their pride—this is an inheritance to which we are born. And such hereditary impressions ripen with most of us into personal conviction. Not only does it seem to us hostile to liberty, and to rational progress, incompatible with a liberal and fruitful civilization; it seems so distinctly to antagonize the Gospel, so positively to contradict the fundamental ideas of the Divine Government—dissociating religion from morality, and destiny from character—its description and its doom seem so luridly and indelibly written in history, that we



can not, without a distinct and strenuous effort, understand how any should accept it.

We have, therefore, been wont to regard the Roman Church as the Church of the ignorant and the superstitious alone; to expect that those born and trained within it will come out from it, with intelligent protest or with passionate revolt, when they shall have reached a higher level of education and moral force; and it has seemed well-nigh incredible that any one educated under Protestant influences should be allured into its fold.

When such a one has gone to its communion, we have been apt to feel that he must have been moved either by a desire for political preferment, and the aid of the priesthood in his personal schemes; or by the wish for terms of salvation which would leave his lusts free, and yet quiet his fears; or by regard for particular teachers, as Newman or Faber in England, Brownson, Hecker, or Hewit, in this country; or that he was attracted by the tone of authority, and the splendid pomp of the outward spectacle; or that he was moved by a general uncertain eccentricity of mind, which might have made him a Shaker or a Mormon, but which, by chance, did make him a Papist; or, finally, that it has been with him a blind leap after belief, in a desperate reaction from the lonely gloom of infidelity.

In one or other of these ways we almost always account for the transfer to Romanism of one who has been educated outside its influences; while at last we are often constrained to leave it, as a strange phenomenon, not wholly explained by any thing which the man himself has said, or any thing which our thoughts can suggest.

For some have gone who have certainly not been thus impelled; of whose change no one of the motives which I have mentioned gives any more account than it does of the origin of the *Paradise Lost*. They are serious, devout, conscientious persons, intent on learning, and then on doing,

the will of the Almighty; of no peculiar turn of mind, with no marked predominance of imagination or emotional sensibility; many of them educated in the best and most liberal Protestant schools; some of them among the noblest of their time, whom it is a serious loss to us to lose.

And it is to be distinctly observed that these men accept the system of Romanism with no languor or reserve, with no esoteric and half-Protestant interpretation of it, with no thought at all of modifying its dogmas for their personal use by the exercise of a private judgment upon them. They take the system as it stands. They take it altogether. They look with pity, not unmixed with contempt, on those who are eager to adopt its phraseology and to mimic its ceremonies, while declining to submit their minds to its mandates; and for themselves they confess doctrines which seem to us incredible, and conform themselves to practices which look to us like idolatrous mummery, with gladness and pride.

Now, what moves these men? What is the attraction which the system presents to such as these, in Germany, England, this country?—an attraction which is strong enough to wholly detach them from their early associations, and to make them devotees of a spiritual power which from childhood they were taught to dread and to detest?

It is this question to which I am asked to give a partial and rapid answer. Of course it must be an imperfect answer since I am not a Romanist, in any sense or any measure. On the other hand, I am a Congregationalist, in the broadest significance; believing for myself, without the wish to impose the belief on any body else, that each society of believers, permanently associated for the worship of God, and for the celebration of Christian ordinances, is a proper and complete church; competent to elect and ordain its officers, to administer the sacraments, and to fashion its rules and its ritual, under Christ, while bound to main-



tain and teach his truth, to honor the law of Christian purity, and to live in unity of spirit, and in fellowship of good works, with all similar societies. So far, therefore, as the Roman organization is concerned, I stand at almost the furthest remove from it; with nobody beyond me, so far as I know, unless it be the Society of Friends.

And concerning the whole immense system which that organization represents and subserves, I confess my sympathy with the most radical of the Reformers. I believe that the Fathers were thoroughly right in revolting against Rome; that we are under the highest obligations to maintain that revolt; and that Christian civilization would perish from the earth, if the Papal supremacy should become universal.

So it can not be that I should understand the system, or feel its attractions, as those do who live in it; and if they were here to speak for themselves, they might well decline to have me represent them. But I can see some of the fascinating features which Romanism offers to its disciples, and can understand, in a measure at least—as it has been part of my business to understand—the appeal which it makes to educated Protestants. And from among its attractive forces, selecting them for their prominence and as easy to be exhibited, I will specify eight.

1. The prime secret of its attractiveness for such minds is, I think, that it claims to offer them in the Roman Church a present, living, authoritative Teacher; which has the mind of God immanent in it; which is the witness and the interpreter of Revelation, and is itself the living medium of such Revelation; which has thus authority to decide on all questions of Religious doctrine and duty, and whose decisions, when announced, are infallibly correct, and unspeakably important. This is its first claim; imperative in tone, stupendous in substance, unique in its kind, and very effective.



According to it, as you are aware, the bishops in communion with the See of Peter are the *Ecclesia docens*; the divinely constituted, perpetual, inerrant corporation, in which Christ, by the Holy Ghost, is always present; which is filled, in its totality, with his inspiration, and which thus utters, in its decrees, his voice to the world. It does not merely articulate the general Christian consciousness of truth or of duty; it speaks Christ's mind, as the apostles did in their day, with a superior fitness to modern needs, and with an equivalent, an identical authority.

Debate is, therefore, always in order till the Church has spoken. But after that, doubt is a deadly sin. For it is not a mere perilous dissent from the majority. It is, in its essence, infidelity to Christ. And, on the other hand, the belief of the faithful in a dogma properly formulated and declared needs no argument, allows no hesitation, and asks for no support of reason. It is immediate and final; since it rests solidly on the utterance of the Church, which is to it the testimony of God.

This may seem to us immensely absurd, looked at in the light of history. It may seem prodigiously to transcend all the prerogatives promised by the Lord to the Church to which his truth was given. We may hold ourselves able to count the rings by which the successive increments of influence gathering to that Church hardened at last into the tough and oaken fibre of this unyielding and gigantic claim. It may seem to us to put dishonor on the Bible. And we may feel that it reproduces, with strange exactness, with an almost fearful fidelity, the prediction of Paul concerning that Son of Perdition of whom he forewarned the Thessalonian disciples, "that he, as God, sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God." But the claim thus outlined has certainly a subtle and grand attraction for many minds. They do not feel limited, harassed, or forcibly overborne by this Divine authority in

the Church. On the contrary, they feel invigorated and elevated by it, because holding themselves assured of the truth, by the very voice of God, speaking now as at the beginning, only speaking now, in tenderness to them, not through trumpet or tempest, in articulate thunders or earthquake throes, but through the consenting votes and voices of consecrated men.

It seems to them the grand privilege of their minds to have such a Church; the contemporary of the apostles; full now, as at Pentecost, of the Holy Ghost; a majestic, abiding, undeceivable power, the very body of Christ, through which the present benignant Lord, always in the world, declares with perfect clearness and certainty what is to be believed and what to be done. All their expectations of progress and success in the attainment of divine knowledge rest on this; and their minds are profoundly animated by it. A present revelation, not one in the past—a revelation through men, not through a book—is that which, according to their conception, now brings to them the thoughts of the Eternal.

Especially in times like ours, when religious doubt is passionate and ubiquitous, when a whirling and vehement skepticism darkens and hurtles in all the air, they greet with peculiar desire and welcome such a basis of certainty, such a guaranty of the truth, such a centre of enlightening and unifying authority. Amidst the many divisions of Christendom they long for this the more. And the Bible, interpreted by each for himself, seems in no degree to meet their want; while neither of the most cultured Protestant churches offers it satisfaction.

Most of all, if they have themselves been assailed by the skeptical spirit, and have wavered and wandered in restless inquiry on the great themes of the soul's well-being, they feel attracted to such a Church, claiming such a prerogative, and offering such relief and assurance; as



Dollinger says of Christina of Sweden, that she "took refuge in the ship of ecclesiastical authority from the ocean of philosophical doubt."

And every mind must admit, I think, that there is a certain inspiring grandeur, august yet winning, in such a conception of God's enduring and holy Church; that however far the ambitious corporation whose heart is Jesuitism, and whose head is the Pope, may fail of realizing it, the ideal itself is lofty and seductive; and that our timid and limited human nature, surrounded by so many puzzles, and faced by such tremendous problems, may well at times admit the wish that such a conception had been permitted of God to be realized, and had not been left, as we assuredly hold it to have been, a delusive dream.

This is the first of the attractions of Romanism, to an educated mind. Another is—

2. That it claims to offer to such a mind a body of doctrine, mysterious, no doubt, in some of its parts, but on the whole solid, consistent, consecutive, complete; containing what they accept as a sufficient and satisfying answer to the questions of the soul, the antithesis to infidelity in all its forms, and the consummation of what is true in other systems. It boasts that in this not only the Scripture is fulfilled, but philosophy is illumined, man's history is interpreted, God's ways to man are clearly vindicated; and the appeal which it makes, through this doctrinal scheme, is of immense persuasive force.

The scheme, of course, starts, as every organized theology must, with the doctrine of Original Sin.

Socinianism affirms that man's nature and spirit are right at birth; that they involve, at any rate, no innate and governing propensities to sin, and only need education, with favorable circumstances, to develop all forms of goodness and virtue. So it holds Jesus a created teacher, the Holy Ghost an impersonal influence, and regeneration a monkish myth.



The Evangelical doctrine affirms that man, as originally created, was like God in nature, and like him also in moral perfection; having the true knowledge of him, and standing in intimate communion with him through the sympathy of supreme and holy love; that no one of his constitutional powers was lost in the fall, though their activity was perverted, and their development hindered; but that the change which then took place was in the essential temper of his heart—selfish idolatry and sinful passion supplanting the Divine love which had preceded, and the inmost dispositions and tendencies of the soul being thereafter averted from God, and directed to selfish pleasure and gain.

The change now needed, therefore, is in this dominant spirit of the heart; to alter the dispositions, to fix the supreme affection upon God, and to restore the spiritual discernment which was possessed, but has been lost. And this is effected by the Divine Spirit, through the truth as his instrument, and especially through the revelation of God's love, as declared, with transcendent fullness and tenderness, in his Son. When this is accomplished, no direct addition is implied to the inherent properties of the soul, but a change is realized in its temper, tastes, and spiritual activities, in its relations to God, and its personal destiny; a change so radical, vital, complete, and so enduring in consequences, as to constitute a true regeneration. Conversion, to the loving obedience of Christ, is its sign and fruit. The beauty of holiness flows from it into life. It is completed in sanctification. And, on the ground of Christ's atonement, he who has not yet reached that sanctity, but in whom its principle has been implanted, is reconciled to God, and is treated as if he had been righteous; is, in other words, justified.

Preaching the Gospel is therefore here the means of regeneration. To lead men to affectionate faith in God, as

made manifest in his Son, is the office of the ministry. He who has most of this faith in his heart, other things being equal, is best adapted to excite it in others. The Church and its sacraments are the instruments of God for propagating in the world the truth concerning him, as revealed in his Word, and for maintaining in renovated men the faith and love which by his Spirit have been inspired. His wisdom and grace are illustriously exhibited in this plan of redemption; the angels take new conceptions of him from it; and man is brought back to a holy love which commemorates Paradise, and which prophesies heaven; which, being made complete and immortal, must make a heaven, though every gate of pearl should vanish.

This is the Evangelical doctrine. The Romanist system differs from it in essential particulars. It also holds that man is fallen, and inwardly depraved, but in this distinct sense:—By the image of God, in which he was created, it understands his rational and voluntary nature alone, by no exercise of which could he attain true inward righteousness, the knowledge of God, or the beatific vision. This nature being left to itself, the flesh must fight against the spirit, concupiscence gain the mastery, disorder and corruption follow. To prevent this result were therefore superadded in Adam, by the grace of God, the supernatural gifts of Divine knowledge and righteousness, through which the spirit, re-enforced from its Maker, was enabled to rule and restrain the flesh “as with a golden curb,” and to rise to communion with the Almighty.

It was these Divine supernatural gifts which Adam forfeited in the fall, sacrificing them for his posterity as well as for himself, so that all men now are born without them; are born in the state in which Adam was before he possessed them. And through this loss comes again the victory of concupiscence, the flesh everywhere conquering and debasing the undefended spirit. There is, therefore, nothing to



be effectually done for the soul of man, for its holiness and its peace, until these gifts have been restored to it. Without them, whatever teaching it may have, and whatever high influence through that teaching, it is naturally incapable of aspiring to share the wisdom, the holiness, and the blessedness of God, as the flower is of flight, or the bird of solving a question in morals; and, without them, its course is continually downward, toward darker depths of ignorance and of sin.

It is to supply *this* need of men, then, that the incarnation of God in Jesus is divinely ordained and divinely accomplished; to make up to the soul, which has suffered a loss so essential and extreme, for this tremendous transmitted deprivation. By that incarnation the supernatural gift which Adam forfeited is introduced anew into the world; and it thenceforth is distributed, by the Holy Ghost, through the priesthood of the Church, and on its sacraments. It is properly given at the beginning of life, before activity has commenced, at the outset of consciousness.

It is communicated in Baptism; in which is effected an instant, essential, complete regeneration—the infusion of a supernatural life, the removal of all corruption of sin, the immediate and full introduction of the soul into the spiritual household of God. All the saving benefits of Christ's redemption are thus and there conveyed to the soul, as it enters upon life, and begins the career which can never close.

The grace thus imparted is afterward confirmed in Confirmation.

It is nourished and renewed in the sacrament of the Eucharist.

It is restored, if lost, in the sacrament of Penance.

It is replenished and re-enforced in the sacrament of



Marriage, by which human love is exalted and transformed into holy affection.

It is renewed, for those who receive this, in the sacrament of Orders.

It is finally sealed, and divinely completed, in the Extreme Unction; after which the soul, pursued and attended with gifts of grace from birth to death, goes forth to meet the grand assize.

Regeneration and Sanctification are, of course, synonymous with Justification, on this system.

The sacraments are efficacious means of grace; having power to convey grace, by the Divine appointment, as material food has to nourish the body, or cold to congeal, or fire to burn.

Transubstantiation is a necessity to the system, the means of realizing continually on earth the gift which came with Incarnation.

The succession of the priesthood is an inevitable part of it; as much so as is the succession of generations to a continued human history. The lines of transmission *must* be uninterrupted; but personal purity in the priest is likewise essential to the virtue of his sacraments.

True spiritual life is a thing impossible outside the Church, and miracles are still to be expected within it. For it is the supernatural Saviour, constantly present in the supernatural Church, who gives authority to every priest, and gives its efficacy to every sacrament; and, if we shall will it, the lame may now leap, the canvas become divinely luminous, the solid marble tremble into speech.

The visible Church is the permanent Divine kingdom in the world, whose numerical limits are exactly defined; and the state of each soul after death is absolutely determined by the relation it has held to that Church and its sacraments.

This is, in brief, the substance of the doctrine. Of

course it seems to us in sharp contrast with the Sermon on the Mount; with the teachings and the letters of Paul and his associates; with the very frame and aim of the Gospel; with consciousness itself, and the self-revealing facts of Christian experience. The vices which have risen, and rankly flourished, in the Roman communion—its own historians being the witnesses—are testimony against it. The spiritual attainments of persons and of peoples under Protestant influences become inexplicable, if it be true; they explicitly contradict it.

The answer is immediate, and is to us overwhelming. But the system is logical, consistent, very commanding, and to many thoughtful and questioning minds very attractive.

Whatever there is of mystery, height, inspiring power, in our doctrine of the Incarnation or of the Trinity, is here as well; whatever of solemn motive and warning in the doctrine of the Fall, and of Human Depravity, and of the Judgment for which we wait. And the advocates of this system hold it complete, while ours is partial; theirs finished, and ours fragmentary.

They do not in the least regard this system as tending to subvert a sound morality, sincere and spiritual piety, belief in Christ as the author of grace and justification, but as simply essential to all these. And while they recognize Evangelical Protestantism as containing still some elements of the truth, they look upon these as scattered timbers, not built into a house, and not sufficient to make one; as plates of iron, worthless separately, and not capable of being framed together, except upon the Roman plan, into the vast and symmetrical fabric which is to bear up, over whelming waves, the heart and hope and faith of the world.

By its claim of authority, and by this articulated body of doctrine, Romanism has a continual attractiveness for many fine minds.

The Pope, by divine right, hath supreme right over the whole world, both in ecclesiastical and civil affairs.

CARDINAL BELLARMINE.

The Roman Catholics of the United States owe no allegiance to any principle of Government, which is condemned by the Church or Pope. *Tablet.*

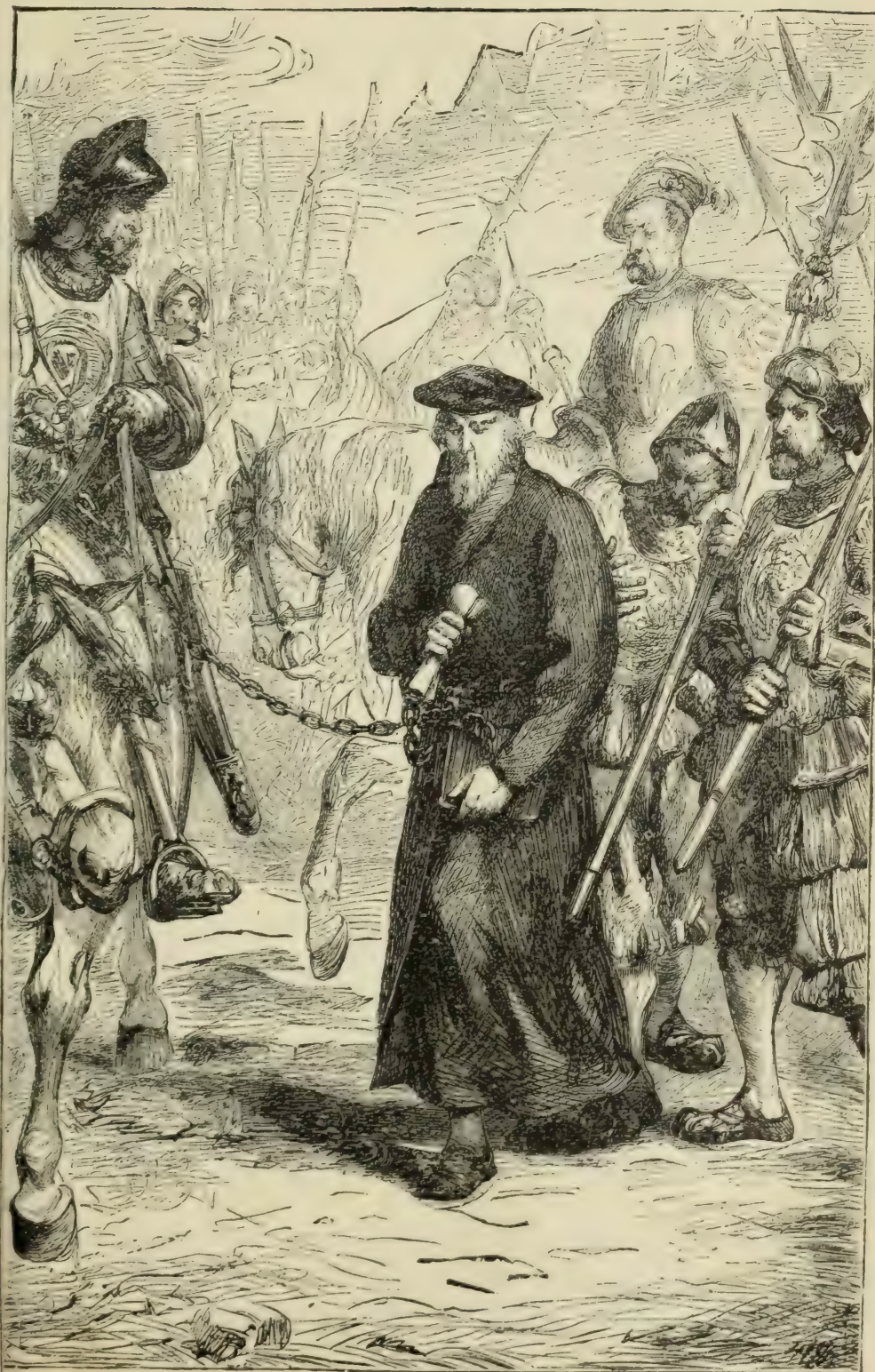
The insidious deadly encroachments of the Jesuit intriguers are matters of history. Their approaches are snake-like, and embarrassed by no scruples. And when they have succeeded in placing their emissaries at the head of our two great political parties, there is hardly any political revolution that is not possible. Protestants should arouse themselves, and take measures to make their displeasure felt.

[370]

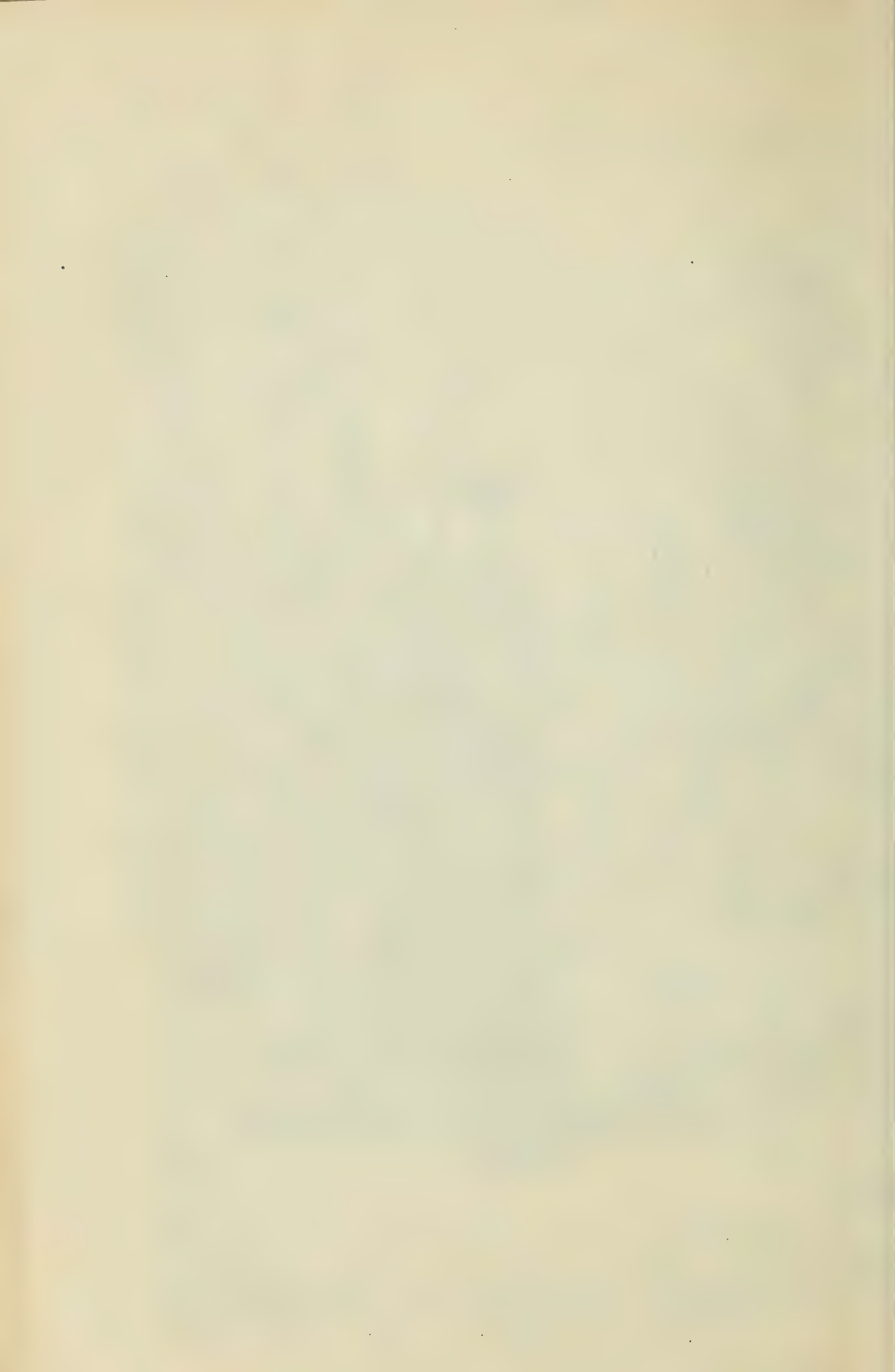
*Christian Standard.*







Jerome of Prague. Page 498.





3. There is, too, a vast and subtile power in the representations which it presents of the invisible and spiritual world, and the intimate relations which it declares as always subsisting between that world and this.

The human spirit, conscious of affections, and haunted by premonitions, that overpass death, is always reaching out, with eager desire or with forecasting fear, after knowledge of the world which lies beyond its sense or science; a knowledge more exact and complete than God in his wisdom has seen fit to bestow. So necromancy is never dead; and so Spiritism comes, in our own time, to tip its tables and rap its floors, in a juggling offer to disclose the Unseen. Its incitement is in the hunger of the soul for some apprehension of the realms whose bounds, of beauty or fire, it has not reached.

And now Protestantism, which limits itself to what has been clearly expressed in the Bible, and which deals timidly even with that, seems vague, undefined, and essentially unsatisfying, in its treatment of all that mystic domain which lies before us, in comparison with the exact descriptions which Romanism presents.

This affirms that those who die after baptism—really regenerate, and having committed no unforgiven and mortal sin, yet confessedly imperfect in action and in virtue—are to undergo, in the future state, certain temporal pains, by which they are to be purified, and satisfaction to be rendered to the Divine Justice; that these pains may be abridged by the offering of prayers, penances, and alms, and of the unbloody sacrifice, on the part of those who tarry behind; and that the limiting or remitting of the pains is within the prerogative of the authorities of the Church.

So friends who linger, with aching hearts, on this side of the grave, have power still to bless their dead. Across the far untrodden spaces they can send reliefs, and tidings

of joy, to those who have vanished from their sight. And, in return, they may receive real aids and blessings from the dead. Those now sainted and beatified can intercede with God for us, and will do this if we invoke them. They are living, conscious, in the presence of God, in enjoyment of the beatific vision, yet informed of what we need and desire—perhaps by the mind of God himself—and are fraternally sympathetic with us. We may pay them homage: not the *Latreia* due to God only, or the *Uperdouleia*, due to the Virgin Mother, but the *Douleia*, proper to saints. And we may implore with joyful freedom their ready assistance as intercessors for us with the Almighty.

Angels, too, in their power and splendor, and their relative sovereignty over nature and life, are still the guardian spirits of men—of the least and humblest, to whom has come God's gift through Christ.

Especially the Virgin Mother of Christ may be asked to aid us, with her tender sympathy, and her unbounded power with her Son. The growth of reverence for her in the Roman Church shows how dear and alluring the thought of her is to the minds of mankind. The vision of her seems to flash a certain tender light over realms that were otherwise so high as to be dreadful. First, her perpetual virginity is declared. Then, she is formally styled and proclaimed the Mother of God. Then temples are built, and prayers are arranged to be offered to her, as Queen of Heaven. Then her immaculate conception, without stain of original sin, is declared to be a dogma of faith. Now, she is undoubtedly more frequently implored in the Roman Communion than God or Christ.

Women and children are especially attracted—but not they only, the strongest and most philosophic are attracted—by the thought of a Woman, at once maiden and mother, the spotless and illustrious head of her sex, so near the



eternal throne of the universe, while full of gentlest memories and love.

And so the whole mysterious realm beyond the grave—from which no traveler returns to us, the gloom and glory of whose shadows and lights have been reflected on thoughtful minds from the outset of history, but the vision of which only death reveals—seems brought nearer the earth, and made palpable by Romanism; its inhabitants to be declared; their relations to us to be revealed as mutual and sympathetic; our offices for them and theirs for us to be shown surviving the dread separation, and still to be accomplished across the vast and dim abysses. And however we may dismiss the whole, as unauthorized by the Lord and unwarranted by Scripture, the simple creation of man's imagination, as wholly ideal as a fancy concerning the civil constitution of republics in Sirius, we must not forget that there is prodigious attraction in it for many longing and sensitive souls. It seems to them too beautiful in itself, and too congruous with their wishes, not to be true.

4. Then, further, Romanism claims to offer a greater security of salvation than other systems afford; and to those accustomed critically and conscientiously to examine their inward processes of feeling, their successive vanishing states of mind, and who thus come to suspect the reality of their own virtue, this is immediately and immensely attractive.

For feeling seems to fly, as we touch it with our analysis, almost as life flits and fleets beneath the destructive dissecting edge. Spiritual states inevitably disappear when we look away from that which inspires them, and search, with an introverted scrutiny, after themselves. Many a person of a sincere piety questions, therefore, if he may not have been deceiving himself as to the realness of his faith and repentance; if what seemed contrition



may not have been an unloving fear of the consequences of sin; if what had been taken for Christian faith may not have been an assent of the understanding, with no affectionate devoutness of spirit to make it vital.

He questions this all the more as his reverence for God becomes more supreme, and his personal humility becomes more complete. He questions it most of all when he fronts, face to face, the tremendous facts of Death, Judgment, and the long Hereafter. Because a mistake must have such consequences, he is tremulously ready to suspect its existence. The fact that he suspects it seems to furnish fresh evidence that he has made it; and the passage is no long one from such a doubt to remorseful despondency.

Now, in such a mood of apprehensive self-questioning, Romanism appeals to him with a prodigious force of invitation. For, whatever the fact may prove to be when its offers are analyzed, it seems to propose certain definite and practicable conditions of salvation, which appear as unmistakable as the ladder against a burning house, or the lifeboat at sea.

Baptism, confirmation, the eucharist, confession, penance, obedience to the Church, absolution by the priest, in whom authority to pronounce it has been vested by God, and whose declaration is ratified in heaven, the final anointing, and then, if any thing still remain of unfulfilled obligation, a full and eternal satisfaction to God by temporary pains beyond this life—this is the plan which it proposes, and on which it offers the assurance of heaven.

It will certainly turn out that all this presupposes certain spiritual states in him who adopts it, without which it becomes confessedly ineffectual, and that the same doubts which perplexed him before may, therefore, here as easily arise; and it also will appear that an intention of the priest is needful to the efficacy of every sacrament, of which intention the man who receives this can never

have certain and infallible proof; while it seems to us as plain as the stars that the whole scheme is wanting in Scriptural authority; that it is not implied in the words of the Master, nor in any teaching of his apostles; that it tends to give men a false security, and to substitute an exact ecclesiastical obedience for the faith and love which alone can spiritually unite men to God. But, after all, it is very alluring, especially, as I said, to a mind introspective, self-distrustful, conscious of sin, and feeling the doom of immortality upon it.

When such a one draws near the point of final passage to realms unchanging and eternal; when he thinks of the Eye which searches every thought and wish, and traces the secret windings of desire; when he feels on his prophetic soul the heat and splendor of the great White Throne—to hear God's voice, through human lips, giving him quittance and final absolution, as Jesus to the loving woman, it is a thing which any one might desire if he could persuade himself that God had committed an authority so awful, an office so sovereign, to human hands!

5. And still further, Romanism seems to many to offer them a higher sanctity of spirit and life than Protestantism does; a sanctity, indeed, which is wholly peculiar to it, and for which Protestantism, under whatever name or form, presents no equivalent. So it attracts some whom it is a grief to us to lose.

They want a life set apart from earthly care and labor, from desire and pleasure, from all the fascinations and entanglements of the world; a life devoted to religious meditation, and to works of constant beneficence and piety; a life in sympathy with that of ancient martyrs and confessors, of Agnes and Perpetua, of Basil and Benedict, and Francis of Assisi, and of princes who left their crowns for Christ; a life that is hid with Christ in God.

They long for this. Because the spiritual nature in



them is tender and deep, and has been moved by a mighty impulse, it yearns with inexpressible desire for fellowship with the Lord, and for the utmost possible attainment in the Divine virtue. This is, as it ought to be, the supreme and inspiring passion of their souls, for which they are ready to sacrifice all.

All the more they desire it as life around them is hurried and hot, full of ambition, lust and greed. Amidst the rush and glare of pleasure, amidst the incessant roar of trade, this desire, in finer minds, becomes only the more intense and imperative. It has the energy of a recoil from that which offends, as well as the strength of a personal aspiration. It operates at length like a law of their being; no more to be resisted than that which quickens the mother's love, or makes self-accusation follow a conscious and deliberate sin. "My soul be with the saints," they say. The inmost, incessant thirst of their hearts is for a celestial life on earth.

And Romanism seems to offer them satisfaction. The sacraments are declared to communicate, and continually afterward to renew in the heart, this inner sanctity. They invest the whole progress of life on earth, and meet and sanctify all its changes.

Manuals of devotion, wonderfully rich, tender, and varied, are offered to the disciple, to assist him to gain, and then to maintain, the white chastity and the radiant charity of this divine life.

The confessional offers its ear, never shut, into which the story of every impulse of doubt or passion may be instantly breathed, and behind which is a mind declared to be instructed of God to clear the doubt and quench the passion.

Calvaries are constructed in Roman Catholic countries, with successive stations representing the stages of the way to the cross, at each of which men may bow and pray, as



with tender love and shuddering awe they climb toward the crucifix. And convents and monasteries open to men and women alike their hospitable doors, outside which all cares and possessions may be left, where homes for life are furnished to the devout, and within which the world's clamor and glitter are unheard and unseen.

To the active and energetic, for whom rest would be weariness, the most arduous and dangerous missions are assigned; to pierce the forest and the jungle, and spend their years among savage tribes; to face the biting arctic cold, and the blazing fierceness of tropic heat; to front the pestilence, shadowing at once the city and the sea with its dark wings.

Now I need not tell you how fascinating is all this—to women of fine and sensitive natures, to whom the common life of society seems demoralized drudgery; to men of the heroic mould, to whom a supreme self-sacrifice is attractive, and who count a life-long service to God the only royal good on earth. Protestantism seems to them, in comparison with this, gross, secular, essentially earthly in its spirit and aims. When it bids them consecrate their business to God, and doing it in his fear, to do it all to his glory, it seems to them illicitly trying to unite God and Mammon. When it insists on the household life as the purest and noblest for both men and women, it seems to them Epicurean in spirit, hazarding the attempt to find a flowery path to the paradise which can only be reached over thorny roughnesses, and entered through sorest wrestle and pain.

Protestant missions are to them too luxurious; our labors for the poor appear dainty and haughty. And when an order of Protestant devotees is anywhere established, they feel instinctively that that is play, while they are in earnest; that only an absolute self-abnegation, guarded by irreversible vows, can match the height of

their desire. So they welcome the severer tasks, the strict limitations, the more austere and exacting discipline which Romanism offers, and seek in its services the life of God. They may be disappointed, with a blasting surprise that shall blacken and wreck their whole subsequent life.

One of the most impressive pictures which the recent traveler sees in Europe is by the fertile French Doré exhibited last year in London, representing a young monk who has just learned how greedy and gross his associates are, and on whose sad and sensitive face, as his missal drops, in his languid hands, is breaking forth the passionate sense of disappointment, detestation, of inner repugnance, and an utter despair. The power of the picture is in its reflection of an experience not unfamiliar.

Blanco White, who knew intimately the convents of Spain, and whose veracity has never been questioned, speaks of those convents in one of his letters as "those European *jungles*, where lurks every thing that is hideous and venomous." And the key to his final entire skepticism, who began public life as a devout priest, is found by those who know most of his career in that fierce sentence.

But whatever the final experience may be, the offer which Romanism makes to these men is great and shining, and it need excite no wonder in us that they should find it grandly attractive.

6. Then with all these forces of attraction, the Roman Catholic Church is a vast, venerable, historic organization of unequalled age, of immense extent, whose history has in some of its aspects, been a grand one; whose history appears to those whom it attracts the one sublimest thing on earth—inexplicable, except upon the hypothesis of its Divine origin.

It is to them the Church of the Apostles; which saw the splendor of the Ascension, which heard Peter and John at Jerusalem, Paul afterward at Corinth and at Rome.



and which directly conveys to us the *depositum* of faith received from them.

It is to them the Church of the Catacombs; where the new Christian kingdom was working underground, in garments of sackcloth, along galleries of rock, to overthrow and replace the armed empire above.

It is the Church of the Fathers, and the canonized Doctors, to whose learning and eloquence, and spiritual insight, the world is debtor; of Clement and Polycarp, of Justin Martyr and Hippolytus, of Ambrose, Athanasius, and him of the flaming Numidian heart.

It is the Church of the great Councils; before which were lowered imperial standards, to whose decisions faction bowed, and whose creeds and decrees have governed and assimilated the mind of Christendom.

It is the Church of the Middle Ages; of Anselm, Bernard and Peter the Hermit; the Church which civilized barbarians, liberated slaves, organized crusades, built cathedrals, established libraries, founded universities; which preserved learning, laws, and arts, amidst the shock of terrific forces, in what an ancient Gallican sacramentary hardly exaggerated when it called it "the crash of a falling world;" the Church which taught the emerging peoples subjection to authority, while it set sharp bounds to the rapacity of barons, and admonished and ruled the haughtiest kings; the Church which has since sent forth its heroic and conquering teachers to the ends of the earth, "Ad majorem Dei gloriam."

And, ancient as it is, this powerful Church appears to them to-day the only power which nothing in fact centrally disturbs; the only one which can defy infidelity, rule the licentious wills of men, subdue and inspire the daring and refractory human intellect, ennoble and rectify human society; the only one which science can not shake, nor



revolution dethrone, nor the fiercest antagonism of secular interests override and destroy.

The supremacy of the spiritual order in the world appears to them guaranteed by it, and by it alone. Secure itself, from all assault, it judges the world.

To us, who look on the same long records from a wholly different point of view, it seems as certain as any thing in experience that much of this is unhistorical, is purely fanciful; that it has been the Gospel, as a spiritual force, working apart from and often directly against the Hierarchy, which has done the best part of this; that whosoever now preaches that Gospel, with fervent faith, is the true successor of all the saints; and that the history of the Roman corporation, which only came to its full development under Leo and the Gregories, has been crowded with bigotry, pride, persecution; with prelatical tyranny, priestly license, and popular degradation; with carnivals of folly, and carnivals of crime; has been blackened with the names of inquisitors like Torquemada; has been stained, so that hyssop can not purge it, by prelates and pontiffs like the Borgias and the Medicis.

This is our conception of it. But to those minds whose different attitude toward it I am trying to present, the opposite aspect is the one which it offers; and often they are profoundly impressed by it. They seem to themselves ennobled by partaking in a history which looks so sacred and august. They feel themselves confederate with the men, God's champions in the world, whose majestic achievements amaze and delight them. They are strengthened for swifter and grander work by all the heroic wisdom and devotion to which the Church appears to them heir. A baptism of power falls on them from the past, which is animating and precious beyond all words. And this is an appeal which we must not overlook, if we would master the secret of their zeal.

7. Still further, too, we must not forget that Romanism powerfully appeals to these men by its cordial relations with all the fine arts; with music, painting, sculpture, architecture; with whatever impresses and most delights the senses and the taste.

Its cathedrals are the wonders of the world: mountains of rock-work set to music.

Its elaborate, opulent, mighty masses make the common hymn-tunes of Protestantism sound almost like the twitter of sparrows, amidst the alternate triumph and wail of commingling winds.

Its ritual is splendid, scenic, impressive, to the ultimate degree; and all is exquisitely pervaded and modulated by the doctrine which underlies it, every gesture, every posture, of the officiating priest, and every vestment which he wears, being full of significance.

Its liturgical forms have not merely been arranged by studious men, with apt and practiced gifts for the office. They have some of them been born of those immense crises in personal or in public experience when intensity of feeling, surpassing all poetic impulse, infused spiritual fire into the sentences. Not only reminiscences are in them, therefore, of perils passed and victories achieved; their present utterance is that of the faith which soared upward from the flame, or looked from the damp darkness of dungeons and beheld above the heavens opened. And architecture can not be too majestic to echo such voices. The tone-speech of music, in its most tender or jubilant strains, becomes their meek and glad handmaid.

Nothing, therefore, is too ornate or magnificent to be incorporated in the superb ceremonial of this immense organism. It marches, as it fights, an army with banners. It would copy, if it could, the very ceremonial of the Temple above. The king's daughter is all glorious within, and her raiment must be of wrought gold.



To one who wants his whole æsthetic nature gratified and educated in his worship, while it shall be also and always subordinated to spiritual attainment—who accepts this nature as from God, and feels its thrilling and sweet impulsions demanding a lawful and large domain—there is here a constant and vast attraction. Other, more strictly intellectual services, appear to him barren and frigid in comparison. He seems to himself to be honoring God with a worthier worship while gaining for himself a peculiar delight, by making the sanctuary a poem in stone, and then bringing into it the purple and the gold, the veils of silk, and fragrant incense, by hanging it with pictures, and paneling its walls with significant marbles. It is not the understanding alone, or the moral nature, which that worship is designed to enlist. The imagination is to be reached by it, and profoundly stimulated. The most secret sources of feeling are to be searched; the most delicate and retiring sympathies. The whole soul is to be suffused with its subtile influence, as the atmosphere of the church is struck through with golden or crimson lights, till holy memories arise within one; till he is wrapped in sweet ecstasy of reveries; till he is conscious of undefined and transporting expectations, and almost waits to hear around, upon the charmed and perfumed air, the rustle of angelic plumes.

The apostles worshiped well and truly, not at all in this way. The Saviour made no suggestion of this to the woman of Samaria, when he taught her how to offer her devotions. Our fathers found delight in praise, and were heard in their prayer, though offering it in rudest forms, under bleakest skies, because incense stifled them, and the gorgeous vestments seemed to them dipped in the blood of the saints. We do not maintain the passion of their reaction; but we, too, are afraid of that sensuous pleasure which may be easily confounded with worship, while



When the Pope (Pius IX) calls "liberty of conscience a pestilential error—a pest;" when "immunity from civil law" is claimed for Roman Catholics; when the Pope says: "I acknowledge no civil power, I claim to be the supreme judge and director of the consciences of men;" when the Roman Church claims (Papal En., XLV) the right to "arrange the studies of the public schools and to choose the teachers;" when we remember St. Bartholomew and the startling statements of Cardinal Gibbons that "Rome never changes"—we feel it time for organized resistance to its encroachments.

[382]

REV. W. H. MAIN, (Baptist), Buffalo, N. Y.

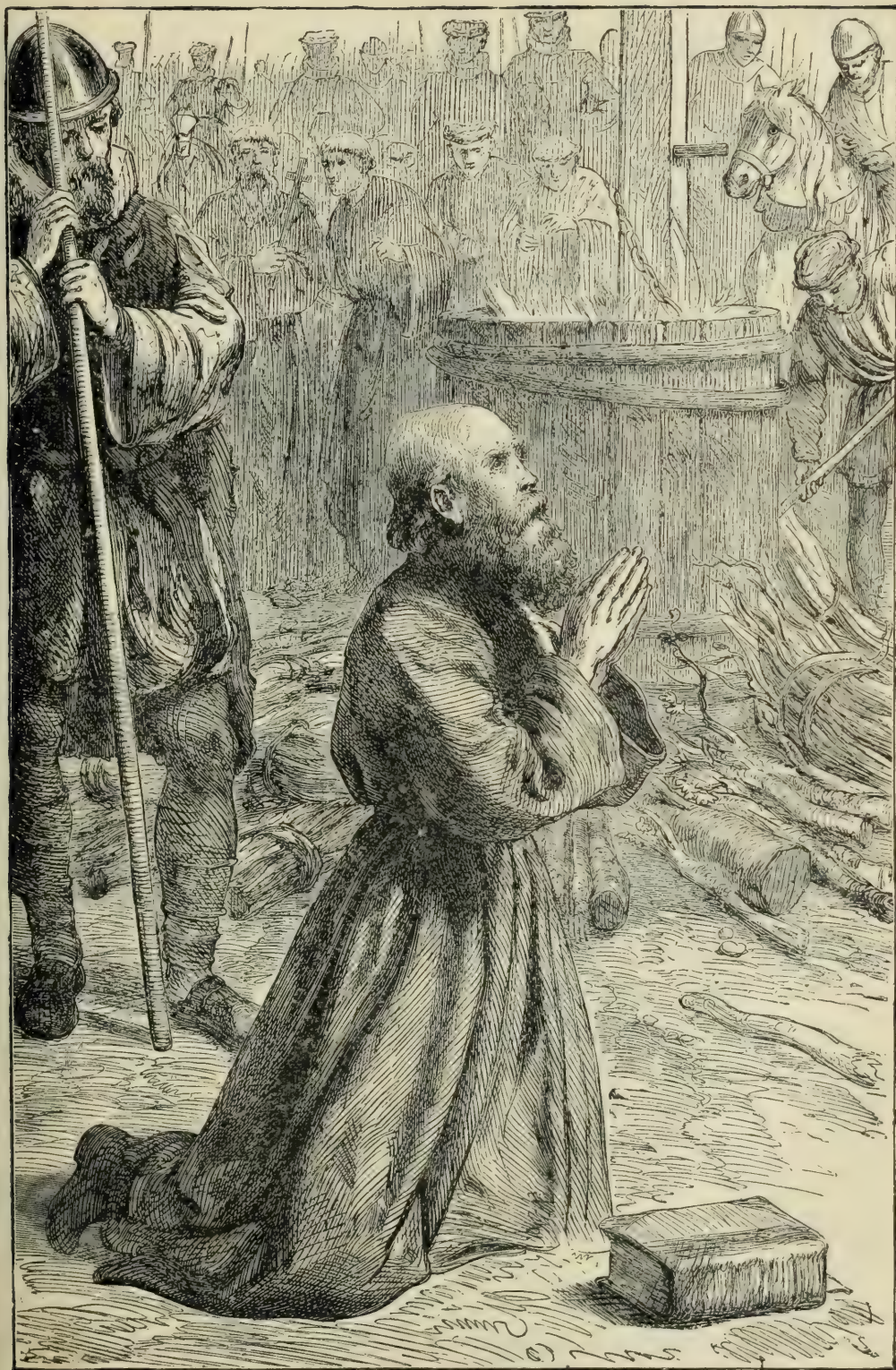
The American Medical Association is a non-profit corporation organized for the purpose of promoting the interests of the medical profession and the public. It is composed of members who are physicians, dentists, and other health care professionals. The Association's primary concern is the advancement of the medical profession and the improvement of the health of the people. It does this by publishing the Journal of the American Medical Association, which is one of the most important medical journals in the world. The Journal contains articles on the latest medical research, as well as news and information about the medical profession. The Association also sponsors a variety of other activities, including conferences, seminars, and educational programs. Its goal is to ensure that the medical profession is always at the forefront of medical knowledge and practice.

The Journal of the American Medical Association is published weekly, except for one issue which is published bi-weekly in December. Each issue contains a variety of articles, including original research, reviews, and news. The Journal is one of the most important sources of information for medical professionals, and it is also a valuable resource for the general public. The Association's commitment to the medical profession and the public is reflected in the high quality of the Journal and the many other activities it sponsors. The Association's work is essential to the advancement of the medical profession and the improvement of the health of the people.

The Journal of the American Medical Association is a valuable resource for medical professionals and the general public alike. It provides a wealth of information on the latest medical research and practice, and it is also a valuable source of news and information about the medical profession. The Association's commitment to the medical profession and the public is reflected in the high quality of the Journal and the many other activities it sponsors. The Association's work is essential to the advancement of the medical profession and the improvement of the health of the people.

The Journal of the American Medical Association is a valuable resource for medical professionals and the general public alike. It provides a wealth of information on the latest medical research and practice, and it is also a valuable source of news and information about the medical profession. The Association's commitment to the medical profession and the public is reflected in the high quality of the Journal and the many other activities it sponsors. The Association's work is essential to the advancement of the medical profession and the improvement of the health of the people.





Execution of Jerome of Prague. Page 500.





wholly dissimilar; which may leave the soul intoxicate with joy, while utterly wanting in the devout love which links to God, and in the faith which conquers death.

But the convert to Romanism delights himself in this service, so rich and tender, so various and so ancient, with a passionate fondness; while the occasional attempts of ambitious High-churchmen to emulate that which the blending genius of many centuries and lands has produced are to him simply ludicrous; like building another equal St. Peter's of scantling and boards, or reproducing Warwick Castle in cake and sugar.

8. And, finally, let us not forget that Romanism offers to these men what they accept as the Church of the Future; through which continuing to the end of time, and only growing mightier with age, the perfect society shall be realized on earth. We have not reached the hiding of its power till we recognize this.

It presents itself as ancient, but as still in the fullness of unworn strength; as having the compactness, the hardihood, the confidence, which come with a long and vast experience, but as combining with this the ardor of its most fervent and hopeful youth.

It seems conservative, beyond all other human societies; since its government is, and must always continue, in the hands of a trained and practiced class, shrewd, vigilant, closely combined, everywhere represented. It seems communistic, beyond the dream of any Socialist; since all baptized persons are made equally its members, and if continuing subject to the Church are one, eternally, in Christ Jesus.

It claims to be eminently the Church for the rich; whose utmost treasures can not rival its revenues, whose titles and pedigrees it immensely surpasses, and whose palaces dwindle before its cathedrals.

It claims, more emphatically, to be the Church for the poor; for whom its buildings and many services are always

open, on whose behalf it builds great hospitals, to whom it preaches in historic cathedrals, like Notre Dame in Paris or the Duomo at Milan, as well as in the humblest chapels, and before whom it displays the most exquisite splendors of its magnificent ritual.

Compare its churches with ours, open only on Sunday, and then occupied chiefly by the cultured and the prosperous, and ours look partial, exclusive, in the contrast; careless of those for whom the Lord died, and in whom he now presents himself to us.

It is limited to no nation, this ever-expanding, exploring Church; but is equally at home on every coast, and under every form of government. It grasps the most barbarous, while it trains the most civilized. It has an office for every power, and has a lure for every desire. Its plans extend to all the lands, and anticipate in their reach the coming generations. And that perennial energy of it which is shown on the one hand in its doctrinal progress from dogma to dogma, till now it has concentrated such transcendent authority in the person of the Pope, on the other hand is shown in the missionary work which, radiating from Rome, is ever proceeding, with uncounted expenditure of money and of life, with unwearied patience, and an unsurpassed skill, on every shore where life is found.

If any institution seems likely to endure, then, by reason of its inherent strength, and in the absence of Divine interventions, this is the one. To those who see in it the kingdom of God, made visible in the world, and filled with his eternal force, nothing else which is future seems as certain as this. It saw the downfall of the empire of Rome. Unchanged itself, it has watched the change, and seen the end of kingdoms and thrones from that day to this. They expect it to see the end of those which now look stately and strong on earth, and to have the perpetuity which can belong to nothing else upon this whirling, inconstant planet.



It is to them still in the beginning of its years. They anticipate the time when it shall have reconquered Germany and England, shall have conquered this country, shall have reconciled to itself the severed and feebler Eastern Churches, shall have set the cross above the crescent, shall have baptized Buddhist and Brahmin in its faith, shall have come to the full inheritance of the earth. And then they expect the perfect society, through the wisdom, justice, and spiritual sanctity, which it will everywhere propagate and maintain.

They glory in being permitted to reach forward, through this expanding, enduring organization, to mould the distant future of the world; not limiting themselves to a fugitive influence, which shall have passed when they are buried, but projecting their influence directly and sensibly into the future, and with the mightiest instrument of time, working for the good of the latest generations.

In the ultimate triumph of this Church of their devotion they expect the Millennium; and in the peaceful glories of that they look, each one, to have some share. It is a great anticipation. We must not wonder if it grapples their hearts as with hooks of steel.

So it is, then, Fathers and Brethren, as I conceive it, and so far as the time allows me to state it, that Romanism appeals to educated Protestants; as offering them an authoritative teacher, always present, in which it claims that the mind of God resides and is revealed; as presenting what it affirms to be a solid, consistent, and satisfying theology; as claiming to bring the spiritual world more clearly and closely to their minds, and to show their relations to it more intimate; as professing to give them a security of salvation unattainable elsewhere; as offering them what it declares the only true sanctity of spirit and life; as showing a long and venerable history; as welcom-

ing and cherishing all the fine arts, and making these its constant helpers; as promising to rebuild and purify society, and at last to possess and regenerate the earth.

To those who are attracted by it, it seems to have all which other systems possess or claim, and to add vital elements which others lack, supplying their imperfections surpassing their power, and meeting wants which they can neither interpret nor answer.

It influences men by its immense mass, without their conscious discrimination of its separate attractions. Its bulk is so gigantic, its energy so incessant, that it seems to them to verify its claims without other argument, and to make a private judgment against it the most rash and reckless of spiritual acts. So it draws them to it with a moral momentum which increases as they approach; with a force almost like that of the physical suction of a current or whirlpool. Once started on their course to it, opposing argument becomes nearly powerless. The pull of this immense and consummate system is so strenuous and enveloping that theological, philosophical, historical objections are evaded or overleaped by the yielding mind, and are rocks in a rapid by rushing timbers.

Where it has once become firmly established it impregnates every thing with its mysterious and penetrating influence. It becomes a pervading spiritual presence which has its voices not only in the pulpit or in books of devotion, but in homes, and schools, and all places of concourse; which touches life at every point where that is sensitive and responsive; which is associated with ancestral memories and renown, and more vitally associated with the hopes of the future. It gives stability to rank, yet makes the humblest at home amidst its more than royal pageants. It invites the scholar to a happy seclusion, yet smites the most laborious life with a gleam from the supernatural. It paints the story of Christ on windows, and



carves it in lordly and delicate marbles, for the eager and wondering eyes of childhood, and for the fading sight of age. It occupies itself with imperial cares, yet connects itself intimately with the deepest aspirations which move the soul, and with its longing love for the dead. It is like displacing the atmosphere to remove it. Rebellion against it seems to dislocate the frame of society itself. Only a tremendous moral reaction, inspired and sustained by forces which are in their nature incompressible, and which have been gathering through successive generations, can break its hold on a nation which once it has firmly grasped.

It is still too recent and too limited with us to have such a general sweep of power. But it is working, with unwearied resolution, to make itself supreme among us. Its very strangeness gives it prominence in our American or English society; as a palm-tree attracts more attention than an oak. It brings forces that have been disciplined for a thousand years to act on our plastic modern life; and converts to it may be expected from many quarters.

Some have held its doctrine before, in the feebler, more fanciful, and more fragmentary form in which that is avowed by a section, for example, of the Angelican communion, in England and here. Their logical sense must carry them to its conclusions, if logical sense has been able to maintain itself through the enfeebling prettiness of their previous career.

Some, holding the evangelical doctrine of the Divinity of our Lord, and the present operation of the Holy Ghost, find here what seems to them the necessary complement, and the justifying reason, of these transcendent disclosures; the only exact and final antithesis to Socinianism, or even to atheism. Some are drawn to it by the fervor of feeling, the energy of pathetic and admonishing eloquence, which mark the sermons of the Paulists, and of others who, like them, appear from their retreats to stir men's



hearts as messengers from God. Some simply and gladly react into it from a restless, sad, and weary skepticism. But all are greatly in earnest when they go. They are true devotees, and they rarely return. They are usually Ultramontanists afterward. There is nothing languid, moderate, tepid, in their conviction or their feeling. They are resolute, enthusiastic, with a fire of zeal which works alike in brain and heart. And they have a tone of assurance in their words, and of certainty of victory. Bellarmine is their favorite theologian. De Maistre is widely popular with them. Hyacinthe and Dollinger are "fallen angels."

They had no trouble with the dogma of Papal Infallibility. It was desired and welcomed by them, as articulating what had been latent for centuries in the unvoiced consciousness of the Church, and as bringing the whole system to its legitimate and prophesied climax. That Pope Honorius had been formally condemned by the Sixth Council, his dogmatic writings burned as heretical, and his name anathematized and stricken from the liturgy, was not even a hindrance to the eagerness of their faith.

They make great sacrifices for their convictions, and do it joyfully. Indeed, the sacrifice becomes to them a fresh motive, an argument for the system which demands it. For, according to the cross shall be the crown, and they who have come out of great tribulation shall find their robes of a more lustrous white. Before the intensity of their aspiration the ties of friendship, the strongest bond of earthly relationship, if tending to withhold them from the Church of their desire, yield and are severed as flaxen fibres in the flame. For they regard the system which they accept, not only as essential to the future of mankind, to the well-being of persons, to the safety and glory of peoples and states; they regard it as alone Divine in its nature, overwhelming in its authority, whose touch should properly

shatter and consume whatever opposes it. Even the temporary toleration of a different faith is to them an unwelcome necessity. A system of popular education not pervaded by Roman Catholic influences, is ensnaring and dangerous. They have the courage of their convictions; and they use without stint the instruments of Protestantism to further their system and to make it universal.

Even present failure does not dishearten them. That they expect; and they can wait, for the Church lives on. The ages are hers; and to her supreme incorporeal life, which time does not waste nor change impair, the final victory always is sure!

If we are to resist the vast effort of these men, and to make the liberties which our fathers bequeathed to us, and the Gospel in which they surely trusted, supreme in the land, we must at least know more than we have known of the seductive and stimulating forces which operate against us, and which we are to encounter. To treat the cases of those who have gone from us to Rome as merely sporadic—the effect of accidental causes, or of personal eccentricity—one might as well treat thus the power which drives the Gulf Stream northward, or which hurls the monsoons of the Indian Ocean back and forth across the equator.

The one tremendous fact against them is that they can not alter, and can not obliterate, the record of the past. Their system has been abundantly tried; and, fascinating as it looks, its prodigal promises have been proved as unreal as the stately pleasure-dome of Kubla Khan seen by Coleridge in his dream. The scheme which looks so seductive and magnificent, when searched by the passionless logic of events, when tested in the slow and solemn ordeal of succeeding centuries, in Italy, Spain, Mexico, the West Indies, turns out as unreal in what it claims and in what it



proposes, as the island of Nowhere in the famous romance of Sir Thomas More.

Good men have lived under it, multitudes of them; saintly women, as pure and devout as ever brightened the earth with their presence; and such live in it now. But their goodness is wholly and constantly paralleled outside their communion, because it has come, not from what is peculiar to that, but from the quickening light of God's Word, and the transforming energy of his Spirit, which we as freely and consciously partake. In that which is peculiar to it—its hierarchy, its ritual, its efficacious sacraments, its indulgences to the sinner, its vast and complex organization, the concentration of all authority in its "Vice-God" at Rome—wherever the system has had its way it has wrought such mischiefs that the pen hesitates to recount them.

It has been powerful to depress peoples, ineffectual to uplift them. It has, with sure instinct, discouraged and diminished secular enterprise. It has linked itself most naturally with the harshest and most tyrannous civil institutions. It has made religion a matter of rites, and a matter of locality; till the same man became a devotee in the chapel, and a bandit in the field. It has accepted a passionate zeal for the Church in place of the humility, the purity and charity, which Christ demanded; till the fierce Dominic becomes one of its saints; till forged decretals were made for centuries to bulwark its power; till its hottest anathemas have been launched at those who complained of its abuses; till all restraints of humanity or morality have been overleaped in many excesses to which its adherents have been prompted from the altar. Its most devoted and wide-spread order, the Society of Jesus, in spite of its invincible heroism and its unequalled services to the popes, by the monstrous maxims which Pascal exposed, and the practices which expressed them.



so kindled against it the indignation of Christendom that Clement XIV. was compelled to suppress it in all Christian states.

The rage of this system against whatever would hinder its march—against its own subjects when they have conscientiously paused in their submission—has had something transcendent in its pitiless malignity. The fierceness of its persecutions has been precisely proportioned to its power. The hand which looks so full of blessing has opened the deep of *oubliettes*, has added tortures to the rack, has framed the frightful Iron Maiden, has set the torch to martyr fires. The breath which should have filled the air with sweeter than Sabæan odors has blighted the bloom of many lives, and floated curses over the nations so frequent and so awful that life itself was withered before them, till their very extravagance made them harmless.

Instead of true wisdom, where this system has prevailed with an unquestioned supremacy it has fostered and maintained wide popular ignorance. Instead of true sanctity, its fruit has been shown in peasantries debased, aristocracies corrupted, an arrogant and a profligate priesthood. It has honored the vilest who would serve it, and crushed the purest who would not. It sent gifts and applause, and sang its most exulting *Te Deum*, for Philip the Second; while its poisoned bullet killed William of Orange. The medal which it struck in joyful commemoration of the bloody diabolism of St. Bartholomew's is one of its records. Its highest officials have sometimes lived lives which its own annalists have hated to touch. Alexander VI., cruel, crafty, avaricious, licentious, whom it were flattery to call a Tiberius in pontificals—who bribed his way to the highest dignity, who burned Savonarola, the traditional portrait of whose favorite mistress, profanely painted as the Mother of God, hangs yet in the Vatican, who probably died by the poisoned wine which he had

had prepared for his cardinals, and whose evil renown is scarcely matched by that of Cæsar Borgia his son—stands as one of its infallible popes, holding the keys of heaven for men.

If any system is doomed by its history, this is the one. Protestantism has now so checked it, the advancing moral development of mankind has set such limits to its power, that these are largely facts of the past. The Vatican Court is now free from scandal. The Church at present seeks strength through beneficence, not through control of the secular arm; by its helps to piety, not through appeals to physical fear. But its more spontaneous and self-revealing development has been in this more friendly Past. Therefore the nations whom once it has ruled, when they finally break from it, hate it with an intensity proportioned to the promises it has failed to fulfill, and the bitter degradations it has made them undergo. Atheism itself—that moral suicide—seems better to them than to be again subjected to Rome.

This is the system as realized in history, and there forever adjudged and sentenced. Of course this gives immense advantage to those who now resist its progress. It can not fascinate the nations again till the long experience is forgotten. But such is not at all its appearance as presented to those whom it wins to its fold. And we must look at it, in a measure at least, as those who honor and love it look, if we would understand its power, if we would know how it is that it hopes a second time to conquer the world.

Travelers have often and glowingly described the silver and golden illuminations, of St. Peter's as seen from the Pincian Hill at Rome, on the great Easter festival. Wonderful, ethereal, almost celestial, appears the majestic Basilica, with its dome, when suddenly over all its lines flashes that startling, unearthly radiance.

It has never been noticed, so far as I have observed, that the illumination is wholly confined to that half of the dome which fronts the city. The other remains frowning and stern, while this is glowing through the darkness like a golden temple let down by God from heaven to earth.

We must not look only, as often we do, on the sombre and sterile side of Romanism, if we would comprehend its attraction. We must know, and feel, that there are aspects of it in which, to those who look with admiring eyes on its immense illuminated front, it appears more beautiful and serene than any vision of poets, while as solid and commanding as the very, and only, Temple of God.









"I pray God to strengthen thee, my son." Page 547.





First—The Romish Hierarchy has always aimed at political power. This is proved by the history of all nations.

Secondly—It has always shown itself a baleful political power. Degraded nations and blackened centuries testify to this.

Thirdly—It has come into undue and unfair prominence in the United States. Our almshouses and prisons and our municipal offices witness to the truth of this assertion. We are paying too much for the privilege of having Rome to smile upon us either through Papal blessing or Italian Ablegate.

[395] REV. S. H. MITCHELL, (Presbyterian), Buffalo, N. Y.

# CHAPTER XIX.

THE

## ANCIENT HERESIES IN THE CREED OF ROME.

---

BY REV. P. G. ROBERT.

---

Perhaps nothing in the history of civilization presents a theme for more rigid study than the religious system of Rome.

Christianity is a faith of pure and simple rites, and but few ceremonies—with a limited number of revealed facts, to which the projection of individual faith is demanded—with a higher life and a holier state than is otherwise possible to mankind, by virtue of our engrafting into the regenerated humanity of the God-Man Jesus Christ, as its dominant thought.

To all this, Papalism is the antithesis.

The atmosphere of Rome invites the development of fungi, that have attached to all these verities. Abnormal developments of doctrine and duty have been so unduly forced, that the abnormalities have become the rule. An absolute and artificial, a compact and an ecclesiastical condition has been created, that can claim to be Christian only because the foundation on which it rests is Christian. The superstructure raised on that foundation, is absolutely non-Christian.

Too many interests are involved to permit us to treat this religion flippantly; or to strike at it with the fist of passion. It is possessed of too much truth to excuse the



one—it is too great with undoubted power to invite the other. It is not to be denounced with the bitterness of prejudice, lest its good be evil spoken of.

But, though indulging in the utmost stretch of charity, while studying the system, we are brought face to face with a prodigious civil and religious problem. Although citizens of the United States of America, these religionists owe their chief political allegiance to a foreign potentate. They are equally required to submit their religious beliefs to the censorship of a solitary bishop, and he a foreigner, whose utterances are “irreformable.” That bishop condemns all his opponents to temporal and eternal suffering; and he applies the penalties with impartial heartiness to political defections and religious heresies. The cool thinker regards all this with amazement and amusement—amazement at the power of this religious entity; amusement, at the sublimity with which it contradicts history, and asserts itself.

The Church of Rome possesses two distinct religious systems: the one true, the other false. The true is Catholic. The false is Romish. The purpose of this paper is to distinguish between these two; and to show that, strangely enough, “Romanism” is the sum of the chief heresies of old. That while it unsparingly condemns everything determined by its bishop to be heretical; and consigns to eternal torment every antagonist that ignorantly or wilfully treads on ground that he has cursed; it is, nevertheless, itself the patron and friend of heresy.

Let it be remembered, that before a word of the New Testament had been written, the apostles had preached the Gospel to every nation. That Gospel was contained and taught in the creed—a syllabus of divine facts, knowable only to God, and taught to mankind by divine revelation. Not that everything the Twelve taught or required of their disciples and of us, was laid down in so many words, in

this synopsis; but that all the essential principles of the Faith, under which all other doctrines may be concluded as correlatives of these, were defined in this symbol, essentially as we now have it. For the Creed is not a statement of human opinions; nor the conclusions of theological or metaphysical dreamers. It is a statement of facts known only by God; known by man because revealed by God. It relates chiefly to the true God—to the divine nature, and the method of the divine existence, as Father, Son and Holy Ghost. The doctrines or facts pertinent to each of the Three Persons of the God-head; as they stand related to each other, and to human redemption, are stated in the division of the creed, devoted to each.

More than this; each several fact entering into the composition of the Creed, has been revealed by the Almighty, speaking directly to the person or persons, whom He used as His instruments of communication with the world; that is, there has been no man inspired to reveal these facts, in the first instance, as men have been inspired to reveal other facts. These were too important to be trusted to any intermediary. The Eternal Himself hath spoken them to some one or more men, whose duty it has been to communicate them to others, without addition or diminution.

The reason for this is apparent. If these be facts known only to God—if man knows them only because He hath revealed them—then no man, or set of men, have any right or reason to add an iota to them, or to diminish aught from them. To do either, would be equivalent to an assertion of mental equality with the Deity—since it would be a determination by human reasoning, that less or more knowledge is necessary to salvation than the Deity has declared. Hence, heresy has been decided to be a denial of the Faith once delivered; that “Faith” being God’s statements, respecting Himself and His relations to humanity.



It is not within the purview of this paper to refer to the many who have diminished aught. It deals with the opposite extreme of Romanism which is entirely composed of unauthorized additions.

In order that it may be partly seen to what extent the Church of Rome has thus erred, it will be necessary to give its present Creed.

#### THE CREED OF PIUS IV.

I believe in one God, the Father Almighty, Maker of heaven and earth, and of all things visible and invisible.

And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son of God, and born of the Father before all ages. God of God; Light of Light; true God of true God; begotten, not made; consubstantial to the Father by whom all things were made. Who for us men and for our salvation, came down from heaven, and became incarnate by the Holy Ghost of the Virgin Mary and was made man. He was crucified also for us, suffered under Pontius Pilate, and was buried. And the third day he rose again, according to the Scriptures. And ascended into heaven, sitteth at the right hand of the Father. And He is to come again with glory to judge both the living and the dead; of whose kingdom there shall be no end.

And in the Holy Ghost the Lord and Giver of life, who proceedeth from the Father [and the Son]; who, together with the Father and the Son, is adored and glorified; who spake by the prophets. And one holy Catholic and Apostolic Church. I confess one baptism for the remission of sins. And I expect the resurrection of the dead, and the life of the world to come. Amen.\*

(1.) The apostolic and ecclesiastical traditions and other observances and constitutions of the Church, do I firmly admit and embrace.

(2.) Also the sacred Scripture, according to that sense which our holy Mother the Church hath holden and doth hold, (whose office it is to judge of the true sense and interpretation of holy Scriptures) do I admit, neither will I ever receive and expound it but according to the uniform consent of the fathers.

(3.) I do also profess that there are truly and properly seven sacraments of the new law, instituted by our Lord Jesus Christ, and

---

\* This translation of the Latin translation of the Nicene Creed, which is originally in Greek, is copied from "The Roman Missal," etc., by the Rt. Rev. Dr. England, late bishop of Charleston, 1843.



necessary to the salvation of mankind, though all be not necessary for every man; that is to say, baptism, confirmation, the eucharist, penance, extreme unction, orders and marriage; and that they confer grace, and that among these, baptism, confirmation and orders cannot be reiterated without sacrilege. Also the received and approved rites of the Catholic Church used in the solemn administration of all the aforesaid sacraments, I receive and admit.

(4.) All and every the things which concerning original sin and justification, were defined and declared in the holy Council of Trent, I embrace and receive.

(5.) Also, I confess that in the Mass is offered to God a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice for the quick and the dead. And that in the most holy eucharist is truly, really, and substantially the body and blood, with the soul and divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ; and that there is made a conversion of the whole substance of the bread into His body, and of the whole substance of the wine into His blood, which conversion the Catholic Church calls transubstantiation.

(6.) I confess, also, that under one kind only all and whole Christ, and the true sacrament is received.

(7.) I do constantly hold that there is a purgatory, and that the souls detained there are holpen by the suffrages of the faithful.

(8.) And likewise that the saints reigning with Christ, are to be worshipped and prayed unto; (*venerandos, atque invocandos esse*) and that they offer their prayers unto God for us; and that their relics are to be worshipped (*atque eorum reliquias esse venerandos.*)

(9.) And most firmly I avouch, that the images of Christ and of the Mother of God, always a Virgin, and of other saints, are to be had and retained, and that to them due honor and veneration is to be given.

(10.) Also, that the power of indulgencies was left by Christ in the Church; and I affirm the use thereof to be most wholesome to Christ's people.

(11.) That the holy Catholic and Apostolic Roman Church is the Mother and Mistress of all Churches, I acknowledge; and I vow and swear true obedience to the bishop of Rome, the successor of St. Peter, the prince of the apostles, and the vicar of Jesus Christ.

(12.) And all other things likewise do I undoubtedly receive and confess, which are delivered, defined, and declared by the sacred canons and general Councils, and especially the holy Council of Trent; and withal, I condemn, reject, and accurse all things that are contrary hereunto, and all heresies whatsoever condemned, rejected, and accursed by the Church; and I will be careful that this true Catholic faith (out of which no man can be saved, which at this

time I willingly profess and truly hold) be constantly (with God's help) retained and confessed, whole and inviolate, to the last gasp; and by those that are under me, or such as I shall have charge over in my calling, holden, taught and preached to the uttermost of my power: I the said N. promise, vow, and swear, so God help me and His holy gospels.

There are two more articles that have not yet been formally added to this creed: The immaculate conception of the Blessed Virgin, and the personal infallibility of the bishop of Rome, speaking *ex-cathedra*. But they are properly to be considered as now articles of faith with all Romanists; and will without doubt in time, lengthen out the modern additions which these people have added to "The Faith once delivered."

It will be observed that the Church of Rome puts in the category of things and facts revealed by the Almighty, and declared by His own lips, as necessary to salvation, apostolic and ecclesiastical tradition, the invocation of saints, veneration paid to the images of the Saviour and the saints, transubstantiation, and with strange incongruousness, even the rites and ceremonies used in the administration of the sacraments. That is, that all these statements of doctrine or, (if you please) conclusions of roman reason, are to be accepted as equally necessary and equally important with those, which no reason, human or angelic, could ever discover—which none but the Divine Reason hath ever known or can know. That it is as necessary to receive and accept apostolic and ecclesiastical traditions as the fact of the Trinity; transubstantiation, as the Deity of Christ; Roman ritual, as the Personality of the Holy Ghost. Surely nothing in the history of thought has ever equaled an assumption so extravagant.

Nor is the difficult knot cut by the later claim that a Pope has declared these doctrines true, and that he

### ROME MUST WITHDRAW.

The Roman Catholic Church must withdraw from politics as a church. As individuals they have the same God-given rights as any other citizen to religious liberty. As a church they must act only in spiritual relations to the municipal and State government. I would as radically oppose any church that would attempt to rule State and municipal government. I am not a member of the A. P. A., but I sincerely hope and trust this and all other questions will be settled at the ballot-box. REV. B. L. DUCKWALL, (M. E. Church), Buffalo, N.Y.



The first part of the history is a general account of the state of the country at the time of the discovery of the gold mine. It describes the various tribes of Indians who inhabited the country, and the manner in which they lived. It also mentions the various diseases which were introduced into the country by the Europeans, and the manner in which they were spread.

The second part of the history is a detailed account of the discovery of the gold mine. It describes the manner in which the mine was discovered, and the manner in which the gold was mined. It also mentions the various difficulties which were encountered in the mining process, and the manner in which they were overcome.

The third part of the history is a detailed account of the manner in which the gold was transported to the coast. It describes the various difficulties which were encountered in the transportation process, and the manner in which they were overcome. It also mentions the various dangers which were encountered in the transportation process, and the manner in which they were avoided.

The fourth part of the history is a detailed account of the manner in which the gold was sold. It describes the various difficulties which were encountered in the selling process, and the manner in which they were overcome. It also mentions the various dangers which were encountered in the selling process, and the manner in which they were avoided.

The fifth part of the history is a detailed account of the manner in which the gold was used. It describes the various difficulties which were encountered in the use of the gold, and the manner in which they were overcome. It also mentions the various dangers which were encountered in the use of the gold, and the manner in which they were avoided.

The sixth part of the history is a detailed account of the manner in which the gold was stored. It describes the various difficulties which were encountered in the storage process, and the manner in which they were overcome. It also mentions the various dangers which were encountered in the storage process, and the manner in which they were avoided.



Ridley Writing in Prison. Page 552.





speaking *ex-cathedra*, is infallible. For such infallibility, at the most could only be the parallel of apostolical inspiration. But even apostolical inspiration was not considered sufficient to qualify the Twelve to declare the facts of the Creed—for it is expressly said that “God, who at sundry times, and in divers manners, spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days *spoken unto us by His Son.*” (Hebrews i. 1, 2.) This is a great and underlying truth; and it presents the necessary and unavoidable means adopted by the Supreme Being, to prevent any thing that is the mere product of finite reason, from being assumed as of The Faith. It equally forbids the depression of what is revealed, pertaining to the nature of Deity, to the level of man’s wit, or human devising. How far Rome has ignored this truth, is patent to the eye that scans again the Creed of Pius IV. It is in two moieties. The first contains Catholic truth; the second, Romish error, added a little more than three hundred years ago.

It has been stated that heresy is the denial of any of these fundamental facts. Provision has been made in Scripture against its destructive results. In the Old Testament, in the words of Moses: “If there arise among you a prophet, or a dreamer of dreams, and giveth thee a sign or a wonder, and the sign or the wonder come to pass whereof he spake, saying, Let us go after other gods which thou hast not known, and let us serve them; thou shalt not hearken unto the words of that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams; for the Lord your God proveth you, to know whether ye love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul.” (Deut. xiii. 1–3.) In the New Testament, in the words of the great apostle St. Paul: “Though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.” (Gal. i. 8.) Thus limiting himself against any contradiction by himself of what he had

declared. And then he intensifies the warning: "As we said before so say I again, If any preach any other gospel unto you, than that ye have received (*parelabete*) let him be accursed." (v. 9.) Let it be remembered that the apostle at this time was contributing to the canon of Scripture not yet complete—therefore he must have been referring (if he referred at all to anything more than his oral repetitions of what Christ had said) to the Creed in which the Galatians were already taught—and these words of Moses and St. Paul become explicit warnings to us against going after the new gods of the Blessed Virgin, and the canonized saints; or of embracing and receiving anything "concerning original sin and justification as defined and declared in the holy Council of Trent."

Now this new Creed, or addition to the old and apostolic "form of sound words" (2 Tim. i. 13), was only made in A. D. 1564, by Pius IV., the then bishop of Rome. Until that Council, many of these doctrines were held with less or more of unanimity as "pious opinions;" or as subordinate articles of religion, confirmed by provincial Councils. But no one had presumed to put them on a level with God's facts, as equally necessary to salvation. Indeed it is a historical fact, that until the Council of Trent, the longer and shorter forms of the Creed; (the so called Apostles' and Nicene Creeds); the dogmatic and polemic statement of the fundamentals of the Christian religion; was the sole symbol of universal Christendom—Greek, Latin, and Anglican. Only the Church of Rome has dared to add to it, and however much it may claim to anathematize heresy, it became itself heretical in this fearful assumption.

In examining this new Creed, the articles will be referred to by number; premising that the inference is not to be drawn, that even this syllabus of doctrine exhausts Roman variation on right belief; but that errors enough



can be found in this to prove the charge brought against Romanism by all the Orientals, in common with the Anglicans; that God's truth has been obscured by it, and the simplicity of the Gospel greatly marred.

(1.) The error of the first article consists in making ordinary historical facts, objects of faith, and necessary to salvation, in the same sense that the facts that are known and can be known only by the direct speech of Almighty God, are necessary. This is an invasion of God's especially claimed prerogative exercised by His Son, and referring to which He declares: "My glory will I not give to another." (Isaiah xlii. 8.)

(2.) As for the second article, it is simply an impossibility—since of much of the interpretation of Scripture there is no "universal consent of the fathers." Indeed the Romanists of to-day claim that there was no certainly ascertained Scriptures to interpret for three hundred and ninety-seven years. Of the greater part of these Scriptures the fathers give us no interpretation at all.

(3.) To Peter Lombard, in the twelfth century, are we indebted for the information that there are seven sacraments. Yet not only does this new Creed make a belief in that number necessary to salvation; but it also requires us to credit under peril of damnation, that "the received and approved rites of the Catholic Church used in the solemn administration of all the aforesaid sacraments," are of equal importance with a right belief in the Doctrine of the Trinity. These rites include, for the Mass especially, attention, a proper disposition of the mind, attitude of the body, and arrangement of the vestments.

(4.) The Doctrine of Trent on the subject of original sin and justification, is not only that its guilt is removed by baptism; but that virtually the baptized soul is essentially as perfectly pure as Adam's was before the fall



—his lost righteousness being thereby restored. The heresy is essentially that of Pelagianism.

(5.) The form that heresy assumed, touching the Person of our Lord in the first ages, while the memory of His marvelous deeds was yet fresh in the minds of apostolic men, and their disciples, was a denial of His true humanity. His works proved Him to be God ; but human reason failed to comprehend how humanity could come so nearly into contact with the divine essence, and continue human. Later, as time began to cloud the vividness of the Church's extraordinary stage and her distinctly supernatural life, heretics denied His deity. The doctrine of the Church of Rome, is the *culmen* of one of the most notable of the first class. Eutyches, recoiling from the error of Nestorius, asserted "that the divine and human natures in Christ were originally distinct ; but that after their union they became one nature ; the human nature being transubstantiated into the divine." (Brown.) This heresy was condemned by the General Council of Chalcedon, A. D. 451. According to this doctrine, Christ only appeared to be man ; to be possessed of man's form ; to speak, eat, sleep, suffer, shed blood, and perform all the actions that are indicative of a proper humanity ; yet these were the accidents of humanity ; its substance had disappeared and been absorbed. He was simply God. Those who interpret St. Paul's words—"though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now know we him no more" (2 Cor. v. 16)—as indicating a subsidence of His manhood as He sat on the right hand of God the Father Almighty ; and not as meaning that he no longer knows Him as a Jew, or of any nationality, but simply as God incarnate—as the Messiah—the Saviour of both Gentiles and Jews, are guilty of the same heresy. Eutyches applied his teaching to the Person of Christ Jesus, before His ascension—these to it since.

But let it be noted how thoroughly in the doctrine of

transubstantiation, taught by the fourth Lateran Council, A. D. 1215, formulated by Innocent III., and made an article of the Faith by the Council of Trent, the Church of Rome has adopted Eutychianism. What he taught of the Body and Blood of our Lord, that Church teaches of the sacrament of His Body and Blood. Nay, not only does Rome Eutychianize the Eucharist; she presumptuously adds to the Master's words. He said: "This is My Body; this is My Blood." Rome adds: "Soul and Divinity." The Eucharist speaks to us of death. It points to the hours where from three o'clock of Good Friday, to an hour "very early in the morning" of Easter Day, Jesus Christ hanged upon the Cross, and laid in the sepulchre, "all the travail of His soul and agony of His body being passed." During those hours He was dead. There was no soul and no divinity united then within the sacred body; for St. Peter tells us (1 Peter iii. 19), His spirit was preaching to the spirits in safe keeping during this interval. To add these words, then is, to make the sacrament of Jesus Christ contradict Him. So then, not only is Trent guilty of a new application of the old heresy of Eutyches; but of a bold addition to the words of Him, who spake with original and underived authority. And she demands our acceptance of her addition with the same force of Faith, with which we project it to the revelation of the God of gods, and Lord of lords. We cannot accept this article of her new Creed, without subjecting ourselves to the condemnation of Chalcedon—to the more fearful fate of being judged by Him who will not give his glory to another.

(6.) But while she thus adds to the words of the Divine Master, consistent in her inconsistency, she diminishes His demands, and requires all but the celebrant, to receive in one kind only. This deviation from the Divine sacrament, dates only from the Council of Constance, A.



D. 1415. Without adopting the precise practice of the Aquarii of the second century, this custom of Rome is in principle the same with theirs.

The gnosticism of Tatian, developed in one branch of his following, into a refusal to drink wine even at the Eucharist. Water was substituted in its stead. But to introduce another element from that commanded by Christ, is the equivalent of a total denial of that commanded by Christ, and since the sacramental elements, in themselves, are nothing; and since they are only efficacious to the faithful heart, by virtue of the express ordainment of Him who is Lord of both spirit and matter, therefore it is equally obnoxious to deny one element, or to substitute some other matter in its place. Hence, the sixth article of the new Creed of Rome, which claims sole authority to define and condemn heresy, is itself the equivalent of the formally condemned heresy of Aquarianism.

Romish doctors claim indeed that, by congruity, the body must be where the blood is and *vice versa*. But not to urge the thought that our blessed Master was quite as well able to determine this fact as the schoolmen, the fathers of Trent, or even as the bishop of Rome; and that nevertheless he instituted the sacrament in both kinds and particularly commanded of the cup, "Drink ye all of it"—it is especially to be observed that the very opposit of the conjunction of the body and blood, is purposely set forth in the Eucharist. The separate symbols, separated the bread on the paten, the wine and water in the chalice represent the period of time after the water and the blood had followed the withdrawal of the soldier's spear, and flowed away from the flesh. Thus does Rome overthrow the nature of this sacrament, and assume authority to countermand the order, and overturn the act of the Son of the Most High God.

(7.) The doctrine of Purgatory which this new Creed



absolutely teaches, may be traced up to both a pagan and heretical origin. So far as the Church of Rome is concerned, it was first decreed in the Council of Constance; but not made an article of faith until the Council of Trent. Its first appearance in Christian thought was in Tertullian's treatise *De Anima*; written after he had become a heretic and acknowledged Montanus to be (as he asserted of himself) the Paraclete, or Holy Ghost, promised to the twelve by our Lord. But Trent outruns Tertullian, who did not know in his day that "the souls detained (in purgatory) are holpen by the suffrages of the faithful." Origen, equally with Tertullian, taught of fiery trials and purgations, but he based his belief on different grounds from those chosen at Trent. He borrowed his views on the nature of the soul from Plato, and held to its pre-existence and transmigration.

The Tartarus of paganism, and the future purgations of the Montanists, furnish the model for purgatory. Our Lord declares of the soul's future, both of the just and the unjust, that between the two "there is a great gulf fixed, that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence." (t. Luke xvi. 26.) Rome in this article, contradicts our Lord Jesus Christ.

(8.) The origin of the dogma, that "saints are to be venerated and invoked," is to be sought rather among ancient paganisms, than ancient heresies. The gods of mythology are deified heroes, just as the saints of the Roman calendar are reputedly canonized Christians.

That the early Church carefully treated the remains of the baptized dead, is true; but that they venerated their relics has never yet been shown, nor can be.

(9.) With this article we come again more distinctly within the sphere of condemned heresy. The Council of Ephesus, A. D. 305. expressly forbade the use of pictures

and images as aids to devotion, the desire then, perhaps first beginning to manifest itself. Epiphanius tore down a veil hanging at the door of a Church, on which an imaginary likeness of our Lord was painted. Eusebius (Bk. VII., xviii) speaks of the images of our Lord, and of the woman who was healed of the hemorrhage—and of St. Peter and St. Paul—preserved in his day; but so far from these being used as aids to devotion by the Christians, he refers them “to practice among the Gentiles,” who were “accustomed to pay this honor indiscriminately to those who were saviours or deliverers among them.” Thus unmistakably drawing the distinction between the habit of the heathen and the custom of the Church.

Epiphanius, again, records in his list of heresies, one originated by women, and composed of them. They were known as Collyridians, because they offered *collyria*, little cakes, to the Blessed Virgin. It is curious how carefully Rome has appropriated and systematized all these ancient errors, and especially this of the Collyridians, in worshipping the Virgin Mary.

(10.) Indulgencies grow out of purgatory. No purgatory, no indulgence. But when it is known that the merits that are applied in indulgencies granted, originate from good works done over and above what God requires of us; and are conserved under the Pope's key in an imaginary treasury, ready, on the payment of the sum fixed, to be dispensed for the benefit of the quick and dead, one can but recall the saying of our Lord: “When ye have done all those things which are commanded you, say: We are unprofitable servants; we have done that which was our duty to do.” (St. Luke xvii. 10.) Surely so palpable a contradiction of what Jesus Christ hath said, cannot justly find a place in that Creed which contains the Articles of Belief necessary for salvation.

I do not consider that we are doing our duty as American citizens to ourselves or to our children, in permitting such a system of public schools to exist as we have to-day.

PROF. DUNNE, of the Jesuit University at Washington.

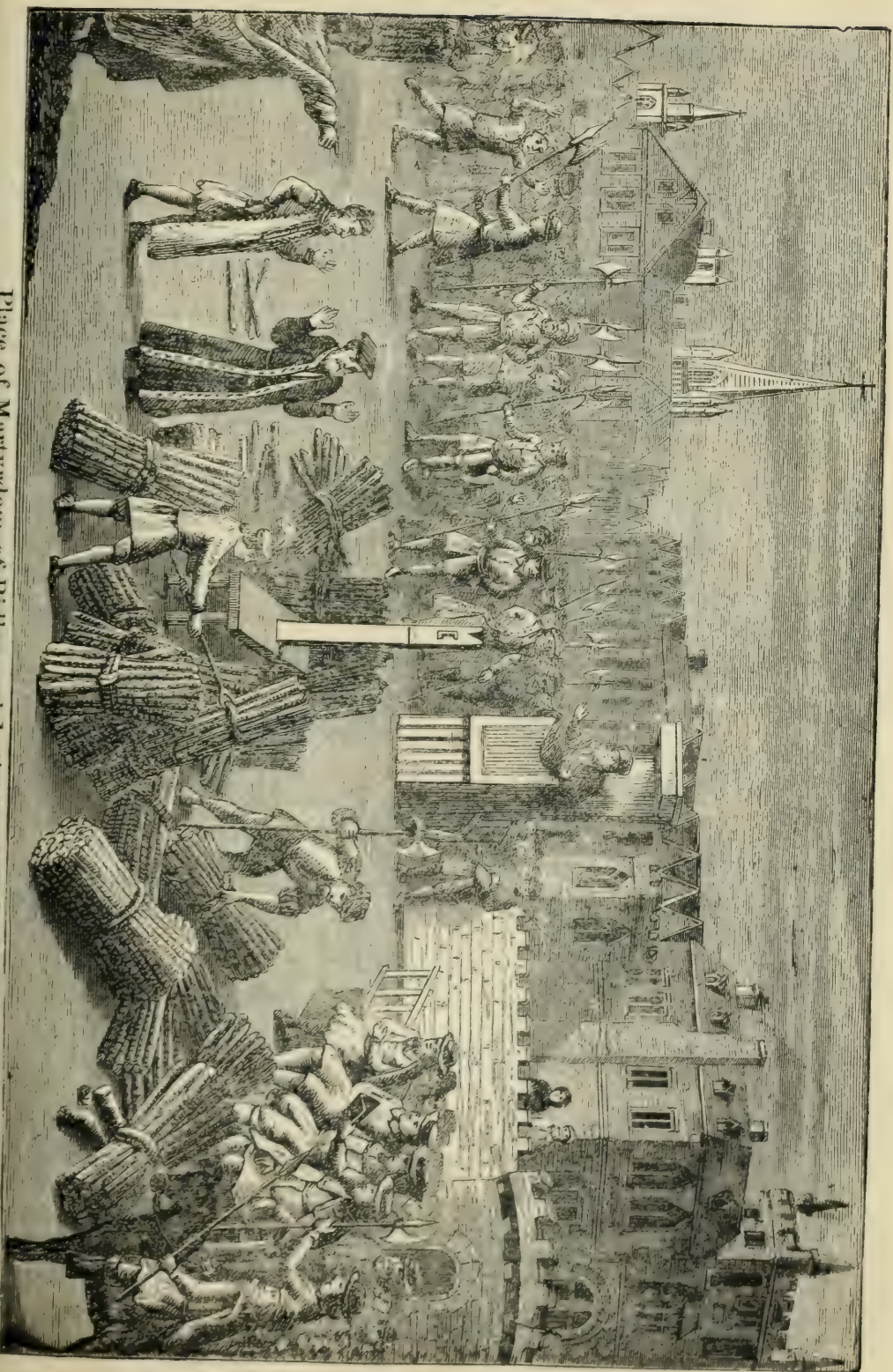
The American School System is a national fraud, a social cancer presaging the death of national morality and the sooner destroyed the better. It will be a glorious day for the Catholics in this country when under the blows of justice and morality, our school system shall be shivered to pieces.

[408]

*The Catholic Telegraph.*







Place of Martyrdom of Ridley and Latimer, at Oxford. Page 565.





(11.) That the “holy Catholic and Apostolic *Roman* Church, is the mother and mistress of all Churches,” is so contradictory of Scripture and history, that it is hard to credit the fact that even the Council of Trent would commit itself to the statement. Perhaps the explanation of the mystery must charitably be sought in the ignorance of the great body of bishops declaring such a thing; and we must believe that they were honestly convinced that what they decreed accorded with historic truth. Both Isaiah and Micah assert by inspiration, that “out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.” (Isaiah ii. 3; Micah iv. 2.) Therefore, any “mother” Church must be sought for in Jerusalem. As a fact that requires no proof, Christianity originated in Jerusalem, and was propagated to Rome, as to other cities and other countries. Both Antioch and Alexandria could sustain a better claim to this ecclesiastical maternity than Rome—since in the former city the disciples were first called Christians, and the latter was the centre of religious thought for four hundred years—Rome then occupying a position of comparative ecclesiastical insignificance. So far from being the “mistress” of all Churches, all the Churches and bishops forced Victor to recede from his unwarranted assumption in presuming to excommunicate the Asiatic bishops, who refused to submit to his dictation in the controversy respecting Easter. Indeed, our Lord’s precept, “he that is greatest among you shall be your servant” (St. Matt. xxiii. 11), explicitly forbids any master or mistress over them that He had made free.

That St. Peter was prince of the apostles, and the bishop of Rome his successor and vicar of Jesus Christ, we claim that the writer has lately examined; and therefore need not be fully entered into by him now, except to give a resume of the arguments then used, namely.

(a.) St. Paul and St. Peter divided the Gentiles and the Jews between them; and St. Paul claims Rome as his field, saying: "I purposed to come unto you (but was lethitherto) that I might have some fruit among you also even as among other Gentiles." (Rom. i. 13.)

(b.) Eusebius declares Asia Minor to have been the field of St. Peter's labors.

(c.) No Scripture warrants the claim; not even the Gospel of St. Mark, written at St. Peter's dictation; no his own two Epistles.

(d.) St. Paul, writing to Rome, sends no message to St. Peter, nor mentions him in a long list of Roman Christians recited in his epistle.

(e.) The same apostle, writing several letters from Rome, and sending Christian love from his brethren there to Christians in the cities to which he wrote, never speaks of St. Peter once.

(f.) St. Clement, third bishop of Rome, neither makes the claim for St. Peter, nor himself.

(g.) The history of inspired Scripture leaves no time for St. Peter's rule at Rome.

(h.) If the bishop of Rome were St. Peter's successor, and vicar of Jesus Christ, then Clement, an ordinary diocesan bishop, would have been the superior, to whom St. John, who laid his head on the Saviour's breast, would have been subordinate and inferior; for Clement was bishop of Rome while St. John yet lived.

(i.) But, granting that St. Peter was the prince of apostles, and first bishop of Rome—which is contradicted by his position at the first General Council over which St. James presided; and by his being "sent" with St. John by the other apostles as their delegate to confirm the Samaritan converts, baptized by Philip the deacon—yet the office was personal and the gift not heritable.

(j.) Gregory, bishop of Rome, denounced this view



claim when made by the bishop of Constantinople, as the sign of antichrist.\*

(12.) This article reminds one of the famous "*et cætera* oath" of Charles I. It not only binds to all that has gone before, but it pre-confirms all that may be added hereafter, world without end. It does more. It commands us to curse those whom God hath not cursed, and to defy those whom God hath not defied.

Enough has been written to show that the religionism of Rome, which she has added to her Catholicity, is far from being either true or old. And when we do find any special doctrine reaching back to a seemingly distant past, we not only discover that it stops short of apostolic days, but that it is a heresy long since condemned. So far is this new system from being Christian or essential to the existence of the true Church of Rome, such as it was when St. Paul wrote his epistle to it, that it might be cut away with as much benefit to its health, as a tumor from man.

With a strange boldness, the modern Romanist appeals to authorities to sustain the claims of his new theology, which put all his confreres under the ban of excommunication and denounce all that accept his Creed—from the bishop that sits on his throne on the Tiber, to the humblest follower of the most fanatical priest.

The writer cannot sympathize with those who unparingly and bitterly denounce this body of mistaken Christian people. The mind of the thinking man is appalled at the sight of a part of the Body of Christ so awfully diseased. An awe creeps into the soul when one looks at what may become the fate of other Christian bodies—though possibly drifting in the opposite direction if one so well furnished for warfare against the devil,

---

\* This article is more fully treated by the same writer in the "Great Awakening," by same publisher.



the world, and the flesh, can be so completely enveloped in clouds and mists.

It is a "mystery," indeed, as St. John pronounces it, that divine revelation should be so infiliated with human thought and human reasoning, as to make the resultant a mat of good and evil; of divine thoughts and human assumptions; of Catholic truth and Romish error. We look upon a tangled mass of Christian revelation, intermingled with new phases of natural religion; and of the provisions which the natural heart makes for itself, when it indulges itself in will-worship; that is, worship fashioned by its own will, rather than God's. And yet there are thousands that adore before Rome's altars of whom the world is not worthy, because they have washed their robes white in the blood of Christ, and say "Our Father," rather than "Hail Mary." Who by lives of self-devotion show themselves possessed of the sevenfold gifts of the Holy Ghost. Yet the body of which they are members is under an influence that is hurrying it on to results which, unless arrested by a recoil, must be so unavoidably fatal, that the contemplation of its end, fills the heart of the true Catholic with unutterable sadness.

But whether arrested or not, God calls to His own within that fold: "Come out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues." (Rev. xviii. 4.)







Burning of Ridley and Latimer. Page 565.





Rome requires a convert who joins her to forfeit his moral freedom, and to place his loyalty and civil duty at the mercy of another. No more cunning plot was ever devised against the intelligence, the freedom, the happiness and virtue of mankind, than Romanism.

W. E. GLADSTONE.

#### CANON LAW GOVERNING TESTIMONY IN CIVIL COURTS.

In every promissory oath, although absolutely taken, there are certain conditions tacitly understood, amongst which are: 1. If I can. 2. To save the right and authority of a superior. 3. When the oath supposes the honor of the apostolic see to be illicit.

[415]

# CHAPTER XX.

## THE ORIGIN, RISE AND DEVELOPMENT OF THE PAPACY.

---

BY REV. G. W. HUGHEY, A. M.

---

Pope Pius IX., in delivering the Proclamation of the Primacy, Supremacy, and Infallibility of the Pope, in the Vatican Council, July 18th, 1870, says:

“We therefore teach and declare, in accordance with the testimonies of the Gospel, that the *Primacy of Jurisdiction* over the Universal Church of God, was *immediately* and *directly* promised to, and conferred upon, the blessed Apostle Peter, by Christ our Lord.” Again he says:

“And, after His resurrection, Jesus conferred on Simon Peter *alone* the *jurisdiction* of *Supreme Pastor and Ruler* over His entire sheepfold, saying: “Feed my lambs; feed my sheep.” Again he says:

“If, therefore, any one shall say that the blessed Apostle Peter was not constituted by Christ our Lord, the Prince of all the Apostles and the Visible Head of the whole Church Militant; or, that the same (Peter) received directly and immediately from the same Jesus Christ, our Lord, a Primacy of honor only, and not a Primacy of *true and proper jurisdiction*: Let him be anathema.” Again he says:

“If, therefore, any one shall say that it is not by the institution of Christ himself, our Lord, or by divine right, that the blessed Peter has perpetual successors in the Primacy over the entire Church; or that the Roman



Pontiff is not the successor of the blessed Peter in the same Primacy: Let him be anathema.” Again he says:

“Wherefore, supported by the clear testimonies of the Sacred Scriptures, and adhering to the formal and perspicuous decrees both of our Predecessors, the Roman Pontiffs, and the General Councils, we renew the definition of the Œcumenical Council of Florence, by which all the faithful of Christ are bound to believe that the Holy Apostolic See, and the Roman Pontiff, possesses the Primacy over the entire world, and that the Roman Pontiff himself is the successor of the Blessed Peter, the Prince of the Apostles, and that he is the true Vicar of Christ, the Head of the whole Church, and the Father and Teacher of all Christians; and that to him in Blessed Peter has been delivered by our Lord Jesus Christ the full power to feed, to rule, and to govern the Universal Church, as it is also contained in the acts of the Œcumenical Councils, and the Sacred Canons.

“We therefore teach and declare that the Roman Church, by the institution of the Lord, possesses the pre-eminence of ordinary power over all other Churches; and that this power of the jurisdiction of the Roman Pontiff which is truly episcopal, is *immediate*; that to this (power of jurisdiction) the Pastors and Faithful, both individually as well as collectively, of whatever rite and dignity they may be, are bound by the duty of hierarchical subordination, and true obedience, not only in matters which belong to faith and morals, but also in those which appertain to the discipline and government of the Church, diffused over the entire world; so that, the unity of communion, and profession of the same faith with the Roman Pontiff being preserved, the Church of Christ is one flock under one Supreme Pastor.

“This is the doctrine of Catholic truth, from which no one can deviate without loss of faith and salvation.”

This is the doctrine of the Papacy, as set forth by Pius IX. and the Vatican Council. The question we propose to discuss, is, Whence the Origin and Rise of this "*Supreme power*" in the Roman Pontiff, "to feed, to rule, and to govern the Universal Church?" Pope Pius IX. claims that this "*Supreme power*" of the Roman Pontiff, originated in the ordination of our Lord Jesus Christ, by which Peter was constituted the Prince of the Apostles, and the Visible Head of the Church, which prerogative of Peter, by the same divine authority, descends to his successors in the Roman Pontificate. If this claim were true, we should certainly expect to find it most explicitly set forth in the Words of Jesus, for a question of such vast moment, would certainly never have been left by our Lord with no authority in His Words, except a very doubtful interpretation of one or two passages, which, under the most favorable circumstances, can establish only a very small fraction of this exorbitant claim of authority by the Roman Pontiff.

This claim to "*Supreme power*" over the "*Universal Church*," Pius IX. and the Vatican Council rests on three passages of Scripture: (1.) John i. 42. "Thou shalt be called Cephias, which is by interpretation a stone." This passage, however, proves nothing in favor of this high claim, for Peter himself affirms that all true disciples of Jesus are "*living stones*." (1 Peter 2-5.) This language of Jesus simply recognizes Peter as a *true disciple*, and confers no prerogative whatever upon him. (2.) Matt. 16-18, 19. And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build my Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.'

But before this passage of Scripture can establish the



claim of the Papacy to universal supremacy over the Church of God, several important things must be *proved*, not *assumed*: 1. It must be proved that by "*this Rock*" Jesus meant Peter, and that consequently Peter is the foundation upon which the Church of Christ is built. 2. That "the keys of the kingdom of heaven," were given personally to Peter, and that he alone had the power to "bind and loose" given to him. 3. That Peter was by divine appointment constituted the first bishop of Rome, and Prince and Head of the Universal Church, and, 4. That this Supreme power conferred on Peter, descends in all its plentitude to his successors in the See of Rome. Not one of these four essential points can be proved, even by an Infallible Pope, backed and sustained by an Infallible Council.

1. It is evident that by "*this Rock*," Jesus did not mean Peter, but Himself, as confessed by Peter—"the Son of the Living God." This, the language itself demands. The note on this passage in the Douai-Bible, reads: "The Words of Christ to *Peter*, spoken in the vulgar language of the *Jews*, which our Lord made use of, were the same as if He had said in *English*, *thou art a rock, and upon this rock I will build my Church*. So that, by the plain course of words, *Peter* is here declared to be the rock, upon which the Church was to be built." Nothing could be farther from the truth than this. Jesus said unto Peter, "thou art *Petros*," a *stone*, a fragment of the rock, "and upon this *Petra*," *this mass of rock*, "I will build my Church." This change of gender from "*Petros*" to "*Petra*," was understood by the Jews to be a change from a *stone* or *pebble* to a great mass of rock. *Petra* is used sixteen times in the New Testament, and always in the sense of rock—a large mass, and never in the sense of a *stone*, when it is used literally; while "*Petros*" is never so used. 2. Liddell and Scott define "*Petra*, a rock," and



“*Petros, a piece of rock, a stone*, and thus distinguished from *Petra*.” They also say: “There is no example in good authors of *Petra*, in the signification of *Petros*, for a single stone.” “The vulgar language, then, of the Jews,” demanded that they should not understand the Lord Jesus to mean the same person or thing by both these words; and as He unquestionably meant Peter by *Petros*, He could not have meant him by *Petra*; but must have meant Himself as confessed by Peter—“the Son of the Living God.”

3. *Petra* is used four times in the New Testament, where it unquestionably means the Lord Jesus: (Rom. ix. 33; 1 Cor. x. 4, twice, and 1 Peter ii. 8); but it is never used to mean Peter. 4. Peter is never represented in the New Testament as the foundation of the Church of Jesus Christ; but the Lord Jesus is Himself always represented as the *one* and *sure* foundation of His Church. This Peter himself declares (1 Peter ii. 6), where he quotes Isaiah xxviii. 16, which reads: “Therefore, thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for *a foundation, a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner-stone, a sure foundation*: he that believeth shall not make haste.” Peter applies this language to the Lord Jesus, and not to himself, consequently he could not have understood the language of Jesus (Matt. xvi. 18) to apply to him, but he must have understood it to apply to the Lord Jesus, the “Son of the Living God.”

5. Paul, in 1 Cor. iii. 9–15, represents the Church as a building, a house, Christ as the one and only foundation, and all God’s ministers, including Peter, as workmen—fellow laborers, in building this house or temple of God. He never had the slightest conception that Peter was the foundation on which the Church was to be built.

6. The large majority of the Fathers and Doctors of the Catholic Church, for fifteen centuries, held that these words of our Lord do not apply to Peter, but to Christ as

confessed by him. Launoy, Doctor of the Sorbonne, an eminent Catholic Doctor, has demonstrated this "by clear and authentic texts" from the Fathers and Doctors themselves. (See "The Papacy, by Abbe Guettee," pp. 36, 37, foot note.) St. Augustine, commenting on this passage, says: "It is not upon thee, as Peter, but upon that rock which thou hast confessed." \* \* \* "I will build thee upon myself: I will not be built upon thee. Those who wished to be built upon men, said: '*I am of Paul, I am of Apollos, I am of Cephas, that is to say, of Peter;*' but those who did not wish to be built upon Peter, but upon the Rock, they said, I am of Christ." Here the Great Augustine totally uproots the foundation of the Papacy; and with him agree the most eminent of the Fathers, such as Origen, Gregory of Nyssa, Jerome, Ambrose, Chrysostom, Hilary of Poitiers, Cyril of Alexandria, John of Damascus, and Pope Nicholas I., in his sixth letter to Photius, where he says: "For to him was said, by the voice of the Lord, "Thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. Peter, thus called because of the solidity of the rock, *which is Christ*, continues to strengthen by his prayers the unshaken edifice of the Universal Church." Was Pope Nicholas infallible when he declared that "Christ is the Rock?" If so, what becomes of Peter as the foundation of the Church? But finally, Pope Pius IX. himself, in this same proclamation of Infallibility, declares, of Peter: "Upon whose strength the eternal temple should be built, *and on the firmness of whose faith should rise the lofty edifice of the Church, destined to tower up to heaven!*" Now, if the Church is built on Peter's *faith*, it is not built on Peter. If it is built on Peter's faith, objectively, that is, on Christ Jesus, then Pius IX. knocks the foundation from under the Papacy; and if it is built upon Peter's faith, subjectively, the same result must follow, for, in either



event, Peter ceases to be the foundation of the Church. Thus, the first essential point in the claims of the Papacy, cannot be proved, but its claim here is disproved by such an array of testimony as cannot be resisted.

2. It cannot be proved that the keys of the kingdom of heaven were given personally to Peter, and that he alone had the power to bind and loose given to him, for this power was conferred upon the whole Apostolic body, and through them upon every congregation of believers. (See Matt. xviii. 15-20.) This proves that Peter did not receive the power of the keys personally, but that as he answered the question for the whole company of the Apostles, a question that was propounded to them collectively, so the reply of the Saviour conferred a common power upon them all, and not a personal prerogative upon Peter. So the second point essential to the Papacy falls to the ground.

3. This language did not constitute Peter the Prince of the Apostles, for this very question of "who should be the greatest in the kingdom of heaven," that is "Prince," came up only a few days after this language was spoken by the Master (see Matt. xviii. 1-4), and He settled it, not by telling them, "Why, my children, don't you know that I settled that the other day, when I constituted Peter the foundation of the Church and the Prince of the Apostles, and conferred on him alone the keys of the kingdom, and the power of binding and loosing?" Here was certainly the time and place to settle this question, which has been troubling the Church for ages, authoritatively and finally. But, instead of this, Jesus taught them a lesson of humility that ought never to be forgotten by those who seek to be "the greatest in the kingdom of heaven." Just before the crucifixion this troublesome question came up again, and Jesus settled it by authoritatively declaring that in His Church there should be no lordship or



princedom, but that all his disciples should be brethren, with no Primacy of authority among them. Luke xxii. 24-26—"And there was also a strife among them which of them should be accounted the greatest. And He said unto them: The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye *shall* not be so; but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger, and he that is chief, as he that doth serve." (See also Matt. xx. 25-27.) Here the exercise of lordship in the Church of Christ is positively forbidden, and the only primacy recognized by the Lord Jesus among His disciples, is a primacy of service, which he who would seek to be chief must aspire to, not for the purpose of exercising lordship or authority, but showing himself a leader in labor, sacrifice, and suffering for the Master. Two things are demonstrable from these passages of Scripture: 1. Neither Peter, nor the other Apostles, during the lifetime of our Lord, ever dreamed that the language of Jesus (Matt. xvi. 18) conferred the princedom on him, for if they had so understood His words, there would have been an end of controversy as to "which of them should be the greatest in the kingdom of heaven," and all would have recognized Peter as their Prince and Head. 2. The Lord Jesus here, does, in the most positive and emphatic manner possible, declare that there should be no lordship or princedom in His Church—no exercise of authority of one over another, but that there should be brotherly equality among all His ministers. The testimony of these passages is decisive, and as long as they remain in the words of Jesus, so long will they be an eternal refutation of the usurped and tyrannical claims of the Papacy to lordship and dominion over the Church of God. But instead of the advocates of the Papacy being able to prove that Peter was the founder of the Church of Rome, and appointed by Christ as its first Bishop, it is a

demonstrable fact, that he did not found the Church of Rome at all; that it was founded long before he visited Rome, indeed if he ever visited it, except to there seal his testimony with his blood. Up to the time Paul wrote his epistle to the Church at Rome, it is certain, that neither Peter, nor any other Apostle had ever visited that city. Paul's epistle to the Romans was written about A. D. 60, within a few years of the close of Peter's Episcopate, according to Romanists, and while he was the resident Bishop of the Church in that city, and yet Paul never makes the slightest allusion to Peter, nor recognizes his presence in any manner. In the sixteenth chapter, he salutes twenty-five persons by name, together with the households of several, and yet never refers to Peter at all. Such a breach of courtesy Paul would never have been guilty of—it would have been unpardonable in him to have so ignored the Bishop of the Church and his fellow Apostle, if Peter had then held the See of Rome.

But if the Romish doctrine of the Papacy were true, it would have been an act of presumption in Paul to have written such a letter to the Church of Rome at all. The fact is, if Peter had then been Bishop of Rome, and Paul had recognized his Primacy after the Roman sense, it would not have been possible for him to have written such a letter to the Church of Rome, any more than for Bishop Ryan to write such a letter to the Church at Rome now. The idea that a subordinate should undertake to instruct the Church over which the Prince of the Apostles, and the Infallible Head of the Church presided, and which was itself the fountain head of the truth, in the fundamental doctrines of the Gospel, is an absurdity too great to be ascribed to the Apostle Paul, or to any other man of common sense. There is no historical evidence whatever to prove that Peter was Bishop of Rome any more than Paul was, or than either of them was Bishop of Antioch, Alexandria, or any



other city where the Gospel was planted in the Apostolical age. The Romish claim that Peter was Bishop of Rome, and that he founded the Church in that city, is a myth as baseless as the legend of St. Patrick and the snakes.

4. If it could be proved that Peter was the Prince of the Apostles and the first Bishop of Rome, by what process could Romanists prove that his power in its plenitude descends to his successors in office? Surely the language of Jesus (Matt. xvi. 18) conveys no such prerogative to the See of Rome. This is an assumption without a particle of authority in the words of Jesus, and yet it is an assumption essential to the existence of the Papacy. Thus we see the Papacy with all its exalted claims to Supreme and Universal dominion, rests upon four *assumptions*, not one of which can be sustained by a correct exegesis of the words of Jesus, by sound argument, or the facts of history. It is a colossal pyramid resting upon its apex, and is destined to crumble and fall by its own unsupported weight.

3. The third passage upon which Pius IX. and the Vatican Council rest the claims of the Papacy, is John xxi. 15-17: "Feed my lambs;" "Feed my Sheep. The Pope and Papists here claim that this language conferred on Peter the right and prerogative "to feed, to rule, and to govern the Universal Church," and that this power descends to his successors in the Roman Episcopate. But neither Peter himself, nor any of the other Apostles, ever so understood these words of the Lord Jesus. Peter recognized himself simply as an "elder," and he speaks not in the language of *lordship* or *authority*, but in the language of *exhortation* and brotherly kindness. (See 1 Peter v. 1-4.) Peter did not occupy the Primacy of honor as Bishop of the first Church, which he must have done, according to the Romish doctrine of the Primacy; but that was conferred on James, and that not by the appointment



of Peter as the Primate, Prince and Head of the Church; but by the joint action of Peter, James and John, the other Apostles consenting. Clement of Alexandria, says: "Peter, and James, and John, after the ascension of our Saviour, though they had been preferred by our Lord, *did not contend for the honor*, but chose James the Just as Bishop of Jerusalem." Here, Peter, James, and John, are all spoken of in the same manner as having "been preferred," yet neither one of these contended for the honor; but they *unitedly* put James, our Lord's brother, at the head of the infant Church, thus giving him the Primacy of rank in the Apostolic Church, which he held until his death. This is wholly inconsistent with the Romish idea of the Primacy of Peter. Throughout the Acts of the Apostles, Peter stands only on an equality with his brethren in the Apostolate, never above them. Paul recognizes him simply as a brother, never as a lord or master. On one occasion Paul sharply reproved Peter, "because he was to be blamed." Now, all these things are wholly inconsistent with the Romish idea of the Primacy of Peter. Instead of the language of Jesus, thrice repeated, "Feed my sheep," conferring any prerogative or authority upon Peter, it was simply a restoration of the penitent apostate to his Apostleship which he had forfeited and lost by his thrice denial of his Master. Yet this restoration of the penitent backslider to his rank in the Ministry and Apostleship, has been siezed upon by Romanists, to exalt him to the universal principedom of the Church!! To such torture must the Word of God be put, to find some foundation for the unscriptural assumptions? "The Man of Sin!"

The Papacy, then, did not originate in the ordination of Jesus Christ. There can be found no warrant for it in the Word of God. We must look for its origin elsewhere, and we will find it in "the mystery of iniquity," which

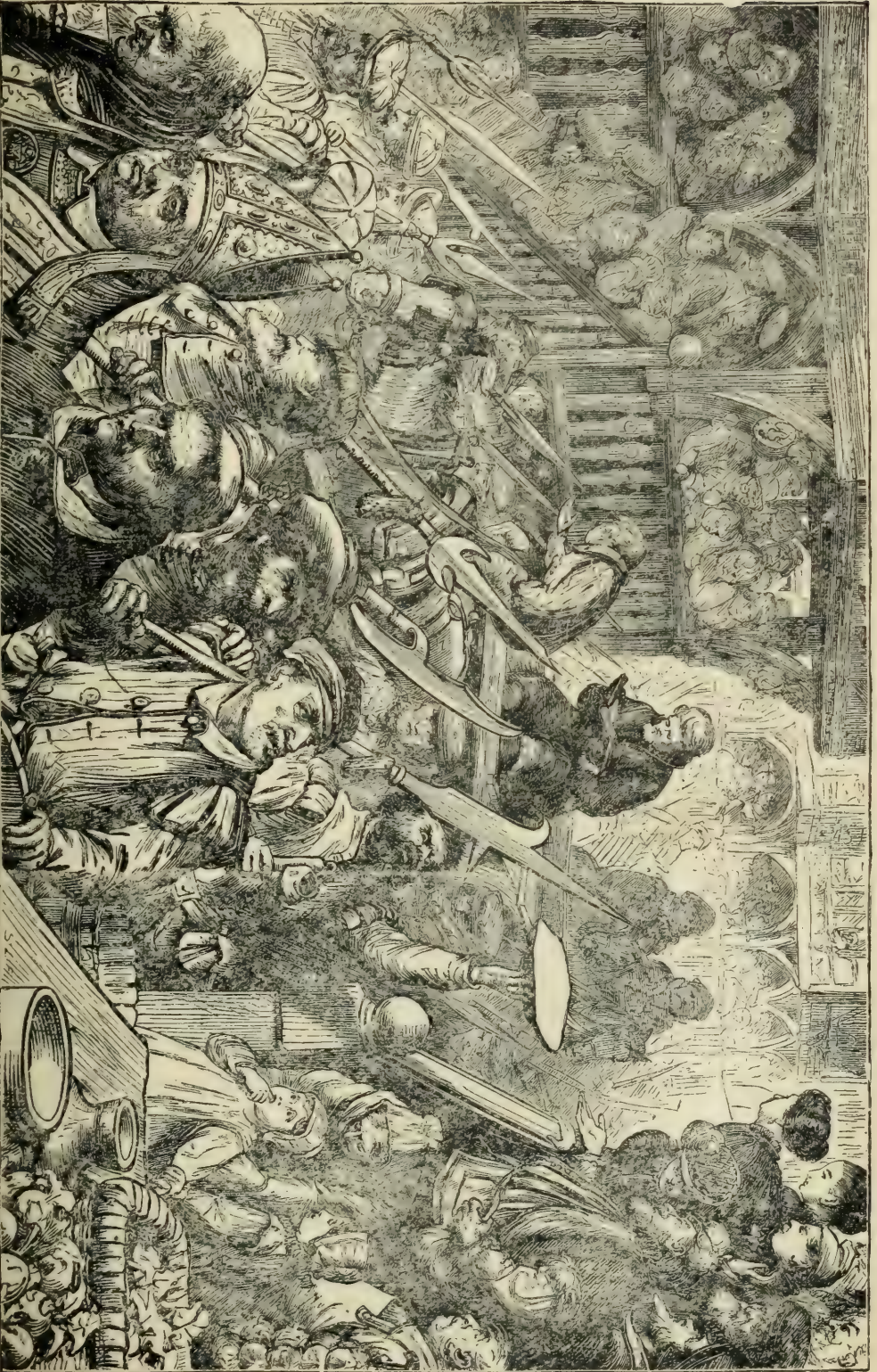
Paul declared was "already" working in his day. The unholy desire to be "the greatest," laid its foundation, and the political Supremacy of the city of Rome, made it possible for the Bishop of Rome to assert his claim to the Primacy and Lordship over the whole Church. The Papacy did not spring into existence at once; its development required centuries. We see its beginnings soon after the establishment of Christianity in the reign of Constantine, and we mark its encroachments, first upon the ecclesiastical, then upon the civil power, till, under the reign of Gregory VII., we see it asserting its Supremacy over Bishops, Kings, and Emperors, claiming absolute supremacy over all the earth, and the possession of the keys of heaven and hell. But this did not satisfy the ambition of the Roman Pontiffs. They aspired to the attributes as well as the authority of God, and they could not rest until their claim to Infallibility was acknowledged by the whole Church, as well as their Supremacy.

We have already seen that the Primacy of Peter was unknown among the Apostles. So we see that the Primacy of his supposed successors in the See of Rome, was unknown in the early ages of the Church. The advocates of the Papacy themselves, have been unable to find any authority for the Supremacy of the Bishop of Rome in the writings of the Fathers of the first Christian centuries. Neither Clement of Rome, Polycarp, Ignatius, Barnabas, nor Hermas, give us an intimation of this Supremacy. Clement was himself Bishop of Rome, and according to Romanists, Prince and Head of the Church. Yet his genuine epistle to the Church at Corinth, contains no intimation that he possessed any such power or prerogative as claimed by the Popes of later ages; while the general tenor of the epistle is at war with any such assumption. The Fathers of the second century, Justin, Ireneus, and Clement of Alexandria, make no mention of the spiritual

The time has come  
When men, with hearts and brains,  
Must rise and take the misdirected reins  
Of government, too long left in the hands.  
Of Aliens and of Lackeys. He who stands  
And sees the mighty vehicle of State  
Hauled thro' the mire to some ignoble fate  
And makes not bold protest as he can  
Is no American.







Rev. Geo. Marsh going to Execution. Page 575.





sovereignty of the Bishop of Rome. The first authority which Du Pin claims as reliable in support of the Papacy, dates about the year A. D. 370. Bellarmin's first reliable authority is of the same date, while Alexander's first authority is still later. This is most extraordinary, if the Romish doctrine be true. Here, we have, according to Rome, the most wonderful spiritual monarchy the world has ever known, existing for nearly four centuries before there is a single mention made of it by any Christian writer! All this, while the absolute Spiritual Supremacy resided in the Bishop of Rome, but neither he, nor any one else, had any knowledge of the fact, or if they knew it, did not think it of sufficient importance to speak of it!! Is such a case supposable? Do not reason and common sense revolt at such a conclusion? Does not this silence of the early Christian writers prove conclusively that no such spiritual monarchy existed in their day? No other conclusion is consistent with reason and common sense.

The Political Supremacy of the City of Rome, as the capital of the Empire, and the mistress of the world, would naturally very soon give to the Bishop of Rome pre-eminence and influence. The bishops of the other influential cities, soon acquired great influence over the bishops in the surrounding cities and villages. Added to this, the modeling of the ecclesiastical government after the civil, after Christianity came into power, and we have the Papacy developed in the most easy and natural manner. The ecclesiastical was measured by the civil dignity, and the spiritual hierarchy was graduated after the civil pattern. Thus, we see Bishops, Archbishops, Metropolitans, Patriarchs, and ultimately the Pope.

But this Primacy was, in the first place, not a Primacy of authority, but simply a Primacy of honor. The Bishop of Rome, being the Bishop of the Imperial City, held the first place among his brethren—not of authority, but of

honor. But this Primacy of honor soon led to the assertion on the part of the Bishop of Rome, of the Primacy of authority, which gradually developed into the Papacy. But this result was not reached without much opposition, and many protests upon the part of those whose rights were thus rudely wrested from them by the Bishop of Rome.

After Irenius and Clement of Alexandria, we have Turtullian, who knows nothing of the Primacy of Peter in the Romish sense, and he ridicules the pretensions of the Bishop of Rome, which even then occasionally presumed to put forth a claim to authority inconsistent with the equality of the Episcopal order. He even charges the Bishop of Rome with heresy. Turtullian places all the Churches founded by the Apostles upon an equality as to authority in teaching. He says:

“That which the Apostles have preached, that is to say, that which Christ has revealed to them, I claim *by prescription*, that it should only be proved by the Churches that the Apostles have founded, teaching them either *viva voce*, or by their epistles. If this be so, all doctrine that agrees with that of the Apostolic Churches, *mothers and sources of faith*, is agreeable to the truth.”

This language of Turtullian is wholly inconsistent with the claims of the Church of Rome, as the “Mother and Mistress of all the Churches.” Here all the Apostolic Churches are called “*mothers and sources of faith*,” and they are all equally the witnesses of the Apostolic doctrine. What becomes of the claims of the Church of Rome to this exclusive privilege in view of this passage? But He goes on to mention Corinth, Phillippi, Ephesus, and Rome, as equals, as witnesses, and “*mothers and sources of the faith!!*” This demonstrates that the Supremacy of Rome was unknown in the days of Turtullian.

Cyprian, Bishop of Carthage, A. D. 250, speaks of



the Bishops as all equal in authority. He says: "Let each one give his opinion without judging any one, and *without separating from the communion* those who are not of his opinion; for *none of us sets himself up for a bishop of bishops*; nor compels his brethren to obey him *by means of tyrannical terror, every bishop having full liberty* and complete power; as he cannot be judged by another, *neither can he judge another*. Let us wait on the Lord Jesus Christ, who *alone* has the power to appoint us to the government of his Church and to judge our conduct."

Cyprian knew nothing of the Supreme authority of the Bishop of Rome, nor did he recognize the claim of modern Romanists to this Supreme authority. With him all bishops were *equal*, none dared to assume the prerogative of "a bishop of bishops;" and when Stephen, Bishop of Rome, undertook to play Pope on a small scale, Cyprian indignantly repudiated his authority, and so did all the bishops of Africa.

The right to appoint bishops is a part of the prerogative of the Primacy of Peter, according to the doctrine of Rome. But this right was never recognized in the ancient Church. Yet it is essential to the Romish hierarchy. In the Primitive Church the people elected their own bishops, and the Bishop of Rome had nothing to do with either their appointment or confirmation. Afterwards the custom grew up of obtaining the consent of the Metropolitans. The Bishop of Rome then enjoyed the same privilege in his province of confirming the elections of bishops that the other Metropolitans had in their provinces, but nothing more. He could no more interfere with the election or appointment of a bishop outside of his own province, than the Bishop of Alexandria could in his. The sixth canon of the Council of Nice, reads:

"Let the ancient custom be preserved that exists in



Egypt, Lybia, and Pentopolis, that the Bishop of Alexandria have authority in all these countries, since that has also *passed into a custom* for the Bishop of Rome. Let the Churches at Antioch and in the other provinces preserve also their privileges. Now, it is very evident, that if any one be made bishop without the concurrence of the Metropolitan, the great Council declares that he may not be bishop."

This canon is fatal to the claim of Rome to Supremacy by divine right, for even this privilege of confirming the election of bishops in his own province, is here affirmed to be by *custom*, and not by divine right in the Bishop of Rome.

The General Council of Constantinople, A. D. 381, in its third canon, says: "Let the Bishop of Constantinople have *the Primacy of honor* (*priores honoris partes*) after the Bishop of Rome, *because* Constantinople is the new Rome." On this canon, Guettee remarks: "The Bishop of Rome was, therefore, regarded as the *first in honor*, because he was bishop of the capital of the empire. Byzantium having become the second capital under the name of Constantinople, its bishop became entitled to be second in rank, according to the principle that had governed the Council of Nicea in the *exterior* constitution of the Church, and according to which the divisions of the empire were made the divisions of the Church." (p. 96.)

The twenty-sixth canon of the General Council of Chalcedon, A. D. 451, settles the question as to how the Bishop of Rome acquired this Primacy of honor. It reads: "In all things following the decrees of the holy Fathers, and recognizing the canon just read by the one hundred and fifty bishops well-beloved of God (third canon of the second Council), we decree and establish the same thing, touching the privileges of the most holy Church of Constantinople, *the new Rome*. Most justly

*did the Fathers grant privileges to the See of the ancient Rome, BECAUSE SHE WAS THE REIGNING (capital) CITY. Moved by the same motive, the one hundred and fifty bishops well-beloved of God, grant equal privileges to the Most Holy See of the new Rome, thinking, very properly, that the city that has the honor to be the seat of the empire and of the senate, should enjoy in ecclesiastical things the same privileges as Rome the ancient queen city, since the former, although of later origin, has been raised and honored as much as the latter.'*"

Here the General Council of Chalcedon declares emphatically that the Primacy of the Church of Rome *was granted by the Fathers*, "BECAUSE SHE WAS THE REIGNING CITY." If the Primacy of the Bishop of Rome was *granted by the Fathers*, then *it was not by divine right*, but of human origin. Again: If it was granted "BECAUSE SHE WAS THE REIGNING CITY," it was not because the Bishops of Rome were the successors of Peter. This infallible canon of this infallible Council, proves that the claim of a divine origin for the Primacy of the Bishop of Rome, is an infallible falsehood; and it knocks the whole fabric of Papal Supremacy to atoms.

At the beginning of the Fifth Century, Chrysostom, in his banishment from his Bishopric, wrote to the Bishops of the West, not to the Bishop of Rome simply as Supreme Head of the Church, protesting his innocence, and praying the privilege of inter-communion, until he could get a hearing before an impartial tribunal. He did not appeal to the Bishop of Rome as the "Supreme Judge of all questions of discipline and doctrine," for no such claim was then acknowledged. Celestine, Bishop of Rome, wrote a letter to the people of Constantinople, commiserating their wretched condition, and he declared: "*This is an evil for which there is no other remedy than patience.*" In the same letter he says: Nevertheless, what remedy



can be applied to so great an evil? *There is no other than to convoke a council.*” Again he says: “*Until we are able to convoke a council, we can do no better than to wait from the will of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ the remedy of those evils.*”

Is this the language of one who is conscious that he has the Supreme power in the Church, and can therefore apply the remedy at once? Is it not plain from this language that Pope Celestine was an entire stranger to the Supremacy claimed by the Popes of later ages? Have any of the Popes who claimed universal Supremacy ever so expressed themselves? Either in the days of Celestine, this Supremacy did not exist, or the Infallible Popes had not yet found out that they were invested with the “Supreme power to feed, to rule, and to govern the Universal Church.” No Pope for the last thousand years has ever so written.

The Fathers of the Fourth and Fifth Centuries, knew nothing of this Supreme power in the Bishop of Rome. “St. Epiphanius teaches that the words ‘feed my sheep’ were not said by the Lord to commit to Peter the government of the Church, but to reinstate him in his apostolic dignity which he had forfeited by denying Christ.” He says: “The Lord CALLED PETER AGAIN after his denial; and to EFFACE the three denials, he calls upon him to thrice confess him.” Again he says: “Peter and Paul, the first of all the Apostles, were EQUALLY Bishops of Rome.” What becomes of the Supremacy of Peter here, if Paul was *equal* with him, and *equally* shared the Episcopate of Rome with him?

In speaking of James, he says: “He first received the See (of Jerusalem); it is *to him first that* THE LORD INTRUSTED HIS THRONE UPON EARTH.” Here the Primacy is given to James by divine right.

Chrysostom says: “Christ confided the Jews to Peter,



and set Paul at the head of the Gentiles." What becomes of the Primacy of Peter here, or his supremacy over the whole Church? Speaking of the Council of Jerusalem, he says: "Behold, after Peter it is Paul who speaks, and no man objects; James looks on and remains quiet, for the PRIMACY HAD BEEN COMMITTED TO HIM." Again he says: "Peter's language had been more vehement; that of James is more moderate. It is thus *those should always act who possess great power*. He leaves severity for others, and reserves moderation for himself." Again he says: "What means, *I judge?* It means, *I affirm*, with authority, that the thing is thus. \* \* \* *James, therefore, decided the whole question.*" What becomes of the Primacy of Peter here, when Crysostom affirms that the '*Primacy had been committed to James*,' and that he possessed the power, and he, therefore, "*decided the whole question?*" Can this be reconciled with the Supremacy of Peter, who in this Council, certainly occupied a subordinate place, and not that of President or Head?

Ambrose knew nothing of the Supremacy of the Bishop of Rome. He says: "He (Paul) names only Peter, and only compares himself with him, because, as *Peter had received the Primacy to found the Church of the Jews*, he (Paul) had been chosen in like manner *to have the Primacy* in founding the Church of the Gentiles." What becomes of the Primacy and Supremacy of Peter over the Gentile Church according to Ambrose? But what does Ambrose mean by the word primacy? He does not mean any special gift of *authority, honor, or rank*, for he says: "As soon as Peter heard these words, '*Whom say ye that I am?*' remembering his place, he exercised this *primacy*, a primacy of confession, not of *honor*, a primacy of faith, not of *rank*."

Augustine, Bishop of Hippo, speaking of the primacy of Peter, says: "He had not the primacy *over the dis-*

*ciples, but among the disciples.* His primacy among the disciples was *the same as that of Stephen among the deacons.*" But it is a primacy of *authority over* the whole Church, which is claimed by the Bishop of Rome, a primacy of which Augustine was profoundly ignorant. Speaking of the sentence of Pope Zosimus, in favor of the Pelagians, he says: "If I should concede (what is not true) that the Roman Church passed this judgment upon Celestius and Pelagius, and that she approved their doctrines, it would only follow that the Roman clergy were prevaricators." Augustine had never heard of the Infallibility of the Pope, or he could never have used such language. St. Jerome, says:

"We must not believe that the city of Rome is a different Church from that of the whole world. Gaul, Britain, Africa, Persia, the East, India, all the barbarous nations, adore Jesus Christ, and observe *one and the same rule of truth.* *If one is looking for authority, the world is greater than one city.* Wherever there is a Bishop, be he at Rome or at Eugubium, at Constantinople or at Rhegium, at Alexandria or at Tanis, *he has the SAME AUTHORITY*, the same merit, because he has the same priesthood. The power that riches give, and the low estate to which poverty reduces, render a bishop neither greater nor less." St. Jerome was a total stranger to the Supremacy of the Bishop of Rome, or he never could have so unequivocally affirmed the *equality* of all bishops. We might multiply these testimonies indefinitely, but we have space for only one more witness, and that is Pope Gregory the Great. His testimony is explicit in regard to the equality of all the bishops. In his letters to John the Faster, Bishop of Constantinople, who had suffered himself to be styled *Universal* Patriarch or Bishop, he condemns this title in the most emphatic manner, showing



that it is inconsistent with the freedom and equality of all the Episcopate. He says:

“I pray you, therefore, reflect that by your bold presumption, the peace of the whole Church is troubled, and that you are at enmity with *that grace which was given to all in common.*” Again he says:

“Peter, the first of the Apostles, and a *member* of the Holy and Universal Church; Paul, Andrew, John—were they not the chiefs of certain nations? And yet *all are members under one only Head.* In a word, the saints *before the law*, the saints *under the law*, the saints *under grace*—do they not all constitute the one body of the Lord? Are they not members of the Church? Yet there is *none* among them who desired to be called *universal.* Let your holiness consider, therefore, how much you are puffed up when you claim a title that none of them had the presumption to assume.”

Here Pope Gregory affirms that Peter was a “*member* of the Holy Universal Church”—not the “*head*” of it. He declares that Peter, Paul, Andrew, and John, though chiefs of certain nations, were “*all members under one only Head*”—Christ Jesus. The equality of Peter, Paul, Andrew, and John, is here affirmed by Pope Gregory in the most unequivocal manner. He also affirms, none among them “desired to be called *universal.*” Then, according to Pope Gregory, Peter never laid claim to the headship and Supremacy in the Church. What, we ask, becomes of the universal Supremacy of the Bishop of Rome in view of this language of the Great Gregory? Again he says: You know it, my brother; hath not the venerable Council of Chalcedon conferred the *honorary* title of *Universal* upon the bishops of this Apostolic See, whereof I am, by God’s will, the servant? And yet none of us hath permitted this title to be given to him; none hath *assumed* *this bold title*, lest by *assuming a special distinction* in the



dignity of the episcopate, we should seem to refuse it to all the brethren.'

In this remarkable extract from Gregory, we see that the title "*Universal Bishop*," was "conferred" on the Bishop of Rome, by the "Council of Chalcedon." If so, it could not have belonged to him by divine right as the successor of Peter. Before this title "was conferred" upon the Bishop of Rome, of course, he could not claim it as his. Gregory here claims that this title was not given by divine right at all, but by human authority.

2. He tells us this title "*Universal*," was conferred simply as an "*honorary* title." It conferred no power of jurisdiction. It only gave the first place of honor to the Bishop of Rome, because he was Bishop of the Imperial City. This completely uproots the whole system of Papal Supremacy, and that by the declaration of an Infallible Pope!!

3. Gregory here affirms, that up to his time, none of the Bishops of Rome had "permitted this title to be given" them—"none had *assumed*" it, lest by so doing they "should seem to refuse it to all the brethren." Here the equality of all the bishops is plainly recognized by the Bishop of Rome. Would that his successors had all had the same humility. Again he says:

"The Lord wishing to recall to a proper humility the yet feeble hearts of his disciples, said to them, 'If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all;' whereby we are clearly taught that he who is truly high is he who is most humble in mind. Let us, therefore, beware of being of the number of those 'who love the chief seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.' In fact, the Lord said to his disciples, '*Be ye not called Rabbi, for one is your Master, \* \* \* and all ye are brethren. Neither be ye called Fathers, for ye have but one Father.*'

“What then could you answer, beloved brother, in the terrible judgment to come, who desire not only to be called father, *but Universal Father of the World?* \* \* \* In consequence of your *wicked and vainglorious title*, the Church is divided and the hearts of the brethren are offended.”

Romanists claim that it is only by this Supreme universal authority of the Pope the unity of the Church can be secured. The Infallible Gregory, however, saw in only division and offence! What difference there is in the judgment of the Infallible Popes! Again he says:

“I have sought again and again, by my messengers and humble words, to correct the sin which has been committed *against the whole Church*. Now, I myself write. I have omitted nothing that *humility* made it my duty to. If I reap from my rebuke nothing better than contempt, there will be nothing left for me *but to appeal to the Church!!*”

Is this the language of a man who is conscious that the power to correct the evil complained of resides in himself? Is it the language of the Popes of later ages who claimed Supreme power over the whole world? If Gregory the Great had claimed the power which Gregory the VII. claimed, he would have said: “Wherefore, as it is written, I have set thee over the nations to build and to plant, to break up and destroy,” by authority of God Almighty, by the will of St. Peter, and of our own, we excommunicate and depose the said John, Bishop of Constantinople, from his dignity, and bind him in bonds of anathema,” etc., etc. This is the uniform language of the Popes after their supremacy was established. But Gregory here acknowledges he is powerless to apply the remedy to this evil which is dividing the Church, and all that he can do is to “*appeal to the Church*,” that is, to a General Council. Again he says: “Is it my cause, most pious lord, that I



now defend? Is it a private injury that I wish to avenge? No; this is the cause of Almighty God, the cause of the Universal Church. “Who is he who, *against the precepts of the Gospel* and the decrees of the canons, has the presumption to usurp a new title? Would to Heaven there were but one who, without wishing to lessen others, desired to be himself *universal*.” Here Gregory affirms that this title is “*against the precepts of the Gospel*.”

In writing to the Patriarchs of Alexandria and Antioch, he styles this title an “*impious word*.” After the death of John, and the election of Cyriacus, Gregory wrote to the Bishop of Antioch, telling him of a letter he had written to the Bishop of Constantinople, in which he said, “I told him he could not have peace with us if he did not refrain from taking this title of pride, which was but an *invention of the first apostate*. You must not consider this same affair as unimportant; for, if we tolerate it, we *corrupt the faith of the whole Church*.” Modern Popes tell us this supremacy is absolutely necessary to *preserve the purity of the faith*, but Gregory declared it would *corrupt the faith of the whole Church*.”

In writing to the Emperor, Gregory says: “I say it without the least hesitation: *whoever calls himself the universal bishop, or desires this title, is, by his pride, THE PRECURSOR OF ANTICHRIST*, because he thus attempts to raise himself above the others.” Here the Papacy is condemned as “*THE PRECURSOR OF ANTICHRIST*,” by an Infallible Pope!!

From the testimony of Gregory the Great, it is certain that up to his death, A. D. 604, the Papacy had not yet been called into existence. The Bishops of Rome were only *equals*, not superiors, to the Bishops of the other great Sees. The Primacy of *honor*, not of *authority*, had been *offered* them by the Council of Chalcedon, A. D. 451. but they had not accepted this title of honor, nor *assumed*



authority over their brethren. It is true some of them had attempted to exercise a somewhat limited authority over their brethren, but this had been promptly resisted and checked, and they were recognized only as *equals*, and not as *superiors*. But after the death of Gregory, this state of things soon changed, and the Papacy rapidly developed into a Supreme temporal and spiritual despotism.

Before tracing out this rapid development of power in the Papacy, and the causes that led thereto, we wish to call attention to another fact of great importance in this controversy.

The Pope claims the right to convene all General Councils, and to preside in them when convened. This is one of the essential prerogatives of the successors of St. Peter. But this claim was unknown for the first six centuries of Christianity. The Council of Jerusalem (Acts xv.) was not convened by Peter, but called together on an appeal from the Church at Antioch. Peter was present, but he did not preside in the Council. That honor was conferred on James, the Lord's brother, who was the Bishop of the Church in Jerusalem. Neither did Peter deliver the definitive sentence of the Council, but this honor also was given to James. This is wholly inconsistent with the Romish doctrine of the Primacy of Peter. Not one of the first seven General Councils was convened by the Bishop of Rome, but every one of them was convened by the Emperor, nor was the right of the Bishop of Rome to preside in the Councils recognized. This is a fact so notorious in the history of the Church, that we wonder at the temerity of Roman Catholic writers and Popes in ever presuming to call it in question. This well-attested fact of history is fatal to the claim of the Papacy to universal Supremacy. The Sixth General Council anathematized Pope Honorius as a heretic, and the reigning Pontiff acquiesced in the anathema. Here we have an Infallible Pope

falling into heresy, and an Infallible Council anathematizing him for his heresy, and another Infallible Pope ratifying the action of the Council, and binding his deceased Infallible predecessor in the bonds of anathema!! During all these centuries, the superiority of a General Council to the Bishop of Rome, was never called in question, but was universally admitted.

Boniface III., two years after the death of Gregory the Great, received from the assassin and usurper, Phocus, the title of *Universal Bishop*, which he and his successors accepted. The title which Gregory denounced as "*impious*," as an "*offence*," and as a cause of "*division in the Church*," and of which he affirmed that "*whoever called himself*, thereby was the PRECURSOR OF ANTI-CHRIST," was accepted by his successors, and became their boasted title of authority thenceforward.

The hindrances to Papal Supremacy were being removed one by one, and the ambitious Bishops of Rome were ever on the alert to seize every opportunity of aggrandizement. The Western Empire had disappeared in the revolutions which followed the invasions and conquests of the Goths. The power of the Eastern Emperors was a mere shadow rapidly disappearing in Italy and the West, and thus room was made for the extension of the authority of the Bishop of Rome, who now, in addition to his claim to universal spiritual dominion, added the authority and title of a secular prince. In the pontificate of Adrian I, who ascended the Papal throne A. D. 772, the "*False Decretals*," the work of a forger, and generally attributed to Isidore of Seville, first made their appearance. They were doubtless the work of some Roman forger, in the confidence of Adrian, if not of Adrian himself. These were received in Rome as authentic, and Pope Adrian laid the foundation of the Papacy in its extravagant claims to spiritual and temporal Supremacy upon these

The time has come when we are surrounded by an enemy. Be ready when they make their attack on us. You should all of you men join the Catholic Knights and be instructed for the fray, and be in the front, shoulder to shoulder. We must protect our right in this country as well as our church, for our church is the only true church in the world. We must defend it and uphold it at all hazards. We Priests will not go to the front with you, but will back you.

[440]

PRIEST FABIAN, of Wisconsin.







"She fled with her child to the woods." page 538.





orged decretals. About the same time of the forgery of the "False Decretals," there appeared the forgery of the famous Donation of Constantine, by which to show his gratitude to Heaven for his recovery from the prosy by Pope Sylvester, he gave Italy and the Western Provinces to the Pope. This document was made use of by the Pope to induce Pepin, king of France, to bestow on him the provinces he claimed had been taken from him by the Lombards. On this foundation, laid by Adrian in forgery of the most audacious character, his successors built the colossal power of the Papacy. A hundred years practice upon the maxims of Adrian, enabled Nicholas I., 867, to assume and carry out this Supremacy as none of his predecessors had done before him. The Jesuit, Miamburg, says: "During his pontificate of nine years, he raised the papal power to a height it had never before reached, especially in respect to emperors, kings, princes, and patriarchs, whom he treated more roughly than any of his predecessors whenever he thought himself wronged in the prerogatives of his pontifical power."

Two hundred years of practice on the principles and precedents of Nicholas, enable Gregory VII. to consolidate the Papal power and bring it up to the highest perfection of spiritual and temporal despotism. With him the papacy was the fountain of all authority and power, both Church and State, and this claim was no vain or idle boast, as cotemporary kings and princes realized, especially the Emperor Henry IV. of Germany, who was compelled under excommunication and interdict, as an act of penance, to cross the Alps and visit Rome in midwinter, and stand barefoot, and clad in the linen robes of penitence without the gate of the castle of Canosa for three terrible days until the heart of the princess Matilda, whose influence was all-powerful with Gregory, secured the royal penitent mission, that he might make his submission to the Pope

and obtain absolution and release from the interdict. The lofty language of Gregory expressed but too forcibly his idea of his prerogative as the Vicegerent of God, and sovereign of the kings of the earth. In the midst of his Lateran Council, he pronounced his Bull of Excommunication and Interdict against the Emperor in the following language:

“In full confidence in the authority over all Christian people, granted by God to the delegate of St. Peter,” “for the honor and defence of the Church, in the name of the Almighty God, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, and by the power and authority of St. Peter, I interdict King Henry, son of Henry the Emperor, who by his unexampled pride has risen against the Church, from the government of the whole realm of Germany and Italy. I absolve all Christians from their oaths which they have sworn or may swear to him; and forbid all obedience to him as King.” It was this interdict that brought the Emperor to the feet of the Pope as a penitent, craving mercy and absolution.

Peace between the Emperor and the Pope was of short duration. Through Papal intrigue, Rudolph of Swabia, was elected Emperor by the German Princes, and the Pope soon openly espoused his cause, and proceeded at once to issue his bull of deprivation against Henry. Again, sitting in the midst of his Council, he said:

“Wherefore, trusting in the justice and mercy of God, and of his blessed Mother, the ever-blessed Virgin Mary, on your authority (that of St. Peter and St. Paul), the above-named Henry and all his adherents, I excommunicate and bind in the fetters of anathema; on the part of God Almighty, and on yours, I interdict him from the government of all Germany and Italy. *I deprive him of all royal power and dignity. I prohibit every Christian from rendering him obedience as king. I ab-*



*solve all who have sworn or shall swear allegiance to his sovereignty from their oaths."* \* \* \* On your part, I give and grant to those who shall faithfully adhere to the said Rudolph full absolution of all their sins, and, in entire confidence, blessing in this life and in the life to come. As Henry, for his pride, disobedience, and falsehood, is justly deposed from his royal dignity, so that royal power and dignity are granted to Rudolph for his humility, obedience and truth." This sentence against Henry did not conclude without the declaration that all possessions, dignities, and powers are at the sole disposition of the Church. Gregory continues :

"Come, then, ye fathers and most holy prelates, let all the world understand and know, that since ye have power to bind and loose in heaven, ye have power to take away and to grant empires, kingdoms, principalities, duchies, marquisates, counties, and the possessions of all men. \* \* \* If ye then judge in spiritual affairs, how great must be your power in secular ! and if ye are to judge angels who rule over proud princes, what may ye not do to these their servants ?"

The forgeries of Isidore had yielded their legitimate fruit, and the Papacy had been raised to the height of complete spiritual and temporal supremacy.

The zenith of Papal power, however, was not fully reached till the reign of Innocent III. In his inaugural sermon, he set forth the Papal claims in the following language: "Ye see what manner of servant that is whom the Lord hath set over his people ; no other than the Vicegerent of Christ ; the successor of Peter. He stands in the midst between God and man—below God, above man—less than God, more than man. He judges all, is judged by none—for it is written, I will judge."

During the contest among the princes of Germany



about the election of the Emperor, he issued a bull on the subject, declaring :

“It belongs to the Apostolic See to pass judgment on the election of the Emperor, both in the first and last resort ; in the first, because by her aid and on her account the Empire was transplanted from Constantinople ; by her as the sole authority for this transplanting on her behalf and for her better protection ; in the last resort, because the Emperor receives the final confirmation of his dignity from the Pope ; is consecrated, crowned, invested in imperial dignity by him. That which must be sought is the lawful, the right, the expedient.”

During his reign, excommunications, interdicts, anathemas, and bulls of deprivation fell thick and fast on every hand. The haughty and powerful Philip Augustus of France was completely humbled by him. King John of England was excommunicated, his subjects released from their allegiance, and his kingdom offered to any loyal son of the Church who would take possession of it. In order to reconcile himself with the Pope, the infamous John made over his dominions as a fief to the holy See, and thus became the vassal of the Pope. The barons, stung to the quick by this disgraceful act of the king, rose in rebellion and extorted from him the Magna Charta, the grand charter of English liberty. This threw the Pope into a terrible rage, and he swore “by St. Peter” he would not “leave such a crime unpunished.” He issued a bull anathematizing the barons, and condemning the charter. In this bull, he says :

“Wherefore, as the Lord has said by the mouth of his prophet : ‘I have set thee above the nations and above the kingdoms, to pluck up and to destroy, to build and to plant ;’ and by the mouth of another prophet : ‘break the leagues of ungodliness, and loose the heavy burthens.’

\* \* \* We, therefore, with the advice of our brethren,

altogether reprove and condemn this charter, prohibiting the king, under pain of anathema, from observing it, the barons from exacting its observation; *we declare the said charter, with all its obligations and guarantees, absolutely null and void.*" To such an extent did Innocent carry his pretentious claim to universal Supremacy, that he affirmed:

"As the sun and the moon are placed in the firmament, the greater as the light of the day, and the lesser, of the night; thus are the two powers in the Church; *the pontifical, which, as having the charge of souls, is the greater; and the royal, which is the less, and to which the bodies of men only are intrusted.*"

The maxims and teachings of Gregory VII. and Innocent III. find their fullest expression in the bull "Unam Sanctam," issued by Pope Boniface VIII. In this celebrated Papal bull, Boniface says:

"There are two swords, the spiritual and the temporal: our Lord said not of these two swords, 'it is too much,' but 'it is enough.' *Both are in the power of the Church; the one—the spiritual—to be used by the Church, the other—the material—for the Church; the former—that of priests, the latter—that of kings and soldiers, to be wielded at the command and by the sufferance of the priest.* One sword must be under the other—the temporal under the spiritual.

\* \* \* The spiritual instituted the temporal power, and judges whether that power is well exercised. \* \* \* If the temporal power errs, it is judged by the spiritual. \* \* \* *We, therefore, assert, define and pronounce, that it is necessary to salvation to believe that every human being is subject to the Roman Pontiff.*"

One would think that these exorbitant claims to universal dominion would be sufficient to satisfy the ambition of the Roman Pontiffs, but this is a mistake. There was still another claim yet necessary to make this colossal edifice complete. Infallibility had been claimed by the Church



of Rome for centuries, but the exact location of that infallibility was not determined until July 18th, 1870, when it was definitely located in the Pope. Pius IX. claimed all the high prerogatives of Gregory, Innocent, and Boniface, but these did not satisfy his ambition. In the twenty-third proposition of the Syllabus he condemned the proposition that "The Roman Pontiffs and Œcumenical Councils have exceeded the limits of their power," or "have usurped the rights of princes." According, then, to Pius, neither Gregory, Innocent, nor Boniface, ever "exceeded the limits of their power!" Still this did not bring peace and rest to the soul of the Pontiff. Nothing short of Infallibility could satisfy him, and thus the capstone of the Papal edifice was laid in the Vatican Council, July 18th, 1870, when, added to absolute temporal and spiritual dominion over the universe, the Pope was proclaimed Infallible in doctrine and morals.

Thus we have traced out the Papacy in its Origin, Rise and Development, by the authentic documents of ecclesiastical history. We find no foundation for any one of its exorbitant claims in the New Testament. We have shown it had no existence during the first six centuries of the Christian Church. We have found that it originated in the unholy desire of the Bishops of Rome to "be the greatest in the kingdom of heaven;" and that the opportunity for them to realize this ambitious desire was furnished by the location of the See of Rome in the Imperial City, and the social and political anarchy which followed the breaking up of the Western Empire; and that they were enabled to sustain their claim by the forgeries of Isidore, and the grant of Constantine to Pope Sylvester. We have seen that this claim, born in sin, and supported by forgery, required more than a thousand years to develop itself as it now stands before us—a baseless fabric, tottering to its final overthrow. No ingenuity, no skill, can defend a



ystem thus born in sin, and sustained by fraud, and whose entire history has been one continuous crime against humanity. No power on earth can uphold the crumbling edifice, the avenging hand of God is upon it, and He is making inquisition for the innocent blood it has shed, and the sins it has committed against God and man in the name of the Most High and His Saints. The nations have already cast off the yoke of this despicable tyrant, and "the kings of the earth are eating the flesh" of the mystic Babylon, and "burning her with fire." The wail of "her merchants" shall not stay the judgments of God, for the decree has gone forth, and shall not be recalled until Anti-Christ is destroyed, and the nations and peoples are delivered from his power. May God hasten the consummation.

## CHAPTER XXI.

### LIVES, SUFFERINGS AND MARTYRDOMS

OF THE

### Apostles, Evangelists and Primitive Christians

FROM THE

COMMENCEMENT OF CHRISTIANITY TO THE LATEST  
POPISH PERSECUTIONS.

---

INCLUDING AN ACCOUNT OF THE INQUISITION, THE BAR-  
THOLOMEW MASSACRE, AND GENERAL PERSE-  
CUTIONS THROUGHOUT FRANCE, GER-  
MANY, ITALY AND ENGLAND.

---

#### I. ST. STEPHEN.

This early martyr was elected, with six others, as a priest out of the Lord's seventy disciples. He was an able and successful preacher. The principal persons belonging to five Jewish synagogues entered into many altercations with him, but he, by the soundness of his doctrine, and the strength of his arguments, overcame them all, which so much irritated them, that they bribed false witnesses to accuse him of blaspheming God and Moses. On being carried before the council, he made a noble defence: but that so much exasperated his judges, that they resolved to condemn him. At this instant St. Stephen saw a vision from

## CONVENT LIFE.

This is no heaven;  
And yet they told me that all heaven was here  
This life a foretaste of a life more dear;  
That all beyond this convent cell  
Was but a fairer hell;  
That all was ecstasy and song within,  
That all without was tempest, gloom, and sin.  
Ah, me, it is not so—  
This is no heaven, I know.  
And yet for this I left my girlhood's bower,  
Shook the fresh dews from April's budding flowers;  
Cut off my golden hair,  
Forsook the dear and fair;  
And fled, as from a serpent's eyes,  
Home and its holiest charities.



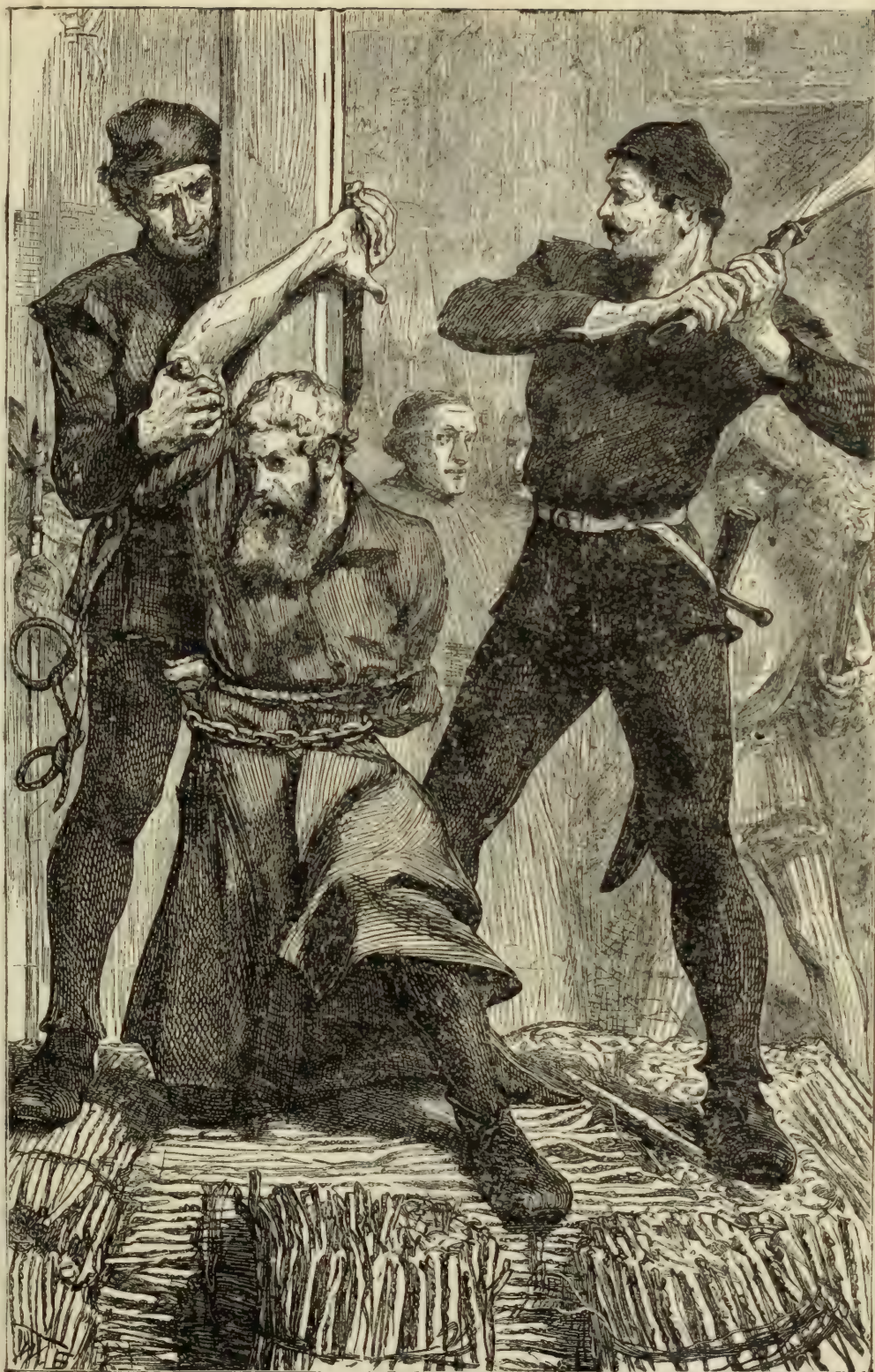
THE HISTORY OF THE  
CITY OF BOSTON  
FROM 1630 TO 1800

By SAMUEL JOHNSON, Esq. of the Middle Temple, Barrister at Law.

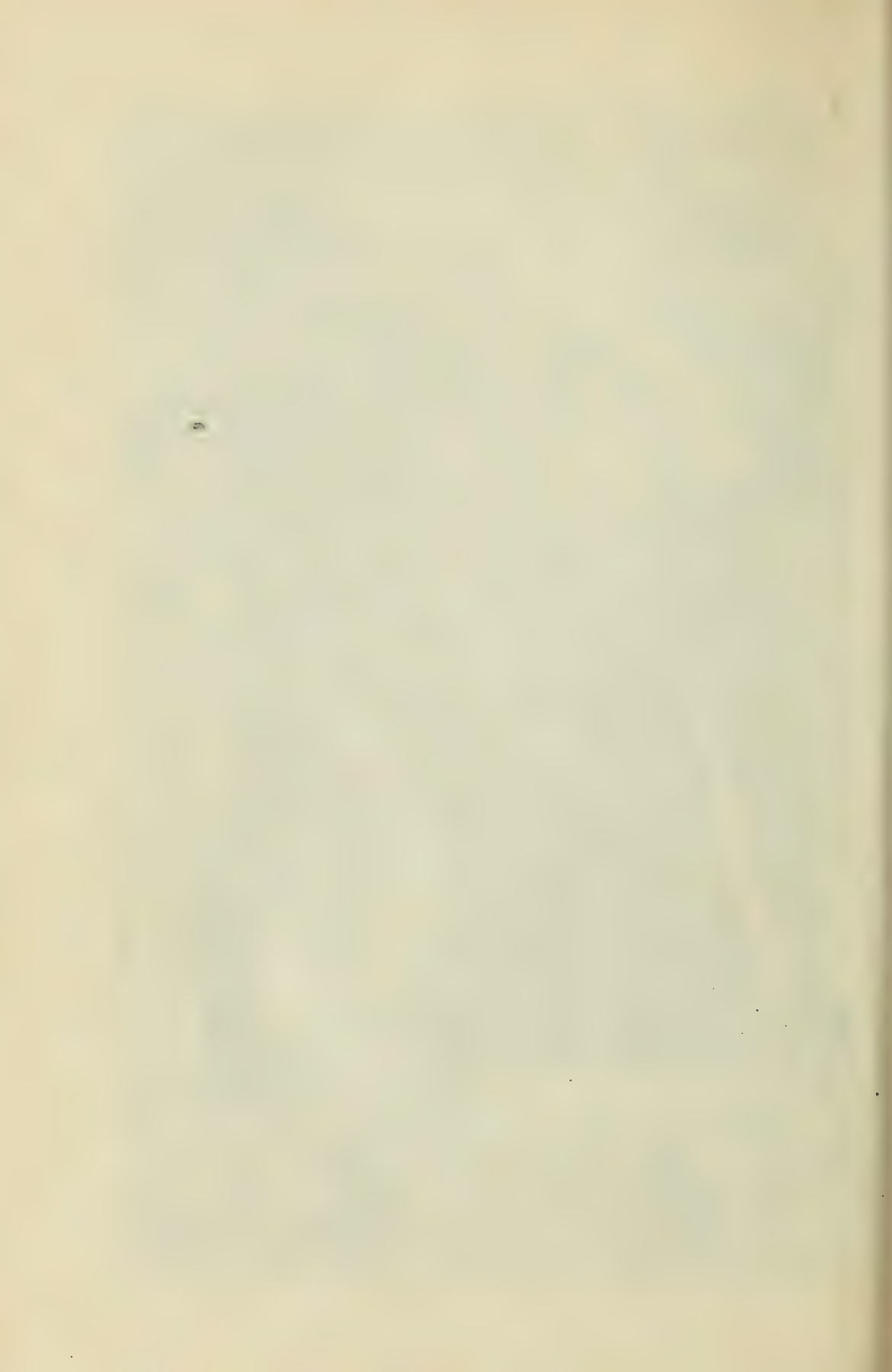
London: Printed by J. DODD, in Pall-mall.

1790. 4 vols. 8vo. 12s. 6d. per set.  
This work is a history of the city of Boston, from its first settlement in 1630, to the year 1800. It is a history of the city, and not of the colony, as the colony was not a separate entity until 1780. The work is divided into four volumes, and is written in a clear and concise style. It is a valuable work for the student of American history, and for the general reader who is interested in the history of the city of Boston.

The first volume of this work contains a history of the city of Boston from 1630 to 1700. It is a history of the city, and not of the colony, as the colony was not a separate entity until 1780. The work is divided into four volumes, and is written in a clear and concise style. It is a valuable work for the student of American history, and for the general reader who is interested in the history of the city of Boston.



"The hand, with which he had struck the priest, was then cut off". Page 582.





heaven, which represented Jesus, in his glorified state, sitting at the right hand of God. This vision so greatly rejoiced him, that he exclaimed, in raptures, "Behold I see the heavens open, and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God." This caused him to be condemned, and, having dragged him out of the city, they stoned him to death. On the spot where he was martyred, Eudocia, the empress of the emperor Theodosius, erected a superb church, and the memory of him is annually celebrated on the 26th day of December.

The death of Stephen was succeeded by a severe persecution in Jerusalem, in which 2000 Christians, with Nicanor the deacon, were martyred; and many others obliged to leave that country.

## II. ST. JAMES THE GREAT.

He was a Galilean, and the son of Zebedee, a fisherman, the elder brother of St. John, and a relation to Christ himself; for his mother Salome was cousin-german to the Virgin Mary. Being one day with his father fishing in the sea of Galilee, he and his brother John were called by our Savior to be his disciples. They cheerfully obeyed the mandate, and leaving their father, followed Jesus.

Christ called these brothers Boanerges, or the sons of Thunder, on account of their vigorous minds, and impetuous tempers.

When Herod Agrippa was made governor of Judea by the emperor Galigula, he raised a persecution against the Christians, and particularly singled out James as an object of his vengeance. This martyr, on being condemned to death, showed such an intrepidity of spirit, and constancy of mind, that even his accuser was struck with admiration, and became a convert to Christianity. This transition so enraged the people in power, that they condemned him likewise to death; when James the apostle

and his penitent accuser were both beheaded on the same day, and with the same sword. These events took place in the year of Christ 44; and the 25th of July was fixed by the church for the commemoration of this saint's martyrdom.

### III. ST. PHILIP.

This apostle and martyr was born at Bethsaida, in Galilee, and was the first called by the name of Disciple. He was employed in several important commissions by Christ, and being deputed to teach in Upper Asia, labored diligently in his apostleship. He then traveled into Phrygia, and arriving at Heliopolis, found the inhabitants so sunk in idolatry as to worship a large serpent. This so enraged the magistrates that they committed him to prison, had him severely scourged, and afterwards crucified. His friend St. Bartholomew found an opportunity of taking down the body, and burying it; for which, however, he was very near suffering the same fate. His martyrdom happened eight years after that of St. James the Great, A. D. 52.

### IV. ST. MATTHEW.

This evangelist, apostle and martyr, was born at Nazareth, in Galilee, but resided chiefly at Capernaum, on account of his business, which was that of a toll-gatherer, to collect tribute of such as had occasion to pass the sea of Galilee. On being called as a disciple, he immediately complied, and left everything to follow Christ. After the ascension of his master, he continued preaching the gospel in Judea about nine years. Intending to leave Judea, in order to go and preach among the Gentiles, he wrote his gospel in Hebrew, for the use of the Jewish converts; but it was afterwards translated into Greek by St. James the Less. He then went to Ethiopia, ordained preachers, settled churches, and made converts. He afterwards proceeded to



arthia, where he had the same success; but returning to thiopia, he was slain by a halberd, in the city of Nadabar, about the year of Christ 60.

### V. ST. MARK.

This evangelist and martyr was born of Jewish parents, of the tribe of Levi. It is imagined that he was converted to christianity by St. Peter, whom he served as an amanuensis, and whom he attended in all his travels. Being entreated by the converts at Rome to commit to writing the admirable discourses they had heard from St. Peter and himself, he complied with this request, and composed his gospel accordingly, in the Greek language. He then went to Egypt, and constituted a bishopric at Alexandria: afterwards he proceeded to Libya, where he made many converts. On returning to Alexandria, some of the Egyptians, exasperated at his success, determined on his death. They therefore tied his feet, dragged him through the streets, left him bruised in a dungeon all night, and the next day burned his body. This happened on the 25th of April, on which day the church commemorates his martyrdom. His bones were carefully gathered up by the Christians, decently interred and afterwards removed to Venice, where he is considered as the tutelar saint and patron of the state.

### VI. ST. JAMES THE LESS.

This apostle and martyr was called so to distinguish him from St. James the Great. He was the son, by a first wife, of Joseph, the reputed father of Christ: he was, after the Lord's ascension, elected bishop of Jerusalem: he wrote his general epistles to all christians and converts whatever, to suppress a dangerous error then propagating, viz: "That faith in Christ was alone sufficient for salvation, without good works." The Jews, being at this time greatly enraged that St. Paul had escaped their fury, by appealing to Rome,



determined to wreak their vengeance on James, who was now ninety-four years of age: they accordingly threw him down, beat, bruised, and stoned him; and then dashed out his brains with a club, such as was used by fullers in dressing cloths.

#### VII. ST. MATTHIAS.

This apostle and martyr was called to the apostleship after the death of Christ, to supply the vacant place of Judas, who had betrayed his master, and was likewise one of the seventy disciples. He was martyred at Jerusalem, being first stoned and then beheaded.

#### VIII. ST. ANDREW.

This apostle and martyr was the brother of St. Peter, and preached the gospel to many Asiatic nations. On arriving at Edessa, the governor of the country, named Egeas, threatened him for preaching against the idols there worshipped. St. Andrew persisting in the propagation of his doctrines, he was ordered to be crucified on a cross, two ends of which were transversely fixed in the ground. He boldly told his accusers, that he would not have preached the glory of the cross, had he feared to die on it. And again, when they came to crucify him, he said, that he coveted the cross and longed to embrace it. He was fastened to the cross, not with nails but cords, that his death might be more slow. In this situation he continued two days, preaching the greatest part of the time to the people; and expired on the 30th of November.

#### IX. ST. PETER.

This great apostle and martyr was born at Bethsaida, in Galilee, being the son of Jonah, a fisherman, which employment St. Peter himself followed. He was persuaded by his brother to turn Christian, when Christ gave him the name of Cephas, implying in the Syriac language, a rock. He was

called, at the same time as his brother, to be an apostle; gave uncommon proofs of his zeal for the service of Christ, and always appeared as the principal speaker among the apostles. He had, however, the weakness to deny his master after his apprehension, though he defended him at the time; but the sincerity of his repentance made an atonement for the atrociousness of his crime.

After the death of Christ, the Jews still continued to persecute the Christians, and ordered several of the apostles, among whom was Peter, to be scourged. This punishment they bore with the greatest fortitude, and rejoiced that they were thought worthy to suffer for the sake of their Redeemer.

When Herod Agrippa caused St. James the Great to be put to death, and found that it pleased the Jews, he resolved in order to ingratiate himself with the people, that Peter should fall the next sacrifice. He was accordingly apprehended, and thrown into prison; but an angel of the Lord released him, which so enraged Herod, that he ordered the centinels who guarded the dungeon where he had been confined, to be put to death. St. Peter, after various other miracles, retired to Rome, where he defeated all the artifices, and confounded the magic, of Simon, the magician, a great favorite of the emperor Nero; he likewise converted to Christianity one of the concubines of that Monarch, which exasperated the tyrant, that he ordered both St. Peter and St. Paul to be apprehended. During the time of their confinement, they converted two of the captains of the guards, and forty-seven other persons, to Christianity. Having been nine months in prison, Peter was brought out from prison for execution, when, after being severely scourged, he was crucified with his head downwards; which position, however, was at his own request. Before we quit this article, it is requisite to observe, that previous to the death of St. Peter, his wife suffered martyrdom for the faith of



Christ, and was exhorted, when going to be put to death, to remember her Savior.

## X. ST. PAUL.

This apostle and martyr was a Jew of the tribe of Benjamin, born at Tarsus in Cilicia, and, before his conversion, was called Saul. He was a great enemy to, and persecutor of, the Christians; and a principal promoter of the death of Stephen. While on his way to Damascus, the glory of the Lord came upon him, he was struck to the earth, and was afflicted with blindness during three days; on his recovery from which, he immediately became a professor, an apostle, and ultimately a martyr for the religion he had formerly persecuted. Amongst his labors in spreading the doctrine of Christ, he converted to the faith Sergius Paulus, the pro-consul of Cyprus, on which he took his name, and, as some suppose, was from thence called Paulus instead of Saulus. After his many labors he took to him Barnabas, and went up to Jerusalem, to Peter, James, and John, where he was ordained, and sent out with Barnabas to preach to the Gentiles. At Iconium, St. Paul and St. Barnabas were near being stoned to death by the enraged Jews; upon which they fled to Lycaonia. At Lystra, St. Paul was stoned, dragged out of the city, and left for dead. He, however, happily revived, and escaped to Derbe. At Philippi, Paul and Silas were imprisoned and whipped; and both were again persecuted at Thessalonica. Being afterwards taken at Jerusalem, he was sent to Cæsarea, but appealed to Cæsar at Rome. Here he continued a prisoner at large for two years; and at length being released, he visited the churches of Greece and Rome, and preached in France and Spain. Returning to Rome, he was again apprehended, and, by the order of Nero, martyred, by being beheaded, on the same day on which Peter was crucified, but in the following year.



## XI. ST. JUDE.

This apostle and martyr, the brother of James, was commonly called Thaddæus. Being sent to Edessa, he wrought many miracles, and made many converts, which stirring up the resentment of people in power, he was crucified, A. D. 72.

## XII. ST. BARTHOLOMEW.

This apostle and martyr preached in several countries, performed many miracles, and healed various diseases. He translated St. Matthew's gospel into the Indian language, and propagated it in that country; but at length, the idolaters growing impatient with his doctrines, severely beat, crucified, and slew him, and then cut off his head.

## XIII. ST. THOMAS.

He was called by this name in Syriac, but Didymus in Greek; he was an apostle and martyr, and preached in Parthia and India, where, displeasing the Pagan priests, he was martyred by being thrust through with a spear.

## XIV. ST. LUKE THE EVANGELIST.

This martyr was the author of a most excellent gospel. He travelled with St. Paul to Rome, and preached to divers barbarous nations, till the priests in Greece hanged him on an olive tree.

## XV. ST. SIMON.

This apostle and martyr was distinguished, from his zeal, by the name of Zelotes. He preached with great success in Mauritania, and other parts of Africa, and even in Britain, where, though he made many converts, he was crucified, A. D. 74.

## XVI. ST. JOHN.

He was distinguished for being a prophet, apostle, divine, evangelist, and martyr. He is called the beloved disciple, and was brother to James the Great. He was pre-

viously a disciple of John the Baptist, and afterwards not only one of the twelve apostles, but one of the three to whom Christ communicated the most secret passages of his life. He founded churches at Smyrna, Pergamus, Sardis, Philadelphia, Laodicea, and Thyatira, to whom he directs his book of Revelations. Being at Ephesus, he was ordered by the emperor Domitian to be sent bound to Rome, where he was condemned to be cast into a caldron of boiling oil. But here a miracle appeared in his favor; the oil did him no injury, and Domitian, therefore, not being able to put him to death, banished him to Patmos, to work at the mines. He was, however, recalled by Nerva, who succeeded Domitian; but was deemed a martyr on account of his having undergone an execution, though it did not take effect. He wrote his epistles, gospel, and revelations all in a different style; but they are all equally admired. He was the only apostle who escaped a violent death, and lived the longest of any of them, being nearly 100 years of age at the time of his death.

#### XVII. ST. BARNABAS.

He was a native of Cyprus, but of Jewish parents; the time of his death is uncertain, but it is supposed to be about the year of Christ 73.

---

### ACCOUNT OF THE FIRST PRIMITIVE PERSECUTION.

---

BEGINNING IN THE YEAR 67, UNDER THE REIGN OF THE  
EMPEROR NERO.

The first persecution in the primitive ages of the Church was under Nero Domitius, the sixth emperor of Rome, A. D. 67. This monarch reigned for the space of five years



th tolerable credit to himself; but then gave way to the greatest extravagance of temper, and to the most atrocious barbarities. The barbarities inflicted on the Christians, during the first persecution, were such that excited the sympathy of even the Romans themselves. Nero nicely refined upon cruelty, and contrived all manner of punishments for his victims.

He had some sewed up in the skins of wild beasts, and then worried by dogs till they expired; and others dressed in shirts made stiff with wax, fixed to axle-trees, and set on fire in his garden. This persecution was general throughout the Roman Empire; but it increased rather than diminished the spirit of Christianity. Besides St. Paul and St. Peter, many others, whose names have not been transmitted to posterity, and who were mostly their converts and followers, suffered.

Nero, finding that a severe odium was cast upon him, determined to charge the whole upon the Christians, at least to excuse himself and have an opportunity of fresh persecutions. But the savagery of this inhuman monster, far from crushing out the faith which he hated, only added, in God's good providence, to its extension. The hurried ruins of the noble Circus, the bleeding bodies of the slaughtered Christians, the desolated city, when contrasted with the meek, inoffensive lives of those who suffered such torture, and to whose account the tyrant dared lay the destruction of that city, exercised an influence amongst the people in favor of Christianity, the extent of which it is impossible to overrate.

Crastus, the chamberlain of Corinth; Aristarchus, the Macedonian; Trophimus, an Ephesian by birth, and a Gentile by religion, converted by St. Paul; Joseph, commonly called Barsabas, and usually deemed one of the seventy; and Ananias, Bishop of Damascus, are among those who perished during this persecution.



## PERSECUTIONS OF THE WALDENSES IN FRANCE

Before this time, the church of Christ was tainted with many of the errors of popery, and superstition began to predominate; but a few, who perceived the pernicious tendency of such errors, determined to show the light of the gospel in its real purity, and to disperse those clouds which artful priests had raised about it, in order to delude the people. The principal of these worthies was Berengarius, who, about the year 1000, boldly preached gospel truths according to their primitive purity. Many, from conviction, went over to his doctrine, and were, on that account, called Berengarians. Berengarius was succeeded by Peter Bruis, who preached at Toulouse, under the protection of an earl, named Hildephonsus; and the whole tenets of the reformers, with the reasons of their separation from the church of Rome, were published in a book written by Bruis, under the title of *ANTI-CHRIST*.

In the year 1140, the number of the reformed was very great, and the probability of their increasing alarmed the pope, who wrote to several princes to banish them from their dominions, and employed many learned men to write against them.

In 1147, Henry of Toulouse, being deemed their most eminent preacher, they were called Henricians; and as they would not admit of any proofs relative to religion but what could be deduced from the scriptures themselves, the popish party gave them the name of Apostolics. Peter Waldo, or Valdo, a native of Lyons, at this time became a strenuous opposer of popery; and from him the reformed received the appellation of Waldoys, or Waldenses. Waldo was a man eminent for his learning and benevolence; and his doctrines were adopted by multitudes. The bishop of Lyons taking umbrage at the freedom with which he treated the pope and the Romish clergy, sent to

admonish him to refrain in future from such discourses ; but Waldo answered, "That he could not be silent in a cause of such importance as the salvation of men's souls ; wherein he must obey God rather than man."

## ACCUSATIONS OF PETER WALDO AGAINST POPERY.

His principal accusations against the Roman Catholics were, that they affirm the church of Rome to be the only infallible church of Christ upon earth ; and that the pope is its head, and the vicar of Christ ; that they hold the absurd doctrine of trans-substantiation, insisting that the bread and wine given in the sacrament is the very identical body and blood of Christ which was nailed to the cross ; that they believe there is a place called purgatory, where the souls of persons, after this life, are purged from the sins of mortality, and that the pains and penalties here inflicted may be abated according to the masses said by and the money paid to the priests ; that they teach the communion of one kind, or the receiving the wafer only, is sufficient for the lay people, though the clergy must be indulged with both bread and wine ; that they pray to the Virgin Mary and saints, though their prayers ought to be immediately to God ; that they pray for souls departed, though God decides their fate immediately on the decease of the person ; that they will not perform the service of the church in a language understood by the people in general ; that they place their devotion in the number of prayers, and not in the intent of the heart ; that they forbid marriage to the clergy, though God allowed it ; and that they use many things in baptism, though Christ used only water. When pope Alexander the Third was informed of these transactions, he excommunicated Waldo and his ad-



herents, and commanded the bishop of Lyons to exterminate them. thus began the papal persecutions against the Waldenses.

### TENETS OF THE WALDENSES.

1. That holy oil is not to be mingled in baptism.
2. That prayers used over things inanimate are superstitious.
3. Flesh may be eaten in Lent; the clergy may marry; and auricular confession is unnecessary.
4. Confirmation is no sacrament: we are not bound to pay obedience to the pope; ministers should live upon tithes; no dignity sets one clergyman above another, for their superiority can only be drawn from real worth.
5. Images in churches are absurd; image-worship is idolatry; the pope's indulgences ridiculous; and the miracles pretended to be done by the church of Rome are false.
6. Fornication and public stews ought not to be allowed; purgatory is a fiction; and deceased persons, called saints, ought not to be prayed to.
7. Extreme unction is not a sacrament; and masses, indulgences, and prayers, are of no service to the dead.
8. The Lord's prayer ought to be the rule of all other prayers.

Waldo remained three years undiscovered in Lyons, though the utmost diligence was used to apprehend him: but at length he found an opportunity of escaping from the place of his concealment to the mountains of Dauphiny. He soon after found means to propagate his doctrines in Dauphiny and Picardy, which so exasperated Philip, king of France, that he put the latter province, which contained most of the sectaries, under military execution; destroying above 300 gentlemen's seats, erasing some walled towns burning many of the reformed, and driving others into Flanders and Germany.



### CANON LAW.

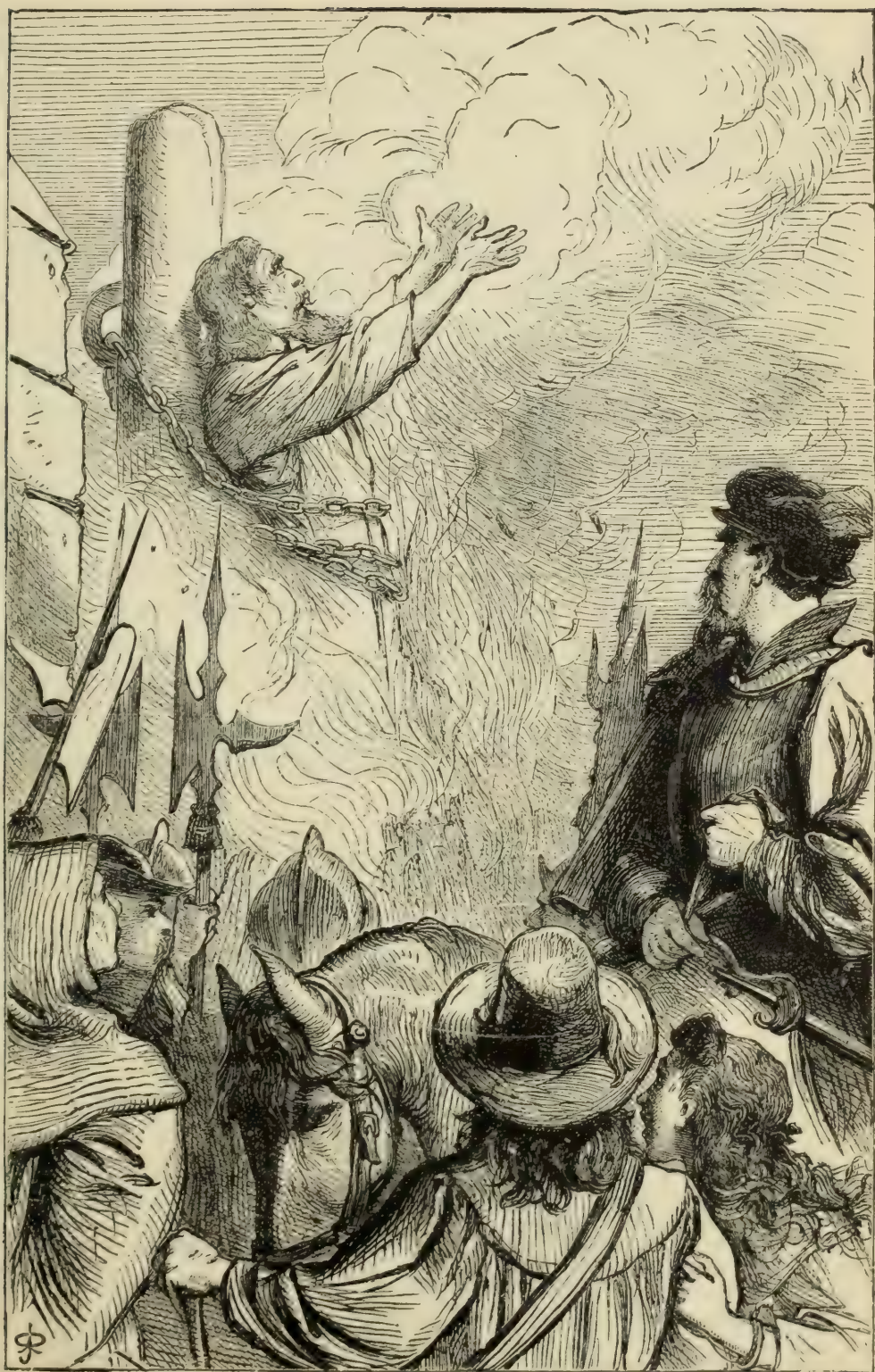
All human power is from evil, and must therefore be under the Pope.

The Pope has the right to annul State laws, treaties, constitutions, etc., and to absolve from obedience thereto as soon as they seem detrimental to the rights of the Church, or those of the clergy.

The Pope can annul all legal relations of those in ban, and can release from every obligation, oath and vow, either before or after being made.

[460]





"Clapped his hands thrice together." Page 586.





Notwithstanding these persecutions, the reformed religion seemed to flourish ; and the Waldenses, in various parts, became more numerous than ever. At length the pope accused them of heresy, and the monks of immorality. These slanders they, however, refuted ; but the pope, incensed at their increase, used all means for their extirpation ; such as excommunications, anathemas, canons, constitutions, decrees, etc., by which they were rendered incapable of holding places of trust, honor, or profit ; their lands were seized, their goods confiscated, and they were not permitted to be buried in consecrated ground. Some of the Waldenses having taken refuge in Spain, Aldephonsus, king of Arragon, at the instigation of the pope, published an edict, strictly ordering all Roman Catholics to persecute them wherever they could be found ; and decreeing that all who gave them the least assistance should be deemed traitors.

The year after this edict Adelphonsus was severely punished by the hand of Providence, for his son was defeated in a great battle, and 50,000 of his men slain, by which a considerable portion of his kingdom fell into the hands of the Moors.

The reformed ministers continued to preach boldly against the Romish church ; and Peter Waldo, in particular, wherever he went, asserted, that the pope was anti-christ, that mass was an abomination, that the host was an idol, and that purgatory was a fable.

## ORIGIN OF THE INQUISITION.

These proceedings of Waldo, and his reformed companions, occasioned the origin of inquisitors ; for pope Innocent III. authorized certain monks inquisitors, to find and deliver over the reformed to the secular power. The monks, upon the least surmise or information, gave up the reformed to the magistrate, who delivered them to the executioner ;

for the process was short, as accusation supplied the place of evidence, and a fair trial was never granted to the accused.

### CRUELITIES OF THE POPE, AND ARTIFICES OF DOMINIC.

When the pope found that these cruel means had not the desired effect, he determined to try others of a milder nature; he therefore sent several learned monks to preach among the Waldenses, and induce them to change their opinions. Among these monks was one Dominic, who appeared extremely zealous in the cause of popery. He instituted an order, which, from him, was called the order of Dominican friars; and the members of this order have ever since been the principal inquisitors in every country into which that horrible tribunal has been introduced. Their power was unlimited; they proceeded against whom they pleased, without any consideration of age, sex, or rank. However infamous the accusers, the accusation was deemed valid; and even anonymous informations were thought sufficient evidence. The dearest friends or kindred could not, without danger, serve any one who was imprisoned on account of religion; to convey to those who were confined a little straw, or give them a cup of water, was called favoring the heretics; no lawyer dared to plead even for his own brother, or notary register anything in favor of the reformed. The malice of the Papists, indeed, went beyond the grave, and the bones of many Waldenses, who had been long dead, were dug up and burnt. If a man on his death-bed were accused of being a follower of Waldo, his estates were confiscated, and the heir defrauded of his inheritance; and some were even obliged to make pilgrimages to the Holy Land, while the Dominicans took possession of their houses and property, which they refused to surrender to the owners upon their return.



## PRISONS FILLED WITH CHRISTIANS.

A knight named Enraudus, being accused of embracing the opinions of Waldo, was burnt at Paris A. D., 1201. About 1228 such numbers of the reformed were apprehended that the archbishops of Aix, Arles, and Narbonne, took compassion on them, and thus expressed themselves to the inquisitors ; “ We hear that you have apprehended such a number of Waldenses, that it is not only impossible to defray the charge of their food and confinement, but to provide lime and stone to build prisons for them.”

## AVARICE AND INJUSTICE OF BORALLI.

In 1380, a monk inquisitor, named Francis Boralli, had a commission granted him by pope Clement VII. to search for, and punish the Waldenses in Aix, Ambrune, Geneva, Savoy, Orange, Arles, Vienne, Avignon, etc. He went to Ambrune, and summoned all the inhabitants to appear before him ; when those who were found to be of the reformed religion, were delivered over to the secular power, and burnt ; and those who did not appear, were excommunicated for contumacy, and had their effects confiscated. In the distribution of the effects, the clergy had two-thirds of the property of all who were condemned, and the secular power one-third. All the reformed inhabitants of the other places, named in this ecclesiastic, were equal sufferers.

## PERSECUTIONS IN DAUPHINY.

In 1400, the Waldenses who resided in the valley of Pragela, were, at the instigation of some priests, suddenly attacked by a body of troops, who plundered their houses, murdered many, and drove others into the Alps, *where great numbers were frozen to death*, it being in the depth of winter. In 1460, a persecution was carried on in Dauphiny against the Waldenses, by the archbishop of Ambrune,

who employed a monk, named John Vayleti, who proceeded with such violence, that not only the Waldenses, but even many Papists, were sufferers ; for if any of them expressed compassion or pity for the inoffensive people, who were so cruelly treated, they were accused of favoring the Waldenses, and punished. At length Vayleti's proceedings became so intolerable, that a great number of the Papists themselves addressed a petition against him to Louis XI. king of France, who granted the request of the petitioners, and sent an order to the governor of Dauphiny to stop the persecution. Vayleti, however, by order of the archbishop, still continued it ; for, taking advantage of the last clause of the edict, he pretended that he did nothing contrary to the king's precept, who had ordered punishment to such as affirmed anything against the holy Catholic faith. This persecution at length concluded with the death of the archbishop, which happened in 1487.

#### ATTEMPTS OF THE POPE TO EXTERMINATE THE WALDENSES.

Pope Innocent VIII. in 1488, determined to persecute the Waldenses. To this end he sent Albert de Capitaneis, archdeacon of Cremona, to France ; who, on arriving in Dauphiny, craved the assistance of the king's lieutenant to exterminate the Waldenses from the valley of Loyse : the lieutenant readily granted his assistance, and marched a body of troops to the place ; but when they arrived at the valley, they found that it had been deserted by the inhabitants, who had retired to the mountain, and hid themselves in caverns, etc. The archdeacon and lieutenant immediately followed them with the troops, and apprehending many they cast them headlong from the precipices, by which they were dashed to pieces. Several, however, retired to the innermost parts of the caverns, and knowing the intricacies, were able to conceal themselves. The archdeacon and



lieutenant, not being able to come at them, ordered the mouths of the caves to be filled with fagots, which being lighted, those within were suffocated. On searching the caves, 400 infants were found smothered, either in their cradles or in their mother's arms ; and, upon the whole, about 3000 men, women, and children, were destroyed in this persecution.

After this tragical work, the lieutenant and archdeacon proceeded with the troops to Pragela and Frassanier, in order to persecute the Waldenses in those parts. But these having heard of the fate of their brethren in the valley of Loyse, thought proper to arm themselves ; and by fortifying the different passes, and bravely disputing the passages through them, they so harassed the troops, that the lieutenant was compelled to retire without effecting his purpose.

### THE KING OF FRANCE FAVORS THE WALDENSES.

In 1404, Anthony Fabri, and Christopher de Salience, having a commission to persecute the Waldenses of Dauphiny, put some to death, sequestered the estates of others, and confiscated the goods of many ; but Louis XII. coming to the crown in 1498, the Waldenses petitioned him for a restitution of their property. The king determined to have the affair impartially canvassed, and sent a commissioner of his own, together with a commissary from the pope, to make the proper inquiries. The witnesses against the Waldenses having been examined, the innocence of those poor people evidently appeared, and the king's commissioner declared, "That he only desired to be as good a Christian as the worst of them." When this favorable report was made to the king, he immediately gave orders that the Waldenses should have their property restored to them. The archbishop of Ambrune, having the greatest quantity



of these poor people's goods, it was generally imagined that he would set a laudable example to others, by being the first to restore them. The archbishop, however, declared that he would not restore any of the property, for it was incorporated with, and became part of, his archbishopric. He, however, with an affectation of candor, offered to relinquish several vineyards, of which he had dispossessed the Waldenses, provided the lords of Dauphiny would restore all they had taken from those poor people; but this the lords absolutely refused, being as desirous of keeping their plunder as the archbishop himself.

The Waldenses, finding that they were not likely to recover any of their property, again appealed to the king; and the monarch having attended to their complaints, wrote to the archbishop; but that artful and avaricious prelate replied, "That at the commencement of the persecution the Waldenses had been excommunicated by the pope, in consequence of which their goods were distrained; therefore, till the sentence of excommunication was taken off, which had occasioned them to be seized, they could not be restored with propriety." This plea was allowed to be reasonable; and application was ineffectually made to the pope to remove the sentence of excommunication: for the archbishop, supposing this would be the case, had used all his interest at Rome to prevent the application from succeeding.

### PROGRESS OF THE WALDENSES.

At length this sect having spread from Dauphiny into several other provinces, became very numerous in Provence. At their first arrival, Provence was almost a desert, but by their great industry it soon abounded in corn, wine, oil, etc. The pope, by being often near them at his seat at Avignon, heard occasionally many things concerning their differing from the church of Rome, which greatly exasperated him, and he determined to persecute them. Proceeding to

extremities, under the sanction of his ecclesiastical authority only, without consulting the king of France, the latter became alarmed, and sent his master of requests, and his confessor, to examine into the affair. On their return they reported the Waldenses were not such dangerous or bad people as they had been represented; that they lived with perfect honesty, were friendly to all, caused their children to be baptized, had them taught the Lord's prayer, creed, and ten commandments; expounded the scriptures with purity, kept the Lord's day sacred, feared God, honored the king, and wished well to the state. "Then," said the king, "they are much better Christians than myself or my Catholic subjects, and therefore they shall not be persecuted." He was as good as his word, and sent orders to stop the persecution.

#### PUNISHMENT OF THE MERINDOLIANS AND OTHERS.

It happened that some time after, the inhabitants of Merindol received a summons, that the heads of the families of that town should appear before the ecclesiastical court. When they appeared, and confessed themselves Waldenses, they were ordered to be burnt, their families outlawed, their habitations laid waste, and the woods that surrounded the town to be cut down two hundred paces square, so that the whole should be rendered desolate. The king, however, being informed of this barbarous decree sent to countermand the execution of it; but his orders were suppressed by cardinal Tournon, and the greatest cruelties were consequently exercised.

The president of Opede sent several companies of soldiers to burn some villages occupied by Protestants, which they performed, murdering the men, ravishing the women, cutting off the breasts of mothers, and suffering the infants to famish, etc., etc. The president likewise proclaimed, that



none should give any manner of assistance or sustenance, to the Waldenses. On reaching another small town, the president found there only a boy, the other inhabitants having deserted the place. The boy he ordered to be shot by the soldier to whom he had surrendered, and then destroyed every house in the place. He next marched against Cabrieres, and began to cannonade it. At this time there were not above sixty poor peasants, with their families, in the town; and they sent him word, that he need not expend powder and shot upon the place, as they were willing to open the gates and surrender, provided they might be permitted to retire with their families, to Geneva or Germany. This was promised them; but the gates were no sooner opened, than the president ordered all the men to be cut to pieces, which cruel command was immediately executed. Several women and children were confined in a large barn, which was set fire to, and every one perished in the flames. Other women and children having taken refuge in a church, the president ordered one of his officers to go in and kill them all: the captain, at first, refused, saying, "Such unnecessary cruelty is unbecoming a military man." The president, being displeased at this reply, said, "I charge you, on pain of being accused of mutiny, immediately to obey my orders." The captain, afraid of the consequences, thought proper to comply. The president then sent a detachment of his troops to ravage the town of Costa, which was accomplished with the greatest barbarity.

At length the judgment of God overtook this monster of cruelty; for he was afflicted with a dreadful flux, and a painful strangury. In this extremity he sent for a surgeon from Arles, who, on examining his disorders, told him they were of a singular nature, and much worse than he had seen them in any other person. He then took occasion to reprehend him for his cruelties, and told him, that unless he repented, he might expect that the hand of Heaven would







First time of Torturing. Page 469.





### EXTRACT FROM JESUIT'S OATH.

I do now renounce and disown my allegiance as due to any heretical King, Prince or State, named Protestant, or Liberals, or obedience to any of their laws or magistrates or officers.

I do further declare that the doctrine of the churches of England and Scotland, of the Calvinists, Huguenots and others of the name Protestant or Liberals, to be damnable, and they themselves to be damned who will not forsake the same.

I do further declare that I will help, assist and advise all or any of His Holiness's agents, in any place where I shall be, in Switzerland, Germany, Holland, Denmark, Sweden, Norway, England, Ireland or America, or in any other kingdom or territory I shall come to, and do my utmost to extirpate the heretical Protestant or liberal doctrines, and to destroy all their pretended powers, regal or otherwise. [469]

fall still heavier upon him. On hearing these words, the president, greatly enraged, ordered his attendants to seize upon the surgeon as a heretic. The surgeon, however, found means to escape, and soon after, the president's disorder increased to a terrible degree. As he had found some little ease from the operations of the surgeon, he again sent to him, for he had been informed of the place of his retirement: his message was accompanied with an apology for his former behavior, and a promise of personal security. The surgeon, forgiving what was past, went to him, but too late to be of any service; for he found him raving like a madman, and crying out, that he had a fire within him. After blaspheming for some time, he expired in the most dreadful agonies.

---

## POPISH MODES OF TORTURE.

---

### THE FIRST TIME OF TORTURING.

A prisoner on refusing to comply with the iniquitous demand of the inquisitors, by confessing all the crimes with which they thought proper to charge him, was immediately conveyed to the torture-room, where no light appeared but what issued from two candles. That the cries of the sufferers might not be heard by other prisoners, the room was lined with a kind of quilting, which covered all the crevices and deadened the sound. The prisoner's horror was extreme on entering this infernal place, when suddenly he was surrounded by six wretches, who, after preparing the tortures, stripped him naked to his drawers. He was then laid upon his back on a kind of stand, elevated a few feet from the floor. They commenced by putting an

iron collar round his neck, and a ring to each foot, which fastened him to the stand. His limbs being thus stretched out, they wound two ropes round each arm and two round each thigh; which being passed under the scaffold, through holes made for that purpose, were all drawn tight at the same instant of time, by four of the men, on a given signal. The pains which immediately succeeded were intolerable; the ropes, which were of a small size, cut through the prisoner's flesh to the bone, making the blood gush out at all the different places which were bound. If he persisted in not making any confession of what the inquisitors required, the ropes were drawn in this manner four times successively. A physician and surgeon attended, and often felt his temples, so as to judge of the danger he might be in. By these means his agonies were for a short time suspended, but only that he might have sufficient opportunity of recovering his vitality to sustain further torture. During this extremity of anguish, while the tender frame is being torn, as it were, in pieces, while at every pore it feels the sharpest pangs of death, and the agonized soul is just ready to burst forth from its wretched mansion, the ministers of the Inquisition have the obduracy of heart to look on without emotion, and calmly to advise the poor distracted creature to confess his imputed guilt, by doing which he may obtain pardon and receive absolution. All this, however, was ineffectual with the prisoner, whose mind was strengthened by a sweet consciousness of innocence, and the divine consolation of religion. While he was thus suffering, the physician and surgeon were so barbarous as to declare that if he died under the torture he would be guilty, by his obstinacy, of self-murder. The last time the ropes were drawn tight, he grew so exceedingly weak, by the stoppage of the circulation of his blood, and the pains he endured, that he fainted away; upon which he was unloosed and carried back to his dungeon.



## THE SECOND TIME OF TORTURING.

The inhuman wretches of the Inquisition, finding that all this torture, instead of extorting a confession from the prisoner, only served the more fervently to excite his supplications to Heaven for patience and power to persevere in truth and integrity, were so inhuman as to expose him, six weeks afterwards, to another kind of torture, more severe, if possible, than the former, the manner of inflicting which was as follows : they forced his arms backwards, so that the palms of his hands were turned outward behind him ; when, by means of a rope that fastened them together at the wrists, and which was turned by an engine, they drew them by degrees nearer each other, in such a manner that the back of each hand touched, and stood exactly parallel to each other. In consequence of this violent contortion, both his shoulders became dislocated, and a considerable quantity of blood issued from his mouth. This torture was repeated thrice, after which he was again taken to the dungeon, and delivered to the physician and surgeon, who, in setting the dislocated bones, put him to the most exquisite torment.

## THE THIRD TIME OF TORTURING.

About two months after the second torture, the prisoner, having recovered a little, was again ordered to the torture-room, and there, for the last time, made to undergo another kind of punishment, which was inflicted twice without any intermission. The executioners fastened a thick iron chain twice round his body, which, crossing upon his stomach, terminated at the wrists. They then placed him with his back against a thick board, at each extremity whereof was a pulley, through which there ran a rope that caught the ends of the chain at his wrists. Then the executioner, stretching the end of this rope by means of a roller placed at a distance behind him, pressed or bruised his stomach

in proportion as the ends of the chain were drawn tighter. They tortured him in this manner to such a degree that his wrists, as well as his shoulders, were quite dislocated. They were, however, soon set by the surgeons; but the barbarians, not yet satisfied with this series of cruelty, made him immediately undergo the same torture a second time, which he sustained (although the pains were, if possible, keener) with equal constancy and resolution. He was then remanded to his dungeon, attended by the surgeon to dress his bruises and adjust the parts dislocated; and here he continued till the time of their gaol-delivery.

It may be judged from this relation under what dreadful agony the sufferer must have labored by being so frequently put to the torture. Most of his limbs were disjoined; so much was he bruised and exhausted as to be unable, for weeks, to lift his hands to his mouth; and his body became greatly swelled from the inflammation caused by frequent dislocations. After his discharge he felt the effects of this cruelty for the remainder of his life, being frequently seized with thrilling and excruciating pains, to which he had never been subject till after he had the misfortune to fall under the merciless and bloody lords of the Inquisition. The unhappy females who fall into the hand of the inquisitors have not more favor shown them on account of the tenderness of their sex, but are tortured with as much severity as the male prisoners.

Should these torturings force a confession from the prisoner, he is remanded to his horrid dungeon, and left a prey to the melancholy of his situation, to the anguish arising from what he has suffered, and the dread of future barbarities. Should he refuse to confess, he is remanded to his dungeon; but a stratagem is used to draw from him what the torture fails to do. A companion is allowed to attend him, under the pretense of comforting his mind till his wounds are healed; this person, who is always selected



for his cunning, insinuates himself into the good graces of the prisoner, laments the anguish he feels, sympathises with him, and taking advantage of the hasty expression forced from him by pain, does all he can to dive into his secrets. This companion sometimes pretends to be a prisoner like himself, and imprisoned for similar charges ; this is to draw the unhappy person into confidence, and persuade him, in unbosoming his grief, to betray his private sentiments.

Frequently these snares succeed, as they are the more alluring by being glossed over with the appearance of friendship, sympathy, pity, and every tender passion. In fine, if the prisoner cannot be found guilty, he is either tortured or harassed to death, though a few have sometimes had the good fortune to be discharged, but not without having first of all suffered the most dreadful cruelties. If he be found guilty, all his effects are confiscated, and he is condemned to be whipped, imprisoned for life, sent to the galleys, or put to death. Having now mentioned the barbarities with which the prisoners are treated by the inquisitors, we shall proceed to recount the severity of their proceedings against publications.

When a book is published, it is carefully read by some of the familiars belonging to the Inquisition. These wretched critics are too ignorant and bigoted to search for truth, and too malicious to relish good writing. They scrutinize not for the merits, but for the defects of an author, and pursue the slips of his pen with unremitting diligence. Hence they read with prejudice, judge with partiality, pursue errors with avidity, and torture that which is innocent into an offensive meaning. They misapply, confound, and pervert the sense ; and when they have gratified the malignity of their disposition, charge their own blunders upon the author, that a prosecution may be founded upon their false conceptions and designed misinterpretations. Any



trivial charge causes the censure of a book. There is a catalogue of condemned books annually published under three different heads of censures (viz., "wholly condemned," "partly condemned," and "incorrect"), and being printed on a large sheet of paper, is hung up in the most public and conspicuous places. After this, people are obliged to destroy all such books as come under the first censure, and to keep none condemned by the other two censures, unless the exceptionable passages have been expunged and the corrections made, as in either case disobedience would be of the most fatal consequence, for the possessing or reading the proscribed books are deemed very atrocious crimes. Every publisher of such books is usually ruined in his circumstances, and sometimes obliged to pass the remainder of his life in a prison of the Inquisition. This list of condemned books is still published annually by the Pope.

### BARBARITIES EXERCISED BY THE INQUISITIONS OF SPAIN AND PORTUGAL.

Francis Romanes, a native of Spain, was employed by the merchants of Antwerp to transact some business for them at Bremen. He had been educated in the Romish persuasion, but going one day into a Protestant church, he was struck with the truths which he heard, and beginning to perceive the errors of popery, he determined to search farther into the matter. Perusing the sacred scriptures and the writings of some Protestant divines, he perceived how erroneous were the principles which he had formerly embraced; and renounced the impositions of popery for the doctrines of the reformed church, in which religion appeared in all its genuine purity. Resolving to think only of his eternal salvation, he studied religious truth more than trade, and purchased books rather than merchandise, convinced that the riches of the body are trifling,

to those of the soul. He therefore resigned his agency to the merchants of Antwerp, giving them an account at the same time of his conversion; and then resolving, if possible, to convert his parents, he went to Spain for that purpose. But the Antwerp merchants writing to the inquisitors, he was seized upon, imprisoned for some time, and then condemned to be burnt as a heretic. He was led to the place of execution in a garment painted over with devils, and had a paper mitre put upon his head by way of derision. As he passed by a wooden cross, one of the priests bade him kneel to it; but he absolutely refused so to do, saying, "It is not for Christians to worship wood." Having been placed upon a pile of wood, the fire quickly reached him, whereupon he lifted up his head suddenly; the priests, thinking he meant to recant, ordered him to be taken down. Finding, however, that they were mistaken, and that he still retained his constancy, he was placed again upon the pile, where, as long as he had life and voice remaining, he kept repeating the seventh psalm.

#### A CARVER BURN'T FOR INJURING AN IMAGE.

At St. Lucar, in Spain, resided a carver, named Rochus, whose principal business was to make images of saints and other popish idols. Becoming, however, convinced of the errors of the Romish persuasion, he embraced the Protestant faith, left off carving images, and for subsistence followed the business of a seal engraver only. He had, however, retained one image of the Virgin Mary for a sign; when an inquisitor passing by, asked if he would sell it. Rochus mentioned a price; the inquisitor objected to it, and offered half the money. Rochus replied, "I would rather break it to pieces than take such a trifle."—"Break it to pieces!" said the inquisitor; "break it to pieces if you dare!" Rochus, provoked at this expression, snatched up a chisel, and cut off the nose of the image. This was suffi-



cient; the inquisitor went away in a rage, and soon after the carver was apprehended. In vain did he plead that what he had defaced was his own property; his fate was decided; he was condemned to be burnt, and the sentence was executed accordingly.

A doctor Cacalla, his brother Francis, and his sister Blanche, were burnt at Valladolid, for having spoken against the inquisitors.

### HORRID TREACHERY OF AN INQUISITOR.

A lady, with her two daughters and her niece, were apprehended at Seville for professing the Protestant religion. They were all put to the torture; and when that was over, one of the inquisitors sent for the youngest daughter, pretended to sympathize with her, and pity her sufferings; then binding himself with a solemn oath not to betray her, he said, "If you will disclose all to me, I promise you I will procure the discharge of your mother, sister, cousin, and yourself." Made confident by his oath, and entrapped by promises, she revealed the whole of the tenets they professed; when the perjured wretch, instead of acting as he had sworn, immediately ordered her to be put to the rack, saying, "Now you have revealed so much, I will make you reveal more." Refusing, however, to say anything farther, they were all ordered to be burnt, which sentence was executed at the next Auto da Fe.

The keeper of the castle of Triano, belonging to the inquisitors of Seville, happened to be of a disposition more mild and humane than is usual with persons in his situation. He gave all the indulgence he could to the prisoners and showed them every favor in his power with as much secrecy as possible. At length, however, the inquisitors became acquainted with his kindness, and determined to punish him severely for it, that other jailors might be deterred from showing the traces of that compassion which



ought to glow in the breast of every human being. With this view they immediately threw him into a dismal dungeon, and used him with dreadful barbarity, so that he lost his senses. His deplorable situation, however, procured him no favor; for, frantic as he was, they brought him from prison, at an Auto da Fe, to the usual place of punishment, with a sanbenito (or garment worn by criminals) on, and a rope about his neck. His sentence was then read, and ran thus: that he should be placed upon an ass, led through the city, receive 200 stripes, and then be condemned for six years to the galleys. This unhappy, frantic wretch, just as they were about to begin his punishment, suddenly sprung from the back of the ass, broke the cords that bound him, snatched a sword from one of the guards, and dangerously wounded an officer of the inquisition. Being overcome by multitudes, he was prevented from doing further mischief, seized, bound more securely to the ass, and punished according to his sentence. But so inexorable were the inquisitors, that, for the rash effects of his madness, four years were added to his slavery in the galleys.

A maid-servant to another jailor belonging to the inquisition, was accused of humanity, and detected in bidding the prisoners keep up their spirits. For these heinous crimes, as they were called, she was publicly whipped, banished her native place for ten years, and had her forehead branded with these words: "A favorer and aider of heretics." Near the same time, John Pontic, a Protestant gentleman, was, principally on account of his great estate, apprehended by the inquisitors, and charged with heresy. On this charge all his effects were confiscated to the use of the inquisition, and his body burnt to ashes.

John Gonsalvo, originally a priest, but who had embraced the reformed religion, was, with his mother, brother, and two sisters, seized upon by the inquisitors. Being condemned, they were led to execution, singing part of the

106th Psalm. They were ordered at the place of execution to say the creed, which they immediately complied with, but coming to these words, "the holy Catholic church," they were commanded to add the monosyllables "of Rome," which absolutely refusing, one of the inquisitors said, "Put an end to their lives directly;" when the executioners obeyed, and strangled them.

*Four Protestant women were seized upon at Seville, tortured, and afterwards ordered for execution.* On the way they began to sing psalms; but the officers thinking that the words of the psalms reflected on themselves, put gags into their mouths to make them silent. They were then burnt, and the houses where they resided ordered to be demolished.

A Protestant schoolmaster, named Ferdinando, was apprehended by order of the inquisition, for instructing his pupils in the principles of Protestantism; and after being severely tortured, was committed to the flames.

A monk, who had abjured the errors of popery, was imprisoned at the same time as Ferdinando; but through the fear of death, he said he was willing to embrace his former communion. Ferdinando hearing of this, got an opportunity to speak to him, reproached him with his weakness, and threatened him with eternal perdition; when the monk, sensible of his crime, returned to the Protestant faith, and declared to the inquisitors that he solemnly renounced his intended recantation. Sentence of death was therefore passed upon him, and he was burned at the same time as Ferdinando.

A Spanish Roman Catholic, named Juliano, on traveling into Germany, became a convert to the Protestant religion; and undertook to convey from Germany into his own country a great number of Bibles, concealed in casks, and packed up like Rhenish wine. This important commission he succeeded in, so far as to distribute the books. A pre-



tended Protestant, however, who had purchased one of the Bibles, betrayed him, and laid an account of the affair before the inquisition. Juliano was then seized upon, and all means being used to find out the purchasers of these Bibles, 800 persons were apprehended. They were all tortured, and most of them sentenced to various other punishments. Juliano was burnt, twenty were roasted upon spits, several imprisoned for life, some publicly whipped, many sent to the galleys, and very few indeed acquitted.

A Protestant tailor of Spain, named John Leon, traveled to Germany, and from thence to Geneva, where, hearing that a great number of English Protestants were returning to their native country, he, and some more Spaniards, determined to go with them. The Spanish inquisitors being apprised of their intentions, sent a number of familiars in pursuit of them, who overtook them at a seaport in Zealand. The prisoners were heavily fettered, hand-cuffed, gagged, had their heads and necks covered with a kind of iron network, and in this miserable condition they were conveyed to Spain, thrown into a dungeon, almost famished, barbarously tortured, and then burnt.

A young lady having been put into a convent, absolutely refused to take the veil; and on leaving the cloister she embraced the Protestant faith, on which she was apprehended and committed to the flames.

An eminent physician and philosopher, named Christopher Losada, became extremely obnoxious to the inquisitors, by exposing the errors of Popery, and professing the tenets of Protestantism. He was apprehended, imprisoned, and racked; but those severities not making him confess the Roman Catholic church to be the only true one, he was sentenced to the fire; which he bore with exemplary patience, and resigned his soul to his Creator.

Arias, a monk of St. Isidore's monastery at Seville, was a man of great abilities, but of a vicious disposition. He



sometimes pretended to forsake the errors of the church of Rome, and become a Protestant, and soon after turned Roman Catholic. Thus he continued a long time wavering between both persuasions, till God thought proper to touch his heart. He now became a true Protestant; and the sincerity of his conversion being known, he was seized by the officers of the inquisition, severely tortured, and afterwards burnt at an Auto da Fe.

A young lady, named Maria de Coceicao, who resided with her brother at Lisbon, was taken up by the inquisitors, and ordered to be put to the rack. The torments she felt made her confess the charges against her. The cords were then slackened, and she was reconducted to her cell, where she remained till she recovered the use of her limbs; she was then brought again before the tribunal, and ordered to ratify her confession. This she absolutely refused to do, telling them, that what she had said was forced from her by the excessive pain she underwent. The inquisitors, incensed at this reply, ordered her again to be put to the rack, when the weakness of nature once more prevailed, and she repeated her former confession. She was immediately remanded to her cell: and being a third time brought before the inquisitors, they ordered her to sign her first and second confessions. She answered as before, but added, "I have twice given way to the frailty of the flesh, and perhaps may, while on the rack, be weak enough to do so again; but depend upon it, if you torture me a hundred times, as soon as I am released from the rack I shall deny what was extorted from me by pain." The inquisitors then ordered her to be racked a third time; and, during this last trial, she bore the torments with the utmost fortitude, and could not be persuaded to answer any of the questions put to her. As her courage and constancy increased, the inquisitors, instead of condemning her to death, condemned her to a severe whipping through the public streets, and banishment for ten years.

The Church of Rome has a design upon the United States and it will, in time, be the established religion, and will aid in the destruction of that Republic.

DUKE OF RICHMOND, Ex-Governor of Canada.

The Catholic religion rests upon the sacraments and certain ceremonies; it does not exact reading. To know how to read is rather a danger; it unsettles the principle of obedience and leads to heresy. The Priest will therefore be hostile, rather than otherwise, to education. The organization of popular instruction dates from the Reformation. This is in itself an evident reason for the superiority of Protestant States. The strength of nations depends undeniably on their morality. It seems to be an established fact that the moral standard is higher among Protestant peoples than among Catholic ones.

[480].

PROF. LAVELEYE (Catholic).







"His last words were those of prayer." Page 588.





A lady of a noble family in Seville, named Jane Bohorquia, was apprehended on the information of her sister, who had been tortured and burnt for professing the Protestant religion. Being pregnant, they let her remain tolerably quiet till she was delivered, when they immediately took away the child, and put it to nurse, that it might be brought up a Roman Catholic. Soon afterwards this unfortunate lady was ordered to be racked, which was done with such severity, that she expired a week after of the wounds and bruises. Upon this occasion the inquisitors affected some remorse, and in one of the printed acts of the inquisition, which they always published at an Auto da Fe, this young lady is thus mentioned: "Jane Bohorquia was found dead in prison; after which, upon reviving the prosecution, the inquisitors discovered she was innocent.—Be it therefore known, that no farther prosecutions shall be carried on against her; and that her effects, which were confiscated, shall be given to the heirs at law." One sentence in the above ridiculous passage wants explanation, viz: that no further prosecutions shall be carried on against her. This alludes to the absurd custom of prosecuting and burning the bones of the dead: for when a prisoner dies in the inquisition, the process continues the same as if he was living; the bones are deposited in a chest, and if sentence of guilt is passed, they are brought out at the next Auto da Fe; the sentence is read against them with as much solemnity as against a living prisoner, and they are committed to the flames. In a similar manner are prosecutions carried on against prisoners who escape; and when their persons are far beyond the reach of the inquisitors, they are burnt in effigy.

Isaac Orobio, a learned physician, having beaten a Moorish servant for stealing, was accused by him of professing Judaism, and the inquisitors seized him upon the charge. He was kept three years in prison before he had the least



intimation of what he was to undergo, and then suffered the following six modes of torture: 1. A coarse linen coat was put upon him, and then drawn so tight that the circulation of the blood was nearly stopped, and the breath almost pressed out of his body. After this the strings were suddenly loosened, when the air suddenly forcing its way into the stomach, and the blood rushing into its channels, he suffered the most incredible pain. 2. His thumbs were tied with small cords so hard that the blood gushed from under the nails. 3. He was seated on a bench with his back against a wall, wherein small iron pulleys were fixed. Ropes being fastened to several parts of his body and limbs, were passed through the pulleys, and being suddenly drawn with great violence, his whole frame was forced into a distorted mass. 4. After having suffered for a considerable time the pains of the last-mentioned position, the seat was snatched away, and he was left suspended against the wall. 5. A little instrument with five knobs, and which went with springs, being placed near his face, he suddenly received five blows on the cheek, which put him to so much pain as caused him to faint. 6. The executioners fastened ropes round his wrists, and then drew them about his body. Placing him on his back with his feet against the wall, they pulled with the utmost violence till the cord had penetrated to the bone. He suffered the last torture three times, and then lay seventy days before his wounds were healed. He was afterwards banished, and in his exile wrote the account of his sufferings, from which the foregoing particulars were extracted.

A famous writer of Toledo, and a Protestant, was fond of producing fine specimens of writing and having them framed to adorn the different apartments of his house. Among other curious examples of penmanship, was a large piece containing the Lord's prayer, Creed, and Ten Commandments in verse. This piece, which hung in a conspicuous

part of the house, was one day seen by a person belonging to the inquisition, who observed that the versification of the commandments was not according to the church of Rome, but according to the Protestant church: for the Protestants retain the whole of the commandments as they are found in the Bible, but the Papists omit that part of the second commandment which forbids the worship of images. The inquisition soon had information of the circumstance, and this gentleman was seized, prosecuted and burnt, only for ornamenting his house with a specimen of his skill.

---

## BRIEF RELATION OF THE HORRIBLE MASSACRES IN FRANCE.

---

ROBERT OGUIER, HIS WIFE AND TWO SONS BURNED AT LISLE.

On March 6, 1556, about ten o'clock at night, the provost of Lisle, with his serjeants, armed themselves, and went to seek if they could find any Protestants met together in houses; but there was then no assembly. They therefore came to the house of Robert Oguier, which was a little church, where both rich and poor were familiarly instructed in the scriptures.

Having entered into said house, and seeking for their prey, they found certain books, which they carried away. But he whom they principally aimed at was not there, namely, Baudicon, the son of the said Robert Oguier, who at that time was gone abroad to commune and talk of the work of God with some of the brethren. On his return home, he knocked at the door, when Martin, his younger brother, watching his coming, bade him begone: but Baudicon, thinking his brother mistook him for some other, said, "It is I, open the door:" with that the serjeants opened the



same, and let him in, saying, "Ah, sir, you are well met;" to whom he answered, "I thank you, my friends, you are also welcome hither." Then said the provost, "I arrest you all in the emperor's name;" and with that commanded each of them to be bound, viz: the husband, his wife, and their two sons (leaving their two daughters to look to the house), and confined them in several prisons. A few days after, the prisoners were brought before the magistrates, and examined concerning their course of life. They first charged Robert Oguier with not only absenting himself from the celebration of mass, but with dissuading others from attending it, and "maintaining conventicles" in his house.

He confessed the first charge, and justified his conduct by proving from the scriptures that the saying of mass was contrary to the ordinances of Jesus Christ, and a mere human institution; and he defended the religious meetings in his house by showing that they were authorized and commanded by our Savior himself.

One of the magistrates demanded what they did when they met together. To which Baudicon, the eldest son, answered, "If it please you to give me leave, I will open the whole business at large unto you."

The sheriffs, seeing his promptness, looking upon one another, said, "Well, let us hear it." Baudicon, lifting up his eyes to heaven, began thus: "When we meet together in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ to hear the word of God, we first of all prostrate ourselves upon our knees before God, and in the humility of our spirits do make a confession of our sins before his Divine Majesty. Then we pray that the word of God may be rightly divided, and purely preached; we also pray for our sovereign lord the emperor, and for all his honorable counsellors, that the commonwealth may be peaceably governed to the glory of God; yea, we forget not you, whom we acknowledge our superiors, entreating our good God for you and for this



whole city, that you may maintain it in all tranquility. Thus I have exactly related unto you what we do: think you now, whether we have offended so highly in this matter of our assembling."

While they were thus examined, each of them made open confession of their faith; and being again returned to prison, they not long after were put to the torture, to make them confess who they were that frequented their house: but they would discover none, unless such as were well known to the judges, or else were at that time absent. Four or five days after, the father and his sons were again brought before the magistrates, and after many words passed, they asked them whether they would submit themselves to the will of the magistrates. The father and his eldest son, with some deliberation, said, "Yea, we will."

Then the same being demanded by the younger son, he answered, that he would not submit himself thereto, but would accompany his mother, so he was sent back again to prison, whilst the father and brother were sentenced to be burnt to ashes. One of the judges, after sentence was pronounced, said, "To-day you shall go to dwell with all the devils in hell fire," which he spake as one transported with fury in beholding the great patience of these two servants of Christ. Having received the sentence of death, they were returned to the prison from whence they came, being joyful that the Lord did them that honor to be enrolled in the number of his martyrs. They no sooner entered the prison, than a band of friars came thither; one amongst the rest told them the hour was come in which they must finish their days. Robert Oguier and his son answered, "We know it well; but blessed be the Lord our God, who now delivering our bodies out of this vile prison, will receive our souls into his glorious and heavenly kingdom."

One of the friars endeavored to turn them from their

faith, saying, "Father Robert, thou art an old man; let me entreat thee in this thy last hour to think of saving thine own soul; and if thou wilt give ear unto me, I warrant thee thou shalt do well."

The old man answered, "Poor man, how darest thou attribute that to thyself which belongs to the eternal God, and so rob him of his honor? For it seems by thy speech that if I will hearken to thee, thou wilt become my Savior. No, no, I have only one Savior, Jesus Christ, who, by and by, will deliver me from this miserable world. I have one doctor, whom the heavenly Father hath commanded me to hear, and I purpose to hearken to none other."

Another exhorted him to take pity on his soul: "Thou willest me," said Robert, "to pity my own soul; dost thou not see what pity I have on it, when for the name of Christ I willingly abandon this body of mine to the fire, hoping to-day to be with him in paradise? I have put all my confidence in God, and my hope is wholly fixed upon the merits of Christ, his death, and passion; he will direct me the right way to his kingdom. I believe what the holy prophets and apostles have written, and in that faith will I live and die." The friar hearing this, said, "Out, dog, thou art not worthy the name of a Christian! thou and thy son with thee are both resolved to damn your bodies and souls with all the devils in the bottom of hell."

As they were about to separate Baudicon from his father, he said, "Let my father alone, and trouble him not thus; he is an old man, and hath an infirm body; hinder him not, I pray you, from receiving the crown of martyrdom." Baudicon was then conveyed into a chamber apart, and there being stripped of his clothes, was prepared to be sacrificed. While one brought him gunpowder to put to his breast, a fellow standing by, said, "Wert thou my brother, I would sell all that I am worth to buy fagots to burn thee—thou findest but too much favor."



The young man answered, "Well, sir, the Lord show you more mercy." Whilst they spake thus to Baudicon, some of the friars pressed about the old man, persuading him at least to take a crucifix into his hands, "lest the people," said they, "should murmur against you;" adding further, that he might for all that lift up his heart to God, "because you know," said they, "it is but a piece of wood." They then fastened it between his hands, but as soon as Baudicon came down, and espied what they had done to his father, he said, "Alas! father, what do you do now? will you play the idolater even at our last hour?" And then pulling the idol out of his hands, which they had fastened therein, he threw it away, saying, "What cause have the people to be offended at us for not receiving a Jesus Christ of wood? We bear upon our hearts the cross of Christ, the Son of the ever-living God, feeling his holy word written therein in letters of gold."

A band of soldiers attended them to execution. Being come to the place where they were to suffer, they ascended the scaffold; when Baudicon asked leave of the sheriffs to make a confession of faith before the people, answer was made that he was to look unto his spiritual father and confessor; "Confess yourself," said they, "to him." He was then dragged to the stake, where he began to sing the 16th Psalm. The friar cried out, "Do you not hear, my masters, what wicked errors these heretics sing, to beguile the people with?" Baudicon, hearing him, replied, "How, simple idiot, callest thou the psalms of the prophet David errors? But no wonder, for thus you are wont to blaspheme the Spirit of God." Then turning his eyes towards his father, who was about to be chained to the stake, he said, "Be of good courage, father, the worst will be passed by and by." Then he often reiterated these short breathings, "O God, Father everlasting, accept the sacrifice of our bodies, for thy well-beloved Son Jesus Christ's sake." One



of the friars cried out, "Heretic, thou liest, he is none of thy father, the devil is thy father." And thus, during these conflicts, he bent his eyes to Heaven, and speaking to his father, said, "Behold, I see the Heavens open, and millions of angels ready to receive us, rejoicing to see us thus witnessing the truth in the view of the world. Father, let us be glad, and rejoice, for the joys of Heaven are set open to us." Fire was forthwith put to the straw and wood, which burnt beneath, whilst they (not shrinking from the pains) spake one to another; Baudicon often repeating this in his father's ears, "Faint not, father, nor be afraid; yet a very little while, and we shall enter into the heavenly mansions." In the end, the fire growing hot upon them, the last words they were heard to pronounce were, "Jesus Christ, thou Son of God, into thy hands we commend our spirits." And thus these two slept sweetly in the Lord.

Having thus put to death the father and one son, the bigoted monsters next determined to sacrifice the mother and the other son; but before doing this, all arts were employed to induce them to quit the faith, and embrace the errors of popery. The mother, at length, induced by their threats and promises, abandoned the truth; and was then exhorted by the monks to convert her son, which she promised to do; but upon his being admitted to her for that purpose, he remonstrated so earnestly with her on the sinfulness and folly of her conduct, that she was convinced, and turned again to the Lord, beseeching him, with tears, to grant her strength to maintain the right. And she continued ever after firm in the faith; which so incensed the bigoted monks, that they adjudged her, with her son, to the flames, as *obstinate heretics*.

Soon after, they were bound and brought to the place of their martyrdom; his mother having ascended the scaffold, cried to Martin, "Come up, come up, my son." And as he







Young Wife Perishing with her Husband. Page 491.





Thus we have taught the two parties in the State to count the Catholics as something. CARDINAL WISEMAN.

If the United States ever lose their liberty, it will be through the Romish Priesthood. GEORGE WASHINGTON.

The Catholics hold the balance of power and they will not permit the politicians to forget that fact.

[489]

*Catholic Review.*

was speaking to the people, she said, "Speak out Martin, that it may appear to all that we do not die heretics." Martin would have made a confession of his faith, but was not suffered. His mother being bound to the stake, spake in the hearing of the spectators, "We are Christians, and that which we now suffer is not for murder nor theft, but because we will believe no more than that which the word of God teacheth us," both rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer for the same. The fire being kindled, the vehemency thereof did nothing to abate the fervency of their zeal, but they continued in the faith, and with lifting up their hands to Heaven, in a holy accord said, "Lord Jesus, into thy hand we commend our spirits." And thus they blessedly slept in the Lord.

## CHAPTER XXII.

### FARTHER ACCOUNTS OF THE PERSECUTIONS IN FOREIGN COUNTRIES.

---

#### PERSECUTIONS IN BOHEMIA AND GERMANY.

The severity exercised by the Roman Catholics over the reformed Bohemians, induced the latter to send two ministers and four laymen to Rome, in the year 977, to seek redress from the pope. After some delay, their request was granted, and their grievances redressed. Two things in particular were permitted to them, viz. to have divine service in their own language, and to give the cup in the sacrament to the laity. The disputes, however, soon broke out again, the succeeding popes exerting all their power to resume their tyranny over the minds of the Bohemians; and the latter, with great spirit, aiming to preserve their religious liberties.

Some zealous friends of the gospel, applied to Charles,



king of Bohemia, A. D. 1375, to call a council for an inquiry into the abuses that had crept into the church, and to make a thorough reformation. Charles, at a loss how to proceed, sent to the pope for advice ; the latter, incensed at the affair, only replied, " Punish severely those presumptuous and profane heretics." The king, accordingly, banished every one who had been concerned in the application ; and, to show his zeal for the pope, laid many additional restraints upon the reformed Christians of the country.

The martyrdom of John Huss and Jerome of Prague,\* greatly increased the indignation of the believers, and gave animation to their cause. These two great and pious men were condemned by order of the council of Constance, when fifty-eight of the principal Bohemian nobility interposed in their favor. Nevertheless they were burnt ; and the pope, in conjunction with the council of Constance, ordered the Romish clergy, everywhere, to excommunicate all who adopted their opinions, or murmured at their fate. In consequence of these orders great contentions arose between the Papists and reformed Bohemians, which produced a violent persecution against the latter. At Prague it was extremely severe, till, at length, the reformed, driven to desperation, armed themselves, attacked the senate-house, and cast twelve of its members, with the speaker, out of the windows. The pope, hearing of this, went to Florence, and publicly excommunicated the reformed Bohemians, exciting the emperor of Germany, and all other kings, princes, dukes, &c. to take up arms, in order to extirpate the whole race ; promising, by way of encouragement, full remission of all sins to the most wicked person who should kill one Bohemian Protestant. The result of this was a bloody

---

\*These two great men were first brought to the light of truth by reading the doctrines of our countryman John Wickliffe, who, like the morning star of reformation, first burst from the dark night of popish error, and illuminated the surrounding world.

war; for several popish princes undertook the extirpation, or at least expulsion, of the proscribed people: while the Bohemians, arming themselves, prepared to repel them in the most vigorous manner. The popish army prevailing against the Protestant forces at the battle of Cuttenburgh, they conveyed their prisoners to three deep mines near that town, and threw several hundreds into each, where they perished in a miserable manner.

A bigoted popish magistrate, named Pichel, seized twenty-four Protestants, among whom was his daughter's husband. On their all confessing themselves of the reformed religion, he sentenced them to be drowned in the river Abbis. On the day of the execution, a great concourse of people attended; and Pichel's daughter threw herself at her father's feet, bedewed them with tears, and implored him to pardon her husband. The obdurate magistrate sternly replied, "Intercede not for him, child; he is a heretic; a vile heretic." To which she nobly answered, "Whatever his faults may be, or however his opinions may differ from yours, he is still my husband, a thought which, at a time like this, should alone employ my whole consideration." Pichel flew into a violent passion, and said, "You are mad! cannot you, after his death, have a much worthier husband?"—"No, sir," replied she, "my affections are fixed upon him, and death itself shall not dissolve my marriage vow." Pichel, however, continued inflexible, and ordered the prisoners to be tied with their hands and feet behind them, and in that manner thrown into the river. This being put into execution, the young lady watched her opportunity, leaped into the waves, and embracing the body of her husband, both sunk together.

#### PERSECUTION BY THE EMPEROR FERDINAND.

The emperor Ferdinand, whose hatred to the Protestants was unlimited, not thinking he had sufficiently oppressed



them, instituted a high court of reformers, upon the plan of the inquisition, with this difference, that the reformers, were to remove from place to place. The greater part of this court consisted of Jesuits, and from its decisions there was no appeal. Attended by a body of troops, it made the tour of Bohemia, and seldom examined or saw a prisoner; but suffered the soldiers to murder the Protestants as they pleased, and then to make report of the matter afterwards.

The first who fell a victim to their barbarity was an aged minister, whom they killed as he lay sick in bed. Next day they robbed and murdered another, and soon after shot a third, while preaching in his pulpit.

They ravished the daughter of a Protestant before his face, and then tortured her father to death. They tied a minister and his wife back to back, and burnt them. Another minister they hung upon a cross beam, and making a fire under him, broiled him to death. A gentleman they hacked into small pieces; and they filled a young man's mouth with gunpowder, and, setting fire to it, blew his head to pieces.

But their principal rage being directed against the clergy, they seized a pious Protestant minister, whom they tormented daily for a month in the following manner: they placed him amidst them, and derided and mocked him; they spit in his face, and pinched him in various parts of his body; they hunted him like a wild beast, till ready to expire with fatigue; they made him run the gauntlet, each striking him with a twig, their fists or ropes; they scourged him with wires; they tied him up by the heels with his head downwards, till the blood started out of his nose, mouth, etc.; they hung him up by the arms till they were dislocated, and then had them set again; burning papers dipped in oil were placed between his fingers and toes; his flesh was torn with red-hot pincers; he was put to the rack;



they pulled off the nails of his fingers and toes; he was bastinadoed on his feet; a slit was made in his ears and nose; they set him upon an ass, and whipped him through the town; his teeth were pulled out; boiling lead was poured upon his fingers and toes; and, lastly, a knotted cord was twisted about his forehead in such a manner as to force out his eyes. In the midst of these enormities particular care was taken lest his wounds would mortify, and his sufferings be thus shortened, till the last day, when the forcing out of his eyes caused his death.

The other acts of these monsters were various and diabolical. At length, the winter being far advanced, the high court of reformers, with their military ruffians, thought proper to return to Prague; but on their way, meeting with a Protestant pastor, they could not resist the temptation of feasting their barbarous eyes with a new kind of cruelty. This was to strip him naked, and to cover him alternately with ice and burning coals. This novel mode of torture was immediately put in practice, and the unhappy victim expired beneath the torments, which delighted his inhuman persecutors.

Some time after a secret order was issued by the emperor for apprehending all noblemen and gentlemen who had been principally concerned in supporting the Protestant cause, and in nominating Frederick, elector palatine of the Rhine, to be king of Bohemia. Fifty of these were suddenly seized in one night, and brought to the castle of Prague; while the estates of those who were absent were confiscated, themselves made outlaws, and their names fixed upon a gallows as a mark of public ignominy.

The high court of reformers afterwards proceeded to try those who had been apprehended, and two apostate Protestants were appointed to examine them. Their examiners asked many unnecessary and impertinent questions, which so exasperated one of the noblemen, that he ex-

claimed, opening his breast at the same time, "Cut here; search my heart; you shall find nothing but the love of religion and liberty: those were the motives for which I drew my sword, and for those I am willing to die."

As none of the prisoners would renounce their faith, or acknowledge themselves in error, they were all pronounced guilty; the sentence was, however, referred to the emperor. When that monarch had read their names, and the accusations against them, he passed judgment on all, but in a different manner; his sentence being of four kinds, viz., death, banishment, imprisonment for life, and imprisonment during pleasure. Twenty of them being ordered for execution, were informed they might send for Jesuits, monks or friars to prepare them for their awful change, but that no communication with Protestants would be permitted them. This proposal they rejected, and strove all they could to comfort and cheer each other upon the solemn occasion. The morning of the execution being arrived, a cannon was fired as a signal to bring the prisoners from the castle to the principal market place, in which scaffolds were erected, and a body of troops drawn up to attend. The prisoners left the castle, and passed with dignity, composure and cheerfulness, through soldiers, Jesuits, priests, executioners, attendants, and a prodigious concourse of people assembled to see the exit of these devoted martyrs. They were executed in the following order:

1. *Lord Schilik*, a nobleman about the age of fifty. He possessed great abilities, natural and acquired. On being told he was to be quartered, he smiled with great serenity, and said, "The loss of a sepulchre is but a trifling consideration." A gentleman who stood by, crying, "Courage, my lord;" he replied, "I possess the favor of God, which is sufficient to inspire any one with courage: the fear of death does not trouble me. I have faced him in fields of battle to oppose Antichrist." After repeating a short



prayer, he told the executioner he was ready, who cut off his right hand and head, and then quartered him. His hand and head were then placed upon the high tower of Prague, and his quarters distributed in different parts of the city.

2. *Lord Wincellaus*: this venerable nobleman, exalted by his piety, had attained the age of seventy, and was respectable equally for his learning and hospitality. He was so little affected by the loss of worldly riches that, on his house being broken open, his property seized, and his estates confiscated, he only said, with great composure, "The Lord hath given, and the Lord hath taken away." Being asked why he engaged in a cause so dangerous as that of attempting to support the elector palatine against the emperor, he replied, "I acted according to the dictates of my conscience, and to this day acknowledge him my king. I am now full of years, and wish to lay down my life, that I may not be a witness of the evils which await my country. You have long thirsted for my blood; take it, for God will be my avenger." He then approached the block, stroked his gray beard, and said, "Venerable hairs, the greater honor now attends you; a crown of martyrdom is your portion." Then laying down his head, it was severed from his body, and afterwards placed upon a pole in a conspicuous part of the town.

3. *Lord Harant*. He was a nobleman whose natural abilities were improved by traveling. The accusations against him were, his being a Protestant, and having taken an oath of allegiance to the elector palatine, as king of Bohemia. When he ascended the scaffold, he said, "I have traveled through many countries, and traversed many barbarous nations, yet have I never found so much cruelty as at home. I have escaped innumerable perils both by sea and land, and have surmounted all to suffer innocently in my native place. My blood is likewise sought by those



for whom I and my ancestors have hazarded our lives and fortunes ; but, Almighty God ! forgive them, for they know not what they do." Then approaching the block, he kneeled down, and exclaimed with great energy, "Into thy hands, O Lord ! I commend my spirit ; receive me, therefore, my blessed Redeemer." the fatal stroke was then given.

4. *Lord Frederic de Bile* suffered as a Protestant, and as an instigator of the war : he met his fate with firmness, and only said he wished well to the friends whom he left behind, forgave his enemies, denied the authority of the emperor in that country, acknowledged Frederic to be the only true king of Bohemia, and trusted for salvation in the merits of the Redeemer.

5. *Lord Henry Otto*, on first coming upon the scaffold, seemed greatly agitated, and said, as if addressing himself to the emperor, "Thou tyrant, Ferdinand, thy throne is established in blood ; but if thou killest my body, and dispersest my members, they shall still rise up in judgment against thee." Then, growing calm, he said to a gentleman, "A few minutes I was greatly discomposed, but now I feel my spirits revive ; God be praised, death no longer appears as the king of terrors, but seems to invite me to participate of some unknown joys." Then kneeling before the block, he said, "Almighty God ! to thee I commend my soul ; receive it for the sake of Christ, and admit it to the glory of thy presence." The pains of his death must have been severe, the executioner making several strokes before his head was separated from his body.

6. *The Earl of Rugenia* was distinguished for his great accomplishments and unaffected piety. On the scaffold he said, "We, who drew our swords, fought only to preserve the liberties of the people, and to keep our consciences sacred. As we were overcome, however, I am better pleased at the sentence of death than if the emperor had given me life ; for I find that it pleases God to have his truth de-

The horrible truth is, that in many cities, big and little, we Catholics have something like a monopoly of the business of selling liquor, and in not a few something equivalent to a monopoly of getting drunk. I hate to acknowledge it, yet from Catholic domicils—miscalled homes—in those cities and towns three-fourths of the public paupers creep annually to the almshouse, and more than half the criminals snatched away by police to prison are, by baptism and training, members of our Church.

FATHER ELLIOT, in *Catholic World*, 1890.

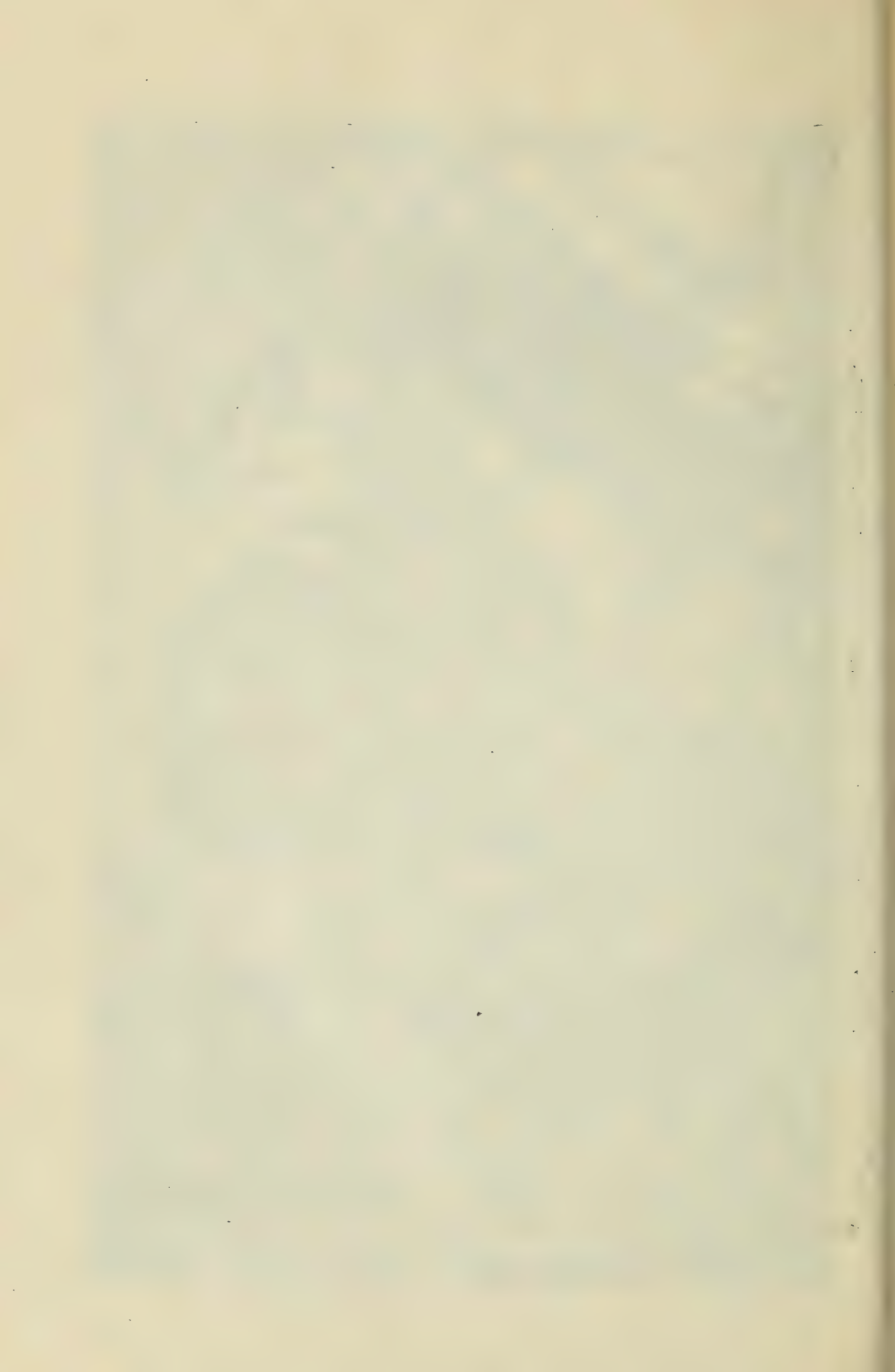






F15

“The cellars of his palace were turned into dungeons.” Page 589.





fended, not by our swords, but by our blood." He then went boldly to the block, saying, "I shall now soon be with Christ," and was instantly launched into the ocean of eternity and glory.

## LIFE, SUFFERINGS AND MARTYRDOM OF JEROME OF PRAGUE.

This hero in the cause of truth, was born at Prague, and educated in its university, where he soon became distinguished for his learning and eloquence. Having completed his studies, he traveled over great part of Europe, and visited many of the seats of learning, particularly the universities of Paris, Heidelberg, Cologne and Oxford. At the latter he became acquainted with the works of Wickliffe, and translated many of them into his own language.

On his return to Prague he openly professed the doctrines of Wickliffe, and finding that they made considerable progress in Bohemia, from the industry and zeal of Huss, he became an assistant to him in the great work of reformation.

On the 4th of April, 1415, Jerome went to Constance. This was about three months before the death of Huss. He entered the town quietly, and consulting with some of the leaders of his party, was easily convinced that he could render his friend no service.

Finding that his arrival at Constance was publicly known, and that the council intended to seize him, he retired and went to Iberling, an imperial town, a short distance from Constance. While here he wrote to the emperor, and declared his readiness to appear before the council if a safe-conduct were granted to him; this, however, was refused.

After this, he caused papers to be put up in all the public places in Constance, particularly on the doors of cardinals' houses. In these he professed his willingness to appear at Constance in defence of his character and doctrine,



both of which, he said, had been greatly falsified. He farther declared, that if any error should be proved against him, he would retract it; desiring only that the faith of the council might be given for his security.

Receiving no answer to these papers, he set out on his return to Bohemia, taking the precaution to carry with him a certificate, signed by several of the Bohemian nobility then at Constance, testifying that he had used every prudent means in his power to procure an audience.

He was, however, notwithstanding this, seized on his way, without any authority, at Hirsaw, by an officer belonging to the duke of Sultzbach, who hoped thereby to receive commendations from the council for so acceptable a service.

The duke of Sultzbach immediately wrote to the council, informing them what he had done, and asking directions how to proceed with Jerome. The council, after expressing their obligations to the duke, desired him to send the prisoner immediately to Constance. He was accordingly conveyed thither in irons, and on his way was met by the elector palatine, who caused a long chain to be fastened to him, by which he was dragged, like a wild beast, to the cloister, whence, after an examination, he was conveyed to a tower, and fastened to a block, with his legs in stocks. In this manner he remained eleven days and nights, till becoming dangerously ill in consequence, his persecutors, in order to gratify their malice still further, relieved him from that painful state.

He remained confined till the martyrdom of his friend Huss; after which he was brought forth and threatened with immediate torments and death if he remained obstinate. Terrified at the preparations which he beheld, he, in a moment of weakness, forgot his resolution, abjured his doctrines, and confessed that Huss merited his fate, and that both he and Wickliffe were heretics. In consequence

At this his chains were taken off, and he was treated more kindly; he was, however, still confined, but in hopes of liberation. But his enemies, suspecting his sincerity, proposed another form of recantation, to be drawn up and proposed to him. To this, however, he refused to answer, except in public, and was accordingly brought before the council, when, to the astonishment of his auditors, and to the glory of truth, he renounced his recantation, and requested permission to plead his own cause, which was refused; and the charges against him were read, in which he was accused of being a derider of papal dignity, an opposer of the pope, an enemy to the cardinals, a persecutor of the heretics, and a hater of the Christian religion.

To these charges Jerome answered with an amazing force of elocution and strength of argument. After which he was remanded to his prison.

The third day from this his trial was brought on, and witnesses were examined. He was prepared for his defence, although he had been nearly a year shut up in loathsome prisons, and deprived of the light of day, and almost starved for the want of common necessaries. But his spirit soared above these disadvantages.

The most bigoted of the assembly were unwilling he should be heard, dreading the effect of eloquence in the cause of truth on the minds of the most prejudiced. At length, however, it was carried by the majority, that he should have liberty to proceed in his defence; which he began in such an exalted strain, and continued in such a torrent of elocution, that the most obdurate heart was melted, and the mind of superstition seemed to admit a ray of conviction.

Bigotry, however, prevailed, and, his trial being ended, he received the same sentence as had been passed upon his martyred countryman, and was, in the usual style of popish duplicity, delivered over to the civil power; but, being a layman, he had not to undergo the ceremony of degradation.



Two days his execution was delayed, in hopes that he would recant; in which the cardinal of Florence used his utmost endeavors to bring him over. But they all proved ineffectual: Jerome was resolved to seal his doctrine with his blood.

On his way to the place of execution he sung several hymns; and on arriving there he knelt down and prayed fervently. He embraced the stake with great cheerfulness and resolution; and when the executioner went behind him to set fire to the fagots, he said, "Come here, and kindle it before my eyes; for had I been afraid of it, I had not come here, having had so many opportunities to escape."

When the flames enveloped him he sung a hymn; and the last words he was heard to say were,

"This soul in flames I offer, Christ, to thee."\*

### PERSECUTIONS IN CALABRIA.

About the fourteenth century a great many Waldenses of Pragela and Dauphiny emigrated to Calabria, where, having received permission to settle in some waste lands, they soon, by the most industrious cultivation, converted those wild and barren spots into regions of beauty and fertility.

The nobles of Calabria were highly pleased with their new subjects and tenants, finding them honest, quiet and industrious; but the priests, filled with jealousy, soon exhibited complaints against them, charging them with not being Roman Catholics, not making any of their boys priests, not making any of their girls nuns, not going to mass, not giving wax tapers to their priests as offerings, not going on pilgrimages, and not bowing to images.

To these the Calabrian lords replied that these people

---

\* Jerome was of a fine and manly form, and possessed a strong and healthy constitution, which rendered his death extremely lingering and painful. He, however, sung till his aspiring soul took its flight from its mortal habitation.



were extremely harmless, giving no offence to the Roman Catholics, but cheerfully paying the tithes to the priests, whose revenues were considerably increased by their coming into the country, and who, consequently, ought to be the last persons to make a complaint.

Those enemies to truth being thus silenced, things went on in peace for a few years, during which the Waldenses formed themselves into two corporate towns, annexing several villages to their jurisdiction. At length they sent to Geneva for two clergymen, one to preach in each town. This being known, intelligence was conveyed to Pope Pius the Fourth, who determined to exterminate them from Calabria without further delay. To this end cardinal Alexandrino, a man of violent temper, and a furious bigot, was sent, together with two monks, to Calabria, where they were to act as inquisitors. These authorized persons came to St. Xist, one of the towns built by the Waldenses, where, having assembled the people, they told them that they should receive no injury if they would accept of preachers appointed by the pope; but if they refused they should be deprived both of their properties and lives; and that to prove them, mass should be publicly said that afternoon, at which they must attend.

But the people of St. Xist, instead of obeying this, fled with their families into the woods, and thus disappointed the cardinal and his coadjutors. Then they proceeded to La Garde, the other town belonging to the Waldenses, where, to avoid a like disappointment, they ordered the gates to be locked and all avenues guarded. The same proposals were then made to the inhabitants as had been made to those of St. Xist, but with this artifice: the cardinal assured them that the inhabitants of St. Xist had immediately come into his proposals, and agreed that the pope should appoint them preachers. This falsehood succeeded; for the people of La Garde, thinking what the car-

dinal told them to be the truth, said they would exactly follow the example of their brethren of St. Xist.

Having thus gained his point by a lie, he sent for two troops of soldiers with a view to massacre the people of St. Xist. He accordingly commanded them into the woods to hunt them down like wild beasts, and gave them strict orders to spare neither age nor sex, but to kill all they came near. The troops accordingly entered the woods, and many fell a prey to their ferocity before the Waldenses were apprized of their design. At length, however, they determined to sell their lives as dear as possible, when several conflicts happened, in which the half-armed Waldenses performed prodigies of valor, and many were slain on both sides. At length, the greater part of the troops being killed in the different rencounters, the remainder were compelled to retreat; which so enraged the cardinal that he wrote to the viceroy of Naples for reinforcements.

The viceroy, in obedience to this, proclaimed throughout the Neapolitan territories that all outlaws, deserters and other proscribed persons should be freely pardoned for their several offences, on condition of making a campaign against the inhabitants of St Xist, and of continuing under arms till those people were destroyed. On this several people of desperate fortune came in, and being formed into light companies, were sent to scour the woods and put to death all they could meet with of the reformed religion. The viceroy himself also joined the cardinal, at the head of a body of regular forces; and in conjunction they strove to accomplish their bloody purpose. Some they caught, and, suspending them upon trees, cut down boughs and burnt them, or ripped them open and left their bodies to be devoured by wild beasts or birds of prey. Many they shot at a distance; but the greater number they hunted down by way of *sport*. A few escaped into caves; but famine destroyed them in their retreat: and the inhuman chase was continued till all these poor people perished.



The inhabitants of St. Xist being exterminated, those of La Garde engaged the attention of the cardinal and viceroy. The fullest protection was offered to themselves, their families and their children if they would embrace the Roman Catholic persuasion; but, on the contrary, if they refused this *mercy*, as it was insolently termed, the most cruel deaths would be the certain consequence. In spite of the promises on one side, and menaces on the other, the Waldenses unanimously refused to renounce their religion, or embrace the errors of popery. The cardinal and viceroy were so enraged at this, that they ordered thirty of them to be put immediately to the rack, as a terror to the others. Several of these died under the torture; one Charlin, in particular, was so cruelly used, that his belly burst, his bowels came out, and he expired in the greatest agonies. These barbarities, however, did not answer the end for which they were intended; for those who survived the torments of the rack, and those who had not felt it, remained equally constant in their faith, and boldly declared, that nothing, either of pain or fear, should ever induce them to renounce their God, or bow down to idols. The inhuman cardinal then ordered several of them to be stripped naked, and whipped to death with iron rods; some were hacked to pieces with large knives; others were thrown from the top of a high tower; and many were cased over with pitch and burnt alive.

One of the monks who attended the cardinal, discovered a most inhuman and diabolical nature. He requested that he might shed some of the blood of these poor people with his own hands; his request being granted, the monster took a large sharp knife, and cut the throats of four-score men, women and children. Their bodies were then quartered, the quarters placed upon stakes, and fixed in different parts of the country.

The four principal men of La Garde were hanged, and the



clergyman was thrown from the top of his church steeple. he was dreadfully crushed, but not quite killed by the fall. The viceroy being present, said, "Is the dog yet living? Take him up, and cast him to the hogs:" which brutal sentence was actually put in execution.

The monsters, in their hellish thirst of cruelty, racked sixty of the women with such severity, that the cords pierced their limbs quite to the bone. They were after this remanded to prison, where their wounds mortified, and they died in the most miserable manner. Many others were put to death by various means; and so jealous and arbitrary were those monsters, that if any Roman Catholic, more compassionate than the rest, interceded for any of the reformed, he was immediately apprehended, and sacrificed as a favorer of heretics.

The viceroy being obliged to return to Naples, and the cardinal having been recalled to Rome, the marquis of Butiane was commissioned to complete what they had begun.

### PERSECUTIONS IN PIEDMONT, IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

Pope Clement the Eighth sent missionaries into the valleys of Piedmont, with a view to induce the Protestants to renounce their religion. These missionaries erected monasteries in several parts of the valleys, and soon became very troublesome to the reformed, to whom the monasteries appeared not only as fortresses to curb, but as sanctuaries for all such to fly to as had injured them in any degree.

The insolence and tyranny of these missionaries increasing, the Protestants petitioned the duke of Savoy for protection. But instead of granting any redress, the duke published a decree, in which he declared that one witness should be sufficient in a court of law against a Protestant;

and that any witness who convicted a Protestant of any crime whatever should be entitled to a hundred crowns as a reward.

In consequence of this, as may be imagined, many Protestants fell martyrs to the perjury and avarice of the Papists, who would swear any thing against them for the sake of the reward, and then fly to their own priests for absolution from their false oaths.

These missionaries endeavored to get the books of the Protestants into their power, in order to burn them; and on the owners concealing them, wrote to the duke of Savoy, who, for the heinous crime of not surrendering their bibles, prayer-books and religious treatises, sent a number of troops to be quartered on them, which occasioned the ruin of many families.

To encourage, as much as possible, the apostasy of the Protestants, the duke published a proclamation, granting an exemption for five years from all taxes to every Protestant who should become a Catholic. He likewise established a court called the council, for extirpating the heretics, the object and nature of which are sufficiently evident from its name.

After this the duke published several edicts, prohibiting the Protestants from acting as schoolmasters or tutors; from teaching any art, science, or language; from holding any places of profit, trust or honor, and, finally, commanding them to attend mass. This last was the signal for a persecution, which, of course, soon followed.

Before the persecution commenced, the missionaries employed kidnappers to steal away the children of the Protestants, that they might privately be brought up Roman Catholics; but now they took away the children by open force, and if the wretched parents resisted they were immediately murdered.

The duke of Savoy, in order to give force to the persecu-



tion, called a general assembly of the Roman Catholic nobility and gentry, whence issued a solemn edict against the reformed, containing many heads, and including several reasons for extirpating them, among which the following were the principal: the preservation of the papal authority; that the church livings might be all under one mode of government; to make a union among all parties; in honor of all the saints, and of the ceremonies of the church of Rome.

This was followed by a most cruel order, published on January 26, 1655, which decreed that every family of the reformed religion, of whatever rank, residing in Lucerne, St. Giovanni, Bibiana, Campiglione, St. Secondo, Lucernetta, La Torre, Fenile, or Bricherassio, should, within three days after the publication thereof, depart from their habitations to such places as were appointed by the duke, on pain of death and confiscation.

This order produced the greatest distress among the unhappy objects of it, as it was enforced with the greatest severity in the depth of a very severe winter, and the people were driven from their habitations at the time appointed, without even sufficient clothes to cover them, by which many perished in the mountains through the severity of the weather, or for want of food. Those who remained behind after the publication of the decree were murdered by the popish inhabitants, or shot by the troops, and the most horrible barbarities were perpetrated by these ruffians, encouraged by the Roman Catholic priests and monks, of which the following may serve as a specimen.

Martha Constantine, a beautiful young woman, was first ravished, and then killed, by cutting off her breasts. These some of the soldiers fried, and set before their comrades, who eat them not knowing what they were. When they had done eating the others told them what they had made a meal of, in consequence of which a quarrel ensued, and a



battle took place. Several were killed in the fray, the greater part of whom were those concerned in the horrid massacre of the women, and the inhuman deception on their comrades.

Peter Simonds, a Protestant, of about eighty years of age, was tied neck and heels, and then thrown down a precipice. In his fall the branch of a tree caught hold of the ropes that fastened him, and suspended him in the mid-way, so that he languished for several days, till he perished of hunger.

Esay Garcino, refusing to renounce his religion, the soldiers cut him into small pieces, saying, in ridicule, they had minced him. A woman, named Armand, was torn limb from limb, and then the respective parts were hung upon a hedge.

Several men, women and children were flung from the rocks and dashed to pieces. Among others, Magdalen Bertino, a Protestant woman of La Torre, was stripped naked, her head tied between her legs, and she was then thrown down a precipice. Mary Raymondet, of the same town, had her flesh sliced from her bones till she expired; Magdalen Pilot, of Vallaro, was cut to pieces in the cave of Castolus; Ann Charboniere had one end of a stake thrust up her body, and the other end being fixed in the ground, she was left in that manner to perish; and Jacob Perrin the elder, of the church of Villaro, with David, his brother, was flayed alive.

Giovanni Andrea Michialin, an inhabitant of La Torre, with four of his children, was apprehended; three of them were hacked to pieces before him, the soldiers asking him, at the death of every child, if he would recant, which he constantly refused. One of the soldiers then took up the last and youngest by the legs, and putting the same question to the father, he replied as before, when the inhuman brute dashed out the child's brains. The father, however,

at the same moment started from them, and fled; the soldiers fired after him, but missed him; and he escaped to the Alps, and there remained concealed.

Giovanni Pelanchion, on refusing to abjure his faith, was tied by one leg to the tail of a mule, and dragged through the streets of Lucerne, amidst the acclamations of an inhuman mob, who kept stoning him, and crying out, "He is possessed of the devil." They then took him to the river side, chopped off his head, and left that and his body unburied, upon the bank of the river.

A beautiful child, ten years of age, named Magdalene Fontaine, was ravished and murdered by the soldiers. Another girl, of about the same age, they roasted alive at Villa Nova; and a poor woman, hearing the soldiers were coming towards her house, snatched up the cradle in which her infant son was asleep, and fled towards the woods. The soldiers, however, saw and pursued her, when she lightened herself by putting down the cradle and child, which the soldiers no sooner came to, than they murdered the infant, and continuing the pursuit, found the mother in a cave, where they first ravished and then cut her to atoms.

Jacob Michelino, chief elder of the church of Bobbio, and several other Protestants, were hung up by hooks fixed in their flesh, and left so to expire. Giovanni Rostagnal, a venerable Protestant, upwards of fourscore years of age, had his nose and ears cut off, and the flesh cut from his body, till he bled to death.

Daniel Saleago and his wife, Giovanni Durant, Lodwich Durant, Bartholomew Durant, Daniel Revel, and Paul Reynaud, had their mouths stuffed with gunpowder, which being set fire to, their heads were blown to pieces.

Jacob Birone, a schoolmaster of Rorata, was stripped naked; and after having been so exposed, had the nails of his toes and fingers torn off with red-hot pincers, and holes bored through his hands with the point of a dagger. He



next had a cord tied round his middle, and was led through the streets with a soldier on each side of him. At every turning the soldier on his right-hand side cut a gash in his flesh, and the soldier on his left-hand side struck him with a bludgeon, both saying, at the same instant, "Will you go to mass? Will you go to mass?" He still replied in the negative, and being at length taken to the bridge, they cut off his head on the balustrades, and threw both that and his body into the river.

Paul Garnier, a Protestant beloved for his piety, had his eyes put out, was then flayed alive, and being divided into four parts, his quarters were placed on four of the principal houses of Lucerne. He bore all of his sufferings with the most exemplary patience, praised God as long as he could speak, and plainly evinced the courage arising from a confidence in God.

Daniel Cardon, of Rocoppiata, being apprehended by some soldiers, they cut off his head. Two poor old blind women, of St. Giovanni, were burnt alive; and a widow of La Torre, with her daughter, was driven into the river, and stoned to death there.

A man named Paul Giles attempting to run away from some soldiers, was shot in the neck: they then slit his nose, sliced his chin, stabbed him, and gave his carcass to the dogs.

Some of the Irish troops having taken eleven men of Garcigliana prisoners, they heated a furnace red-hot, and forced them to push each other in till they came to the last man, who they themselves pushed in.

Michael Gonot, a man about 90 years old, was burnt to death; Baptista Oudri, another old man, was stabbed; and Bartholomew Frasche had his heels pierced, through which ropes were put, he was dragged by them to the gaol, where, in consequence of his wounds mortifying, he soon died.



Magdalene de la Peire being pursued by some of the soldiers, and taken, was cast down a precipice, and dashed to pieces. Margaret Revella and Mary Pravillerin, two very old women, were burnt alive; Michael Bellino, with Ann Bocharno, were beheaded; Joseph Chairet, and Paul Carniero, were flayed alive.

Cipriana Bustia being asked if he would renounce his religion, and turn Roman Catholic, replied, "I would rather renounce life, or turn dog:" to which a priest answered, "For that expression you shall both renounce life, and be given to the dogs." They, accordingly, dragged him to prison, where they confined him till he perished of hunger, after which they threw his corpse into the street before the prison, and it was devoured by dogs.

Joseph Pont was severed in two; Margaret Soretta was stoned to death; and Antonio Bertina had his head cleft asunder.

Daniel Maria, and all his family, being ill of a fever, several Papist ruffians broke into his house, telling him they were practical physicians, and would give them all present ease; which they did, by murdering the whole family.

Lucy, the wife of Peter Besson, being in an advanced state of pregnancy, determined, if possible to escape from such dreadful scenes as everywhere surrounded her; she accordingly took two young children, one in each hand, and set off towards the Alps. But on the third day of the journey she was taken in labor among the mountains, and delivered of an infant, who perished through the inclemency of the weather, as did the other two children; for all three were found dead by her side, and herself just expiring, by the person to whom she related the above circumstances.

Francis Cross had his flesh slowly cut from his body into small pieces, and put into a dish before him; two of his children were minced before his sight, while his wife was fastened to a post, to behold these cruelties practised on her

husband and offspring. The tormentors, at length tired of exercising their cruelties, decapitated both husband and wife.

The Sieur Thomas Margher fled to a cave, where, being discovered, the soldiers shut up the mouth, and he perished with famine. Judith Revelin, with seven children, were barbarously murdered in their beds.

Jacob Roseno was commanded to pray to the saints, which he refusing, the soldiers beat him violently with bludgeons, to make him comply, but he continuing steady to his faith, they fired at him. While in the agonies of death, they cried to him, "Will you pray to the saints?" To which he answered, "No!" when one of the soldiers, with a broadsword, clove his head asunder, and put an end to his sufferings.

A young woman, named Susanna Ciacquin, being attempted to be ravished by a soldier, made a stout resistance, and in the struggle, pushed him over a precipice, when he was dashed to pieces by the fall. His comrades immediately fell upon her with their swords, and cut her to atoms.

Giovanni Pullius, being apprehended as a Protestant by the soldiers, was ordered by the marquis of Pianessa to be executed in a place near the convent. When brought to the gallows, several monks attended, to persuade him to renounce his religion. But finding him inflexible, they commanded the executioner to perform his office, which he did, and so launched the martyr into the world of glory.

Paul Clement, an elder of the church of Rossana, being apprehended by the monks of a neighboring monastery, was carried to the market-place of that town, where some Protestants had just been executed. On beholding the dead bodies, he said calmly, "You may kill the body, but you cannot prejudice the soul of a true believer: with respect to the dreadful spectacles which you have here shown me, you may rest assured, that God's vengeance will overtake the murderers of those poor people, and punish them



for the innocent blood they have spilt." The monks were so exasperated at this reply, that they ordered him to be hung up directly; and while he was hanging, the soldiers amused themselves by shooting at the body.

Daniel Rambaut, of Villaro, the father of a numerous family, was seized, and, with several others, committed to the jail of Paysana. Here he was visited by several priests, who, with continual importunities, strove to persuade him to turn Papist; but this he peremptorily refused, and the priests finding his resolution, and enraged at his answers, determined to put him to the most horrible tortures, in the hope of overcoming his faith; they therefore ordered one joint of his fingers to be cut off every day, till all of his fingers were gone; they then proceeded in the same manner with his toes; afterwards they alternately cut off, daily, a hand and a foot; but finding that he bore his sufferings with the most unconquerable fortitude, and maintained his faith with steadfast resolution, they stabbed him to the heart, and then gave his body to be devoured by dogs.

Peter Gabriola, a Protestant gentleman, of considerable eminence, being seized by a troop of soldiers, and refusing to renounce his religion, they hung several bags of gun-powder about his body, and then setting fire to them, blew him up.

Anthony, the son of Samuel Catieris, a poor dumb lad, and extremely inoffensive, was cut to pieces by a party of the troops; and soon after, the same ruffians entered the house of Peter Moniriat, and cut off the legs of the whole family, leaving them to bleed to death, they being unable to assist each other in that melancholy plight.

Daniel Bench being apprehended, had his nose slit, and his ears cut off; after which, he was divided into quarters, and each quarter hung upon a tree. Mary Monino had her jaw-bones broken. and was then left to languish till she was starved to death.



Why is it that the greatest men of our nation are non-Catholics? The great men of our nation have been, and are, and will continue to be Protestant. The great philanthropists, the great orators, the great writers, thinkers, leaders, scientists, inventors and teachers of our land have been Protestants. When I reflect that out of 70,000,000 of this nation we number only 9,000,000, and that out of that 9,000,000 so large a proportion is made up of liquor dealers, poor factory hands, mill and shop and mine and railroad employes, I fail to find material for buncomb, and yet we are all eulogizing ourselves.—Miss M. T. ELDER, in Essay before Catholic Congress at World's Fair.

[512]

The first part of the history of the world is the history of the human race. It is the history of the progress of the human mind, and of the development of the human soul. It is the history of the human race, and of the human mind, and of the human soul.

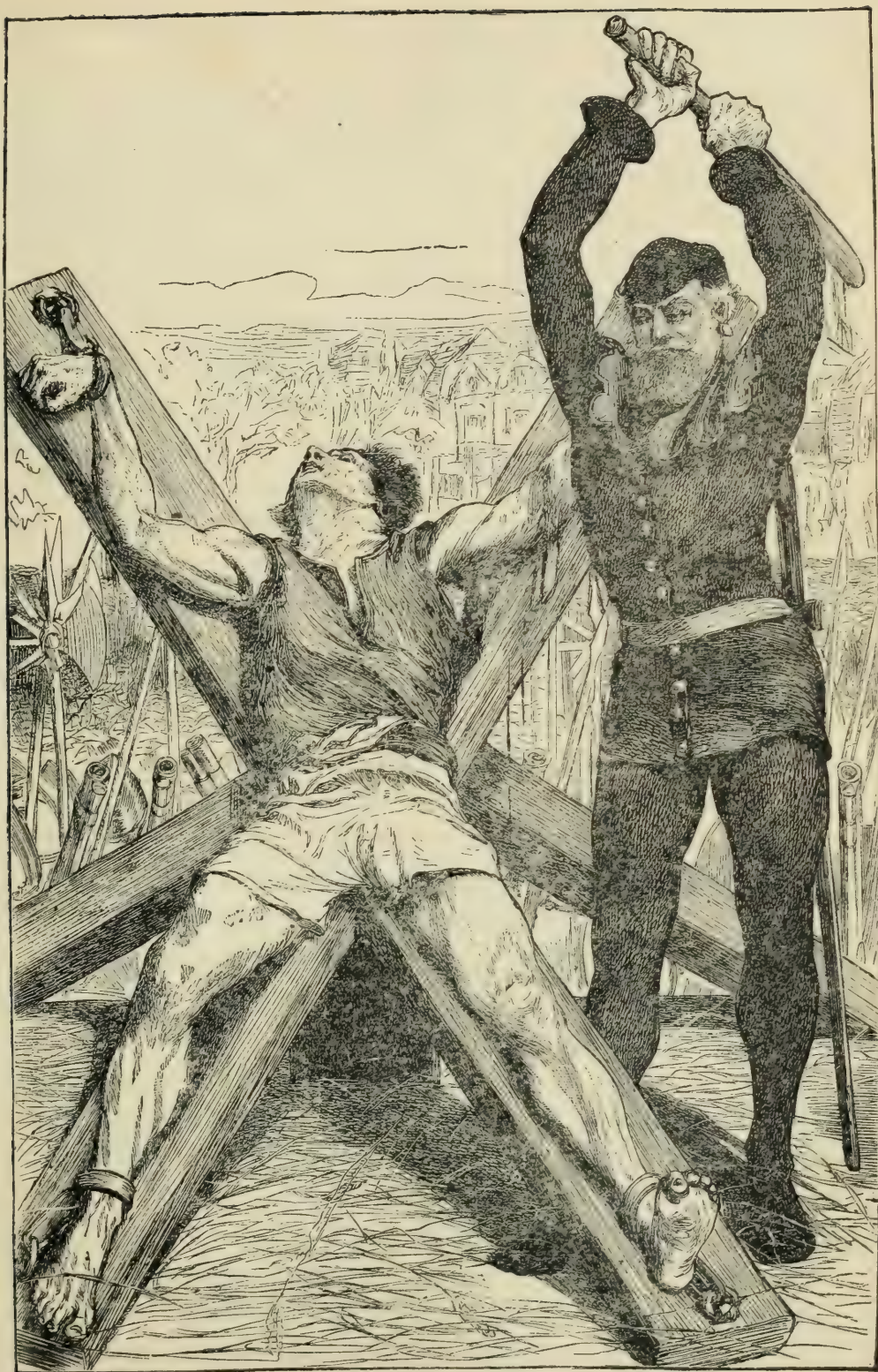
The second part of the history of the world is the history of the human race. It is the history of the progress of the human mind, and of the development of the human soul. It is the history of the human race, and of the human mind, and of the human soul.

The third part of the history of the world is the history of the human race. It is the history of the progress of the human mind, and of the development of the human soul. It is the history of the human race, and of the human mind, and of the human soul.

The fourth part of the history of the world is the history of the human race. It is the history of the progress of the human mind, and of the development of the human soul. It is the history of the human race, and of the human mind, and of the human soul.

The fifth part of the history of the world is the history of the human race. It is the history of the progress of the human mind, and of the development of the human soul. It is the history of the human race, and of the human mind, and of the human soul.

The sixth part of the history of the world is the history of the human race. It is the history of the progress of the human mind, and of the development of the human soul. It is the history of the human race, and of the human mind, and of the human soul.



"The iron bar fell on his chest." Page 591.





Mary Pelanchion, a widow, of the town of Villaro, was seized by a party of the Irish brigades, who, having beat her cruelly, and ravished her, dragged her to a high bridge which crossed the river, and stripping her naked, hung her by the legs to the bridge, with her head downwards towards the water, and then going into boats, they shot her.

Mary Nigrino, and her daughter, a poor idiot, were cut to pieces in the woods, and their bodies left to be devoured by wild beasts; Susanna Bales, a widow of Villaro, was immured and starved to death; and Susanna Calvo, running away from some soldiers, and hiding herself in a barn, they set fire to the straw, by which she was burnt to death.

Daniel Bertino, a child, was burnt; Paul Armand was hacked to pieces; Daniel Michialino, having his tongue plucked out, was left to perish in that condition; and Andreo Bertino, a lame and very old man, was mangled in a most shocking manner, and at length had his belly ripped open, and his bowels carried about on the point of a halbert.

A Protestant lady, named Constantia Bellione, was apprehended on account of her faith, and asked by a priest if she would renounce the devil and go to mass; to which she replied, "I was brought up in a religion by which I was always taught to renounce the devil; but should I comply with your desire, and go to mass, I should be sure to meet him there, in a variety of shapes." The priest was highly incensed at this, and told her to recant, or she should suffer cruelly. She, however, boldly answered, "That she valued not any sufferings he could inflict, and in spite of all the torments he could invent, she would keep her faith inviolate." The priest then ordered slices of her flesh to be cut off from several parts of her body. This she bore with the most singular patience, only saying to the priest, "What horrid and lasting torments will you suffer in hell, for the trifling and temporary pains which I now endure!" Exasperated at this expression, the priest ordered a file of musketeers to

draw up and fire upon her, by which she was soon dispatched.

Judith Mandon was fastened to a stake, and sticks thrown at her from a distance. By this inhuman treatment, her limbs were beat and mangled in a most terrible manner. At last one of the bludgeons striking her head, she was at once freed from her pains and her life.

Paul Genre and David Paglia, each with his son, attempting to escape to the Alps, were pursued, and overtaken by the soldiers in a large plain. Here they hunted them for their diversion, goading them with their swords, and making them run about till they dropped down with fatigue. When they found that their spirits were quite exhausted, the soldiers hacked them to pieces, and left their mangled bodies on the spot.

Michael Greve, a young man of Bobbio, was apprehended in the town of La Torre, and being led to the bridge, was thrown over into the river. Being an expert swimmer, he swam down the stream, thinking to escape, but the soldiers and mob followed on both sides, and kept stoning him, till, receiving a blow on one of his temples, he sunk and was drowned.

David Armand was forced to lay his head down on a block, when a soldier, with a large hammer, beat out his brains. David Baridona was apprehended at Villaro, and carried to La Torre, where, refusing to renounce his religion, he was tormented by brimstone matches being tied between his fingers and toes, and being set fire to, and afterwards, by having his flesh plucked off with red-hot pincers, till he expired. Giovanni Barolina, with his wife, were thrown into a pool of stagnant water, and compelled, by means of pitchforks and stones, to duck down their heads till they were suffocated with the stench.

A number of soldiers assaulted the house of Joseph Garniero, and before they entered, fired in at the window, and



shot Mrs. Garniero, who was at that instant suckling her child. She begged them to spare the life of the infant, which they promised to do, and sent it immediately to a Roman Catholic nurse. They then seized the husband and hanged him at his own door, and having shot the wife through the head, left her body weltering in its blood.

Isaiah Mondon, an aged and pious Protestant, fled from the merciless persecutors to a cleft in a rock, where he suffered the most dreadful hardships ; for, in the midst of the winter, he was forced to lie on the bare stone, without covering ; his food was the roots he could scratch up near his miserable habitation ; and the only way by which he could procure drink, was to put snow in his mouth till it melted. Here, however, some of the soldiers found him, and after beating him unmercifully, they drove him towards Lucerne, goading him all the way with the points of their swords. Being exceedingly weakened by his manner of living, and exhausted by the blows he had received, he fell down in the road. They again beat him to make him proceed ; till, on his knees, he implored them to put him out of his misery. This they at last agreed to do ; and one of them shot him through the head, saying, " There, heretic, take thy request."

To screen themselves from danger, a number of men, women, and children, fled to a large cave, where they continued for some weeks in safety, two of the men going by stealth to procure provisions. These were, however, one day watched, by which the cave was discovered, and, soon after, a troop of Roman Catholics appeared before it. Many of these were neighbors, and intimate acquaintances, and some even relations to those in the cave. The Protestants, therefore, came out, and implored them, by the ties of hospitality and of blood, not to murder them. But the bigoted wretches told them, they could not show any mercy to heretics ; and, therefore, bade them all prepare to die. Hearing this, and knowing the obduracy of their enemies, the Protestants fell

on their knees, lifted their hearts to heaven, and patiently awaited their fate ; which the Papists soon decided, by cutting them to pieces.

### MARTYRDOM OF SIR JOHN OLDCASTLE.

The persecutions of the Lollards in the reign of Henry V. were owing to the cruel instigations of the clergy, who thought that the most effectual way to check the progress of Wickliffe's doctrine would be to attack the then chief protector of it, viz., Sir John Oldcastle, baron of Cobham ; and to persuade the king that the Lollards were engaged in conspiracies to overturn the state. It was even reported that they intended to murder the king, together with the princes, his brothers, and most of the lords spiritual and temporal, in hopes that the confusion which must necessarily arise in the kingdom, after the massacre, would prove favorable to their religion. Upon this a false rumor was spread that Sir John Oldcastle had got together 20,000 men in St. Giles' in the Fields, a place then overgrown with bushes. The king himself went thither at midnight, and finding no more than fourscore or a hundred persons, who were privately met upon a religious account, he fell upon them and killed many. Some of them being afterwards examined, were prevailed upon by promises or threats, to confess whatever their enemies desired ; and these accused Sir John Oldcastle.

The king hereupon thought him guilty ; and in that belief set a thousand marks upon his head, with a promise of perpetual exemption from taxes to any town which should secure him. Sir John was apprehended, and imprisoned in the tower ; but escaping from thence, he fled into Wales, where he long concealed himself. But being afterwards seized in Powisland, in north Wales, by Lord Powis, he was brought back to London. to the great joy of the clergy,



who were highly incensed against him, and resolved to sacrifice him, to strike a terror into the rest of the Lollards. Sir John was of a very good family, had been sheriff of Hertfordshire under Henry IV. and summoned to parliament among the barons of the realm of that reign. He had been sent beyond the sea, with the earl of Arundel, to assist the duke of Burgundy against the French. In a word, he was a man of extraordinary talent, notwithstanding which he was condemned to be hanged up by the waist with a chain, and burnt alive. This most barbarous sentence was executed amidst the curses and imprecations of the priests and monks, who used their utmost endeavors to prevent the people from praying for him. Such was the end of Sir John Oldecastle, who left the world with a resolution and constancy that answered perfectly to the brave spirit with which he had ever maintained the cause of truth and of his God.

### MARTYRDOM OF DR. ROBERT BARNES.

Dr. Barnes was educated in the university of Louvain, in Brabant. On his return to England he went to Cambridge, where he was made prior and master of the house of the Augustines. The darkest ignorance pervaded the university at the time of his arrival there; but he, zealous to promote knowledge and truth, began to instruct the students in the classical languages, and, with the assistance of Parnel, his scholar, whom he had brought from Louvain, soon caused learning to flourish, and the university to bear a very different aspect.

These foundations being laid, he began to read openly the epistles of St. Paul, and to teach in greater purity the doctrine of Christ. He preached and disputed with great warmth against the luxuries of the higher clergy, particularly against cardinal Wolsey, and the lamentable hypocrisy of the times. But still he remained ignorant of the



great cause of these evils, namely, the idolatry and superstition of the church; and while he declaimed against the stream, he himself drank at the spring, and bowed down to idols. At length, happily becoming acquainted with Bilney, he was by that martyr wholly converted unto Christ.

The first sermon he preached of this truth was on the Sunday before Christmas Day, at St. Edward's church, in Cambridge. His theme was the epistle of the same Sunday, "*Gaudette in Domino*," etc. For this sermon he was immediately accused of heresy by two fellows of King's Hall, before the vice-chancellor. Then Dr. Nottoris, a bitter enemy to Christ, moved Barnes to recant; but he refused, as appears in his book which he wrote to king Henry in English, confuting the judgment of cardinal Wolsey, and the residue of the papistical bishops.

After preaching some time, Barnes was arrested openly in the convocation house; brought to London, and the next morning carried to the palace of cardinal Wolsey, at Westminster, where, after waiting the whole day, he was at night brought before the cardinal in his chamber of state. "Is this," said Wolsey, "Dr. Barnes, who is accused of heresy?" "Yes, and please your grace," replied the cardinal's secretary, "and I trust you will find him reformable, for he is learned and wise."

"What, Mr. Doctor," said Wolsey, "had you not a sufficient scope in the scriptures to teach the people, but that my golden shoes, my poll-axes, my pillars, my golden cushions, my crosses, did so sore offend you, that you must make us *ridiculum caput* amongst the people, who that day laughed us to scorn? Verily, it was a sermon fitter to be preached on a stage than in a pulpit; for at last you said, 'I wear a pair of red gloves, I should say bloody gloves,' quoth you, 'that I should not be cold in the midst of my ceremonies.'"

Dr. Barnes answered, "I spake nothing but the truth out

of the scriptures, according to my conscience, and according to the old doctors." And then he delivered him six sheets of paper, written to confirm and corroborate his sentiments.

The cardinal received them smiling, saying, "We perceive, then, that you intend to stand to your articles, and to show your learning."

"Yes," said Barnes, "that I do by God's grace, with your lordship's favor."

Wolsey answered, "Such as you bear us little favor and the Catholic church. I will ask you a question: whether do you think it more necessary that I should have all this royalty, because I represent the king's majesty in all the high courts of this realm, to the terror and keeping down of all rebellious treasons, traitors, all the wicked and corrupt members of this commonwealth, or to be as simple as you would have us, to sell all these things, and to give them to the poor, who shortly will cast them in the dirt; and to put away this princely dignity, which is a terror to the wicked, and to follow your counsel?"

"I think it necessary," said Barnes, "to be sold and given to the poor. For this is not becoming your calling; nor is the king's majesty maintained by your pomp and poll-axes, but by God, who saith, kings and their majesty reign and stand by me."

Then answered the cardinal, "Lo, master doctors, here is the learned wise man that you told me of." Then they kneeled down and said, "We desire your grace to be good unto him, for he will be reformable."

"Then," said he, "stand you up; for your sakes and the university, we will be good unto him. How say you, master doctor, do you not know that I am able to dispense in all matters concerning religion within this realm, as much as the pope may?" He said, "I know it to be so."

"Will you, then, be ruled by us? and we will do all



things for your honesty, and for the honesty of the university."

He answered, "I thank your grace for your good will; I will stick to the holy scripture, and to God's book, according to the simple talent that God hath lent me."

"Well," said he, "thou shalt have thy talent tried to the uttermost, and thou shalt have the law."

He was then committed to the custody of the serjeant-at-arms who had brought him to London, and by whom he was the next morning brought before the bishops; who, on examining the articles of his faith, which he had delivered to the cardinal, asked him if he would sign them, which he did, and was thereupon committed to the Fleet.

On the Saturday following he was again brought before the bishops, who called upon him to know whether he would abjure or burn. He was then greatly agitated, and felt inclined rather to burn than abjure; but was persuaded by some persons to abjure, which he at length consented to do, and the abjuration being put into his hand, he abjured as it was there written, and then he subscribed it with his own hand; yet his judges would scarcely receive him into the bosom of the church, as they termed it. Then they put him to an oath, and charged him to do all that they commanded him, which he accordingly promised.

He was then again committed to the Fleet, and the next morning was brought to St. Paul's church, with five others who had abjured. Here the cardinal, bishops and clergy being assembled in great pomp, the bishop of Rochester preached a sermon against the doctrines of Luther and Barnes, during which the latter was commanded to kneel down and ask forgiveness of God, and the Catholic church, and the cardinal's grace; after which he was ordered, at the end of the sermon, to declare that he was used more charitably than he deserved, his heresies being so horrible and so detestable; once more he kneeled, desiring of the people forgiveness,



and to pray for him. This farce being ended, the cardinal departed under a canopy, with the bishops and mitred abbots, who accompanied him to the outer gate of the church, when they returned. Then Barnes, and the others who had abjured, were carried thrice about the fire, after which they were brought to the bishops, and kneeled down for absolution. The bishop of Rochester, standing up, declared that Dr. Barnes, with the others, were received into the church again. After which they were recommitted to the Fleet during the cardinal's pleasure.

Dr. Barnes having remained in the Fleet for half a year, was placed in the custody of the Austin Friars in London; from whence he was removed to the Austin Friars of Northampton, there to be burned; of which intention, however, he was perfectly ignorant. Being informed of the base designs of his enemies, however, he, by a stratagem, escaped and reached Antwerp, where he dwelt in safety, and was honored with the friendship of the best and most eminent reformers of the time, as Luther, Melancthon, the duke of Saxony, and others. Indeed, so great was his reputation, that the king of Denmark sent him as one of his ambassadors to England, when Sir Thomas More, at that time lord chancellor, wished to have him apprehended on the former charge. Henry, however, would not allow of this, considering it a breach of the most sacred laws to offer violence to the person of an ambassador, under any pretence. Barnes, therefore, remained in England unmolested; and departed again without restraint. He returned to Wittemberg, where he remained to forward his works in print which he had begun, after which he returned to England, and continued a faithful preacher in London, being well entertained and promoted during the ascendancy of Anne Boleyn. He was afterward sent ambassador by Henry to the duke of Cleves, upon the business of the marriage between anne of Cleves and the king; and gave great satisfaction in every duty which was intrusted to him.

Not long after the arrival of Gardiner from France, Dr. Barnes and other reformed preachers, were apprehended and carried before the king at Hampton Court, where Barnes was examined. The king being desirous to bring about an agreement between him and Gardiner, granted him leave to go home with the bishop to confer with him. But they not agreeing, Gardiner and his party sought to entangle and entrap Barnes and his friends in further danger, which not long after was brought to pass. For, by certain complaints made to the king of them, they were enjoined to preach three sermons the following Easter at the Spittle; at which sermons, besides other reporters which were sent thither, Stephen Gardiner also was there present, sitting with the mayor, either to bear record of their recantation, or else, as the Pharisees came to Christ, to ensnare them in their talk, if they should speak anything amiss. Barnes preached first; and at the conclusion of his sermon, requested Gardiner, if he thought he had said nothing contradictory to truth, to hold up his hand in the face of all present; upon which Gardiner immediately held up his finger. Notwithstanding this, they were all three sent for to Hampton Court, whence they were conducted to the Tower, where they remained till they were brought out to death.

### STORY OF THOMAS GARRET.

Thomas Garret was a curate of London. About the year 1526, he came to Oxford, and brought with him sundry books in Latin, treating of the scriptures, with the first part of *Uno dissidentium*, and Tindal's first translation of the New Testament in English, which books he sold to several scholars in Oxford.

After he had been there awhile, and had disposed of those books, news came from London that he was sought for in



that city, to be apprehended as a heretic, and to be imprisoned for selling those heretical publications, as they were termed. For it was not unknown to cardinal Wolsey, the bishop of London, and others, that Mr. Garret had a great number of those books, and that he was gone to Oxford to sell them to such as he knew to be lovers of the gospel. Wherefore they determined to make a privy search through all Oxford, to apprehend and imprison him, and to burn all his books, and him too if they could. But, happily, one of the proctors gave Mr. Garret secret warning of this privy search, and advised that he should immediately and privately depart from Oxford.

By means of another friend, a curacy was procured for him in Dorsetshire, and he set out for that county, and being waylaid by his enemies, was unable to proceed, and therefore returned to Oxford, where he was, on the same night, apprehended in his bed, and was ordered, by the commissary of the university, to be confined to his own chamber, till further directions were received respecting him. He escaped in disguise, but was retaken, and being convicted as a heretic, carried a fagot in token of his abjuration, at St. Mary's church in Oxford; after which we meet with nothing further respecting him till his apprehension with Dr. Barnes.

### STORY OF WILLIAM JEROME.

William Jerome was vicar of Stepney, and being convinced of, and disgusted at, the errors of the church of Rome, he preached with great zeal, and set up the pure and simple doctrines of the gospel against the perverseness and traditions of man. Thus proceeding, he soon became known to the enemies of truth, who watched him with malignant jealousy.

At length, in a sermon at St. Paul's on the fourth Sunday



in Lent, wherein he dwelt upon the justification by faith, he so offended the legal preachers of the day, that he was summoned before the king at Westminster, and there accused of heresy.

It was urged against him, that he had insisted, according to St. Paul, in Galatians iv. "That the children of Sara (allegorically used for the children of the promise) were all born free, and, independent of baptism, or of penance, were, through faith, made heirs of God." A Dr. Wilson argued against him, and strongly opposed this doctrine. But Jerome defended it with all the force of truth, and said, "That although good works were the means of salvation, yet that they followed as a consequence of faith, whose fruits they were, and which discovered their root, even as good fruits prove a good tree."

Notwithstanding his arguments, so inveterate were his enemies, and so deluded was the king, that he was committed to the Tower, in company with the other two soldiers of Christ, Barnes and Garret.

### BURNING OF BARNES, GARRET AND JEROME.

Here they remained, while a process ensued against them by the king's council in parliament, by whom, without any hearing, or knowledge of their fate, they were attainted of heresy, and sentenced to be burned. On the 30th of the following June, therefore, they were brought from the Tower to Smithfield, where, before they were committed to the fire, they addressed the people.

"I am come hither," said Dr. Barnes, "to be burned as a heretic, and you shall hear my belief, whereby you may perceive what erroneous opinions I hold. God I take to record, I never (to my knowledge) taught any erroneous doctrine, but only those things which scripture led me into; neither in my sermons have I ever maintained or given occasion for

any insurrection ; but with all diligence evermore did I study to set forth the glory of God, the obedience to our sovereign lord the king, and the true and sincere religion of Christ ; and now hearken to my faith.

“ I believe in the holy and blessed Trinity, three persons, and one God, that created and made all the world ; and that this blessed Trinity sent down the second person, Jesus Christ, into the womb of the most blessed and purest Virgin Mary. I believe, that he was conceived of the Holy Ghost, and took flesh of her, and that he suffered hunger, thirst, cold, and other passions of our body, sin excepted, according to the saying of St. Peter, ‘ He was made in all things like to his brethren, except sin.’ And I believe that this his death and passion was the sufficient ransom for sin. And I believe that through his death he overcame sin, death, and hell ; and that there is none other satisfaction unto the Father, but this his death and passion only ; and that no work of man did deserve anything of God, but his passion only, as touching our justification ; for I know the best work that ever I performed is impure and imperfect.”

He then, lifting up his hands, prayed God to forgive him his trespasses, saying, “ I confess, that my evil thoughts and cogitations are innumerable ; wherefore I beseech thee, O Lord, not to enter into judgment with me, for, if thou straightly mark our iniquities, who is able to abide thy judgment ? Wherefore, I trust in no good work that ever I did, but only in the death of Christ. I do not doubt but through him to inherit the kingdom of heaven. But imagine not, that I speak against good works, for they are to be done, and verily they that do them not, shall never come into the kingdom of God. We must do them, because they are commanded us of God, to show and set forth our profession, not to deserve or merit ; for that is only by the death of Christ.

“ I believe that there is a holy church, and a company



of all them that do profess Christ; and that all who have suffered and confessed his name, are saints, and that they praise and laud God in heaven, more than I or any man's tongue can express."

A person present asked him his opinion upon praying to saints. "I believe," said he, "they are in heaven with God, and that they are worthy of all the honor that scripture willeth them to have. But I say, throughout scripture we are not commanded to pray to any saints. Therefore I neither can nor will preach to you that saints ought to be prayed unto; for then should I preach unto you a doctrine of mine own head. Notwithstanding, whether they pray for us or no, that I refer to God. And if saints do pray for us, then I trust to pray for you within this half hour, Mr. Sheriff, and for every Christian living in the faith of Christ, and dying in the same as a saint. Wherefore, if the dead may for the quick, I will surely pray for you."

Then said he to the sheriff, "Have ye any articles against me for which I am condemned?" The sheriff answered, "No." Then said he, "Is there here any man else that knoweth wherefore I die, or that by my preaching hath taken any error? Let them now speak, and I will make them answer." But no man answered. Then said he, "Well, I am condemned by the law to die, and, as I understand, by an act of parliament, but wherefore I cannot tell; perhaps it is for heresy; for we are like to burn. But they that have been the occasion of it, I pray God forgive them, as I would be forgiven myself. And Dr. Stephen, bishop of Winchester, if he have sought or wrought this my death, either by word or deed, I pray God to forgive him as heartily, as freely, as charitably, and as sincerely, as Christ forgave them that put him to death. And if any of the council, or any other, have sought or wrought it through malice or ignorance, I pray God forgive their ignorance, and illuminate their eyes, that they may see and ask mercy for it. I be-



seech you all to pray for the king's grace, as I have done ever since I was in prison, and do now, that God may give him prosperity, and that he may long reign among you; and after him that godly prince Edward, that he may finish those things which his father hath begun. I have been reported to be a preacher of sedition, and disobedience unto the king; but here I say to you, that you are all bound by the commandment of God to obey your prince with all humility, and with all your heart, and that not only for fear of the sword, but also for conscience sake before God."

He then begged all men to forgive him; to bear witness that he detested and abhorred all evil opinions and doctrines against the word of God, and that he died in the faith of Jesus Christ, by whom he doubted not but to be saved. With these words, he desired all the spectators to pray for him, and then he prepared himself to suffer.

Jerome and Garret professed in like manner their belief, reciting all the articles of the Christian faith, briefly declaring their minds on every article, as the time would suffer whereby the people might understand that there was no cause nor error in their faith for which they could justly be condemned; protesting, moreover, that they denied nothing that was either in the Old or New Testament, set forth by the king, whom they prayed the Lord long to continue amongst them, with his son prince Edward.

Jerome then addressed the people as follows: "I say unto you, good brethren, that God hath bought us all with no small price, neither with gold nor silver, or other such things of small value, but with his most precious blood. Be not unthankful, therefore, to him again, but do as much as to Christian men belongeth to fulfil his commandments; that is, love your brethren. Love hurteth no man, love fulfillleth all things. If God hath sent thee plenty, help thy neighbor that hath need. Give him good counsel. If he lack, consider, if thou wert in necessity thou wouldst gladly

be refreshed. And again, bear your cross with Christ. Consider what reproof, slander and reproach he suffered of his enemies, and how patiently he suffered all things. Consider that all that Christ did was of his mere goodness, and not of our deserving. For if we could merit our own salvation, Christ would not have died for us. But for Adam's breaking of God's precepts, we had been all lost if Christ had not redeemed us again. And like as Adam broke the precepts, and was driven out of Paradise, so we, if we break God's commandments, shall have damnation, if we do not repent and ask mercy. Now, therefore, let all Christians put no trust nor confidence in their works, but in the blood of Christ, to whom I commit my soul to guide, beseeching you all to pray to God for me, and for my brethren here present with me, that our souls, leaving these wretched bodies, may constantly depart in the true faith of Christ."

After he had concluded Garret thus spoke:

"I also detest and refuse all heresies and errors, and if, either by negligence or ignorance, I have taught or maintained any, I am sorry for it, and ask God mercy. Or if I have been vehement or rash in preaching, whereby any person hath taken any offence, error or evil opinion, I desire of him, and all other persons whom I have any way offended, forgiveness. Notwithstanding, to my remembrance, I have never preached, wittingly or willingly, any thing against God's holy word, or contrary to the true faith; but have ever endeavored, with my little learning and wit, to set forth the honor of God and the right obedience to his laws, and also the king's; if I could have done better I would. Wherefore, Lord, if I had taken in hand to do that thing which I could not perfectly perform, I desire thy pardon for my bold presumption. And I pray God send the king's grace good and godly counsel, to his glory, to the king's honor, and the increase of virtue in this realm.



And thus do I now yield my soul up unto Almighty God, trusting and believing that he, of his infinite mercy, according to his promise made in the blood of his Son, Jesus Christ, will take it, and pardon all my sins, of which I ask him mercy, and desire you all to pray with and for me, that I may patiently suffer this pain, and die in true faith, hope and charity."

The three martyrs then took each other by the hand, and, after embracing, submitted themselves to the tormentors, who, fastening them to the stake, lighted the fagots, and terminated their mortal life and care.

## TRANSLATION OF THE NEW TESTAMENT INTO ENGLISH.

Tindal and others at Antwerp were every year translating or writing books against some of the received errors, and sending them over to England. But the translation of the New Testament, by Tindal, gave the greatest offence, and was much complained of by the clergy as full of errors. Tonstall, then bishop of London, returning from Cambray, to which place More and he had been sent by the king, as he came through Antwerp, bargained with an English merchant, who was secretly a friend of Tindal, to procure him as many of his New Testaments as could be had for money. Tindal gladly received this; for being about a more correct edition, he found he would be better enabled to proceed if the copies of the old were sold off; he therefore gave the merchant all he had, and Tonstall, paying for them, brought them over to England and burned them publicly in Cheapside. This was called a burning of the word of God; and it was said the clergy had reason to revenge themselves on it, for it had done them more mischief than all other books whatsoever. But a year after this the second edition being finished, great numbers were sent



over to England, when Constantine, one of Tindal's partners, happened to be taken; believing that some of the London merchants furnished them with money, he was promised his liberty if he would discover who they were, upon this he said the bishop of London did more than all the world besides, for he bought up the greatest part of a faulty impression. The clergy, on their condemning Tindal's translation, promised a new one; but a year after, they said, that it was not necessary to publish the scripture in English, and that the king did well not to set about it.

About this time a book, written by Fish, of Gray's Inn, was published. It was entitled, "The Supplication of the Beggars," and had a vast sale. In it, the beggars were made to complain that the alms of the people were intercepted by the mendicant friars, who were a useless burden to the government; and to tax the pope with cruelty for taking no pity on the poor, since none but those who could pay for it were delivered out of purgatory. The king was so pleased with this that he would not suffer anything to be done against the author. Sir Thomas More answered it by another supplication in behalf of the souls in purgatory; setting forth the miseries they were in, and the relief which they received by the masses that were said for them; and therefore they called upon their friends to support the religious orders, which had now so many enemies.

Frith published a serious answer to the last mentioned work, in which he showed that there was no mention made of purgatory in scripture; that it was inconsistent with the merits of Christ, by which, upon sincere repentance, all sins were pardoned; for if they were pardoned, they could not be punished; and though temporal judgments, either as medicinal corrections or a warning to others, do sometimes fall even on true penitents, yet terrible punishments in another state cannot consist with a free pardon, and the

remembering of our sins no more. In expounding many passages of the New Testament he appealed to More's great friend Erasmus, and showed that the fire which was spoken of by St. Paul, as that which would consume the wood, hay and stubble, could only be meant of the fiery trial of persecution. He showed that the primitive church received it not; Ambrose, Jerome and Austin did not believe it; the last had plainly said that no mention was made of it in scripture. The monks alone brought it in, and by many wonderful stories persuaded their ignorant followers of the truth of it, and so made a very profitable trade. This book so provoked the clergy that they resolved to make the author feel a real fire for endeavoring to extinguish their imaginary one. Sir Thomas More objected poverty and want of learning to the new preachers; but it was answered, the same was made use of to reproach Christ and his apostles; but a plain simplicity of mind, without artificial improvements, was rather thought a good disposition for men that were to bear a cross, and the glory of God appeared more eminently when the instruments seemed contemptible.

But the pen being thought too feeble and gentle, the clergy betook themselves to persecution. Many were vexed with imprisonments for teaching their children the Lord's prayer in English, for harboring the reformed preachers, and for speaking against the corruptions and vices of the clergy.

Hinton, formerly a curate, who had gone over to Tindal, was seized on his way back with some books he was conveying to England, and was condemned by archbishop Warham. He was kept long in prison, but remaining firm in the truth, he was, at length, burned at Maidstone.



## FALL AND DEATH OF THE DUKE OF SOMERSET.

About this time the earl of Warwick, to strengthen his party against Somerset, prevailed on the king to confer new titles on several noblemen, and to raise some commoners to the peerage. He was himself created duke of Northumberland; the marquis of Dorset was made duke of Suffolk; Paulet, marquis of Winchester; Herbert, earl of Pembroke; Russel, earl of Bedford, and Darcy, lord Darcy. An apparent reconciliation had taken place between Somerset and Northumberland; but each distrusted the other, and was prepared to seize the first opportunity of crushing his rival. Northumberland's superior skill gave him the advantage, and upon information of a pretended plot to assassinate him and some of his friends, the duke and duchess of Somerset, with several other persons, were committed to the Tower. On the first of December, 1551, the duke was brought to his trial; the marquis of Winchester presided, and twenty-seven peers sat as judges, among whom were the dukes of Suffolk and Northumberland, and the earl of Pembroke. He was charged with a design to seize on the king's person, to assassinate Northumberland, to take possession of the Tower and city of London, and to destroy the king's guard. It seemed a gross dereliction of justice for Northumberland to sit as a judge when the crime objected was a design against his life; but hatred of his rival carried him beyond the bounds of decency. Somerset, in his defence, denied all designs to raise the people, or to kill Northumberland; "or, if he had talked of it, it was in passion, without any intention of doing so; and it was ridiculous to think that he with a small troop could destroy the guards, who were 900 strong. The few armed men he had about him were only for his own defence; he had done no mischief to his enemies, though it was once in his power to have done it, and had surrendered himself



Were I to be asked what is the darkest and most ominous cloud in our national heavens, unhesitatingly I would answer: Slavery as now established by law.

Again, were I asked for the next more inauspicious and portentous cloud in our political horizon, I must, with equal promptitude, reply: The rapid growth of a popish empire in the bosom of the republic.

Popery is naturally, necessarily and essentially despotic, cruel and implacable. It regards itself as the heir of all earthly things, and, as by a right divine, and irrevocable, the only earthly king of kings and lord of lords. Its motto is: The empire of the globe or nothing. The law of gravity will cease to act sooner than this superstition sleep on this side of absolute dominion.

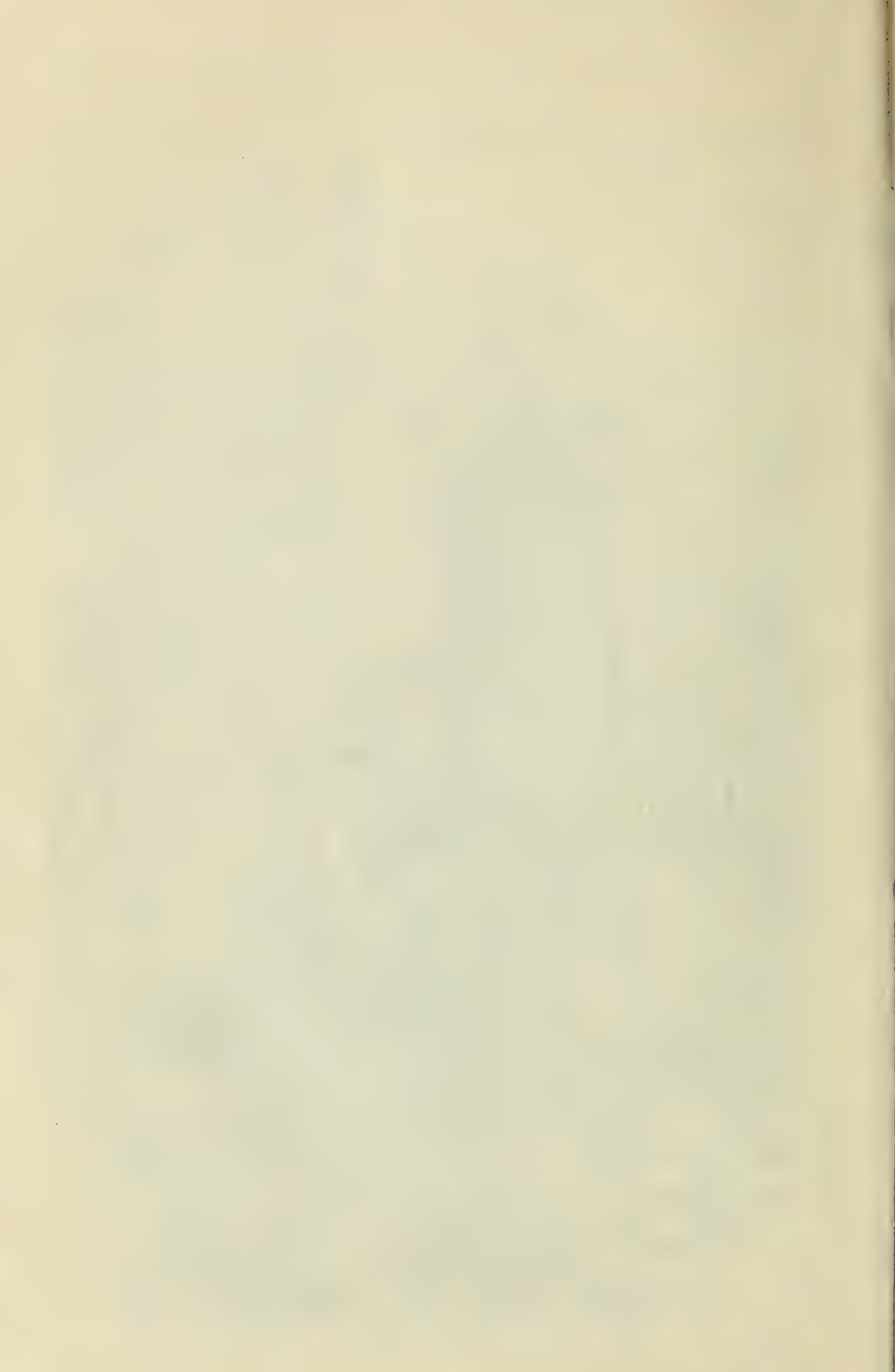
ALEXANDER CAMPBELL, 60 Years Ago.





Martyrdom of Rawlins White. Page 569.





without any resistance." He desired the witnesses might be brought face to face with him, but this common act of justice was denied, and their depositions only read. During the trial he behaved with great temper, and all the abuse which the king's counsel made use of in pleading against him did not provoke him to any indecent passion.

When sentence was given his courage sunk a little, and he begged pardon of the three lords, who were his enemies, and entreated them to solicit the king in his favor, or at least to protect his wife and children. But instead of interceding for him, Northumberland determined to free himself from all further fear, by the sacrifice of his ancient rival, and accordingly employed emissaries to prejudice the king against his uncle, by pretending that, while in the Tower, he had confessed a design to employ some persons to assassinate Northumberland, Northampton and Pembroke. This being believed by the king, he gave him up to his enemies.

Stanhope, Partridge, Arundel, and Vane, the duke's friends and pretended accomplices, were next tried; the two first were not much pitied, for they had made an ill use of their interest with the duke while in power; the two last were much lamented. They were all condemned; Partridge and Vane were hanged, the other two were beheaded.

Six weeks after his trial the unfortunate duke was brought to the scaffold, and as Mr. Fox, the author of this work, was present at his execution, we shall give his account of it in his own words.

"In the year of our Lord 1552, the two and twentieth of January, the duke of Somerset, uncle to king Edward, was brought out of the Tower of London, and according to the manner delivered to the sheriffs of the city, and compassed about with a great number of armed men both of the guard and others. He was brought unto the scaffold on Tower-hill, where he, nothing changing either voice or counten-

ance, but in a manner with the same gesture which he commonly used at home, kneeling upon both his knees, and lifting up his hands, commended himself unto God.

“After he had ended a few short prayers, standing up again, and turning himself toward the east side of the scaffold, nothing at all abashed (as it seemed to me, standing about the midst of the scaffold, and diligently marking all things) either with the sight of the ax, or yet of the executioner, or of present death, but with the same alacrity and cheerfulness of mind and countenance as he was accustomed to show when he heard the causes and supplications of others, and especially the poor (towards whom, as it were with a certain fatherly love to his children, he always showed himself most attentive) he uttered these words to the people:

“‘Dearly beloved friends, I am brought hither to suffer death, albeit that I never offended against the king, neither by word nor deed, and have been always as faithful and true unto this realm as any man. But forasmuch as I am by a law condemned to die, I do acknowledge myself, as well as others, to be subject thereunto. Wherefore, to testify my obedience which I owe unto the laws, I am come hither to suffer death; whereunto I willingly offer myself, with most hearty thanks unto God, that hath given me this time of repentance, who might through sudden death have taken away my life, that neither I should have acknowledged him nor myself.

“‘Moreover, dearly beloved friends, there is yet somewhat that I must put you in mind of, as touching Christian religion; which, so long as I was in authority, I always diligently set forth and furthered to my power. Neither do I repent me of my doings, but rejoice therein, sith that now the state of Christian religion cometh most near unto the form and order of the primitive church. Which thing I esteem as a great benefit given of God both unto



you and me ; most heartily exhorting you all, that this, which is most purely set forth unto you, you will with like thankfulness accept and embrace, and set out the same in your living. Which thing, if you do not, without doubt greater mischief and calamity will follow.'

"When he had spoken these words there was suddenly a terrible noise heard ; whereupon there came a great fear upon all men. This noise was as it had been the noise of some great storm or tempest, which to some seemed to be from above ; as if a great deal of gunpowder, being inclosed in an armory, and having caught fire, had violently broken out. But unto some it seemed as though it had been a great multitude of horsemen running together, or coming upon them. Such a noise then was in the ears of all, although they saw nothing. Whereby it happened that all the people being amazed without any evident cause, they ran away, some into the ditches and puddles, and some into the houses thereabouts ; others fell down grovelling unto the ground, with their poll-axes and halberds ; and most of them cried out, 'Jesus save us ! Jesus save us ! Those who remained in their places, for fear knew not where they were ; and I myself who was there among the rest, being also afraid in this hurlyburly, stood still amazed. It happened here, as the evangelist wrote of Christ, when, as the officers of the high priests and pharisees, coming with weapons to take him, being astonished, ran backwards and fell to the ground.

"In the meantime, whilst these things were thus in doing, the people by chance espied one Sir Anthony Brown riding under the scaffold ; which was the occasion of a new noise. For when they saw him coming, they conjectured that which was not true, but which they all sincerely wished for, that the king, by that messenger, had sent his uncle pardon : and therefore with great rejoicing and casting up their caps, they cried out, 'Pardon, pardon is come ! God save the

king.' Thus the good duke, although he was destitute of all men's help, yet he saw, before his departure, in how great love and favor he was with all men. And truly I do not think in so great slaughter of dukes as hath been in England within these few years, there were so many weeping eyes at one time; and not without cause. For all men saw in his fall the public ruin of England, except such as indeed did perceive nothing.

"But to return from whence we have strayed; the duke, in the meantime, standing still in the same place, modestly and with a grave countenance made a sign to the people with his hand, that they would keep themselves quiet. Which done, and silence obtained, he spake unto them in this manner.

"Dearly beloved friends, there is no such matter here in hand as you vainly hope or believe. It seemeth thus good unto Almighty God, whose ordinance it is thus meet and necessary that we all be obedient unto. Wherefore I pray you all to be quiet, and to be contented with my death, which I am most willing to suffer; and let us now join in prayer unto the Lord for the preservation of the king's majesty, unto whom, hitherto, I have always showed myself a most faithful and true servant. I have always been most diligent about his majesty, and his affairs both at home and abroad, and no less diligent in seeking the common good of the whole realm.' At which words all the people cried out, 'It is most true.'

"Then the duke proceeding, said, 'Unto whose majesty I wish continued health, with all felicity, and all prosperous success.' Whereunto the people again cried out, 'Amen.'

"Moreover, I do wish unto all his counsellors the grace and favor of God, whereby they may rule in all things uprightly with justice. Unto whom I exhort you all in the Lord to show yourselves obedient, as it is your bounden



duty, under the pain of condemnation, and also most profitable for the preservation and safeguard of the king's majesty.

“Moreover, as heretofore I have had oftentimes affairs with divers men, and hard it is to please every man, therefore, if there be any who hath been offended and injured by me, I most humbly require and ask him forgiveness; but especially Almighty God, whom, throughout all my life, I have most grievously offended; and all other, whatsoever they be, that have offended me, I do with my whole heart forgive them. Now I once again require you, dearly beloved in the Lord, that you will keep yourselves quiet and still, lest through your tumult you might trouble me. For albeit the spirit be willing and ready, the flesh is frail and wavering, and through your quietness I shall be much more composed. Moreover, I desire you all to bear me witness that I die here in the faith of Jesus Christ; desiring you to help me with your prayers, that I may persevere constantly in the same unto my end.’

“After this, turning himself again, he kneeled down. Then Dr. Cox, who was present to counsel and advise him, delivered a certain scroll into his hand, wherein was contained a brief confession unto God. Which being read, he stood up again upon his feet, without any trouble of mind (as it appeared) and first bade the sheriffs farewell, then the lieutenant of the Tower, and others, taking them all by the hands which were upon the scaffold with him. Then he gave money to the executioner; which done, he put off his gown, and kneeling down again in the straw, untied his shirt-strings. After that, the executioner coming to him turned down his collar about his neck, and all other things which hindered him. Then lifting up his eyes to heaven, and covering his face with his own handkerchief, he laid himself down along, showing no trouble or fear, neither did his countenance change.



“Thus this meek and gentle duke lying along, and looking for the stroke, because his doublet covered his neck, he was commanded to rise up and put it off; and then laying himself down again upon the block, and calling thrice upon the name of Jesus, saying, ‘Lord Jesus, save me,’ as he was the third time repeating the same, even as the name of Jesus was in uttering, in a moment he was bereft both of head and life, and slept in the Lord; being taken away from all dangers and evils of this life, and resting now in the peace of God; in the preferment of whose truth and gospel he always showed himself an excellent instrument and member, and therefore hath received the reward of his labors.”

Somerset was a man of extraordinary virtues, great candor, and eminent piety; he was always a promoter of justice, and a patron of the oppressed. He was a better soldier than a statesman, being too easy and open-hearted for his situation. The people saw, that the conspiracy for which he and the other four suffered, was merely a pretence for their murder; the other accomplices were soon discharged, and Palmer, the chief witness, became Northumberland’s particular confidant. The whole affair was looked on as a contrivance of the latter, by which he entirely lost the affections of the people. The chief objection to Somerset was his having raised much of his estate out of the spoils of church-lands, as his palace of Somerset-house in the Strand, out of the ruins of some churches and bishops’ palaces.

The day after the duke of Somerset’s execution, parliament assembled. The first act they passed was the established common prayer-book, as it was then amended. Another law was passed, by which it was enacted that “No days were to be esteemed holy in their own nature, but by reason of those holy duties which ought to be done in them, for which they were dedicated to the service of God. Days were esteemed to be dedicated only to the honor of God,

even those in which the saints were commemorated; Sundays, and the other holy days, were to be religiously observed, and the bishops were to proceed to censures against offenders. The eves before them were to be fasts, and abstinence from flesh was ordered both in Lent, and on every Friday and Saturday." An act likewise passed for the marriage of the clergy, in which it was stated, "That whereas the former act about it was thought only a permission of it, as some other unlawful things were connived at; upon which the wives and children of the clergy were reproachfully used, and the word of God was not heard with due reverence; therefore their mariages were declared good and valid." The bishopric of Westminster was reunited to London, only the collegiate church was still continued.

The convocation now confirmed the articles of religion which had been prepared the former year, and thus was the reformation of worship and doctrine brought to such a degree of perfection, that since that time there has been very little alteration made. Another branch of it was still unfinished, but was now under consultation, touching the government of the church and the ecclesiastical courts. This matter had been attempted several times during the last and present reigns; but the changes in the government had caused it to be laid aside. It was now revived, and eight eminent bishops, and others, were appointed to draw up a plan, which was afterwards to be submitted to thirty-two commissioners. It was generally believed that Cranmer drew it entirely by himself, while the others only corrected what he designed. Haddon and Cheek translated it into Latin; which they did with great ability. The work was divided into fifty-one titles; and being laid before the commissioners, was by them to have been presented to the king for his confirmation; but he died before it was quite finished, nor was it ever afterwards resumed.

About this time the dilapidated state of the church



revenues engaged the attention of the council, but so many persons of power and influence were interested to prevent a remedy being afforded, that the affair was dropped. In every see, as it became vacant, the best manors were laid hold of by such hungry courtiers as could procure the grant of them. They seemed to think, that the bishops' sees were so rich that they could never be made poor enough; but they were soon reduced to so low a condition that it was hardly possible for a bishop to subsist in them. If what had been thus taken from them had been converted to good uses, such as the maintenance of the poor and inferior clergy, it would have been some excuse for the violence, but the lands were laid hold of by laymen, who made no compensation for the spoils thus gained by them.

### MARTYRDOM OF THE REV. JOHN BRADFORD.

This distinguished martyr was born at Manchester, where he received an education sufficiently liberal to qualify him for the more exalted offices of life, having attained to a considerable knowledge in classical and mathematical literature.

On his arrival at years of maturity, having some distinguished friends, by their interest he became secretary to Sir John Harrington, who was treasurer to Henry VIII.

After having been in this office for some time, being of a studious turn of mind, he quitted it and went to Cambridge, where he made such great improvements, that at the end of one year that university conferred on him the degree of master of arts; soon after which he was admitted to a fellowship in Pembroke college.

At this time Martin Bucer, a zealous advocate of the reformed religion, resided at Cambridge. This person discovered a great regard for Mr. Bradford, and persuaded



him to follow those studies which most conduced to qualify him for the work of the ministry.

Mr. Bradford, having that diffidence which is generally the attendant on real merit, excused himself from assuming that important office, as not being sufficiently qualified; but Bucer at length brought him to consent to enter on the solemn work, and he was ordained a deacon by Dr. Ridley, bishop of London, who afterwards made him a prebendary of St. Paul's, where, in rotation, he preached, during three years, the true gospel of Christ; the doctrines of salvation by faith, and repentance unto life, together with the necessity of a life of holiness, as the evidence of that faith.

After the accession of queen Mary, Mr. Bradford continued his course of preaching, till he was obstructed by the following incident:

In the first year of the reign of that princess, Bonner, then bishop of London, ordered Mr. Bourn, a canon of St. Paul's, and afterwards bishop of Bath, to preach a sermon, wherein he took occasion, from the gospel appointed for the service of the day, to justify Bonner, then restored to his bishopric, in preaching on the same text that very day four years, and enforcing doctrines, for which, according to the terms of the preacher, he was thrown into the Marshalsea, and there kept prisoner during the time of king Edward VI.

These words occasioned great murmurings amongst the people, nay, so incensed were they, that one of them threw a dagger at the preacher, and threatened to drag him from the pulpit, insomuch that he was obliged to withdraw, and desire Mr. Bradford to advance and endeavor to appease the people, who were so tumultuous that they could not be quelled, even by the authority of the lord-mayor.

As soon as Mr. Bradford ascended the pulpit, the people shouted, "God save thy life, Bradford!" and then quietly attended to his discourse, in which he reproved them for

their disorderly behavior, and exhorted them to peace and tranquility ; on which, after he had finished, they peaceably dispersed.

In the afternoon of the same day, Mr. Bradford preached at Bow church, when he took occasion to rebuke the people for their tumultuous behavior at St. Paul's in the morning.

Three days after this incident, he was summoned before the queen, and her council, and there charged as the cause of the late riot about Bourn's preaching at St. Paul's, though he was the very person that preserved him from the outrage of the people, and appeased the tumult.

He was also accused for preaching to the people at Bow church, though he then warmly exhorted them to peace. But nothing that he could allege, in vindication of his innocence, availed, for he was committed to the Tower, on a charge of sedition, because they found he was a popular man, and greatly caressed by the people.

He was confined above a year and six months, till the popish religion was restored by act of parliament. He then took occasion to examine himself concerning his faith, because he could not speak against the doctrine of the church of Rome, without incurring much danger ; whereas, while the laws of king Edward were unrepealed, he might freely speak according to the dictates of his conscience, and the rules of God's most holy word.

The principal articles alleged against Mr. Bradford were, his denying the doctrine of transubstantiation, or the corporeal presence of Christ in the sacrament, and asserting that wicked men did not partake of Christ's body in the said sacrament.

Several bishops, and other learned men, were appointed to confer with him, but their arguments had no weight with him, because they were not founded on scripture, but on human tradition.

As Mr. Bradford would not admit of any tenets and prac-



tices, but what were contained in the revealed word of God, he was deemed a heretic, first excommunicated, then condemned, and committed to the custody of the sheriffs of London. *At midnight he was removed to Newgate*, and the next morning conducted by a large body of men to Smithfield, where he suffered death by being burnt alive, in company with a young man only twenty years of age, being joyful to the last moment of his life, that he was thought worthy to die for his Saviour.

### WILLIAM HUNTER.

This pious young man was the son of poor, but honest and religious parents, who trained him up in the doctrines of the reformation, and when at a proper age put him apprentice to one Thomas Taylor, a silk-weaver, in Coleman street, London.

On the accession of queen Mary, orders were issued to the priests of every parish to summon all their parishioners to receive the communion at mass the Easter following, when young Hunter, who was then only nineteen years of age, refusing to obey the summons, was threatened with being brought before the bishop to answer for his disobedience.

In consequence of this, his master, fearful of incurring ecclesiastical censure, desired he would leave him, at least for a time, upon which he quitted his service, and went to his father at Brentwood, in Essex.

During his stay here he one day went into the chapel, and seeing the bible lie on the desk, he opened it, and began to read. Being observed by an officer of the bishop's court, he severely reprimanded him, and said, "Why meddlest thou with the bible? Understandest thou what thou readest? Canst thou expound the scriptures?" To which Hunter replied, "I do not presume to do it; but finding the bible here, I read it for my comfort and edification."



The officer then informed a neighboring priest of the liberty Hunter had taken in reading the bible, who immediately sent for him, and severely chid him, saying, "Sirrah, who gave thee leave to read the bible, and expound it?" He answered as he had done to the officer; and on the priest's saying, it became him not to meddle with the scriptures, he frankly declared his resolution to read them as long as he lived. The priest upbraided him as a heretic; but he boldly denied the charge. Being asked his opinion concerning the corporeal presence in the sacrament he replied, that he esteemed the bread and wine but as figures, and looked upon the sacrament as an institution in remembrance of the death and sufferings of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ. On this the priest openly declared him a heretic, and threatened to complain of him to the bishop.

A neighboring justice, named Brown, having heard that young Hunter maintained heretical principles, sent for his father to inquire into the particulars. The old man told him that his son had left him, and that he knew not whither he was gone. The justice, not believing what he said, threatened to commit him to prison, unless he would immediately cause his son to be apprehended, and brought before him. To this he replied, with tears in his eyes, "Would you have me seek out my son to be burned."

He was, however, obliged to go in quest of his son; when meeting him by accident, William asked his father if he was seeking for him; to which the old man answered, with tears, in the affirmative, and that it was by order of the justice, who threatened to put him in prison. The son, to secure his father from any danger on his account, said, he was ready to accompany him home, which he accordingly did.

The next day he was apprehended by the constable of the parish, who put him in the stocks for twenty-four

hours, and then took him before the justice. On his arrival the justice called for a bible, turned to the sixth chapter of St. John, and desired him to give his opinion of the meaning of it, as it related to the sacrament of the altar.

Hunter gave the same explanation as he had done to the priest; and persisting in his denial of the corporeal presence in the eucharist the justice upbraided him with heresy, and wrote an account of his conduct to the bishop of London.

In consequence of this, young Hunter was summoned to appear at the consistory court held at St. Paul's. He accordingly attended at the time appointed, when he was severely reproved for having fallen from the Catholic faith, and was exhorted to return to the same.

To this he boldly answered, that he had not fallen from the Catholic faith, but believed and confessed it with all his heart.

He was then desired by the bishop to recant what he had said concerning the sacrament of the altar; but he declared, that by the help of God he would still continue to persist in the faith he had hitherto maintained, and avowed.

Being urged still farther, and promised that if he would recant he should go home unhurt, he said to the bishop, "My lord, if you will let me alone, and leave me to my own conscience, I will return to my father, and dwell with him, or else with my master again, and will keep my opinion to myself."

The bishop answered, "I am content, so that thou wilt go to church, receive, and be confessed." This Hunter peremptorily refused; upon which, after several farther efforts to bring him over, the bishop ordered him to be put in the stocks, where he continued two days and nights, having only a crust of brown bread, and a cup of water, given to him for refreshment.

At the expiration of the two days, the bishop went to



him, and finding the bread and water lay by him untouched, he ordered some of his servants to take him out of the stocks, and let him breakfast with them ; but they evaded the bishop's request, thinking it great profanation that such *excellent Christians* as they were, should eat with a vile *heretic*.

After this he was repeatedly brought before the bishop, who, sometimes by soothing him, and sometimes by threats, endeavored to bring him to a recantation ; but all his efforts proved ineffectual. In consequence of this, the persecuting prelate passed sentence on him, which was, that he should be remanded to Newgate for a time, from whence he should be removed to Brentwood ; “ where,” said the bishop, “ thou shalt be burned.”

A few days after this the bishop sent for him again, and promised him preferment if he would recant : to which he replied, “ My lord, I thank you for your great offer ; but if you cannot enforce my recantation from scripture, I cannot, in my conscience, turn from God for the love of the world, for I count all things but dung and dross for the love of Christ.”

He was then carried back to Newgate, and in a few days removed to Brentwood, where he was confined in an inn till the day of his execution. During this time he was visited by many of his neighbors and acquaintances, all of whom he exhorted to beware of popish superstition and idolatry. William's father and mother came to him, and desired heartily of God that he might continue to the end as he had begun, and his mother said to him that she was happy to have such a child, who could find in his heart to lose his life for Christ's sake.

William said to his mother, “ For the little pain I shall suffer, which will soon be at an end, Christ hath promised me, mother, a crown of joy ; should you not be glad of that ? ”



Whereupon his mother kneeled down on her knees, saying, "I pray God to strengthen thee, my son ; yea, I think thee as well bestowed as any son I ever bore."

On the morning of the 27th of March, 1555, the sheriff gave orders for the necessary preparations to be made for his execution. In the meantime the sheriff's son, who was his friend, visited him at the inn, and encouraged him not to fear the men who were making preparations for his death ; to whom he said, " that, thank God, he was not in the least intimidated, for that he had cast up his account, and well knew the happy consequences that would attend his strict adherence to the cause of Christ."

A short time after this he was led from the inn to the stake, between one of the sheriff's officers and his brother Robert. In their way he was met by his father, who, with tears flowing from his eyes, said to him, " God be with thee, son William." To which he replied, " God be with you, good father, and be of good cheer, for I trust we shall meet again, with exceeding great joy."

When he arrived at the place of execution, he kneeled on a fagot, and repeated the 51st Psalm, till he came to these words : " The sacrifice of God is a contrite spirit : a contrite and a broken heart, O God, thou wilt not despise." He was then interrupted by one of the officers, who told him the translation was wrong, the words being " an humble spirit ;" but he said the translation was " a contrite heart," on which he was told that the heretics translated books as they pleased.

The sheriff then showed him a letter from the queen, containing his pardon if he would recant ; but he refused life on such terms, went up to the stake and was chained to it, saying to the spectators, " Good people, pray for me, and make quick dispatch ; pray for me, while you see me alive, and I will pray for you."

He then took a fagot, and embraced it in his arms ; and







Scourging of George Penn. Page 596.





In private life he was pious, humble, and affable : in public he was learned, sound and eloquent ; diligent in his duty, and very popular as a preacher.

He had been educated in the Roman Catholic religion, but was brought over to the reformed faith by reading Bertram's book on the Sacrament ; and he was confirmed in the same by frequent conferences with Cranmer and Peter Martyr, so that he became a zealous promoter of the reformed doctrines and discipline during the reign of king Edward.

The following character of this eminent divine presents so interesting a picture of the good man and pious Christian, that we give it verbatim.

" In his important offices he so diligently applied himself by preaching and teaching the true and wholesome doctrine of Christ, that no good child was more singularly loved by his dear parents, than he by his flock and diocese. Every holiday and Sunday he preached in one place or other, except he was otherwise hindered by weighty affairs and business ; and to his sermons the people resorted, swarming about him like bees, and so faithfully did his life portray his doctrines, that even his very enemies could not reprove him in anything.

" Besides this, he was very learned, his memory was great, and he had attained such reading withal, that he deserved to be compared to the best men of his age, as his works, sermons, and his sundry disputations in both the universities well testified.

" He was, also wise of counsel, deep of wit, and very politic in all his doings. He was anxious to gain the obstinate papists from their erroneous opinions, and sought by gentleness to win them to the truth, as his gentle and courteous treatment of Dr. Heath, who was prisoner with him in king Edward's time, in his house, one year, sufficiently proved. In fine, he was in all points so good, pious, and spiritual a man, that England never saw his superior.

“He was comely in his person, and well proportioned. He took all things in good part, bearing no malice nor rancor from his heart, but straightways forgetting all injuries and offences done against him. He was very kind and natural to his relations, and yet not bearing with them any otherwise than right would require, giving them always for a general rule, yea to his own brother and sister, that they doing evil should look for nothing at his hand, but should be as strangers and aliens to him, and that they, to be his brother and sister, must live a good life.

“He used all kinds of ways to mortify himself, and was much given to prayer and contemplation: for duly every morning, as soon as he was dressed, he went to his bed-chamber, and there upon his knees prayed for half an hour, which being done, immediately he went to his study, (if no other business came to interrupt him) where he continued till ten o’clock, and then came to the common prayer, daily used in his house. This being done, he went to dinner; where he talked little, except otherwise occasion had been ministered, and then it was sober, discreet and wise, and sometimes merry, as cause required.

“The dinner done, which was not very long, he used to sit an hour or thereabouts talking, or playing at chess; he then returned to his study, and there would continue, except visitors or business abroad prevented him, until five o’clock at night, when he would come to common prayer, as in the forenoon, which being finished, he went to supper, behaving himself there as at his dinner before. After supper, recreating himself again at chess, after which he would return again to his study, continuing there till eleven o’clock at night, which was his common hour of going to bed, then saying his prayers upon his knees as in the morning when he arose. When at his manor of Fulham, he used to read daily a lecture to his family at the common prayer, beginning at the acts of the Apostles, and so



going through all epistles of St. Paul, giving to every man that could read a New Testament, hiring them besides with money, to learn by heart certain principal chapters, but especially the 13th chapter of the Acts of the Apostles, reading also unto his household oftentimes the 101st Psalm, being marvelously careful over his family, that they might be a pattern of virtue and honesty to others. In short, as he was godly and virtuous himself, so nothing but virtue and godliness reigned in his house, feeding them with the food of our Savior Jesus Christ.

“The following is a striking instance of the benevolence of his temper, shown to Mrs. Bonner, mother to Dr. Bonner, bishop of London. Bishop Ridley, when at his manor of Fulham, always sent for Mrs. Bonner, who dwelt in a house adjoining his own, to dinner and supper, with a Mrs. Mungey, Bonner's sister, saying, ‘Go for my mother Bonner,’ who coming, was always placed in the chair at the head of the table, being as gently treated and welcomed as his own mother, and he would never have her displaced from her seat, although the king's council had been present, saying, when any of them were there (as several times they were) ‘By your lordships’ favor, this place of right and custom is for my mother Bonner.’ But how well he was recompensed for this singular kindness and gentle piety afterwards at the hands of Dr. Bonner is too well known. For who afterwards was a greater enemy to Dr. Ridley than Dr. Bonner? Who went more about to seek his destruction than he? Recompensing his gentleness with extreme cruelty; as well appeared by the severity against Dr. Ridley's own sister and her husband, George Shippide, from time to time; whereas the gentleness of the other permitted Bonner's mother, sister and others of his kindred, not only quietly to enjoy all that which they had from bishop Bonner, but also entertained them in his house, showing much courtesy and friendship daily unto them;

while, on the other side, Bonner being restored again, would not suffer the brother and sister of bishop Ridley and other of his friends, not only not to enjoy that which they had by their brother, but also churlishly, without all order of law or honesty, wrested from them all the livings they had."

On the accession of queen Mary, he shared the same fate with many others who professed the truth of the gospel. Being accused of heresy, he was first removed from his bishopric, then sent prisoner to the Tower of London, and afterwards to Bocardo prison, in Oxford; from whence he was committed to the custody of Mr. Irish, mayor of that city, in whose house he remained till the day of his execution.

On the 30th of September, 1555, these two eminent prelates were cited to appear in the divinity school at Oxford, which they accordingly did.

Dr. Ridley was first examined, and severely reprimanded by the bishop of Lincoln, because when he heard the "cardinal's grace," and the "pope's holiness" mentioned in the commission, he kept on his cap. The words of the bishop were to this effect: "Mr. Ridley, if you will not be uncovered, in respect to the pope, and the cardinal his legate, by whose authority we sit in commission, your cap shall be taken off."

The bishop of Lincoln then made a formal harangue, in which he entreated Ridley to return to the holy mother church, insisted on the antiquity and authority of the see of Rome, and of the pope, as the immediate successor of St. Peter.

Dr. Ridley, in return, strenuously opposed the arguments of the bishop, and boldly vindicated the doctrines of the reformation.

After much debate, the five following articles were proposed to him, and his immediate and explicit answers required.



1. That he had frequently affirmed, and openly maintained and defended, that the true natural body of Christ, after consecration of the priest, is not really present in the sacrament of the altar.

2. That he had often publicly affirmed, and defended, that in the sacrament of the altar remaineth still the substance of bread and wine.

3. That he had often openly affirmed, and obstinately maintained, that in the mass is no propitiatory sacrifice for the quick and the dead.

4. That the aforesaid assertions have been solemnly condemned by the scholastical censure of this school, as heretical, and contrary to the Catholic faith, by the prolocutor of the convocation-house, and sundry learned men of both universities.

5. That all and singular the premises are true, and notoriously known, by all near at hand, and in distant places.

To the first of these articles Dr. Ridley replied, "that he believed Christ's body to be in the sacrament, really, by grace and spirit effectually, but not so as to include a lively and movable body under the forms of bread and wine."

To the second he answered in the affirmative.

Part of the fourth he acknowledged, and part he denied.

To the fifth he answered, "that the premises were so far true, as his replies had set forth. Whether all men spake evil of them he knew not, because he came not so much abroad, to hear what every man reported."

He was then ordered to appear the following day in St. Mary's church, in Oxford, to give his final answer; after which he was committed to the custody of the mayor.

When Latimer was brought into court, the bishop of Lincoln warmly exhorted him to return to the unity of the church, from which he had revolted.

The same articles which were proposed to Dr. Ridley were read to Latimer, and he was required to give a full and satisfactory answer to each of them.



His replies not being satisfactory to the court, he was dismissed ; but ordered to appear in St. Mary's church, at the same time with Dr. Ridley.

On the day appointed, the commissioners met, when Dr. Ridley being first brought before them, the bishop of Lincoln stood up, and began to report the proceedings of the former meeting, assuring him that he had full liberty to make what alterations he pleased in his answers to the articles proposed to him, and to deliver the same to the court in writing.

After some debate, Dr. Ridley took out a paper, and began to read ; but the bishop interrupted him, and ordered the beadle to take the writing from him. The doctor desired permission to read on, declaring the contents were only his answers to the articles proposed ; but the bishop and others, having privately reviewed it, would not permit it to be read in open court.

When the articles were again administered, he referred the notary to his writing, who set them down according to the same.

The bishop of Gloucester affecting much concern for Dr. Ridley, persuaded him not to indulge an obstinate temper, but to recant his erroneous opinions, and return to the unity of the holy Catholic church.

Dr. Ridley coolly replied, he was not vain of his own understanding, but was fully persuaded that the religion he professed was founded on God's most holy and infallible church ; and therefore, he could not abandon or deny the same, consistently with his regard for the honor of God, and the salvation of his immortal soul.

He desired to declare his reasons, why he could not, with a safe conscience, admit of the popish supremacy ; but his request was denied.

The bishop finding him inflexible in the faith, according to the doctrine of the reformation, thus addressed him :

“Dr. Ridley, it is with the utmost concern that I observe your stubbornness and obstinacy in persisting in damnable errors and heresies ; but unless you recant, I must proceed to the other part of my commission, though very much against my will and desire.”

Ridley not making any reply, sentence of condemnation was read ; after which he was carried back to confinement.

When Latimer was brought before the court, the bishop of Lincoln informed him, that though they had already taken his answers to certain articles alleged against him, yet they had given him time to consider on the same, and would permit him to make what alterations he should deem fit, hoping, by such means, to reclaim him from his errors, and bring him over to the holy Catholic church.

The articles were again read to him, but he deviated not, in a single point, from the answers he had already given.

Being again warned to recant, and revoke his errors, he refused, declaring, that he never would deny God's truth, which he was ready to seal with his blood. Sentence of condemnation was then pronounced against him, and he was committed to the custody of the mayor.

The account of the degradation of Ridley, his behavior before, and at the place of execution, is curious and interesting : we therefore give it at length.

“On the 15th day of October, in the morning, Dr. Brooks, bishop of Gloucester, and the vice-chancellor of Oxford, Dr. Marshall, with others of the chief and heads of the same university, and many others accompanying them, came to the house of Mr. Irish, mayor of Oxford, where Dr. Ridley was a close prisoner. And when the bishop of Gloucester came into the chamber where Dr. Ridley lay, he told him for what purpose their coming was, saying, ‘ That yet once again the queen's majesty did offer unto him, by them, her gracious mercy, if he would receive it, and come home again to the faith in which he was baptized. And



further said, ‘That if he would not recant and become one of the Catholic church with them, then they must needs (against their wills) proceed according to the law, which they would be very loth to do, if they might otherwise. But,’ said he, ‘we have been oftentimes with you, and have requested that you would recant your fantastical and devilish opinions, which hitherto you have not, although you might in so doing win many, and do much good. Therefore, good Mr. Ridley, consider with yourself the danger that shall ensue both of body and soul, if you shall so wilfully cast yourself away in refusing mercy offered unto you at this time.’

“My lord,” said Dr. Ridley, ‘you know my mind fully herein : and as for my doctrine, my conscience assureth me that it was sound, and according to God’s word (to his glory be it spoken); and which doctrine, the Lord being my helper, I will maintain so long as my tongue shall move, and breath is within my body ; and in confirmation thereof I am willing to seal the same with my blood.’

“*Brooks.* Well, it were best, Mr. Ridley, not to do so, but to become one of the church with us. For you know well enough, that whosoever is out of the Catholic church cannot be saved. Therefore I say, that while you have time and mercy offered you, receive it, and confess with us the pope’s holiness to be the chief head of the church.

“*Ridley.* I marvel that you will trouble me with any such vain and foolish talk. You know my mind concerning the usurped authority of that Antichrist. And here he would have reasoned with the bishop of Rome’s authority, but was not suffered, and yet he spake so earnestly against the pope therein, that the bishop told him, ‘If he would not hold his peace, he should be compelled. And seeing,’ saith he, ‘that you will not receive the queen’s mercy, but stubbornly refuse the same, we must, against our wills, proceed according to our commission to degrading and depriving you



of the dignity of priesthood. For we take you for no bishop, and therefore will the sooner have done with you: so committing you to the secular power, you know what doth follow.'

"*Ridley.* Do with me as it shall please God to suffer you; I am well content to abide the same with all my heart.

"*Brooks.* Put off your cap, and put upon you this surplice.

"*Ridley.* Not I, truly.

"*Brooks.* But you must.

"*Ridley.* I will not.

"*Brooks.* You must; therefore, make no more ado, but put this surplice upon you.

"*Ridley.* Truly, if it come upon me, it shall be against my will.

"*Brooks.* Will you not put it upon you?

"*Ridley.* No, that I will not.

"*Brooks.* It shall be put upon you, by one or other.

"*Ridley.* Do therein as it shall please you, I am well content with that, and more than that; the servant is not above his master. If they dealt so cruelly with our Savior Christ, as the scripture maketh mention, and he suffered the same patiently, how much doth it become us, his servants! And in saying these words they put upon him a surplice, with all the trinkets appertaining to the mass. As they were about this, Dr. Ridley vehemently inveighed against the Romish bishop, and all that foolish apparel, calling the first Antichrist, and the last foolish and abominable, 'yea, too foolish for a device in a play.'

"*Brooks.* You had best hold your peace, lest your mouth be stopped. At which words one Edridge, the reader of the Greek lecture, standing by, said, 'Sir, the law is that he should be gagged, therefore let him be gagged.' At which words Dr. Ridley, looking earnestly upon him, shook his head at him, and made no answer.

“When they came to that place where Dr. Ridley should hold the chalice and the wafer cake (called the singing-bread) Dr. Ridley said, ‘They shall not come into my hands; for if they do, they shall fall to the ground for me.’ Then one was appointed to hold them in his hand, while bishop Brooks read a part in Latin, touching the degradation of spiritual persons, according to the pope’s law.

“They then put the book into his hand, and read another thing in Latin, the effect of which was, ‘We do take from thee the office of preaching the gospel,’ etc. At which words Dr. Ridley gave a great sigh, and looking up towards heaven, said, ‘O Lord God, forgive them this their wickedness.’

“Having put on him the mass-gear, they began to take it away (beginning with the uppermost garment), again reading in Latin according to the pope’s law. Now when all was taken from him, saving only the surplice, as they were reading and taking it away, Dr. Ridley said unto them, ‘Lord God, what power be you of, that you can take from a man that which he never had? I was never a singer in all my life, and yet you will take from me that which I never had.’

“So when this ridiculous degradation was ended very solemnly, Dr. Ridley said to Dr. Brooks, ‘Have you done? If you have, then give me leave to talk a little concerning these matters.’ Brooks answered, ‘Mr. Ridley, we must not talk with you; you are out of the church; and our law is, that we must not talk with any out of the church.’ Then Dr. Ridley said, ‘Seeing that you will not suffer me to talk, neither will vouchsafe to hear me, what remedy but patience? I refer my cause to my heavenly Father, who will reform things that be amiss, when it shall please him.’<sup>4</sup>

“They were then going, when Ridley said, ‘My lord, I would wish that you would vouchsafe to read over and peruse a little book of Bertram’s writing, concerning the



sacrament. I promise you, you will find much good learning therein, if you will read it with impartial judgment.' To which Dr. Brooks made no answer, but was going away. Then said Dr. Ridley, 'Oh, I perceive you cannot away with this manner of talk. Well, as it is to no purpose, I will say no more; I will speak of worldly affairs. I pray you therefore, my lord, hear me, and be a means to the queen's majesty, in behalf of a great many poor men, especially my poor sister and her husband, who standeth there. They had a poor living granted unto them by me, when I was in the see of London, which is taken away from them, by him that occupieth the same room, without either law or conscience. I have a supplication to her majesty, in their behalf. You shall hear it.' Then he read the same, and when he came to the place that spake of his sister by name, he wept; so that, for a time, he could not speak for weeping. But recovering himself he said, 'This is nature that moveth me, but I have now done;' and with that he finished it, and then delivered it to his brother, commanding him to put it up to the queen's majesty, and to sue not only for himself, but also for such as had any leases or grants by him, and were put from them by Dr. Bonner. Dr. Brooks said, 'Indeed, Mr. Ridley, your request in this supplication is very right; therefore I must, in conscience, speak to the queen's majesty for them.'

*Ridley.* 'I pray for God's sake so do.'

*Brooks.* 'I think your request will be granted, except one thing hinder it, and that is because you do not allow the queen's proceedings, but obstinately withstand the same.'

*Ridley.* 'What remedy? I can do no more than speak and write. I trust I have discharged my conscience therein, and God's will be done.'

*Brooks.* 'I will do my best.'

'The degradation being concluded, and all things fin-



ished, Dr. Brooks called the bailiffs, delivering to them Dr. Ridley, with this charge, to keep him safely from any man speaking with him, and that he should be brought to the place of execution when they were commanded. Then Dr. Ridley, in praising God, said, ‘God, I thank thee, and to thy praise be it spoken, there is none of you able to lay to my charge any open or notorious crime : for if you could, it would surely be done, I see very well.’ Whereunto Brooks said ‘he played the part of a proud Pharisee, exalting himself.’

“Dr. Ridley said, ‘No, as I said before, to God’s glory be it spoken. I confess myself to be a miserable sinner, and have great need of God’s help and mercy, and do daily call and cry for the same : therefore, I pray you, have no such opinion of me.’ Then they departed, and in going away, a certain warden of a college advised Dr. Ridley to repent and forsake that erroneous opinion. ‘Sir,’ said the doctor, ‘repent *you*, for you are out of the truth ; and I pray God (if it be his blessed will) have mercy upon you, and grant you the understanding of his word.’ Then the warden, being in a passion thereat, said, ‘I trust that I shall never be of your devilish opinion, either yet to be in that place whither you shall go ; thou art the most obstinate and wilful man that I ever heard talk since I was born.’

#### “BEHAVIOR OF DR. RIDLEY THE NIGHT BEFORE HE SUFFERED.

“On the night before he suffered his beard was washed and his legs ; and as he sat at supper, at the house of Mr. Irish, his keeper, he invited his hostess, and the rest at the table, to his marriage ; for, said he, to-morrow I must be married, and so showing himself to be as merry as ever he had been before. And wishing his sister at his marriage, he asked his brother, sitting at the table, whether he

thought she could find in her heart to be there; he answered, 'Yes, I dare say, with all her heart.' At which he said, 'He was glad to hear of her sincerity.' At this discourse Mrs. Irish wept. But Mr. Ridley comforted her, saying, 'O, Mrs. Irish, you love me not, I see well enough; for in that you weep, it doth appear you will not be at my marriage, neither are content therewith. Indeed you are not so much my friend as I thought you had been. But quiet yourself, though my breakfast shall be somewhat sharp and painful, yet I am sure my supper will be more pleasant and sweet.'

"When they arose from the table, his brother offered to stay all night with him. But he said, 'No, no, that you shall not. For I intend (God willing) to go to bed, and to sleep as quietly to-night as ever I did.' On this his brother departed, exhorting him to be of good cheer, and to take his cross quietly, for the reward was great, &c.

#### "BURNING OF RIDLEY AND LATIMER.

"On the north side of the town, in the ditch over-against Baliol-college, the place of execution was appointed: and for fear of any tumult that might arise to hinder the burning of the servants of Christ, the lord Williams was commanded by the queen's letters, and the householders of the city to be there assistant, sufficiently appointed; and when everything was in readiness the prisoners were brought forth by the mayor and bailiffs.

"Dr. Ridley had on a black gown furred, and faced with foins, such as he used to wear when he was a bishop; a tippet of velvet furred likewise about his neck, a velvet night-cap upon his head, with a corner cap, and slippers on his feet. He walked to the stake between the mayor and an alderman, &c.

"After him came Mr. Latimer, in a poor Bristol frieze



frock, much worn, with his buttoned cap and kerchief on his head, all ready to the fire, a new long shroud hanging down to the feet, which at the first sight excited sorrow in the spectators, beholding, on the one side, the honor they sometime had; and, on the other, the calamity in which they had fallen.

“Dr. Ridley, as he passed toward Bocardo, looked up where Dr. Cranmer lay, hoping to have seen him at the glass window, and spoken to him. But Dr. Cranmer was then engaged in dispute with friar Soto and his fellows, so that he could not see him through that occasion. Dr. Ridley then looking back saw Mr. Latimer coming after. Unto whom he said, ‘Oh, are you there?’. ‘Yea,’ said Mr. Latimer, ‘have after, as fast as I can.’ So he following a pretty way off, at length they came to the stake. Dr. Ridley, first entering the place, earnestly held up both his hands, and looked towards heaven; then shortly after seeing Mr. Latimer with a cheerful look, he ran to him and embraced him, saying, ‘Be of good heart, brother, for God will either assuage the fury of the flame, or else strengthen us to abide it.’

“He then went to the stake, and, kneeling down, prayed with great fervor, while Mr. Latimer following, kneeled also, and prayed as earnestly as he. After this they arose and conversed together, and while thus employed Dr. Smith began his sermon to them upon this text of St. Paul, in the 13th chapter of the first epistle to the Corinthians: ‘If I yield my body to the fire to be burnt, and have not charity, I shall gain nothing thereby.’ Wherein he alleged that the goodness of the cause, and not the order of death, maketh the holiness of the person, which he confirmed by the examples of Judas, and of a woman in Oxford who of late hanged herself, for that they and such like as he recited, might then be adjudged righteous, which desperately separated their lives from their bodies, as he feared that those



men who stood before him would do. But he cried still to the people to beware of them, for they were heretics and died out of the church. He ended with a very short exhortation to them to recant and come home again to the church, and save their lives and souls, which else were condemned. His sermon scarcely lasted a quarter of an hour.

“At its conclusion, Dr. Ridley said to Mr. Latimer, ‘Will you begin to answer the sermon, or shall I?’ Mr. Latimer said, ‘Begin you first, I pray you.’ ‘I will,’ said Dr. Ridley.

“He then, with Mr. Latimer, kneeled to my lord Williams, the vice-chancellor of Oxford, and the other commissioners appointed for that purpose, who sat upon a form thereby, and said, ‘I beseech you, my lord, even for Christ’s sake, that I may speak but two or three words;’ and whilst my lord bent his head to the mayor and vice-chancellor, to know whether he might have leave to speak, the bailiffs, and Dr. Marshal, the vice-chancellor, ran hastily unto him, and with their hands stopping his mouth, said, ‘Mr. Ridley, if you will revoke your erroneous opinions you shall not only have liberty so to do, but also your life.’ ‘Not otherwise?’ said Mr. Ridley. ‘No,’ answered Dr. Marshal; ‘therefore, if you will not do so there is no remedy; you must suffer for your deserts.’ ‘Well,’ said the martyr, ‘so long as the breath is in my body I will never deny my Lord Christ and his known truth; God’s will be done in me;’ with that he rose and said, with a loud voice, ‘I commit our cause to Almighty God, who will indifferently judge all.’

“To which Mr. Latimer added his old saying, ‘Well, there is nothing hid but it shall be opened;’ and said he could answer Smith well enough, if he might be suffered. They were then commanded to prepare, immediately for the stake.

“They according, with all meekness, obeyed. Dr. Ridley gave his gown and tippet to his brother-in-law Mr. Shipside, who all the time of his imprisonment, although

he was not suffered to come to him, lay there at his own charges to provide him necessaries, which from time to time he sent him by the serjeant who kept him. Some other of his apparel, he also gave way, the others the bailiffs took.

“He likewise made presents of other small things to gentlemen standing by, and divers of them pitifully weeping; to Sir Henry Lea he gave a new groat; to my lord William’s gentlemen some napkins, etc., and happy was he who could get the least trifle for a remembrance of this good man.

“Mr. Latimer quietly suffered his keeper to pull off his hose and his other apparel, which was very simple; and being stripped to his shroud, he seemed as comely a person as one could well see.

“Then Dr. Ridley, standing as yet in his trouse, said to his brother, ‘It were best for me to go in my trouse still.’— ‘No,’ said Mr. Latimer, ‘it will put you to more pain: and it will do a poor man good.’ Whereunto Dr. Ridley said, ‘Be it in the name of God,’ and so unlaced himself. Then, being in his shirt, he stood upon the aforesaid stone, and held up his hand and said, ‘O heavenly Father, I give unto thee most hearty thanks, that thou hast called me to be a professor of thee, even unto death; I beseech thee, Lord God, have mercy on this realm of England, and deliver it from all her enemies.

“Then the smith took a chain of iron, and brought it about their middles: and as he was knocking in the staple. Dr. Ridley took the chain in his hand, and looking aside to the smith, said, ‘Good fellow, knock it in hard, for the flesh will have its course.’ Then Mr. Latimer brought him a bag of gunpowder, and tied it about his neck. Dr. Ridley asked him what it was, he answered gunpowder. ‘Then, said he, I will take it to be sent of God, therefore I will receive it. And have you any,’ said he, ‘for my brother?’ (meaning



Mr. Latimer). ‘Yea, Sir, that I have,’ said he. ‘Then give it unto him,’ said he, ‘in time, lest you come too late.’ So his brother went and carried it to Mr. Latimer.

“Dr. Ridley said to my lord Williams, “My lord, I must be a suitor unto your lordship in the behalf of divers poor men, and especially in the cause of my poor sister: I have made a supplication to the queen in their behalf. I beseech your lordship, for Christ’s sake, to be a means to her grace for them. My brother here hath the supplication, and will resort to your lordship to certify you hereof. There is nothing in all the world that troubleth my conscience, (I praise God) this only excepted. Whilst I was in the see of London, divers poor men took leases of me, and agreed with me for the same. Now I hear that the bishop who now occupieth the same room, will not allow my grants made to them, but contrary to all law and conscience, hath taken from them their livings. I beseech you, my lord, be a means for them: you shall do a good deed, and God will reward you.’

“They then brought a lighted fagot, and laid it at Dr. Ridley’s feet; upon which Mr. Latimer said, ‘Be of good comfort, Mr. Ridley, and play the man: we shall this day light such a candle by God’s grace in England, as I trust never shall be put out.’ When Dr. Ridley saw the fire flaming up towards him, he cried with an amazing loud voice: ‘Into thy hands, O Lord, I commend my spirit; Lord, receive my spirit; and continued often to repeat, ‘Lord, Lord, receive my spirit.’ Mr. Latimer, on the other side, cried as vehemently, ‘O father of heaven, receive my soul.’ After which he soon died, seemingly with very little pain.

“But Dr. Ridley, from the ill-making of the fire, the fagots being green, and piled too high, so that the flames being kept down by the green wood, burned fiercely beneath, was put to such exquisite pain, that he desired them, for God’s sake, to let the fire come unto him: which his brother-in-law hearing, but not very well understanding, to rid him



of his pain, (for which cause he gave attendance) as one in such sorrow, and not well knowing what he did, heaped fagots upon him, so that he quite covered him, which made the fire so vehement beneath, that it burned all his nether parts before it touched the upper, and made him struggle under the fagots, and often desire them to let the fire come to him, saying, 'I cannot burn.' Yet, in all his torment, he forgot not to call upon God, still having in his mouth, 'Lord have mercy upon me,' intermingling his cry, 'Let the fire come unto me, I cannot burn.' In which pains he labored till one of the standers-by, with his bill, pulled the fagots from above, and where he saw the fire flame up, he wrested himself to that side. And when the fire touched the gunpowder, he was seen to stir no more, but burned on the other side falling down at Mr. Latimer's feet; his body being divided.

"The dreadful sight filled almost every eye with tears. Some took it grievously to see their deaths whose lives they had held so dear. Some pitied their persons, who thought their souls had no need thereof. But the sorrow of his brother, whose extreme anxiety had led him to attempt to put a speedy end to his sufferings, but who, from error and confusion, had so unhappily prolonged them, surpassed that of all; and so violent was his grief, that the spectators pitied him almost as much as they did the martyr."

Thus did these two pious divines and steadfast believers, testify, with their blood, the truth of the everlasting gospel, upon which depends all the sinner's hopes of salvation; to suffer for which was the joy, the glory of many eminent Christians, who, having followed their Lord and Master through much tribulation in this vale of tears, will be glorified forever with him, in the kingdom of his father and our father, of his God and our God.

Mr. Latimer, at the time of his death, was in the eightieth year of his age, and preserved the principles he had pro-

fessed with the most distinguished magnanimity. He had naturally a happy temper, formed on the principles of true Christianity. Such was his cheerfulness, that none of the accidents of life could discompose him: such was his fortitude, that not even the severest trials could unman him; he had a collected spirit, and on no occasion wanted a resource; he could retire within himself, and hold the world at defiance.

### MARTYRDOM OF RAWLINS WHITE, A POOR FISHERMAN OF SOUTH-WALES.

To such a height did the rage and malice of popish persecutors arrive, during the reign of Mary, that they not only vented their fury on men of eminence and learning, who espoused the Protestant cause, but the meanest and most ignorant of the people, who would not submit to the papal yoke, were arraigned at their bloody tribunals, and put to death for no other cause but that of professing the truth as it is contained in the scriptures.

Rawlins White (the poor man whose sufferings we are about to relate) had been so attentive to the preaching of the gospel during the reign of Edward VI. that he had attained to a competent knowledge of the holy scriptures, and became a very zealous assertor of the Protestant doctrines, having wholly renounced the superstition and idolatry of popery, and conformed to the public worship of God, according to the English common prayer book.

Being thus converted to the true faith of Christ, he took great pains to instruct his son in the same, causing him to read a portion of the holy scriptures every night and morning, till he likewise became well grounded in the principles of the true religion, as contained in the gospel.

White was not only desirous of acquiring saving knowledge himself, but also of communicating it to others; inso-



much that he took every opportunity of visiting his neighbors, and endeavoring to instruct those whom he found desirous of obtaining a knowledge of the truth.

He continued those devout and holy exercises in a public manner, till the death of king Edward, when popery being restored, and the pure religion discouraged and restrained, he used to meet his friends privately, pray, and encourage them to hold fast to the truth. At length he was apprehended by one of the officers of the town, on a suspicion of heresy, who, taking him before the bishop of Llandaff, he was, by that prelate, committed to prison.

During his confinement several of his friends sent him money; and he was visited by many, whom he instructed in the faith of Christ, and exhorted to beware of popish emissaries, as wolves in sheep's clothing.

After a long imprisonment the bishop of Llandaff summoned White to appear before him, and endeavored to bring him over to idolatry and superstition; but all his exhortations proving ineffectual, he told him, in anger, that he must come to a resolution either to recant his heretical opinions or endure the rigor of the laws enacted against those who maintained tenets repugnant to the doctrines of the holy see.

On the day appointed for his examination the bishop, in the presence of his chaplains, and many others, assembled in the chapel, declared that White was known not only to maintain heretical principles himself, but to inculcate the same among his acquaintance. Then addressing himself to the prisoner, he told him that he had frequently, since his first warning, been admonished to relinquish his heretical tenets, and yet had always turned a deaf ear to the most salutary advice, he added, that out of clemency they had once more sent for him, mildly to endeavor to bring him to an humble sense of his errors; and assured him that upon due penitence for the crime he had committed, both



against God and the laws of his sovereign, they were disposed to show him mercy ; but that if, in spite of the royal clemency, and the admonition of the reverend fathers, he persisted in his heresies, they were determined to execute on him the utmost rigor of the law, as a most damnable and obstinate heretic.

White, without the least sign of fear at the peremptory declaration of the bishop, told his lordship that he blessed God he was a Christian, and held no doctrines contrary to the divine mind and will as revealed in the scriptures of truth ; if he did, he begged to be convinced of the same out of the divine word, to which he determined ever most implicitly to conform.

After much more exhortation, the bishop assured him, that if he did not recant he must condemn him as a heretic. To which White replied, that he might proceed as he thought proper, but that he could not condemn him as a heretic, as he did not maintain any opinion that was not supported by the word of God.

The bishop then desired the people present to join with him in prayer, that it would please God to turn White's heart, and bring him to the acknowledgment of the true religion.

Our martyr applauded this behavior of the bishop, as becoming his profession, assuring him, that if the request was agreeable to the divine will, God would, doubtless, hear and grant the same ; and that while the bishop was praying to his God, he himself would pray to his God, who he knew would hear and perform his desire.

Accordingly, they all went to private prayer, which being finished, the bishop asked him how he found himself disposed in his mind ? He replied, "The very same as before."

The bishop, incensed that no change could be wrought upon him, was about to read the sentence ; but he was

advised first to say mass, during which ceremony, White, standing at the door of the choir, cried out to the populace, "Bear witness that I bow not to this idol," meaning the host, which the priest held over his head.

Mass being performed, he was again warmly admonished to recant, but all exhortation was ineffectual; the bishop, therefore, read the definitive sentence, after which he was carried to Cardiff, and imprisoned in a place called Cock-marel, a most filthy and loathsome dungeon, where he continued till the writ for his execution came from London.

Upon the day appointed for terminating his life, which was March 30, 1555, he was brought from prison, and in his way to the place appointed for the bloody scene, met his wife and children, wringing their hands, and most bitterly lamenting his approaching fate. This affecting sight drew tears from his eyes; but soon recollecting himself, and striking his breast with his hand, he said, "Ah! flesh, stayest thou me, wouldest thou fain prevail! Well, do what thou canst, by God's grace thou shalt not get the victory."

As soon as he arrived at the stake, he fell on his knees, and kissed the earth, saying, "Earth to earth, and dust to dust; thou art my mother, to thee I must return."

When he was fastened to the stake, and the straw, reeds, and wood were placed round him, a priest, appointed for the purpose, stood up and harangued the spectators, who were very numerous, it being market day.

The priest, having finished his discourse, in which he inveighed against the opinion of the Protestants concerning the sacrament of the altar, our martyr rebuked him, proved his doctrine to be false, and cited, as his authority, those words of our Lord, "Do this in remembrance of me."

The fire being kindled, he was soon surrounded by the flames, in the midst of which this good old man (for he was sixty years of age) held up his hands till the sinews



shrunk, crying earnestly, "O Lord, receive my soul! O Lord, receive my spirit!" The flames were so vehement about his legs, that they were almost consumed before the upper part of his body was injured by the fire; notwithstanding which he bore his sufferings with the greatest composure and resignation, cheerfully resigning his soul into the hands of Him who gave it, in sure and certain hopes of being rewarded for his constancy with a crown of eternal life.

### MARTYRDOM OF THE REV. GEORGE MARSH.

This eminent and pious divine was descended from poor, but honest and religious parents, who educated him, from his earliest years, in the principles of the reformed religion; so that when he arrived at manhood, he was well versed in the doctrines of the pure gospel of Christ.

At his first entrance into the business of life he followed the occupation of farming, and by his honest endeavors maintained his family with decency and reputation for some years; but on the decease of his wife, being disposed to study, he placed his children with his father, quitted his farm, and went to Cambridge, where he made such a progress in literature that he soon entered into holy orders.

He officiated as curate in several parishes in the county of Lancaster, kept a school at Dean, and was a zealous promoter of the true religion, as well as a vigorous opposer of the idolatries of the church of Rome, during the reign of king Edward VI. But when popery again raised its destructive head, he, among many others, became the object of its persecution, as one that propagated doctrines contrary to the *infallible church*, and therefore liable to the severest censure and punishment.

Mr. Marsh, on hearing that search was made after him, absconded for some time, and in his retirement often delib-



erated with himself, whether he should go abroad to save his life, or surrender himself up, in order to ward off the mischief which threatened his mother and brother, who were suspected of having concealed him.

During this unsettled state of his mind, he consulted with his friends, and earnestly sought direction of God, that he might be guided in the way, which most conducted to His glory, and his own spiritual and eternal interest.

At length, thinking that flight would evince cowardice in the best of causes, he determined, by the grace of God, to abide by the consequence, and accordingly surrendered himself to the earl of Derby, at his seat at Latham, in the county of Lancaster.

When he was brought into the earl's presence, he was charged with propagating heresy, and sowing sedition amongst the people; but he denied the charge, and declared that he preached no other doctrine than what was contained in the word of God, and that he always enforced allegiance to his sovereign according to the will of God.

Being asked to deliver a summary of his belief, he declared that he believed in God the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, according to the creeds of the apostles, the council of Nice, and the saints Athanasius, Austin, and Ambrose.

A Romish priest, who was present, then proceeded to inquire his opinion concerning the favorite tenet of the church of Rome, relating to the sacrament. Marsh answered, in general, that he believed whosoever received the holy sacrament of the body and blood of Christ, according to his own appointment, did eat and drink his body and blood, with all the benefits arising from the same, because our Lord was ever present at his own ordinances.

This general reply not appearing satisfactory, the inquisitors descended to particulars, and peremptorily demanded his opinion, whether or not the elements were changed into

the very body and blood of Christ after consecration. Our martyr briefly observed, that what he believed he had already declared, and desired them not to propose to him such hard and unprofitable questions, in order to endanger his life, and, as it were, to suck from him his very blood.

Incensed at this reply, the earl told him that instead of seeking his destruction, he meant to preserve his life in this world, and secure his happiness in that which is to come, by converting him from damnable errors and heresies, and bringing him over to the holy mother church, out of the pale of which there was no salvation.

After many questions and exhortations, finding he still persevered in the faith which opposed that of the "infallible church," the earl gave him pen and ink, and ordered him to write down his belief concerning the sacrament of the altar; and on his writing the same words he had before delivered, he was commanded to be more particular, when he wrote only the following: "Further I know not."

This resolute behavior exposed him to the keenest resentment of his popish persecutors, who committed him to prison, and suffered no one to come near him but the keeper, who brought him daily the scanty allowance of the place.

Various attempts were made, during his confinement, to bring him to a recantation; but as he still remained fixed and determined in his faith, they administered to him the four following articles, and the earl declared, if he would not subscribe them, he should be imprisoned and proceeded against with the utmost severity.

"1. Whether the mass now used in the church of England was according to Christ's institution; and with faith, reverence, and devotion, to be heard and seen?

"2. Whether Almighty God, by the words pronounced by the priest, did change the bread and wine, after the words of consecration, into the body and blood of Christ, whether it were received or reserved?



“3. Whether the lay-people ought to receive but under the form of bread only, and that the one kind was sufficient for them?

“4. Whether confession to the priest now used in England was godly and necessary?”

Having retired for some time to consider of these articles, he returned, and delivered his opinion of them as follows:

The first he absolutely denied.

The second he answered in the very words he had before written.

With respect to the third, he declared, that, lay-people, according to the institution of Christ, ought to receive under both kinds, and that, therefore, to receive under one kind only was not sufficient.

To the last he observed, that though auricular confession was a good means to instruct ignorant people, it was not necessary to salvation, because not commanded by God.

To these answers he added, that his faith in Christ, founded on the infallible word of the only living and true God, he never would deny at the instance of any living creature, or through fear of any punishment whatsoever.

He was afterwards committed to Lancaster jail, laid in irons, and arraigned at the bar with the common felons, where the persecutors endeavored to extort from him information of several persons in that county, whom they suspected of maintaining heretical opinions; but nothing could prevail with him to utter a word that might endanger the lives or liberties of his faithful brethren in Christ.

The day of his martyrdom having arrived, the sheriffs of the city, whose names were Amry and Couper, with their officers, and a great number of poor simple barbers with rusty bills and pole-axes, went to the north gate, and thence brought him forth, with a lock upon his feet. As he came upon the way towards the place of execution, some proffered him money, and expected that he should have gone



with a little purse in his hand (as felons had been accustomed to do in that city in times past, at their going to execution, in order to gather money to give unto a priest to say masses for them after their death, whereby they might, as they thought, be saved); but Mr. Marsh said he would not be troubled to receive money, but desired some good man to take it if the people were disposed to give any, and give it to the prisoners or to the poor. As he went, he kept intently reading his book, and many persons cried out, "This man goeth not unto his death as a thief, or as one that deserveth to die."

When he came to the place of execution without the city, near unto Spital-Boughton, one Cawdry, being then a deputy chamberlain of Chester, showed Mr. Marsh a writing under a great seal, saying that it was a pardon for him if he would recant. He answered, forasmuch as it tended to pluck him from God, he would not receive it upon that condition.

He now began to address the people, showing the cause of his death, and would have exhorted them to be faithful unto Christ; whereupon one of the sheriffs told him there must be no sermonising now, to whom he said, "Master, I cry you mercy," and then, kneeling down, said his prayers, put off his clothes unto his shirt, and was chained to the post, having a number of fagots under him, and a barrel, with pitch and tar in it, over his head. The fire being unskillfully made, and the wind driving it to and fro, he suffered great agony in his death, which, nevertheless, he bore with Christian patience.

When he had been a long time tormented in the fire without moving, having his flesh so broiled and puffed up, that they who stood before him supposed he had been dead, he suddenly spread abroad his arms, saying, "Father of heaven, have mercy upon me!" and so yielded his spirit into the hands of the Lord. Upon this many of the people

said he was a martyr, and died marvellously patient, which caused the bishop shortly after to preach a sermon in the cathedral church, and therein to affirm that the said Marsh was a heretic, burnt as such, and was then a fire-brand in hell.\*

---

\*That the spirit which animates the Roman priesthood of 1866 does not differ from that displayed in the above incident in 1555, may be inferred from the fact that Father Perrone, Professor of Theology in the Collegio Romano, and, by common consent, Rome's first living theologian, describes the spirit of Protestantism to be "rebellion against Christ," that its essence is "atheism," that its professors are "the flock of Epicurus," that it is "horrible in theory, immoral in practice, an outrage on God and man, destructive to society, and at war with good sense and decency." In one of his catechisms he teaches that "heresy, being a crime against the State, ought to be proceeded against by the civil power and the Inquisition," but adds that "in countries where heretics are the majority, this method need not be taken."

It is a common saying in the present day that the persecutions mentioned in the text could not happen in the enlightened nineteenth century; but the same has been said of war, and yet, despite the advances of science, and the known blessings of peace, Europe is ringing with the tramp of armed men, and before these lines are in print, blood may have been shed. But Rome grounds not her claim to be the Church of fire, blood, and the sword, upon one tragedy once enacted. The same scenes have been rehearsed, in divers centuries, in Bohemia, in Calabria, in Spain, in Provence, in Languedoc, in the Alps, in England, in Ireland; in the mountain and in the plain; in the city and in the hamlet; towards thousands in gross, and towards the widow and the fatherless in detail. Moreover, nature is ever the same, and civilisation or scientific discoveries without religion will not soften the heart. The Persians, Dr. Wolff tells us, are more intellectual than the Turks, but more cruel, greater liars, and more atrociously immoral. The same is Dr. Judson's testimony of the Burmese. The same was Italy's experience under the Medicis, even in the Augustan era of the arts; and such has been our recent experience in the Indian mutiny, by the reddened well of Cawnpore. Alas! as Rindjud Singh said to Dr. Wolff, "Oh, for the *heart* a medicine is required." Thank God, the Gospel gives us the only remedy which heals and does not inflame—the blood of Jesus, which can purge even the *conscience*, through the power of the Holy Ghost (Heb. ix. 14; x. 19—22).







"Cut the throats of four-score men, women and children." Page 503.



The thirteen colonies were all Protestant. The members of Congress said in their address to the people of Great Britain, "The Roman Catholic religion dispenses impiety, bigotry, persecution, murder and rebellion throughout every part of the world."—"Bancroft's History of the U. S.," page 40, vol. 4.

In the matter of elementary instruction, the Protestant States are incomparatively more advanced than Catholic countries. The reason: The reformed religion rests upon a book—the Bible. The Protestant must know how to read. Thus the first and the last words of Luther were: "Instruct the children; this is the duty of parents and magistrates, it is a command of God."

PROF. LAVELEYE (Catholic).



MARTYRDOMS OF WILLIAM FLOWER, JOHN CARD-  
MAKER, JOHN WARNE, AND OTHERS.

## WILLIAM FLOWER

Was born at a place called Snowhill, in the county of Cambridge. He was educated in the Roman Catholic superstition ; and being brought up to the church, when at a proper age, he was admitted into orders, and became a professed monk in the abbey of Ely.

After residing for some time in the monastery, he threw off the monkish habit, became a secular priest, returned to the place of his nativity, and officiated, for some years, in a clerical capacity.

In process of time, on a serious review of the sacred scriptures, and candid comparisons of them with the doctrines and practices of the Romish church, he began to doubt of the authenticity of the latter ; and on a further inspection, finding them wholly repugnant to the word of God, and founded on the mere inventions of men, he abjured them, and earnestly embraced the doctrines of the reformation.

After having thus departed from the Romish church, he came to London, and took up his residence at Lambeth, where he married, and kept a school for his livelihood.

Going one day from Lambeth to Westminster, he went into St. Margaret's church, at the time that mass was performed there. As he refused to kneel at the elevation of the host, he was severely reprimanded by the priest ; at which Flower was so irritated, that he struck him on the head, the priest having, at the same time, in his hand, a chalice, containing some consecrated waters.

As his behavior, on this occasion, proceeded rather from rash zeal than well-grounded knowledge, he submitted himself to the award of Bishop Bonner, willing to endure, for his folly, whatever punishment he should think proper to inflict.

The bishop would have mitigated his punishment for the crime he had committed in striking the priest, if he would have subscribed to the popish faith; but that he absolutely refused to consent to; in consequence of which he was committed a prisoner to the Gate-house.

Here the following conversation took place between himself and a fellow prisoner, Mr. Robert Smith, which, as it explains his seemingly improper conduct, we give in full:

*Smith.* Friend, as I understand that you profess the gospel, and that you have done so a long season, I am bold to come unto you, and in the way of communication to demand and learn a truth of your own mouth, of certain things by you committed, to the astonishment not only of me, but of others that also profess the truth.

*Flower.* I praise God for his great goodness in showing me the light of his holy word; and I give you hearty thanks for your visitation, intending by God's grace to declare all the truth that you shall demand lawfully of me, in all things.

*Smith.* Then I desire you to show to me the truth of your deed, committed on John Cheltam, priest, in the church, as near as you can, that I may hear from your own mouth how it was.

*Flower.* I came from my house at Lambeth over the water, and entering into St. Margaret's church, and there seeing the people falling down before a most detestable idol, being moved with extreme zeal for my God, whom I saw before my face dishonored, I drew forth my hanger, and I struck the priest that ministered the same unto them; whereupon I was immediately apprehended.

*Smith.* Did you not know the person that you struck, or was you not zealous upon him for any evil will or hatred between you at any time?

*Flower.* No, verily, I never to my knowledge saw the person before, neither had evil will or malice; for if he had



not had it, another should, if I had at any time come where the like occasion had been ministered, if God had permitted me to do it.

*Smith.* Do you think that thing to be well done, and after the rule of the gospel?

*Flower.* I confess all flesh to be subject to the power of Almighty God, whom he maketh his ministers to do his will and pleasure; as in example, Moses, Aaron, Phineas, Joshua, Zimri, Jehu, Judith, Mattathias, with many others, not only changing decrees, but also planting zeals to his honor, against all order and respect of flesh and blood. For, as St. Paul saith, "His works are past finding out;" by whose spirit I have also given my flesh at this present unto such order, as it shall please the good-will of God to appoint in death, which before the act committed I looked for.

*Smith.* Think you it convenient for me, or any other, to do the like by your example.

*Flower.* No, verily, neither do I know if it were to do again, whether I could do it again: for I was up very early at St. Paul's church upon Christ's day in the morning, to have done it in my jealousy: but when I came there, I was no more able to do it, than now to undo that which is done; and yet now being compelled by the spirit, not only to come over the water, and to enter the church, but being in mind fully content to die for the Lord, I gave over my flesh willingly without any fear, I praise God. Wherefore I cannot teach you to do the like. First, Because I know not what is in you. Secondly, Because the rules of the gospel command us to suffer with patience all wrongs and injury: yet nevertheless, if he makes you worthy, that hath made me zealous, you shall not be hindered, judged, nor condemned: for he doth in his people his unspeakable works in all ages which no man can comprehend. I humbly beseech you to judge the best of the spirit, and condemn



not God's doings: for I cannot express with my mouth the great mercies that God hath showed on me in this thing, which I repent not.

*Smith.* Are you not assured to have death administered unto you for the act, and even with extremity?

*Flower.* I did, before the deed committed, adjudge my body to die for the same: whereupon I carried about me, in writing, my opinion of God and the holy scriptures; that if it had pleased God to have given them leave to have killed my body in the church, they might in the said writing have seen my hope, which, (I praise God) is laid up safe within my breast, notwithstanding any death that may be ministered upon my body in this world; being ascertained of everlasting life through Jesus Christ our Lord, and being most heartily sorry for all my offences committed in this flesh, and trusting shortly, through his mercy, to cease from the same.

*Smith.* I need not examine or commune with you of the hope that you have any further: for I perceive (God be praised) you are in good state, and therefore I beseech God, for his mercies, spread his wings over you, that, as for his love you have been zealous, even to the loss of this life, so he may give you his Holy Spirit to conduct you out of this world into a better life, which I think will be shortly.

*Flower.* I hunger for the same, dear friend, being fully ascertained that they can kill but the body, which I am assured shall receive life again everlasting, and see no more death; entirely desiring you and all that fear the Lord, to pray with me to Almighty God, to perform the same in me shortly.—After promising this, Robert Smith departed, leaving Flower in the dungeon.

After remaining sometime in prison, he was brought before the bishop, who administered to him, on oath, several articles. But not answering satisfactorily to these, he was committed to the Fleet prison, when he was brought before

the warden, and found guilty of abusing a priest in the duty of his office, and also of maintaining damnable heresies.

He was again brought before the bishop, who used the most forcible arguments in his power to induce him to recant; but these proving ineffectual, he asked him, If he knew any matter, or cause, why sentence should not be pronounced against him as a heretic? To which Flower answered, "I have nothing at all to say, for I have already said unto you all that I had to say, and that I have said I will not go from: and, therefore, do what you will."

The bishop then proceeded to pass sentence, condemning and excommunicating him as a heretic: after which he was degraded and delivered over to the secular power.

The 24th of April, 1555, was the day appointed for his execution, and the place was St. Margaret's church-yard, Westminster. On the morning of the fatal day he was led to the stake, amidst a prodigious number of spectators. Immediately on his arrival at the place, he knelt down and prayed to God, acknowledging his faith, as follows:

"O eternal God, most mighty and merciful father, who hast sent down thy son upon the earth, to save me, and all mankind; who ascended up into heaven again, and left his blood upon the earth behind him, for the redemption of our sins, have mercy upon me, have mercy upon me, for thy dear Son our Savior Jesus Christ's sake, in whom I confess only to be all salvation and justification, and that there is no other means, nor way, nor holiness, in which, or by which, any man can be saved in this world. This is my faith, which I beseech all men here to bear witness of."

He then repeated the Lord's prayer very deliberately, and with an audible voice; after which he arose, and prepared himself for undergoing his destined punishment.

A Romish priest, who was present, desired him to recant his heresy, and thereby save his life, to whom he said:



“Sir, I beseech you, for God’s sake, to be contented : for that I have said, I have said ; and I trust in the living God he will give me his holy spirit to continue to the end.”

He then desired all persons whom he had offended, to forgive him, as he, from his heart, forgave all the world.

This done, he was chained to the stake, and his left hand fastened to his side. The other hand, with which he had struck the priest, was then held up, and cut off, the blood plentifully gushing from the wrist ; which punishment he bore without the least apparent emotion. The fagots were then piled round him, and being immediately kindled, he cried out, with a loud voice, “O thou Son of God, have mercy upon me ; O thou Son of God, receive my soul.” These words he repeated three times, when the violence of the smoke took away his speech ; but he still showed the spectators that he was not yet deprived of life, by holding up the arm from whence the hand had been cut, with the other, as long as he was able. There not being a sufficiency of fagots, he underwent great torture, the lower parts of his body being consumed a considerable time before the others were much affected. At length, however, the executioner finished his miseries, by striking him a violent blow on the head, which brought the upper part of him into the fire ; and in this dreadful manner he yielded up his life.

### THOMAS HAWKES.

This person was the son of reputable and pious parents, who gave him a good education, and brought him up in the reformed religion. He strictly adhered to the religious principles which had been instilled into his youthful mind ; so that finding the gospel, after the death of king Edward, began to decline (especially among great families, in one of which, that of lord Oxford, he lived) he returned home, where he hoped quietly to enjoy the worship of God according to the dictates of his own conscience.



In these expectations, however, he soon found himself disappointed. As there were now popish emissaries in every corner, lying in wait to give information if any one was only suspected of favoring the doctrines of the reformation, Hawkes was apprehended, and brought before the earl of Oxford, his former master, for "being unsound in religion, and condemning the sacraments of the church, in that he had kept a son unbaptized three weeks, because he would not suffer him to be baptized after the popish manner."

The earl referred him to bishop Bonner, to whom having written that he had refused to have his child baptized according to the order of the church now in use, he left him to his lordship's discretion.

When Hawkes was brought before the bishop, he was asked the cause of keeping the child unbaptized so long; to which he returned for answer, that he was bound to do nothing contrary to the word of God.

The bishop then urged, that baptism being a sacrament contained in the word of God, and incumbent on every Christian, he was, consequently, criminal in denying, or not conforming to the same. To this he said, that he, by no means, denied God's institution, but men's invention therein; such as the use of oil, cream, spittle, salt, candle, &c.

After much debate on the subject, the bishop asked him if he would have his child baptized according to the service-book, set out in the reign of Edward VI. To which he replied that it was the very thing he desired from his soul.

This, however, was but mere equivocation to learn his sentiments; for it appeared in the sequel, that Bonner's wish was to compel him to submit to the superstitions of the church of Rome; but this, with all his artifice, he was unable to effect.

The bishop, with several others, held various conferences with Hawkes, concerning his belief of the corporeal pres-

ence in the sacrament of the altar, the mass, the holy creed, holy water, and other ceremonies of the church of Rome; but these also he rejected as he had done that of baptism, because they were contrary to the word of God, by which alone he was determined to be guided and directed in all matters of faith and religion; nay, he boldly told them all, that he would not credit them in any thing, but what they could prove from the holy scriptures.

At length Bonner, finding he could by no means prevail with him to recant his opinions, and submit to the church of Rome, sent him prisoner to the Gate-house, in Westminster, commanding the keeper to confine him closely, and not to permit any person to converse with him.

During his confinement, various methods were used to bring him over to recant, such as conversation, reading to him, taking him to hear sermons, and the like; but all proved ineffectual; his constant answer, to all who spoke to him on that subject, being, "I am no changeling."

Bonner, incensed at his steadfastness, told him, on his second examination, he should find him "no changeling" neither, and immediately went out and wrote the following paper:

"I, Thomas Hawkes, do here confess and declare, before my ordinary, Edmund, bishop of London, that the mass is abominable, detestable, and full of all superstition; and also concerning the sacrament of the body and blood of Christ, (commonly called the sacrament of the altar) that Christ is in no part thereof, but only in heaven. This I have believed, and this I do believe."

Bonner ordered Hawkes to subscribe to this paper, but he refused to set his name to what he had not written himself; upon which the haughty prelate struck him on the breast, declaring, at the same time, that "he would severely chastise all such proud and disobedient knaves."

A few days after this the bishop summoned him, with



several others, to appear publicly in the consistory court at St. Paul's, where the several articles alleged against him, together with the bill of confession, were read to him, in all which he firmly continued.

They then strongly exhorted him to recant, that they might not be obliged to pass the awful sentence of death upon him. To which he cheerfully replied, that if he had a hundred bodies he would suffer them all to be torn to pieces rather than abjure the faith of Christ's gospel.

On his thus steadfastly persevering in the faith which he professed, the bishop read the sentence of condemnation against him, and five others ; after which he was sent back to prison, where he remained till June following, when he was delivered into the hands of lord Rich, who caused him to be conveyed to Chelmsford, and from thence to Coxall, in Essex, where he was burned on the 10th of the same month.

Mr. Hawkes gave many pious exhortations, and godly admonitions to his friends who came to visit him ; and several of them requesting, if it was possible, that he would show them some token, by which the possibility of burning without repining might appear, he promised, "by the help of God, to show them that the most exquisite torments were to be endured in the glorious cause of Christ and his gospel, the comforts of which were able to lift the believing soul above all that men or devils could inflict."

Accordingly, it was agreed between them, that if the rage of pain was tolerable, he should lift up his hands towards heaven before he gave up the ghost.

A short time after this agreement he was led to the place of execution, where being fastened to the stake with a chain, he addressed the multitude, and especially lord Rich, reasoning with him on the iniquity and dreadful consequences of shedding the innocent blood of the saints.

Having fervently prayed to Almighty God, the flames



were kindled around him, and he continued in them so long that his speech was taken away by their violence; his skin was contracted, and the spectators thought he was dead, when on a sudden, and contrary to all expectation, this eminent and zealous servant of God, mindful of the promise he had made to his friends, held his hands flaming over his head, and, as if in an ecstasy of joy, clapped them thrice together.

The astonished multitude testified their approbation of his faith and patience, and his friends, to whom he made the promise, were exceedingly confirmed in their most holy faith, by being eye-witnesses to the power of divine strength, which is able to support the servants of God under every trial that may befall them, for the sake of the truth, as it is in our Blessed Redeemer.

### MARTYRDOM OF REV. CLAUDE BROUSSON.

Claude Brousson was born at Nismes, in 1647, and embracing the legal profession, established himself at Toulouse. Advocating the cause of the Reformed, he was soon proscribed and was obliged to flee. Wandering for days and nights, perished and starved, he finally made his escape through a great sewer which led into the Grande Rue. After incredible exertions, he gained the Cavernes, and having reached Switzerland, settled at Lausanne. He was soon ordained a minister of Jesus Christ, and was most abundant in labors. He was hunted and pursued by the papists from one place to another, until the spring of 1698 he entered France on his third apostolate.

He was detained in Dauphiny during the winter by the snow, but he found there many who heard him with delight, having been for four months without a preacher. The following spring he entered Vivarais, and went from village to village preaching to multitudes. He then left for the

Cevennes, and arrived in the vicinity of Nismes on April 28, 1698. Baille, informed of his return, augmented the price on his head to 200 louis d'ors. The pursuit became still more vigorous, but Brousson boldly entered the town, and posted a petition, signed by himself, to the king. This put the spies on his track, and they surrounded the house in which he had taken refuge. Escape seemed impossible, and he was about to give himself up, when his host made him get into a dry cistern, at the bottom of which there was a hole, in which he ensconced himself. One of the soldiers, however, knew the place, and descended into it. The fugitive and the gendarme were about to find themselves face to face, when the latter became seized with terror, and he was drawn out by his comrades without having discovered the prisoner, who ultimately effected his escape. Owing to his mistake in delivering a letter to the wrong man, Brousson was arrested at Oloron, and imprisoned at Pau. Being allowed to go out on parole, he had several opportunities of escape, but he remained faithful to his promise, considering his word to be his bond, yea, "though it were to his own hindrance." He was sent to Montpellier the 30th of October, 1698, and was shut up in the citadel, where, five days after, he was brought before Baille. The crimes of which he was accused were treason and conspiracy against the state. These he indignantly repudiated, but confessed that he had preached the Gospel of Christ to sinners. After a short consultation, the judges pronounced the following iniquitous sentence: "Claude Brousson, convicted of rebellion and treason to the laws of the kingdom, first, to suffer the question ordinary and extraordinary, then to be broken on the wheel, and finally to be hung after death on the malefactors' gibbet." The victim humbly bowed his head, and began to pray for his judges, and his conduct so touched their hard hearts, that Baille commuted his sentence, and ordered the executioner not to touch him



except on the scaffold. He walked there between two guards of soldiers. Having reached the place of execution, he endeavored to speak to the multitude, but the rolling of eighteen drums drowned his voice. He was silent, knelt down, joined his hands, raised his eyes towards heaven, and his last words were those of prayer to God ; after which he gave himself up to the executioner, who, with much trembling, performed his terrible office.

From the hangman's own mouth we learn what were his emotions, for some days afterwards he said, " I have executed more than 200 prisoners, but none have made me tremble like Mr. Brousson. His judges were more moved than he. I should have fled, could I have done so, to avoid putting to death so good a man. He died like a saint." This impartial testimony was contained in a letter addressed to the brethren in Languedoc, printed at the Hague in 1699, and widely circulated under the title of "The Glorious Martyrdom of Claude Brousson."

### MASSACRE AND SUFFERINGS OF SOME OF THE PROTESTANT GALLERIANS.

Among the governors of the provinces who ruled with fire and sword, was Lamoignon de Baviile, who had been for thirty-three years intendant, or, as he was called, King of Languedoc. He was an apostle of persecution, and without an emotion could enforce the desolation of a province, or the massacre of an entire assembly. Nor were the priesthood unwilling agents of the provincial pro-consul, but often put themselves at the head of the soldiers in the pursuit of the proscribed heretics. To one of these we must now draw our attention, as the cruelties he practiced were one of the more immediate causes of the anomalous war of the Camisards, and the revolt of the Cevennes. Du Chayla was archpriest and inspector-general of the missionaries of the



Cevennes. In earlier life he had been sent on a mission to Siam, where had not only obtained a great insight into the spirit of persecution, but qualified himself to become an inventor in the implements of conversion, having been captured and nearly killed under tortures of the most horrible description. His, however, was not the experience of the Queen of Carthage—

“*Haud ignara mali, miseris succurrere disco*”

for he had now a debt of revenge against his race, which he was determined to repay with interest when opportunity offered. Half martyred himself, he would martyr others with tenfold intensity, and from experience he could taste the sweets of keenly appreciating the gradations of their agonies. That this was his fiendish practice may be seen from the manner in which he tortured his captives, of which the following is an account, gathered from various historical sources :

“The prisoners who unhappily fell into his hands were subjected to treatment which would be incredible were it not attested by all the people in the neighborhood. Sometimes he dragged the hair from their chin and eyebrows with pincers ; sometime with the same pincers he put burning coals into their hands, which he closed and pressed till the fire was extinguished. Often he covered their hands with cotton steeped in oil or grease, which he lighted, and allowed to burn until the fingers opened or were eaten to the bone by the flames.”

The cellars of his palace were turned into dungeons, and crowded with prisoners. To these vaults he could descend at pleasure to behold the sufferings of his victims ; and often did he scourge his captives, both young and old, male and female, until he became drenched with their blood.

When the various tortures did not succeed to the abbe's satisfaction, he cast them into the stocks.\*

### MARTYRDOM OF SIEUR BOETON.

Sieur Boeton was a Protestant and leader in the protection of his brethren against the papal persecutions. He was arrested and thrown into prison by M. De Baviile. After several months he escaped, but was afterwards arrested and was conducted by his captors to Nismes, and afterwards transferred to the citadel at Montpellier. On his way there he met his wife and his son, who came from Montpellier to intercede on his behalf. Nothing could be more touching than this interview; the last adieus of the loving couple, and the advice which the father gave the son, were tenderly pathetic, and there was not a spectator unmoved who beheld them kneeling down by the road-side to receive the last blessing of him who was on his way to death. The day following his arrival at Montpellier he was condemned to be broken on the wheel, after undergoing the torture (*la question ordinaire et extraordinaire*). His calm

---

\*It was probably a device somewhat after the fashion of the iron cage of Cardinal Baluc, in which Louis XI. confined the unhappy inventor for eleven years.

How truly frightful it is when we realise the tortures and massacres due to the Church of Rome, due to her genius as a corporate system, and to the caprice of individual persecutors. "What are all historical discoveries in comparison with that which requires us to disbelieve the surpassing pre-eminence of the Church of Rome, in every country and in every age, in the mysteries of tormenting heretics in mind, body and estate? We must be more mystical than Strauss, more sceptical than Whately, if we do not recognise in her the great original of whom all other persecutors have ever been but timid, feeble, and most imperfect imitators."—*Stephen's History of France*, vol. ii., p. 399.

"The king, (Louis XV.) might have added that the persecutions of the early Christians, although far more cruel, were nevertheless neither so long continued, nor so tenacious, nor so odiously refined as those organized by Catholicism."—*Bungener*.



courage never deserted him, and De Baviile, who witnessed its first application, expecting to receive his confession, seemed more irritated than the sufferer, and forgot himself so far as to outrage the very instincts of human nature by striking the martyr on the face. Boeton only replied to this insult by exclaiming, "Lord, how long shall the wicked triumph? how long wilt thou permit the blood of the innocent to be shed? awake thine ancient jealousy, and remember thy compassion."

The scaffold for his execution was erected on the esplanade, where the wheel was also prepared for its victim. Boeton was taken there in a cart, amid the sound of drums, which were intended to drown his voice, and to prevent his words of exhortation reaching the bystanders. About half-way to the esplanade was a shop, to which one of his friends fled, whom Boeton addressed as follows: "Why do you fly from me? Is it because I wear the livery of Jesus Christ?"

He was chained to the stake, and the executioner advanced, holding in his hand a square bar of iron. After subjecting him to the severest torture, and they thought the martyr was about to expire, one of the priests caused the instruments of torture to be relaxed, saying, the Huguenot must not die so soon, as he had not suffered enough. At these atrocious words the victim raised his head, and said, "My friend, you think I am in pain, and you are not mistaken; I do suffer; but he who is with me, and for whom I suffer, gives me strength to bear my agony with joy." But De Baviile's orders were renewed, and the executioner once more drew near. Seeing his last hour was come, Boeton exclaimed, "My dear brothers, let my death strengthen you in the belief of the gospel, and be my faithful witnesses that I die in the faith of Christ and of his holy apostles." Scarcely had he uttered these last words when the iron bar fell on his chest; a few accents of prayer



were still heard, when the head fell back, and the martyr ceased to breathe.

Eternal life ! what a prospect ! what an idea ! We pity the martyr's death, we mourn over the above pitiable recital ; and yet, when our mind beholds one faint glimpse of the future, when one passing sensation of what eternity means dawns upon us, how fully do we endorse the verdict of the apostle, and say, " Our light afflictions, which are but for a moment, work for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory." Yes, ten thousand millenniums of joy are on the heads of the redeemed, yet they feel no fear, and no cloud is on their brow. Before them is eternity ! The reward is eternal, and surely for this it was wisdom to be faithful unto death.

#### AN ACCOUNT OF JOHN BUNYAN, WHO WAS IMPRISONED TWELVE YEARS IN BEDFORD GAOL FOR CONSCIENCE SAKE.

John Bunyan was born in 1628, and was the son of an itinerant tinker. His father, from the character of his profession, was not able to pay much attention to the education of his boy ; thus John was often led to follow his own inclinations while his father was absent from the village of Elstow. Being talented, active, and high-spirited, with no one to control him or direct his energies in the right way, he soon became the dread and plague of the village, always discovering new plans of mischief, and never failing in energy to carry them out. Sometimes his father took him with him when he travelled about the country, but these excursions were not likely to do the boy much good, as he associated with gipsies, and lost what little learning he had acquired at school, where he had remained but a very short time. About the age of nine he began to have very extraordinary and startling dreams, some of such a solemn

character that he never forgot them. They did not, however, reform his character, as he went on from bad to worse, until the age of seventeen, when he enlisted in the army, and astonished even the wicked with the surpassing vileness of his life. His struggles for pardon were most remarkable, but having gone through the experimental conviction of sin, he became, when converted, a truly earnest man, and his labors among the people bore witness to this fact. His zeal sometimes brought about a collision with the authorities; and even under the rule of Cromwell he was in danger of imprisonment—a disaster, however, which did not befall him until the Restoration. He is supposed to have been the first victim for conscience' sake. On the 12th of November, 1660, he had arranged to meet a small congregation, in a house at Samsell, in Bedfordshire, but before the time appointed he was informed that a warrant had been issued for his seizure. The danger did not cause him to swerve from what he believed to be the path of duty. He was accordingly arrested at the meeting, but not before he had uttered the following words: "You see we are prevented of our opportunity to hear the Word of God, and are likely to suffer for the same; but be not discouraged: it is a mercy to suffer for so good a cause. We might have been apprehended as thieves or murderers but, blessed be God, it is not so. We suffer as Christians for well-doing; and better be the persecuted than the persecutors." After being taken before a magistrate, he was committed for trial at the next sessions, when he was indicted for "devilishly and perniciously refraining from coming to church, to hear Divine service; and for being an upholder of conventicles, to the great disturbance of the good subjects of this kingdom, and in contradiction to the laws of the king." On this charge he was convicted, and sentenced to imprisonment, with an intimation that if he did not conform within a given time, he should be banished



out of England. In prison he suffered much, for it was very damp—so damp, that Bunyan said it was enough to “make the moss grow upon his eyebrows.”

Had Bunyan promised not to preach, he would have been set at liberty, but he thought it was his duty to suffer for Christ's sake, and “he endured as seeing him who is invisible.” But the counsels of his enemies, like that of Ahithophel, were turned into foolishness, for he converted his prison into a pulpit, whence his voice might “go out through all the earth, and his words unto the end of the world.” During this imprisonment he wrote that wondrous book of which it may safely be affirmed that no other book except the Bible has been translated into so many languages, passed through so many editions, commanded so many millions of readers, or been useful to the spiritual welfare of such multitudes. That anomalous book not only obtains admiration from the fastidious critic, but is loved by those who are too simple to admire its art. Who has not therewith been fascinated as a child, or profited as a man?

Bunyan had no library to refer to while he was writing; his Bible and an old Concordance were the only books he had; and he was reduced to such a state of poverty, owing to his long imprisonment, that his blind daughter used to knit stay-laces, her father, “the immortal tinker,” tagged them, and the poor wife (for he had married a second time) used to sell them in the streets.

We see in history how often events similar in their outlines repeat themselves, and synchronise. In 1668, when Bunyan was in Bedford gaol, William Penn was a prisoner for conscience sake, and from forth the Tower of London issues another work, “No Cross, No Crown,” prolific of good to multitudes. This is the triumph of God's moral government. Free agents carry out their evil purpose, and yet the resultant is good. Had not Joseph been sold into slavery by his brethren, he might never have saved



their lives; had not Howard suffered from domestic affliction, the prisoners of Europe might never have had any champion; had not Milton lost his sight, we might never have gloried in "Paradise Lost;" had not Bunyan been cruelly cast into Bedford gaol, the "Pilgrim's Progress" might never have been written.

Bunyan's death was worthy of his life. While lodging with his friend, Mr. Strudwick, a grocer, he was summoned into the country, to effect a reconciliation between a father and a son. He complied with the summons, and happily effected his object. On returning to London, on horseback, he was drenched with rain, before arriving at his lodgings. This exposure resulted in a fever, under which he sank, and died at the sign of the "Star," Snow Hill, the residence of his friend, on the 31st of August, 1688, in the 61st year of his age, the author of more than sixty works. He was buried in the church of St. Giles, Cripplegate, in September, 1688. Such was the veneration in which his memory was held, that Southey tells us "many have desired to be interred as near as possible to the spot where his remains are deposited."

## AN ACCOUNT OF THE SUFFERINGS OF GEORGE PENN IN THE SPANISH INQUISITION.

Rather than re-write the following interesting episode of martyrdom, we quote its narrative, by kind permission, from Mr. Hepworth Dixon's "Life of Penn."\*

"George Penn, the admiral's eldest brother, having married a Catholic lady of Antwerp, settled, as was said in the first chapter of this history, in the south of Spain, as a merchant, residing chiefly at Seville, Cadiz, Malaga, and San Lucar. As an English Protestant, his conduct was scrutin-

---

\*"William Penn, an Historical Biography," by William Hepworth Dixon, p. 422.

ized with jealous closeness by the officers of the Holy Inquisition; but he cautiously abstained from giving ground for offence, particularly in regard to the religious prejudices of the country in which he lived, so that malice itself was foiled in the attempt to draw him into the snare. But as he grew rich, with years of industry and success, the Church, eagerly covetous of his wealth, became impatient of his blameless life, and seized him on its own secret warrant. When the familiars of the Holy Office broke into his house at San Lucar, they commenced their proceedings by casting him out, body and soul, from the Christian Church and the fold of God. They seized his money and furniture, his plate and pictures, his wearing apparel and his wife's jewels, his stock of merchandise, his books, papers, and accounts, and every other article of property, down to the nail in the wall. Nothing escaped their rapacity.

"His wife was carried off he knew not whither; he himself was dragged to Seville, where he was cast into a loathsome dungeon, only eight feet in diameter, and as dark as the grave. In this living tomb he was left with a loaf of bread and a jug of water. For seven days no one came near him; and then the gaoler simply brought another loaf and another jug of water, and disappeared. This course was continued for three years, during which time he was worn to a skeleton. No one was allowed to visit him in his cell, no letter or message was suffered to be sent out. He had vanished from the world as completely as if the earth had opened on him in the night and then closed over him forever.

"At the end of the first month of his confinement there was a break in the horrible monotony of his life. The silent and masked familiars of the office came into his cell, took him by the arms, stripped him naked, and tied him fast to the iron bars of his dungeon door; when one of them, armed with a powerful whip made of knotted cords, dealt out fifty merciless lashes.



Every month this flogging was repeated, the new stripes crossing and tearing up the former wounds until his body was one huge festering sore. And all this time he was unable to learn the name or nature of the crimes laid, truly or falsely, to his charge. Three years having elapsed without provoking self-accusation, the prisoner was brought into the trial-chamber, and in the presence of the seven judges was accused of various crimes and heresies, particularly with having tried to seduce his wife from the Catholic faith. He pleaded not guilty. But instead of producing witnesses to prove his alleged crimes, the judges ordered him to be tortured in their presence until he confessed the truth of what was charged against him. For a while his strength and resolution defied the agonies of the rack; but his tormentors persevered, and at the end of four hours of excruciating and accumulating torments he gave way and offered to confess anything they wished. Not satisfied with a confession which, by the usages of Spain, gave up his whole property to the Holy Office, the judges put him to the rack again, and by still more refined and delicate torture forced from him a terrible oath that he would live and die a Catholic, and would defend that form of faith at the risk of his life against every enemy, on pain of being burned to death if found recalcitrant. He was then cut down from the rack, placed on a hurdle and conveyed to his former dungeon.

As soon as he was sufficiently recovered from his wounds to walk, he was taken to the great Cathedral of Seville in solemn procession, accompanied by the seven judges, their households, by several hundred priests and friars, and by a vast multitude of people, and in presence of the whole congregation was exposed as a signal instance of the great mercy of Holy Inquisition. His wife was taken away from him and forcibly married to a good Catholic; the whole of his estate, amounting in plate, furniture, jewels, goods and



merchandise, to twelve thousand pounds, was confiscated; the money found in his hands, belonging to other parties, was seized, and he was finally commanded to quit the country in three months on pain of death. This last injunction only added insult to injury; for the judges well knew that, having seized his estate, the moment he left the cathedral he would be arrested for debts which he had no means of discharging. The very same day he was thrust into a common gaol, with little or no hope of ever obtaining a second release.”\*

“The exhibition in the cathedral being public, several English residents in Seville were present; and the intelligence of his brother’s position soon reached the young admiral on his station in the Channel. His measures were prompt and characteristic. Instead of appealing to Cromwell, and setting the dilatory diplomacy of London and Madrid at work to procure his release, he seized in one of his prizes a Spanish nobleman, Juan de Urbino then on his way to Flanders, where he held the post of Secretary to the Government, stripped him naked, like a common prisoner, and treated him with many indignities. This act, indefensible in itself, spoke home to the Spanish sovereign, and George Penn was soon released and sent back to England.”†

“The death of Cromwell prevented any reparation being made for his losses and sufferings; but when the Restoration was effected, King Charles appointed him his envoy at the court of Spain, with a view to his proper reinstatement in the opinion of his old friends in Seville and San Lucar, and to add weight to his claim for damages in body and estates. This act of substantial justice, however, came too late. His aged flesh had been torn, his limbs dislocated and ill-set, his body starved for more than three years on

---

\* “Humble Remonstrance of George Penn,” vol. i., p. 550.

† “Granville Penn,” vol. i., pp. 231-333.

bread and water; and he died in London only a few weeks after receiving the royal appointment, leaving his claim as a legacy to the admiral and his family.”\*

The great William Penn, founder of the state of Pennsylvania, and himself a minor martyr for conscience' sake, was a member of this family, and a nephew to George Penn. He was born in London, 14th October, 1644. Owing to his views on religion, at different periods of his life he under-

---

\*We subjoin some details respecting the Inquisition in modern times, which may form a fitting supplement to its mention in our text, and to its history in an earlier part of our work. In 1809 Napoleon ordered that the Inquisition and the monasteries in Madrid should be suppressed. The order, however, was not executed until Colonel Lehmanowsky was one night attacked by two men, who were discovered to be guards of the Inquisition. This circumstance recalled the emperor's mandate to mind, and after receiving Marshal Soult's permission, the colonel, with three regiments of soldiers, marched to the palace of the Inquisition, which was five miles distant. The Inquisitors would not allow the soldiers to enter, whereupon an attack commenced, and before long the French were in possession of the place. The chief Inquisitors met them with perfect serenity, and with feigned astonishment at the resistance they had experienced; but they were immediately put under arrest, and the colonel proceeded to examine the building. He expected to find numerous captives, but was surprised to observe splendor and luxury on all sides, and no traces of tortures or dungeons. He was about to give up the search, when Colonel Life proposed that water should be poured on the marble pavement of the hall, and careful watch kept to see whether the water ran through between the slabs. The water was brought, and before long a cry was raised that it disappeared in one place. Instantly all hands were at work to raise the slab, when suddenly one of the soldiers, having unconsciously touched a spring, it flew open, and disclosed a staircase leading to a lower vault. The colonel and the soldiers hastened down, and entered into a large hall, surrounded with small cells, in which numbers of captives were found quite naked, some mutilated, some dead, and of some the bones only remained as the sad memorials of their sufferings. Further on they discovered the torture-room, filled with every kind of horrible instruments. The soldiers, maddened at the sight, seized the Inquisitors, and vented their indignation by torturing them to death in the same way that they had tortured others. Never was retribution more richly merited.

The following account of the opening of the Inquisition during the existence of the Republic at Rome, 1848-49, is extracted from “Incidents in the Life of an Italian Priest,” chap. viii., p. 145:



went much persecution. During his seven months' imprisonment in the Tower, in 1668, he wrote his best work, "No Cross No Crown." He was twice imprisoned in Newgate, and once in the Fleet, so that he had lodged in prisons as well as in palaces. In 1696 Penn made the acquaintance of the Czar of Russia, and vainly endeavored to convert him to Quakerism. Peter the Great was at this time in England, working in the dockyard at Deptford as

---

"In other countries the palaces of the Inquisition were destroyed by a furious mob, but Rome, true to herself, acted with the dignity which had characterized all the steps of the revolution, and left the Government to overthrow the Holy Office by a legal measure.

On the 27th the minister Sterbina proposed the following decree in the Costituente: 'That the tribunal of the Holy Office be abolished forever, the palace razed to the ground, and a column erected on the site, to serve as a memorial to posterity.' The Assembly passed the decree by acclamation, amidst the joyful applause of the people in the galleries, who rent the air with *critas*, marking the feeling of the country against an institution which seems founded on principle to oppose the command of our Lord, who says, 'Let him who will follow me,' but in strict accordance with Mahomet's rule of 'Believe or die!' Scarcely was the decree published, when a deputation was sent by the Government to examine the prison, and set at liberty those unhappy persons who might be found alive within the walls of the dreadful dungeons. The Archbishop Cashier, who had been a prisoner for twenty years, was found so reduced and emaciated, that he could hardly walk. Thrown into the dungeon at the age of twenty-two, the long confinement in the mephitic air of that prison of the Middle Ages had caused such intense suffering, that the health of the unhappy man was utterly destroyed. Gregory XVI., tyrant as he was, had still moments when gleams of humanity influenced him, and he had occasionally permitted Cashier the privilege of breathing the open air, and taking some exercise, though always under a strong guard, and during this period the health of the wretched man sensibly improved. But Pius IX., the Reformer of Italy, the Holy, the Envoy of God, in his generous clemency cut off even this little indulgence, and consigned the poor prisoner to the secret dungeons, from whence, had the Republicans not delivered him, he must ere long have fallen a victim to the tender mercies of the good Pope. Two nuns were found among the other prisoners, who were sent by the Government to places where they might be secure from the vengeance of the devout sisterhood.

"Here the shameless cruelty of the friars composing the tribunal may be noted, for they had full warning of the intentions of Government, and yet



The wolf of Protestantism has found its way into the Catholic flock. A minister of the sect of Luther and Voltaire is in Leon, accompanied by various mercenaries, who are busy selling in the streets Protestant Bibles and a false book of the Gospel. Do not buy these books, Christians; scorn these propagandists of a sect divorced from the Catholic Church of Jesus Christ, divorced from the truth, and which is resolved on depriving us of the most precious legacy received from our forefathers. Do not allow your religion to be harmed by these knight errants of evil. Let us hurl them away. No law authorizes their coming here to dechristianize us. Liberty of worship does not exist here, and these peddlers of adulterated Bibles and Gospels are of a foreign flock. Nicaragua belongs to God; Protestantism to the devil. Away with them.

[600] Above Publicly Posted in the City of Leon, 1894.





Massacre at Barletta. Page 605.





a common carpenter and shipwright. Mr. Penn received the grant of Pennsylvania from the English Crown, in discharge of a debt of £16,000 due to his father, the admiral; but at the close of his life, when encompassed with difficulties, he mortgaged his province to the Crown for the sum of £6,800, a transaction which he did not live to see completed. During his stay in America many were the peaceful triumphs of this man—in the establishment of

---

had not released the prisoners, as if determined that these unhappy creatures should drain the cup of Papal vengeance to the last drop. That prisoners were still found in the Inquisitions of Spain and Naples when the mob broke in is not surprising, as the work of destruction was the result of a furious popular outbreak, leaving no time for preparation; but in Rome all was done quietly and systematically. I was present when the prisons were visited, and cannot think of the chambers allotted to the wretched prisoners, especially the subterranean dungeons, without horror. The immense iron rings fastened to the walls and in the pavement in order to secure the prisoners by the body and the feet, must have produced indescribable torture. There were many inscriptions upon the walls, some almost entirely obliterated, while others might be read. One I deciphered with difficulty, which said, 'The bigotry of man shall never separate me from Thee, my Savior, my Redeemer, Jesus Christ.' In one chamber, very wide and high in the roof, we found heaps of bones; and here were still to be seen two great furnaces, filled with calcined bones. Passing through a vault, to ascend to a second floor, we found a trap-door, covering the entry to a pit, and looking down discovered why accounts were never received of those who fell into the hands of the Inquisition. In the eighteenth century men were immured alive; in the nineteenth they were burned in furnaces.

"The Holy Office always regards the accused as guilty from his first appearance at the bar, so that the whole procedure of justice consists in dragging the confession of a pretended crime from the mouth of the unhappy victim. In consequence of this rule, the advocates of the tribunal were permitted to use such insinuations and false suggestions as were likely to entrap the accused. It was taken for granted that truth lay on the side of the Inquisition, while to the accused only obstinacy and falsehood were left; and hence arises that incredible mixture and contrast between gentleness in speech and more than ferocious brutality displayed in action. And, as a little specimen of the effects of the laws of the Inquisition, never yet formally abolished, I must state that, simply as a form of examination, the accused might be subjected to the torture of the cord, and if he obstinately denied the guilt imputed to him, he was then to undergo the torture by fire. Two

twenty townships, with their civil organisation, and in many conferences with the Indians, with nineteen tribes of whom a friendly relationship was cemented by treaties. Besides the moral glory attaching to his pacific government, the memory of Penn may further be honoured as the champion of the slave, and the pioneer of American emancipation. It was under his legislature that it was resolved that buying and selling men was contrary to the spirit of the Gospel,

---

masked executioners stretched the patient upon a plank, binding him to it with cords in such a manner that it was impossible for him to stir, and bringing the plank close to a heated brazier, in such a position that the naked feet of the person almost touched the burning coals, and in this position his feet were anointed with lard. When the miserable wretch began to cry out, the executioners instantly tightened the cords with all their strength, and uttered all the time infernal yells to drown the shrieks of their victim. In support of my description, I give the words of the infamous code: 'Qui sic suppositus, nudatis pedibus, illisque lardo porcino inunctis, et in cippis juxta ignem validum retentis, cum stetisset per spatium,' etc. 'In dicto tormento tacitus, cepit postea alta voce vheiferando, Oime!' etc. 'Ministro fortiter premente, clamare cepit alta voce,' etc. (*Arsenale Sacro*, pp. 272, 274). If the accused did not confess under the torture of cord and fire, then followed the still more horrible torture by water, and barbarities more atrocious. The cruel wickedness of this infernal code is not to be described.

"And the Dominican Friars were the authors of these laws, and others also calling themselves the ministers of Christ, while the laws received the approving seal from the vicars of Christ. The reader may ask if the tribunal really continues to act in this manner. I can only reply, I have given some of the laws of the Holy Office, which have never been abrogated, and may be called into action at any period under the Papacy."

The Rev. Alexander Dallas, in the "Catholic Layman," February 18th, 1858, gives an account of a day in the dungeons of the Inquisition at Rome in 1857, and mentions the existence of the terrible "Oubliette," the hall of torture, and the frightful underground dungeons, which were all doubtless used for the Church's erring children up to the Revolution in 1848. For a more detailed account of the origin and organization of the modern Inquisition, see Prescott's "Ferdinand and Isabella," part i., chaps. vii. and xii.; also "Philip II.," book ii., chap. iii. The proceedings of the Inquisition against Galileo, in 1633, and his enforced recantation of the Copernican solution of our solar system, are familiar to all students of history. Their sentence and his abjuration are both extant *in extenso*.



and Penn obtained the admission of slaves to places of worship, and set on foot measures for ameliorating their condition, and affording them moral instruction. He died at Ruscombe, in Berkshire, July 30th, 1718. He lies at the Quakers' burial ground at Jordans, about three miles from Gerrard's Cross, and two from Beaconsfield, in the secluded dell of Stone Dean, apart from the main artery of traffic, the London and Oxford road. Until within the last three years a true simplicity and original charm were cast around this plot of ground, enhancing its historical associations. It was pleasant to realize that the grave of so great a man lay in such an unfrequented nook, but the interest was increased by a pilgrimage to his nameless tomb. There lay several rows of mounds, in black monotony, without names or headstones, yet known to Heaven, and to posterity by the legends of tradition. Much do we regret the invasion of this romance, and that, from some modern idea of utility, tombstones were erected about three years ago. Such a marring of the simple and sublime is to be deplored, and we had rather bend over the nameless mound of William Penn than read his sculptured epitaph in Westminster Abbey, or behold the more unhappy makeshift of a rural tombstone. Why not have allowed the dead to sleep on, as he had done for nearly a century and a half, world-known in his solitude, exalted in his humility, in that spot, so luminous from its neglect to appeal to our senses, for the immortality its memories bestowed?

As we stand over this corpse, our thoughts turn from Nature to history, and, in sympathy with the past, recur to the scenes of which it was once the principal actor. Nearly 200 years ago, in 1682, he who now lies beneath our feet stood under a huge elm-tree, bearing in his hand a parchment, and surrounded by a strange group of motley Indians, clad with the marks of barbaric vanity. Their bows and arrows are cast upon the ground, for they have come to hear the

white man speak words of love and brotherhood, and to cement a treaty without the bonds of an oath or the emphasis of sword and bayonet. The man who sleeps in the secluded graveyard of Jordans was founder of the State of Pennsylvania, and the negotiator of that original treaty with the Indians which, says Voltaire, "was the only one between the Indians and the Christians that was not ratified by an oath and was never broken." It was a treaty written with ink, but without the endorsement of wounds, agony, and death, Pennsylvania being the only American colony that was founded without the shedding of human blood. "The wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace" (Jas. iii. 17, 18). Sleep on, William Penn, till the last day awakens thee, more renowned in thine obscurity than when the intrusive stone thrusts thy name before the wanderer in the beechen glades of merry Buckinghamshire!

#### THE MASSACRE OF PROTESTANTS AT BARLETTA, IN 1866.

Alas! our martyrology reaches to this present year. Even 1866 has furnished us with martyrs—martyrs to the truth, slain by the Church of Blood, and in the land where she totters on her seven-hilled throne!

But we are told that even Rome has felt the effects of time, and has changed. We point to the past, and during the lapse of centuries can collect our memorials of blood. In days of old this church exterminated the Albigenses, decimated the Waldenses, deluged the valleys of the Alps with blood, lit the fires of Smithfield, celebrated royal *autos-da-fe* in Spain, sounded the tocsin of Saint Bartholomew from the king's palace, repealed the Edict of Nantes,



and crowded the dungeons of the Inquisition and the felons' galleys with martyrs for conscience' sake.\*

And when we come to our own day, examples are not wanting. True that some of them do not go further than imprisonment, from want of power and not of will; for penal laws still exist in Italy, Spain and Austria, against liberty of conscience, and the Pope still pronounces an annual curse against Bible societies and their supporters. Not long ago there were thirty-six prisoners for the faith in Spain, and eight condemned to the penalties of felons for reading the Word of God, and many from Malaga, Granada, Barcelona, Cordova, and Jaen. In Italy, in 1851, Count Guicciardini was imprisoned and exiled for reading the Bible; in 1852 the Madiari were condemned to four years of the galleys for the same cause, and Cechetti in 1855; and last, but not least, our black catalogue reaches even to the current year, and once more assumes the crimson tinge of blood. The following is the account given in the daily journals of the recent outrage at Barletta, bearing the ominous heading—

“ITALY.—THE MASSACRE OF PROTESTANTS.

*Florence, March 27.*

“We have bad news from the south. The pleasant, thriving city of Barletta, famous in history for the brilliant feat of Italian arms, so graphically recorded in M. d’Azeglio’s romance of ‘Ettore Fieramosca,’ has just been the scene of a most ferocious outburst of Christian Thuggism. That religious fanaticism should have produced such deplorable results in the heart of the nineteenth century, appears absolutely incredible. Unhappily, there is no

---

\*The reader is referred to the *Quarterly Review* for July, 1866, for an interesting article on the French Gallerians, with special reference to one of those unrecognized heroes, Jean Marteilhe.—See p. 643, *supra et seq.*



doubt about the facts, which are as follow:—For about two years a small Protestant society has existed in Barletta. Beginning with two or three individuals, this body had, little by little, swelled to forty members, who managed to support a little school and chapel, in which officiated a pastor named Gaetano Giannini, a native of Florence. The Romish priests watched the growing Christian society with suspicion, and ere long three fire-brands in the shape of men were dispatched from Rome to the quiet little city to crush the growing heretics. These emissaries of Rome, by their preaching, so worked upon their followers until finally, on St. Joseph's Day, after a fiery exhortation to crush the Protestants, they rushed from the church with fiendish yells of, "Death to the Protestants!" "Death to the damned!" "Hurrah for Jesus Christ!" "Down with the heretics!" "Long live the Church!" &c., &c. All kinds of cries were raised, all kinds of shouts and weapons were used for the occasion. The houses of the Protestants were sacked, *the occupants thrown out of the windows, or hacked to pieces*, and the mutilated victims, some dead, some dying, *burned in the street*, an immense fire having been kindled for the purpose. The women were roused to a pitch of indescribable fury, stabbing and stoning many of the helpless martyrs, and dancing with unearthly shrieks around the flames of their *auto-da-fe*.

"For two hours the rioters had it all their own way, and, as the Protestant minister had taken refuge in the house of the prefect, the place was besieged by the mob, the officials were put to flight, and all the furniture was thrown out of the windows. The under prefect received a blow on the head from a stone, and a delegate of police, who by some mistake was supposed to be the pastor Giannini, received such ill usage, that he died on the following day. In the course of time order was restored, and 400 soldiers are now quartered in the city. As many as seventy-five

have been arrested, including four priests, a Capuchin and six or seven women. The prisoners have been removed to Trani, not without a vigorous attempt to rescue them. But the rioters were kept under, and fortunately without bloodshed.

“Thirteen lives have been lost in this lamentable affair, which appears to have been no accidental circumstance, but to have had its origin in certain general measures concerted at Rome for the purpose of maintaining an agitation among the ignorant classes, the ultimate object being evidently to produce a state of things by which the Emperor of France may be induced to postpone the withdrawal of his troops from Rome.”

---

Thus have we erected our tribute to the memory of many of the noble army of martyrs; but man's praise is temporal, and is bounded by the resurrection-day. The Lord's praise endureth for ever. But what shall we say of that great army of the unknown martyrs? Shall we not yield homage to that unknown band? Thousands have perished in the dungeon, but no friendly ear caught their sighs, and no pen recorded their groans; thousands have perished on the rack, and their confession of faith was treasured up by the invisible King, the martyr of Golgotha. Yea, the ten thousand solitary complaints of the dungeon echo still in the ears of the Lord of Sabaoth, for he hath put their tears into his bottle, and “precious in the sight of the Lord is the death of his saints.” Thousands have died in agony, and in one sense their memorial is perished with them; but their names are known above, for they are written in the Lamb's book of life, and shall be read out before an assembled universe on the resurrection-day, when the Lord



ariseth to give to every man according to his works. (1 vi. 9—11; Heb. xi. 32—40; xii. 1, 2.)

Ah! ye unknown band, your tears, your sighs, your faith, your agonies, your blood, your deaths, have helped to consecrate this sinful earth, and to add to its solemn originality as the battle-field of good and evil, of Christ and Belial. "Of whom the world was not worthy." Let these glittering bands of the slaughtered conquerors assume the palm-branch; yea, let the armies of martyrs be marshalled; they will be an assembly "as the doves that fly as a cloud"—a royal priesthood, worthy to cast their crowns beneath the feet of Jesus, our crucified Messiah, to whom, with the Father and the Holy Ghost, be equal praise ascribed, by sinless angel and redeemed man, for ever and ever. Amen and Amen. (Rev. v. 8—14.)











